



GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 03

Ni Cang Tian

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

Synopsis

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: I'm Your Elder Brother!

Shi Yubai went insane!

He put the blame on Shi Yan for the disaster in the quarry.

Shi Yan's behavior in the cave had irritated Shi Yubai and now Shi Yan's attitude made him even more angrier, so he made up his mind to teach Shi Yan a lesson.

He Qingman, Sheng Yidan and the others were still mourning. It was too late when they realized that they needed to stop Shi Yubai from assaulting Shi Yan.

Shi Yubai's body was covered with yellow light, meanwhile, golden light balls flew out from his hands.

These big golden ball contained great power in them.

Shi Yan's expression changed.

Without further thinking, he triggered his Petrification Martial Spirit as well as the Dark Light Shield, and entered the Second Sky of Rampage.

Shi Yubai was at the Second Sky of Earth Realm, which was one level higher than Shi Yan; Shi Yan would be easily killed if he was not careful.

With qi gushing into his body, Shi Yan's look suddenly changed as a brutal and murderous aura pervaded around him.

Around Shi Yan, the aura rippled and formed a strong wave.

He Qingman and Sheng Yidan stopped crying and looked to Shi Yan in surprise, shocked by the changes in him.

"Boom, boom, boom!"

One after another, golden balls kept striking Shi Yan and exploded around him.

Shi Yan's Dark Light Shield broke at once as his body flew up into

the air and he spurted out a mouthful of blood.

Shi Yan was wounded in just a single strike, as he felt pain all over his body.

Being one level higher than Shi Yan, Shi Yubai struck with all his strength. He was determined to kill Shi Yan!

However, Shi Yan was not dead!

Shi Yan stood up after he landed on the ground, and he said firmly, "Shi Yubai, I won't forget it!"

"You will still remember me when you go to hell!"

Shi Yubai gritted, "We would have been safe if you didn't come to the Black Stone Island. We wouldn't have lost so much if it weren't for you!"

He put all the blame on Shi Yan, so he could find an excuse to kill him.

Shi Yubai didn't stop, and his face turned red while his eyes shone with yellow light.

As more power started bursting in his body, Shi Yubai dashed like lightning towards Shi Yan again.

This time, instead of using the golden light balls, he flew straight to Shi Yan, so that even Shi Yan couldn't see his trail clearly.

Since he was one level higher than Shi Yan, and he was using all his strength, the difference was rather obvious.

Shi Yan regretted that he didn't ask for Martial Skills from the Ice Cold Flame earlier. If he had mastered the Electric Shift and the Shadow shift, he could now teleport and avoid this strike.

Sadly, he was much slower than Shi Yubai, and couldn't even follow Shi Yubai's movement clearly.

Since he wasn't able to predict Shi Yubai's abrupt attack, he couldn't construct the Gravitational Field in advance. And now it

was too late.

He knew it was impossible to avoid.

Endure it!

"Ouuuu!

Shi Yan bellowed and triggered all the negative energy in his body. He operated the Seal of Life and Death at once.

"Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang!"

The Seal of Life and Seal of Death came out from his palms and joined---- the Seal of Life and Death was formed!

Seven hand prints flew out and struck toward Shi Yubai, containing power stronger than that of a Disaster Realm warrior.

Shi Yubai realized how powerful the energy in the seal was, and without any hesitance, he used the energy in his body. And a yellow light pillar shot out from his chest, which dazzled everyone's eyes.

The thick yellow light pillar struck on the Seal of Life and Death, and the clashing power grounded all of the black stones in that area.

Mixed in the small stones, Shi Yan's body flew out again and then fell on the ground after making an arc in the air.

Blood was flowing out from his chest and his face had turned pale.

As for Shi Yubai, although he hadn't fallen down, his body was shaking greatly.

His light pillar was so strong that even a warrior of the Second Sky of Earth Realm couldn't endure it.

Although he was covered by blood, Shi Yan shook his body and stood up again---- he was still alive!

"Stop!"

He Qingman yelled, "Shi Yubai, what the hell are you doing! You know it had nothing to do with him! What do you want? Don't you know he is from the Yang Family?"

Shi Yubai's face changed slightly.

Sheng Yidan was shocked too as he looked at He Qingman, "He is from the Yang Family?"

"He is a lost child of the Yang Family and he came to the Endless Sea to see his family." At that moment, He Qingman couldn't hide Shi Yan's identity, "If he is hurt, the Yang Family wouldn't spare us! Shi Yubai, stop attacking him!"

"Humph! Everyone here is from Evil Wonderland except for him, so we can tell them he was killed by the demon dwellers. Even sister Nan, a Nirvana Realm Warrior was killed by them, not to mention a Disaster Realm warrior like him!"

Shi Yubai had literally went insane. Regardless of He Qingman's persuasion, he assaulted Shi Yan even more heavily.

Shi Yubai flew to Shi Yan again, "Bastard, I must kill you, even if you are a Yang Family member! No one would revenge for you if you died on this island."

"Shi Yubai!" He Qingman yelled in anger, "Stop it now!"

Shi Yubai didn't listen to her, instead, while she was yelling, he made up his mind to kill Shi Yan.

In the Evil Wonderland, everybody knew that Shi Yubai fancied He Qingman.

He always tortured those who got close to He Qingman.

He even did that to his own people, so how can he leave Shi Yan alone who was an outsider.

Especially in the cave, when he was struck by Shi Yan. At that moment, he decided to kill Shi Yan.

Seeing Shi Yubai rushing up, Shi Yan's eyes turned cold as he

continued to refine the Seal of Life and Death.

"Boom!"

Shi Yan flew back while all the bones in his chest bones were broken.

"Pooh!"

Unexpectedly, Shi Yubai spurted mouthful of blood as well.

Shi Yubai's body quivered as he also couldn't endure the power of the Seal of Death and Life.

He Qingman and Sheng Yidan were dumbstruck and they looked at Shi Yan in disbelief.

Shi Yan was so tough!

Under Shi Yubai's concessive strikes, he managed to survive!

Furthermore, both of their bodies took damage.

Their close performance baffled He Qingman and Sheng Yidan.

"Kid, It's not surprising that you are from the Yang Family. You are something!" Shi Yubai stared at Shi Yan in hatred, "If I don't kill you today, you will kill me someday! Thus I have to kill you now at all cost!"

"Shi Yubai, don't blame me if you continue!" He Qingman finally shouted and flew towards Shi Yubai.

He Qingman flew over and planted her beautiful feet on the ground. But when she wanted to fly again, she found her feet were bound by something.

He Qingman couldn't move.

Her expression changed, as she looked around to find someone, "Brother, what're you doing?"

Everybody was puzzled and began to look around.

He Qingman never call anyone "brother" except for one person.

Xie Kui!

"Brother, when did you come?" Joy emerged on Sheng Yidan's face.

"Not long ago. I heard sister Nan died because of this guy, so I think he should die." A gloomy voice came from down the earth.

The mysterious guy seemed to be in the ground.

And the Evil Wonderland warriors got relieved when they heard Xie Kui came.

"Brother is reasonable." Shi Yubai laughed and moved towards Shi Yan with swaggering steps, "Let me see how long you can last?"

"Longer than you!"

A heroic voice came from the sky, and a Double-Headed Dragon appeared among the clouds.

A huge silver sword flew across the sky and dashed in this direction.

Followed by the silver light, the silver sword fell down and turned Shi Yubai into meat paste.

The huge silver sword killed Shi Yubai at once, then struck into the earth three meters left to He Qingman.

The mountains and the earth shook at the same time.

A slim young man in white clothing appeared from the earth with a rigid face. There was some blood beside his mouth as he looked at the double-headed dragon.

"Xiao Yan, welcome to the Kyara Sea." The man on the Double-Headed Dragon showed a broad smile to Shi Yan after he killed Shi Yubai.

"You are?" Shi Yan was confused.

"I'm your elder brother, Yang Mu." The young man laughed and then looked at the Evil Wonderland warriors proudly, "In the

Kyara Sea, our Yang Family is the master. This is our place.
Whoever goes against the Yang Family must die!"

Chapter 202: Destroy the Mountain

On the mountain top.

The Evil Wonderland warriors looked pale, while Xie Kui popped up from the earth and looked at Yang Mu coldly, "How dare you kill him?"

"Why not?" Yang Mu laughed while jumping off from the Double-Headed Dragon and stood besides Shi Yan, and asked him with a smile, "You ok?"

"I'm fine." Shi Yan shook his head with a smile.

"The Third Stage?" Yang Mu was surprised as his eyes wandered on Shi Yan's chest.

The wound on Shi Yan's chest was recovering slowly but at a visible speed.

"Yeah." Shi Yan nodded.

"Disaster Realm?" Yang Mu didn't look at Xie Kui, but mumbled to himself, "It's unreasonable."

Since he has the Immortal Martial Spirit, Yang Mu knew about it well. Generally, one needed to advance to the Earth Realm to get to the Third Stage of the Immortal Martial Spirit.

Shi Yan was merely at the Disaster Realm, but his Immortal Martial Spirit had already reached the Third Stage, which was rather abnormal.

"Yes, I'm at the Second Sky of Disaster Realm." Shi Yan nodded again.

Yang Mu was even more surprised.

Those Evil Wonderland warriors including Xie Kui and He Qingman looked uneasy after Yang Mu showed up.

Sheng Yidan gazed at Shi Yan's chest, and then sighed with

bitterness. Anyone can see that Shi Yan had the Immortal martial Spirit, so she knew that they had been all wrong; Shi Yan was a direct descendent of the Yang Family.

Shi Yubai was killed by Yang Mu, but the Evil Wonderland warriors didn't dare to do anything although they were angry.

"You killed our people, I will tell it to the family head. We won't spare you!" Xie Kui looked gloomy, as he wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth, "At this crucial moment, you killed your ally. I don't think you need our help."

"Hmm." Yang Mu sneered and shook his head, "Just tell your family head. Let's see what can you do to us? You don't rule the Evil Wonderland, if you leave the Demon Dwellers alone, you can expect more of them. Let's see how will your Evil Wonderland fares then?"

Xie Kui's expression changed slightly.

The Demon Dwellers had entered the Kyara Sea. Although they hated the Yang Family most, it's tough for them to shake the Yang Family.

On the contrary, the Evil Wonderland and the Xia Family were the real target of the Demon Dwellers because they were weaker.

Even if the Evil Wonderland and the Xia Family didn't attack the Demon Dwellers, the latter would still cause trouble with them.

Yang Mu smiled as he took out a green pill and handed it to Shi Yan, "How are you now?"

Shi Yan took the pill and swallowed it at once. He soon felt a warm sensation in his belly.

The pill was mildly taking effect on his chest.

This pill sped up the recovering of wound as its power entangled the wound like slim strings.

"There are dozens of Demon Dwellers on the Black Stone Island,

including several experts at the Second Sky of Nirvana Realm. We entered the quarry and met the Demon Dwellers..." Shi Yan explained briefly.

"Demon Dwellers of the Second Sky of Nirvana Realm?" Yang Mu was a little surprised, as he nodded his expression turned heavy, "It seems to be tough now. It's out of expectation that Nirvana Realm Demon Dwellers appeared on this small island. They have made up their mind."

"Qingman, you mean the Nirvana Realm Demon Dwellers were found by him?" Xie Kui was listening to He Qingman's explanation, which caused him to frown.

He Qingman nodded slowly and explained in a low voice, "He has a certain treasure that helps him detect the Demon Dwellers. He was the first one to find them in the cave. It's just that we didn't pay attention to it. Sister Nan, Sister Nan..."

He Qingman's voice shook again.

"The Demon Dwellers were first found by you?" Yang Mu's hearing was great; he glanced at Shi Yan in surprise.

After seeing Shi Yan also nodding, Yang Mu laughed and praised, "You are something! Haha! No wonder great grandpa said you are extraordinary. This time I came because great grandpa sent me here to take you back."

Shi Yan beamed, "Just with the help of a treasure."

The great grandpa Yang Mu talked about was the head of the Yang Family, King Yang Qing.

He Qingman didn't show any surprise, but Xie Kui and Sheng Yidan's expression changed.

Especially for Sheng Yidan, he regretted a lot for not having noticed that Shi Yan was special.

Whoever caught King Yang Qing's attention must be something

and would probably be an expert in the Endless Sea. If they knew of this earlier, they would have listened to Shi Yan and avoided the battle with the Demon Dwellers.

"Xiao Yan, let's go. After killing the Demon Dwellers, we will go back to the Immortal Island at once. You came from far away. It's time for you to go home." Yang Mu whistled, and then the Double-Headed Dragon landed on the mountain top.

Yang Mu mounted to the Double-Headed Dragon, and then waved to Shi Yan, "Let's go."

Though confused, Shi Yan mounted the Double-Headed Dragon while observing the Double-Headed Dragon as his eyes sparkled.

The Double-Headed Dragon was seven meters long and had the power of Ice and flame in its two heads. The back of the dragon was hard as iron, and its claws were sharp.

The Level Six demon beast, the Double-Headed Dragon, had two heads which can spurt ice and flame. It's one of the most able demon beasts in the Yang Family.

Before Shi Yan came to the Endless Sea, Xiao Hanyi had told him that he could get a Double-Headed Dragon if he was acknowledged by the family head. Shi Yan remembered it, so when he saw the real Double-Headed Dragon, he became excited.

"Haha, stop looking at it. You will have your own mount." Yang Mu laughed, "Great grandpa had chosen a grumpy demon beast to test you. But you have to prove that you can tame it."

"Not the Double-Headed Dragon?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"No, it's more frightening than the Double-Headed Dragon. Hehe, and great grandpa wants to test you with that demon beast. Xiao Yan, be prepared, and don't be frightened by it."

"Not the Double-Headed Dragon? Then what demon beast is that?"

"I will leave it for you to find it out yourself."

They mounted the Double-Headed Dragon while chatting in the process. Xie Kui, He Qingman and others could only look at them and frown with strange expressions.

"There are Nirvana Realm Demon Dwellers in the cave?" Xie Kui asked Sheng Yidan.

"Of course." Sheng Yidan nodded, "That's why sister Nan was killed."

Xie Kui nodded slightly, and sneered, "Let me see how Yang Mu will kill those Demon Dwellers!"

"Yeah." He Qingman was confused too, "Yang Mu is strong, but he is merely at the third Sky of Earth Realm, so he can't win against that Nirvana Realm Demon Dweller."

"Let's go!" Yang Mu laughed and urged the Double-Headed Dragon to flew to the quarry Shi Yan pointed at.

"B, brother." Shi Yan was not used to calling someone brother, "One Demon Dweller is at the Nirvana Realm, can you really deal with it?"

"Don't worry." Yang Mu looked calm, "I will show you the Sky Bomb of the Yang Family. I have two Sky Bombs. To kill a Nirvana Realm Demon Dweller with one of it is not a waste."

Sky Bomb?

Shi Yan knew Yang Mu was doing it for a reason.

While sitting on the Double-Headed Dragon, Shi Yan and Yang Mu soon arrived above the quarry.

"Detect whether the Demon Dwellers are inside." While standing on the Double-Headed Dragon, Yang Mu looked down at the quarry below him.

Shi Yan slowly nodded and took out the Soul Gathering Pearl.

While Shi Yan was searching, a heavy smell of hatred came from deep within the quarry and spirit waves approached.

Shi Yan's expression changed as he withdrew his spirit power from the Soul Gathering Pearl, "He's still here."

"That's good then." Yang Mu laughed and his ring shone as a fist-like golden ball appeared in his palm.

Under Yang Mu's control, that golden ball transformed in a golden light which struck the quarry.

"Bang, bang, bang!"

A powerful blast resounded in the quarry.

The Sky Bomb blast was so strong that it almost cracked the sky. Meanwhile, golden waves rippled in the sky.

Then, just in front of Shi Yan, the quarry exploded into ashes.

Covered in the golden light, the quarry crashed and was destroyed by Sky Bomb in an instant.

Chapter 203: Arrival

The quarry where the Black Scale Tribe demon dwellers hid at was straight up blown by one Sky Bomb. Even the earth deeply sank in.

While sitting on the body of the Double Headed Dragon, Shi Yan watched this whole scene from the front row. He was stunned and shocked by the frightening exploding power of the Sky Bomb.

One Sky Bomb destroyed an entire mountain. Such power was truly unheard of.

At this moment, he got a deeper understanding of the Yang family's background.

"Alright, let's go." Yang Mu glanced below for a moment, clapped his hands and said leisurely: "Unless there is a strong Sky realm demon dweller, no one can escape from the Sky Bomb."

Shi Yan stroked the Soul Gathering Pearl, and then spread out his mind power to probe around. Indeed, he could no longer sense a single trace of soul fluctuation.

All the Black Scale Tribe demons in the quarry should've been blasted by this one blow. No more traces of life came from the quarry.

While nodding, Shi Yan smiled: "This is quite a big movement."

"Haha, that's how the Sky Bomb is. Forging one Sky Bomb requires more than seventy precious materials. Many of these materials come from the Demon Area and only us, the Yang family, can obtain those precious materials because we often wage war in the demon area. Even if we told the forging method of the Sky Bomb to other families, they won't be able to gather all of the materials to make it." Yang Mu said proudly.

"We're returning to Immortal Island now?" Shi Yan pondered for a moment, and then asked: "Last time, I heard a Shura Blood Guard

say that the Gate of Heaven from the Immortal Island region was at the peak of battling. How is the situation now?"

"Still fighting, but the aggressiveness of the attacks from the demon dwellers has lessened. They probably also cannot afford the losses." Yang Mu's expression suddenly darkened, "This time, the actions of the demon dwellers are very strange. They risked their lives to come through the nodes in space, and spread throughout every corner of the Kyara Sea. I wonder what their true intentions are."

"How is Xia Xinyan?" Shi Yan hesitated for a moment, and then asked.

Yang Mu's eyes flickered for a second, and then with a wry smile he said: "The reason why I came to find you is also because of her. The master of the Xia family brought Xia Xinyan to the Immortal Island, demanding our Yang family to take responsibility. Aii, this thing is really hard to deal with. Back in the day, a situation similar to this also happened to someone from the Xia family. It's almost unsolvable; no methods can be found at all. But uncle Mo said you have a way. I don't know if it's true or not, but Great Grandpa seems to value you quite a lot. Since I was doing business around this area, he ordered me to escort you back to Immortal Island as soon as possible."

After a moment of pause, Yang Mu looked at Shi Yan with a strange expression, "Do you really have a way to solve Xia Xinyan's problem?"

"Yes." Shi Yan nodded.

Yang Mu's eyes brightened, "Haha, if it's really like that, then there should be no problem. What you don't know is that that girl Xia Xinyan is the treasure of the Xia family. She got into that kind of situation to save you causing all of the Xia family members to become furious; they came straight to the Immortal Island to cause trouble, forcing Great Grandpa to give an explanation."

"Don't worry, I'm sure I can awake her."

"Alright." Yang Mu didn't continue asking for details. He just made the double headed dragon speed up.

The double headed dragon was like an arrow that escaped its bow, shooting through the clouds above the Black Stone Island and moving into the distance.

On the Black Stone Island.

Xie Kui, He Qingman, and the rest stood above the mountain. From the distance, they looked at the quarry that was now blown to the ground; their expressions were inexplicably shocked.

"The Sky Bomb!" Xie Kui took in a deep breath, "Yang Mu used a single Sky Bomb and straight up destroyed that entire mountain! This is the end of this mission. Under the frightening power of the Sky Bomb, even a Nirvana realm demon dweller wouldn't be able to survive. Yang Mu is sure willing to sacrifice a lot; he even brought out the Sky Bomb."

He Qingman's face was sullen as she sighed and said: "Our losses are big this time..."

"Yang Mu, Shi Yan..." Xie Kui's expression was dark and cold as he murmured under his breath: "I'll remember you two."

He Qingman glimpsed at Xie Kui, and felt even more worried inside. She knew Xie Kui's personality. She knew that Xie Kui was the favored child of the Evil Wonderland, and that he was unusually malicious. Once he starts hating someone, he would never let it go easily.

"We should leave too." Shen Yidan put up a mournful face, and stopped looking towards the sky. She blamed herself: "Earlier if we knew that Shi Yan's background was this big, then we would've definitely valued his words more. We wouldn't have had such great losses. Aii..."

"Let's go." Xie Kui snorted coldly; his eyes were cold.

"When did you arrive at Black Stone Island?" On the double headed dragon, Shi Yan asked casually.

The appearances of Yang Mu and Xie Kui were both very sudden. There was no warning or sign; they just all suddenly appeared. This made Shi Yan very confused.

"I came earlier than Xie Kui." Yang Mu smilingly explained, "After I arrived above Black Stone Island, I didn't know which was you at first. Then when I noticed you and Shi Yubai dueling, I finally knew you from their conversations. At that time I was going to get involved immediately, but I also wanted to see your capabilities. Therefore, I just hid in the clouds and watched."

"You only came over after Xie Kui?"

"Mmm hmm, when Xie Kui arrived at the Black Stone Island, he didn't appear immediately. Instead, he used his martial spirit to hide underground. After you and Shi Yubai dueled for a while, he finally launched a sneak attack towards you from the underground. When I first noticed him, I already started to secretly prepare to intervene at any time..."

Yang Mu smilingly explained for a while, and then laughed: "But boy you are simply amazing! That Shi Yubai is a whole realm higher than you, but he couldn't kill you with all of his strength. Up above, I was originally going to intervene immediately, but seeing that you were safe and sound, out of curiosity I just continued watching. I wanted to see how long you could hold up for. If it weren't for Xie Kui who couldn't help but intervene, I might have waited for even longer until that Shi Yubai attacked you once more."

Shi Yan smiled wryly, "I probably wouldn't be able to continue holding up."

"It was hard to say." Yang Mu revealed a thoughtful smile, "You think I wouldn't know that there are still unused powers inside your body? I've long heard that inside your body, there is still the

Star Martial Spirit of the Three Gods Sect. Although you can't use that Star Martial Spirit against your enemy, but in crucial moments, it would still have helped you in taking a fatal blow."

The Star Martial Spirit?

Shi Yan became dazed. If Yang Mu hadn't mention it, he almost forgot that inside his body, there still existed the Star Martial Spirit.

He quietly sensed for a moment and realized that the Star Martial Spirit still continued to endlessly absorb star power, without stopping.

At his heart, there were spots of glittering starlight; they seemed to already have absorbed quite a lot of star power. The strength of that star power seemed to be just as vigorous as his Profound Qi at the moment.

Unfortunately, this extra power was still difficult for him to use.

"Dude, you are really something. Our Yang family has fought with the Three Gods Sect for hundreds of years, but you were able to obtain the Star Martial Spirit. Hehe, if the Sun God of the Three Gods Sect knew that the Star Martial Spirit of the last Star God, fell upon you, I wonder what he would be thinking." Yang Mu exclaimed.

"Oh right, you said Great Grandpa prepared a demon beast for me. What exactly is that demon beast?" Shi Yan was more curious about this thing.

"Hehe, I'm not telling you." Yang Mu purposely hid the information.

"What level is it?"

"You'll know when you see it."

"Is it as strong as your level 6 double-headed dragon?"

"Stronger than mine! However, you have to be able to tame it."

After series of question, Yang Mu revealed some information in frustration, "That thing isn't from our dimension. It comes from the Demon Area; it's a strange hybrid that has the ability to continuously evolve!"

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

"Don't get happy too soon! I don't think you can tame it." Yang Mu's expression was strange. He shook his head and said: "I don't know what Great Grandpa is thinking! How can he leave that thing for you to tame? You're only in the Disaster realm! Maybe after just one attack, you will be killed by that thing."

"Big brother, we're already returning to the Immortal Island and I'm still not familiar with the important figures in the Yang family. Uh, shouldn't you introduce them to me a little?"

"Alright, I'll roughly explain it to you and tell you about the people you definitely have to know..."

In the Yang family, there were four generations of people in total at the moment. As a person of the first generation, Yang Qingdi was the head of the family.

Below Yang Qingdi, there were three sons, known as Yang Feng, Yang Xiao, and Yang Lao. They were from the second generation of the Yang family.

Among them, Yang Xiao was the father of Yang Hai. Nominally, he was also the grandfather of Shi Yan. Fifty years ago, he died in a battle in the Fourth Demon Area.

Yang Feng and Yang Lao each had two sons. They were Yang Zhuo, Yang Niao, Yang Xiu, and Yang Qi; this was the third generation of the Yang family.

Under Yang Zhuo, there was Yang Mu and Yang Zhou. Yang Niao had one daughter, Yang Xue. Yang Xiu had one son, Yang Ke. Finally, Yang Qi had one daughter Yang Meng.

The five people, Yang Mu, Yang Zhou, Yang Xue, Yang Ke, and

Yang Meng, were the fourth generation of the Yang family.

Of course, in the direct descendents of the Yang family, there wasn't only these people. However, the rest of them, because they didn't have the Yang family's Immortal Martial Spirit inside their bodies, weren't included into this category.

The first generation, Yang Qingdi, was in the Spirit realm. Below him, the second generation's Yang Feng and Yang Lao were both in the Sky realm. Even below that, the third generation's Yang Zhuo, Yang Niao, Yang Xiu, and Yang Qi were almost all in the Nirvana realm. Then lastly, the fourth generation's Yang Mu, Yang Zhou, Yang Xue, Yang Ke, and Yang Meng, were mostly in the Earth and Disaster realms.

In the four generations of the Yang family, between each of the generations, there was a difference of only one realm; it was very strange.

This also made Shi Yan very surprised. He couldn't help but ask further. However, before he could ask, Yang Mu already answered him: "Before the Earth realm, there are the Elementary, Nascent, Human, and Disaster realms. These realms belong to normal warrior families, and can be a very long cultivation process. However, to our Yang family, these four realms are not that much hard to pass. The precious resources controlled by our Yang family can make the breakthrough of these four realms speed up by multiple times. As long as you have a determined will and outstanding talent, under the catalyzing of our family's precious treasures, you can quickly reach the third sky of Disaster realm in a matter of ten years."

"However, starting from when you breakthrough to the Earth realm from the Disaster realm, if you want to keep reaching higher, you can no longer just rely on pills and elixirs. At that time, the breakthrough of realms will slow down. Just breaking through a small realm, might need more than ten years of time. That is why in our generation, most can quickly step into the Earth realm. But

breakthroughs from that time on will become slower and slower..."

"Is that so..." Shi Yan quietly nodded as if being enlightened by the information.

The two sat on top of the double headed dragon and chatted the whole way. They went towards the Immortal Island at great speed.

After more than ten days, under the directions of Yang Mu, Shi Yan, who was sitting on top of the double headed dragon, finally saw the legendary Immortal Island.

Chapter 204: The Yang Family

In the lingering mists and clouds, a vast and enormous island silently floated in the middle of the pure blue sea.

On the island stood many grand mountains that went straight through the clouds.

Looking down from the top, one can see blocks of spirit farming fields with countless precious medicinal ingredients planted on them everywhere on the island. Many rare and strange demon beasts and spirit beasts were domesticated and were roaming everywhere the island.

Vigorous spirit energy continuously circulated on the island like streams of flowing water. The natural energies here were extremely filling; before landing on the island, even just sucking in a breath of air gave people a refreshing and relaxing feeling.

The island was extremely big; it might've been several times the size of the entire Merchant Union. It was not so much an island, but more like an entire piece of Mainland.

Sitting on top of the Double Headed Dragon, Shi Yan looked into the distance and actually couldn't see the end. In his view, all he saw were endless mountains and on top of each mountain, he could see shadows of people.

"This is the Immortal Island." Yang Mu smiled and then pointed at an area overflowing with demon energy behind him as he explained to Shi Yan: "Over there, there is a Gate of Heaven leading to the Fourth Demon Area. Our battles with the demon dwellers also happen in that area. Usually, even in the areas around the Immortal Island, you can find some demon dwellers wandering about. Recently, the demon dwellers have also encountered quite a lot of losses. So they temporarily ceased fire."

Shi Yan was surprised as he looked towards the direction Yang

Mu was pointing at.

He could only see demon energy fluctuation overflowing from that area. The vigorous demon energy covered that place completely. After looking closely, Shi Yan realized that he could see nothing at all.

"That place is temporarily covered by demon energy. Hmm, don't waste your time to look through it because you won't see anything." Yang Mu smiled.

"Mmm Hmm... indeed, I can't see anything." While nodding, Shi Yan frowned: "Are there still people stationed there?"

Although he couldn't see the situation there, Shi Yan could still vaguely sense extremely fierce energy fluctuations coming from there. Based on his senses, there must've been countless numbers of strong warriors there with some top warriors from the Yang family hiding in there.

"Of course, Uncle Mo and the rest are all guarding that area." Yang Mu's expression was slightly serious, "I received some news a while back saying that Great Grandpa went into the demon area again. Reportedly, Great Grandpa entered into the demon area this time to talk with the Demon King Bu Xun."

"Talking with the Demon King?" Shi Yan was shocked.

Legend has it that the Demon King Bo Xun was in the third sky of Spirit realm; he had already set one foot in the True God realm.

From Shi Yan's understanding about the demon dwellers, he knew that demon dwellers of the same realm were much stronger than humans. Although Yang Qingdi's reputation was widely known in the Endless Sea, he was still after all only in the first sky of Spirit realm. If he were to really go face-to-face with the Demon King Bo Xun, wouldn't it be extremely dangerous and risky?

"Great grandpa is only in the first sky of Spirit realm, but he had all sorts of mysterious powers on him. If he dares to confront the

Demon King Bu Xun, then he naturally has a full grasp on things." Yang Mu smiled proudly, "Fifty years ago, when Great Grandpa was only in the third sky of Sky realm, he was already able to skip realms and kill a Demon Master who was under the command of the Demon King. That Demon King was in the first sky of Spirit realm at the time. Now that Great Grandpa stepped into the Spirit realm, his magical powers are even more far-reaching. Plus, the Demon King Bu Xun is not in his best condition; if great grandpa were to really encounter him, it shouldn't be hard for Great Grandpa to leave unharmed."

"The Demon King Bu Xun is not in his best condition?" Shi Yan dazed and dumbfounded for a moment.

"Reportedly, a hundred years ago, Bu Xun got into some trouble when cultivating a demon skill, so he has been recovering in the Cave of Thousand Demons. In the past many years, he has only been using his three Skeletal Avatars to move outside; his true form had never left the Cave of Thousand Demons. This time, the reason why great grandpa went in the demon area should be for Uncle Xiao. I wonder if he can bring Uncle Xiao out alive."

Once he heard Yang Mu mention Xiao Hanyi, Shi Yan's face immediately became sullen. He sighed inwardly out of frustration.

"Don't be too sad about the thing with Uncle Xiao. Even if you weren't there, that Bo Xun still would've went for Uncle Xiao sooner or later. Last time in the demon area, Uncle Xiao heavily wounded the youngest son of Bo Xun. At that time Bo Xun had said that he would teach Uncle Xiao a lesson. Even if Uncle Xiao wasn't with you that time, he would still be attacked by Bo Xun." Yang Mu tried to comfort.

As the two talked, the Double Headed Dragon kept flying above the Immortal Island without a rest.

Below them were towering mountains that pierced the clouds with overflowing amounts of spirit energy, and tens of thousands

of spirit farming fields beside them. Demon beasts were cultivated in many different areas; many Nascent and Human realm warriors rode all different types of demon beasts on the island, either flying in the air or sprinting on the ground. They were all extremely lively and full of energy.

"On the Immortal Island, there are now nearly ten thousand warriors. However, many warriors are in the Nascent, Human, and Disaster realms. There are only about a thousand warriors above the Earth realm. The warriors here, do not represent all of our Yang family's forces; our Yang family controls hundreds of islands. On those islands, there are also strong warriors from our family stationed there..."

When they arrived on Immortal Island, Yang Mu started to explain to Shi Yan about the situation on the island again. He explained the current situation on the Immortal Island in detail.

The Immortal Island was the holy land of the Kyara Sea, the headquarter of the Yang family.

In the entire Endless Sea, the Immortal Island was considered as a holy land for cultivation. The spirit energy on the island was vigorous; no matter what type of spirit medicinal plant was planted, it would be very easy for them to grow. Because of the vigorous spirit energy, any warrior that cultivated here would need much less effort to succeed. The Profound Qi gathering speed here was much faster than in other places.

The Double Headed Dragon entered into the Immortal Island and flew for another half day before finally landin in an area with the most concentrated spirit energy.

"Look down. That valley is the root of our Yang family." Yang Mu suddenly spoke proudly.

Shi Yan's expression shook as he lowered his head and looked closely.

Between nine grand enormous mountains, there was an open flat field. On that flat field, there stood many majestic palaces. Those palaces were all built with different enormous solid green iron stones, white jade stones, and fire gold stones.

Under the sun, those rare stones gleamed and gave off bright lights.

Glancing towards them, the palaces below seemed to be covered in majestic rainbow lights, making them look like a land for immortal beings.

"Look closely at those nine mountains." Yang Mu reminded.

Shi Yan was looking dazed. But after Yang Mu's reminder, he then focused his eyes on a several thousand zhang (1 ❖❖ is 10 feet) tall mountain.

This enormous, wide, and magnificent mountain was covered with all sorts of mysterious medicinal herbs. Under Shi Yan's view, he could clearly see the stream-like flows of spirit energy. They seemed to be attracted by the enormous mountain, and actually gathered towards here from all directions of the Immortal Island while silently flowing into this mountain, as if supplying nutrients for the mountain.

Shi yan scanned around and shockingly discovered that it was the same for the other eight mountains.

The lingering spirit energy on the Immortal Island seemed to be attracted by these nine mountains. They gathered here endlessly, and then flowed into these mountains, nourishing them.

As they advanced further, numerous caves appeared on the sides of the nine mountains. From inside those caves, occasionally a few figures appeared. They seemed to be cultivating inside the caves at this time. As after they came out, they squinted their eyes and quietly frowned like they haven't adjusted to the sunlight.

"These nine mountains can be said as the most precious place in

our family. At the heart of the mountains, there are many magical things. The reason why our Yang family can be so mighty for so long is closely related to these nine mountains." Yang Mu pointed out.

"Because of the spirit herbs on the mountain?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Not only spirit herbs." Yang Mu smiled, "You will know why very soon. I think later, you will enter into one of these mountains. You need to awaken Xia Xinyan first and for that you have to find a quiet cultivation spot. I can promise that in the entire Endless Sea, there won't be many places with a better cultivation environment than here."

Shi Yan was quite perplexed, but he didn't ask much.

"Let's go down and see our second grandpa. I think during this time, second grandpa must've been so annoyed by Xia Shenchuan from the Xia family that soon he might lose his patience." Yang Mu laughed as he rode the Double Headed Dragon and flew straight down towards that grand palace below.

On the way, Shi Yan already knew that Yang Qingdi went to the demon area; his oldest son Yang Feng was now guarding at the entrance to the Gate of Heaven. On the Immortal Island, the current person in charge was the second son Yang Lao, also nominally counted as the second grandpa of Shi Yan.

Although Xia Shenchuan from the Xia family, was the current head of the Xia family, he was not in the same generation as Yang Qingdi. Instead, he was from the generation of Yang Feng and Yang Lao, and was only in the second sky of the Sky realm.

The previous head of the Xia family was also in the first sky of Spirit realm, but after some incident with his Reincarnation Martial Spirit, he was often in the state of soul chaos and deliriousness.

Because of that, the last head of the Xia family, although a bit early, could only choose Xia Shenchuan as the new head of the family. He put all of his heart into cultivation, in an attempt to solve his occasional deliriousness.

Xia Shenchuan was the grandpa of Xia Xinyan, he had always treated Xia Xinyan like she was his most precious treasure. When he picked up Xia Xinyan from Firecloud Island, and found that Xia Xinyan's soul injuries were exactly the same as that person from back in the day. He was immediately enraged and directly brought Xia Xinyan to Immortal Island, determined to get an explanation from the Yang family.

At the time, after Yang Qingdi asked Mo Duanhun for details, he got to know that Shi Yan might have a way to save Xia Xinyan, thus he let Xia Shenchuan stay on Immortal Island and wait for Shi Yan to come and fix this trouble.

Although Xia Shenchuan was unsatisfied, but he couldn't talk back to Yang Qingdi, so he could only wait on the island like what Yang Qingdi told him.

Just like that, he waited for more than four months.

"Hello, young master Mu."

"Hello, young master Mu."

On Yang Mu's way, many warriors all respectfully nodded in greeting. None of these warriors were in low realms, most were in the Disaster, or Earth realms. Their presence was vigorous and seemed to be much stronger than other warriors of the same realms.

Shi Yan silently followed behind Yang Mu. After quietly releasing his consciousness to sense around, he felt awed on the inside.

If you considered under the same realm, the warriors that appeared here were all much stronger than the warriors out there.

The spirits in their bodies were extremely outstanding with

vigorous life force. Even the meridians and flesh of their bodies were extraordinarily sturdy. Their Profound Qi was also more refined and vigorous.

Shi Yan believed, that any of the human realm first sky warriors here, would be much stronger than a warrior of the same realm in the Merchant Union. In a fight with people of the same realms, a person here could fight against two people from there!

The more he observed, the more it stunned Shi Yan. He became more and more expectant to see the capabilities of the Yang family.

Chapter 205: The Yang Family's Challenge

Yang Family's Challenge

In the Yang family, next to a cold, deep pool.

Shi Yan and Yang Mu stood quietly in the corner, and watched a delicate little figure inside the deep pool.

It was a fifteen or sixteen year-old little girl, her big eyes were unusually lively. She had long eyelashes and straight little nose, making her look very cute and lovable.

At the moment, her delicate body sank inside the pool, she frowned as her limbs kept shaking around.

In the clear pool water, with the movement of her limbs, four milstone-sized metal blocks raised enormous waves in the pool water. Although her figure was small but the movements she made were extremely big as it produced choppy waves in the pool water.

Shi Yan's face was filled with surprise. He stared at her wrists and ankles and realized that there were shackles locked onto there. The shackles were connected to four millstone-sized metal blocks.

Sometimes the little girl floated while the other times she sank in the water pool. Her entire body was drenched as she struggled to stay afloat.

"Yang Meng is cultivating the Sky Phoenix Formula, this is a type of Spirit level martial skill. while cultivating, her limbs have to be attached with four thousand-jin metals (1❖❖=0.5 kg), and stay afloat in the water pool at the same time." Yang Mu stood next to Shi Yan and explained quietly: "The Sky Phoenix Formula is a extremely magical martial skill, where once you succeed in cultivating it, you can form wings made up of Profound Qi behind your back. Like the wings of a phoenix, they can directly make her stay thousands of feet up in the air while being in the Earth realm."

Shi Yan was stunned.

Usually, only Sky realm masters could stay in the air, and had the ability to fly.

This girl was only in the first sky of the Earth realm and she still had quite a long journey for her to be able to fly in the air.

However, if she can achieve the magical effect of staying in mid-air through the cultivation of the Sky Phoenix Formula, then she would be able to take all the advantages of flight when battling with people.

A martial skill that was able to make a Earth realm warrior obtain the flying ability of a Sky realm master, could truly be called mysteriously magical.

Inside the deep pool.

Yang Meng clenched her teeth as her feet and legs kept kicking the pool water. Her body bobbed up and down, but never sank in the water pool.

Her body was attached to four heavy objects weighing thousand jin, yet she could still keep her body from sinking in the water. This girl's performance made Shi Yan secretly shocked.

With four thousand jin of heavy objects on one's body, usually a normal person wouldn't even be able to move. In the water, one would almost instantly sink into the bottom of the water and never would have a chance of resurfacing.

This girl used some unknown secret method, and every time she kicked and paddled in the pool water, a wave of shocking energy shot out. It formed into a special pushing force, making her delicate body shoot fiercely up to the surface of the pool for a while. When she continued to sink back down, she would stir the power again and continue to force herself to the surface of the pool, again and again.

"Yang Meng is the youngest in our generation, she is our little sister. This girl doesn't have much cunningness in her, but she is a

delight to us all." Yang Mu had a coddling smile on his lips, "We all like to spoil her a lot and she also never lets us down. This year she just turned sixteen, and she is already in the first sky of Earth realm."

Sixteen years old, in the first sky of Earth realm!

Shi Yan kept smiling bitterly, he somewhat got a deeper insight on these freaks from the Yang family.

Xia Xinyan was the outstanding talent of the new generation of the Xia family, this year she was already twenty-six years old, but she was still in the first sky of Earth realm. That He Qingman, was a talent in which the Evil Wonderland put much focus into training her. She was twenty-four years old, and now was also only in the first sky of the Earth realm.

In comparison, Shi Yan slowly started to realize why the Yang family was the true master in the Kyara Sea.

In the Merchant Union, Beiming Ce could be counted as the most outstanding young talent. He was almost thirty years old, but was only in the Disaster realm. Comparing with Yang Meng here, the so called god-blessed talent Beiming Ce was not even worth mentioning.

"Boom, boom, boom!"

Yang Meng suddenly exerted her strength and tried to fly in the water pool, at her back, bright light formed. Wings formed by pure Profound Qi, quickly formed at a speed that was visible to the naked eye.

In a mere moment, behind Yang Meng's back, Profound Qi wings appeared. She controlled the wings and forcefully flapped them. Slowly floating to the surface of the pool water, her delicate little body soon got out of the surface of the water.

"Plop!"

Just when she flew about three meters away from the pool

surface, Yang Meng's face suddenly flashed with panic. Her power seemed to have ran out, and she fell straight into the pool.

"Alright, this is the end of the cultivation today." On the side of the pool, Yang Lao frowned and shouted. His big hand grabbed in the air, and directly lifted Yang Meng out of the water pool.

"Crack! Crack!"

Once Yang Meng dropped to the ground, the shackles on her limbs automatically came off. She dejectedly sat on the floor and murmured faintly: "Come on, why does it still not work? I was so close, why can I never step past this point?"

Yang Lao let out a chuckle, and then he shook his head and said: "You little girl, you're sure greedy. You only cultivated for one and a half years, and already want to finish cultivating this Sky Phoenix Formula. Is there such an easy thing in the world?"

"Grandpa, didn't you say that with my talent, I can successfully cultivate it really fast?" Yang Meng snorted, and pouted her lips: "Liar! You said I would be able to fly really soon, if after a little more time I still can't fly, then I won't cultivate this anymore. It's so much trouble."

Facing Yang Meng helplessness appeared on Yang Lao's face.

"Meng, just cultivate this for half a year more, and I promise that you will be able to fly. Believe in your big brother, I am definitely more accurate than second grandpa. He's old, it's normal that he can misjudge things." At this moment, a laughing Yang Mu and Shi Yan approached them.

"You brat." Yang Lao threw a glare at Yang Mu and just as he was about to curse him, he suddenly froze. He looked deeply at Shi Yan, and asked: "Boy, you must be Shi Yan?"

Shi Yan nodded with a smile.

"Shi Yan?" Yang Meng suddenly jumped and stood up. She giggled softly: "Ha, you're only in the Disaster realm, you're not

even as good as me. Now I'm not the worst one, haha."

In the Yang family, because Yang Meng was the youngest, her level of cultivation was the weakest, being only in the first sky of Earth realm. Every time she would be mocked by Yang Mu and the rest. Now that she suddenly discovered that Shi Yan was only in the Disaster realm, she immediately felt joyful inside. She clapped her hands together and smiled happily, pointing at Shi Yan, she said: "Hehe, you're not even as strong as I am, let's fight in the future. Don't worry, I'll hold back on you."

The children of the Yang family don't just cultivate endlessly. They often clashed together, and motivated each other, using real life fighting to gain experience.

Because of the existence of the Immortal Martial Spirit, the fights between Yang family children would not stop at a certain point. They often had blood spilling situations. Yang Meng was the weakest; In these years, every time she fought with Yang Mu and the others, she never got hurt because they would hold back. However, she had never won either.

She had long heard the news about Shi Yan's arrival. Now that she saw Shi Yan was here, and only in the Disaster realm, she immediately had the idea of getting some satisfaction through Shi Yan, and she immediately got happy.

The look in Yang Lao's eyes was deep, he stared at Shi Yan for a moment, then lightly nodded and smiled: "I heard that you are pretty good. Come come, let me see how good you are."

Shi Yan was stunned.

"Very easy." Yang Lao chuckled maliciously as four beams of bright light suddenly flew out of his palm. Those four beams of light abruptly sank into those four shackles, "Put on these shackles, and run around the pool five times. Haha, the second sky of Disaster realm, close enough, close enough."

The shackles that came off of Yang Meng, suddenly flew up and wrapped around Shi Yan.

"Haha, little Yan, Second Grandpa is testing you, don't disappoint him." Yang Mu laughed, and clapped: "I believe you definitely can pass. Second grandpa, if little Yan can run five laps, what prize do you have for him?"

"Prize?" The smile on Yang Lao's lips didn't change and he nodded, "Of course there is a prize, if he runs five full laps, I will call the shots and give him three Nutrition Pills. Haha, isn't this kid close with that girl from the Xia family? The Nutrition Pill has special effects for the Reincarnation Martial Spirit of the Xia family."

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly brightened.

He had about the Nutrition Pills from Xia Xinyan before, this was an elixir that could recover Profound Qi in a short period of time. Every time Xia Xinyan used her Reincarnation Martial Spirit, her body would be heavily damaged. In normal situations, she would need one to two months to recover. But if she had a Nutrition Pill, she would be able to recover overnight.

If Xia Xinyan had three more Nutrition Pills in her hand, then she would be able to use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit three more times without any damage.

Thinking about that, Shi Yan spread out his limbs and stood still. With a smile on his face, Shi Yan cooperatively let those shackles lock onto his limbs.

"Didn't know that you were a loverboy." Yang Lao chuckled, "But, if you want my Nutrition Pills, it won't be that easy. Not only do you have to run five full laps, I'm also timing you. I'll give you five minutes, if you can't finish in five minutes then I won't give you the Nutrition Pills."

"Five minutes?" Yang Meng's cute eyes blinked, "Grandpa, you're

so naughty. It's so hard to get something from your hands. When I just stepped into the Earth realm, dragging these four big things, took me a minute to run one lap around the pool. He's only in the second sky of Disaster realm."

"Your Great Grandpa said it before, this kid has excellent talents and his body is different from others." Yang Lao's eyes were gleaming with peculiar lights, he smiled: "Your Great Grandpa said that under the same realm, he is much stronger than you all. Hehe, if your Great Grandpa said that, then he must have his reasons. I believe there has to be something different on this kid, I'll wait and see."

Shi Yan was secretly surprised.

Yang Qingdi had never met him, but he seemed to know everything about him. He even knew that his body was different from others.

Could it be that Yang Qingdi really does know everything?

Shi Yan became more and more curious about this Great Grandpa that he had never met. He didn't know exactly how many magical powers he had, such that he could predict his well-being with just three drops of Immortal Blood.

"Little Yan, stop thinking about random things now. Prepare to use all the strength you've got." Yang Mu loved to see the world plunged into chaos, he laughed and said: "Remember, you only have five minutes. Don't hide your power, it's time to show them off."

"Kid, Start!" Yang Lao lightly shouted.

Without hesitating, Shi Yan roared and abruptly stirred the negative energies inside his meridians.

Chapter 206: I Bet!

"Dong, dong, dong, dong!"

Four disc-like irons were rolling over the edge of the pool like a tank. And it made the gravels swirl on the hard ground of the pool side. The irons grinded everything in their paths, leaving behind four long deep ravines.

With 2000 kg heavy weights tied to his arms and ankles, Shi Yan's body shrank slightly, before suddenly bursting with an extreme explosion.

The First Sky of Rampage.

Inside his meridians, negative energy boiled and filled his limbs, doubling his power at once.

The 2000 kg weight felt overwhelming when he dragged using his power, but it still couldn't stop him from moving forward.

As his strong body was running along the pond, the pond stirred with loud noise.

Although he was merely at the Second Sky of Disaster Realm, his body was incomparably strong. The Refine Skill of the Flame refined his body once again after the blood in the strange cave refine his body first, so he could adapt to the impact of all sorts of energies and utilize his power better.

After using the First Sky of Rampage, his body became much stronger than before; At that moment, the amount of energy inside Shi Yan's body equaled to that of an Earth Realm warrior!

Beside the pool, Yang Lao, Yang Mu, Yang Meng were all surprisedly gazing at Shi Yan running with all his effort.

This increase of energy in Shi Yan's body was apparently out of their expectation. The three, who were in doubt, were now in shock.

Hearing the noises, many Yang Family warriors came from other areas, and witnessed Shi Yan's stunning power.

Shi Yan had a rigid face. His strong muscles seemed to contain endless power. He felt inexhaustible after every dash.

After he came out from the volcano's core, this was the first time that he had bursted his power so smoothly. During his running, he felt every cell in his body come to life.

This was a huge shift in his body!

He clearly realized what benefit he got from that long period of ruthless training.

After his body was refined, his ribs and bones became much stronger, his limbs more agile, and his Profound Qi flew faster like a river.

Now he totally completely trusted the Ice Cold Flame!

In ancient times, warriors emphasized more on their body training than nowadays. To them, the body was the essential basis of martial arts. So they spent more time on body training than Qi refining.

Once the body reached a certain state, it could deliver overwhelming power in battles.

Among warriors at the same realm, those who possessed stronger body could easily beat those with weaker body.

Feeling the changes in his body, Shi Yan was so delighted that he made up his mind to make body refine as the main part of his martial training.

"Bang, bang, bang!"

Like a chariot, Shi Yan dashed forward and made a big stir in the pond, while gravels flew up in the sky.

He was drowning in inner happiness, and already forgot about his bet with Yang Lao. Now, he merely wanted to feel the changes

in his body and explore himself.

"Stop!"

Yang Lao yelled.

From his shout, Shi Yan woke up abruptly and looked at Yang Lao numbly, while his muscles were still shaking.

Yang Lao's eyes shone with bright light, and he nodded slowly with a surprised smile, "Five minutes! Seven loops! You really are a freak!"

"Haha! I knew this guy is special!" Yang Mu praised Shi Yan as he bursted out into laughter, "Otherwise, Great Grandpa wouldn't bother to orient his position with the Immortal Blood."

Yang Meng blinked her adorable eyes, and babbled, "Hmm! Another monster! Why are there so many freaks in the Yang Family!"

Shi Yan was surprised.

Yang Lao smiled briefly as he announced while scanning those on-watching warriors, "This is a new member of Yang Family. My third brother Yang Xiao's grandson, Shi Yan!"

"Young Master Yan!"

"Young Master Yan!"

"Young Master Yan!"

Those steady strong-built Yang warriors all began to cry out.

These people were all at high realms and were well-known in the Endless Sea. Yet they still obeyed the Yang Family not only for their history, but also for their every generation's incredible ability.

These obstinate warriors served the Yang Family because of its great power.

They watched for a while, and acknowledged Shi Yan. At the

Second Sky of Disaster Realm, with 2000 kg weights, he could run seven loops around the pond in merely five minutes!

That was literally unbelievable!

Shi Yan smiled. Although he hadn't operated the Rampage to the Second Sky. He believed, that if he pushed it to the Second Sky, his energy would again surge twice and thus he could run at least ten rounds around the pond.

"You win, kid. Take these three Heaven pills." Yang Lao shook his head and said smiling, "Kid, you won over me so soon. Hmm, I'm not a generous person. Be careful. I will let you suffer in later training."

After a brief smile, Shi Yan right away took the three pills and then grinned, "I'm not afraid of troubles."

"Yang blood does run in your body. You are something." Yang Lao praised with a smile, then looked away, "Now all of you get the F*ck away! you got nothing else to do?"

Those on-watching warriors then hurriedly left in embarrassment.

After those people left, Yang Lao frowned and a bit of worry appeared on his face, "Xia Shenchuan is still here. He would stop his training and will chase after you as soon as he heard you are here."

After a pause, Yang Lao gazed at him deeply, "Kid, be honest, can you really wake that gal Xia Xinyan? Don't be afraid, it's ok even if you can't. Xia Shenchuan can't do anything, except babbling for a while."

"It should be fine." Shi Yan pondered for a moment and replied with a serious face.

"No problem?" Yang Lao couldn't believe his ears, "Are you sure? You have to know, there was once another person who got the same injury as Xia Xinyan. The three powers in the Kyara sea tried

everything to save her, but failed in the end. Your great grandpa said, unless someone got a soul-related treasure that is suitable for her, we can't do anything."

Shi Yan was stunned as he realized that King Yang Qing already knew he got the Soul Gathering Pearl.

"I'm sure." Nodding his head, Shi Yan said, "I promise I will wake her up. She fell asleep because she wanted to save me. So, I will definitely wake her up."

Yang Lao stared at Shi Yan for a while, and seeing Shi Yan as a reliable man, he then nodded, "Ok, I will send someone to call Xia Shenchuan."

Then, he ordered loudly, and a warrior walked away quickly to a great mountain.

"Do you need any help?" Yang Lao pondered, "There are all sorts of rare materials and medicines in the Yang family, just name it. Even if we don't have it, we can fetch it for you. Your great grandpa told us, we should assist you on this."

Shi Yan shook his head with a smile, "Nothing but a quiet secret room."

Yang Lao was stunned and after a thought, he told Yang Mu, "Go to the No. One Mountain, and find a best crystal room."

"Ok." Yang Mu swaggered away.

"Your Great Grandpa is not at home this moment. And he took the Immortal Canon with him. After he's back, you just have to drop one blood into the canon and then you are officially a member of the Yang Family. Meanwhile, you will possess the Immortal Formula from the Immortal Canon." Yang Lao thought for a while, "Wake up Xia Xinyan first until then."

"Yeah, I know."

"Yang Lao!" Before long, from a nearby mountain, a dash of

bright light shot out, "I heard the kid Shi Yan has come back?" Xia Shenchuan's angry voice came before he even approached.

A tall, thin, white-bearded old man with a feathered cap suddenly stood still in front of Shi Yan, and he stared at Shi Yan with burning eyes, "You are Shi Yan?"

Shi Yan nodded with a embarrassed smile.

"Well, let me make it brief," Xia Shenchuan grunted, "If you can't wake Xinyan up, I won't spare you. But if she wakes up, I will let you go. As long as she wakes up."

"I will wake her up safe!" Shi Yan got serious, "I bet!"

"You do?"

"I do!"

Xia Shenchuan was a little surprised, as he couldn't understand why Shi Yan was so confident. However, he was expecting for it now as he nodded, "Do it then."

"Second Grandpa, it's all done." Yang Mu shouted from a cliff, "Xiao Yan, come over now."

"Let's go. Let me show you something."

With a smile, Yang Lao caught Shi Yan and flew out.

Chapter 207: Ancient Divine Blood

Deep inside the No. One divine mountain, six shining Stone Rooms showed up in front of Shi Yan.

Each one of the Stone Room was made of complete crystals, containing dense divine auras which were flowing out from the crystal walls like brooks.

The Profound Crystal! The Top grade Profound Crystal!

The Profound Crystal was divided into Low-grade, Medium-grade, High and Top-grades. Top-grade Profound Crystals could only be found at the center of a crystal quarry.

A fist-like Top-grade Profound Crystal was quite rare in the Endless Sea, valued equal to a Soul Level treasure!

But inside the divine mountains, the six Stone Rooms were all made of complete Profound Crystal!

Appalling!

Shi Yan's eyes were shining with marvel. He was gazing at the six Profound Crystal Stone Room in awe.

Dense natural aura kept diffusing out from the crystal walls. Just after taking one smell of it, Shi Yan felt his Profound Qi grow heavier.

"OMG!" Shi Yan was astounded.

"In the nine divine mountains, there are fifty four Stone Rooms made up of complete Profound Crystal for the Yang Family members to train in." Yang Mu looked proud as he explain about the stone rooms, "The nine mountains form a natural pattern that gathers the auras between the earth and the sky. They are the miracles of the Endless Sea after thousands of years of cultivation. We fought for hundreds years and killed numerous people to obtain the nine Divine Mountains!"

"Training in the Stone Room for one day equals to one year of training outside!" Yang Lao beamed, "Every generation of Yang Family protects the divine mountains as they help us produce experts faster! As long as we own the nine divine mountains, the Yang Family will hold the dominant position in the Endless Sea! Even after a hundred or a thousand years, we Yang Family will still dominate the Endless Sea!"

Shi Yan nodded slightly.

To train inside a Stone Room made of Profound Crystal, one didn't need to concentrate his profound Qi. Instead, all he has to do is to breathe the divine aura here, refine it, and then his profound Qi would become much denser.

The profound Qi he could gather in a day equaled to that of a man training for one year.

At that moment, Shi Yan finally knew why the Yang Family members cultivated to the Disaster and Earth Realm so easily.

At Elementary, Nascent and Human Realms, one's progress was directly correlated to the speed at which one can concentrate his Profound Qi. As long as one's profound Qi was dense enough, it was easy to advance to another realm.

With the unique Profound Crystal walled Stone Room, Yang Family warriors found it easy to breakthrough from Elementary, Nascent and Human Realms; they could cross over the three realms easily.

However, common warriors needed great effort to concentrate Profound Qi and to train little by little for ten or more years to reach Human Realm. And finally, after their consciousness was strengthened, then they could reach Disaster Realm.

Yang Family warriors cultivated ten times faster than others!

Although Disaster, Earth, and Nirvana Realms demanded a lot on one's mind and wisdom, with enough Profound Qi, one's

consciousness could easily breakthrough. Which meant that after the Disaster Realm, Yang Family warriors took great advantages in concentrating their Profound Qi!

In the fifty four Stone Rooms in the nine divine mountains, fifty four warriors could quickly concentrate their Profound Qi, and being accompanied with all sorts of secret treasures of Yang Family, even they would find it hard to slow down their path.

"The nine divine mountains are the essence of our Yang Family." Yang Lao smiled, "The nine divine mountains formed a natural pattern and absorbed the auras between the sky and the earth. There is always inexhaustible auras in the Stone Rooms."

"Xiao Yan, if only you had come back years earlier! You would now be higher than the Second Sky of Disaster Realm." Yang Mu giggled, "But it's not too late. You, kid, are lucky and not too far behind. If you train hard, it will be easy for you to advance to another Realm with all sorts of treasures in the Yang family."

"Where's Xia Xinyan?" Shi Yan took a deep breath, controlled his mood, and then asked while frowning.

"Inside there." Yang Mu smiled, "That gal normally wouldn't be allowed inside the room if were not for this one exception; only direct offsprings and core ministers of the Yang Family are allowed to enter the Stone Rooms."

Xia Shenchuan was beyond the divine mountain, and he couldn't enter it either. As the master of the Xia Family, he knew the laws of the Yang Family; the divine mountains was the forbidden area.

"Kid, go wake up Xia Xinyan now. Don't worry, we will deliver meals for you everyday, including glossy ganoderma, demon beast meat, and all sorts of great food, to make sure that you get enough nutrition." Yang Lao smiled.

Shi Yan nodded, "Then I will enter now."

"Go now. The Stone Rooms are a forbidden area for others, but to

us, they are merely rooms for training. Leave everything behind you. Send messages through that pipe and we will arrange everything for you." Yang Lao introduced.

Shi Yan felt that he was meticulously taken care of.

Here, the Yang Family provided him with the best place for practice.

He could get whatever he wanted here. Instead of other trivial things, all he needed to do was to concentrate on training. Looking at the shining Stone Room, Shi Yan knew why the Yang Family was so powerful.

Under Yang Lao and Yang Mu's gaze, Shi Yan slowly walked into one of the crystal-walled Stone Room. At once, the door was closed from outside.

Inside the crystal-walled Stone Room, the auras were flowing like a river even in the air. One could smell and see it.

Without doing anything, he could feel his Profound Qi was increasing little by little. It really is, an optimal place for practice.

The Stone Room was not quite spacious---about 20 square meters. At its centre a crystal stone bed was placed on which Xia Xinyan was lying on her back in white clothing.

There were vague life fluctuations on her body and white light was shining on her delicate smooth face.

Long eyelashes covered her clear eyes. Inside her perfect body, wisps of Profound Qi were flowing in disorder.

Without any consciousness, Xia Xinyan looked like a dead body even though she was still breathing and She didn't know that Shi Yan was beside her.

His consciousness silently flew into the Blood Vein Ring.

"Seven days ago, You said that we could absorb the soul power in the Soul Gathering Pearl." Shi Yan injected his spirit into the Blood

Vein Ring, "Now I have the time to absorb the soul power. You said the soul power can wake her up. Tell me what to do."

"Huh? It's so strange here!" The Ice Cold Flame's message rippled out from the Blood Vein ring slowly, "Although my power is sealed by the ring, I can still feel the dense natural energy here. It is the best place for you human warriors to train in. You are a lucky dog. How did you find it here?"

"None of your business." Shi Yan frowned, "Tell me, what do I do to wake her up?"

"Very simple."

Without hesitation the Ice Cold Flame started telling him what to do, "Just wipe away the white vein on the Soul Gathering Pearl and put both your fingers on it, after that you can feel pure soul power from it. Hmm, this woman has lost her consciousness, so you have to wrap the soul power with your spirit power and then inject it into her mind, so that it can nourish her soul. Don't worry, it is easy to absorb the pure soul power. Her remaining soul will soon gather once it is nourished by the soul power." The Ice Cold Flame elaborated it to Shi Yan.

But then it became disappointed, "I was sealed by that damn ring; I don't think in my current situation I can still get my share of the soul power. Remember our deal, you should keep my part for me."

"Got it." Shi Yan's mouth quivered.

"Oh, by the way, you can drop one drop of your blood to the Soul Gathering Pearl, which will make the soul power delivered to the woman to have your smell. After she has gathered her soul, she will have your smell inside her. Wherever she is, you will know her exact position."

"It does no harm to her?"

"Not at all."

"Good."

Shi Yan nodded, and then nibbled his finger tip until a drop of crimson blood fell onto the Soul Gathering Pearl.

Shining Black Light gushed out from the Soul Gathering Pearl. In an instant, the black light wrapped Shi Yan all over.

Meanwhile, the water-like auras in the crystal-walled Stone Room gushed toward the Soul Gathering Pearl crazily.

"Ah! Your, your blood! How could it be!" The Ice Cold Flame sent a surprised message in haste, "This, this is ancient divine blood!"

Chapter 208: Magical Effects of the Divine Blood

Ancient Divine Blood!

The message from the Ice Cold Flame made Shi Yan stunned. He stood there at a loss of what to do for a while.

In the stone chamber adorned with crystal wall, rich auras crazily swarmed into the Soul Gathering Pearl continuously. Gradually, the Soul Gathering Pearl became sparkling and crystal-clear, revolving on Shi Yan's palm. A plume of visible crystal light, which could be observed with naked eye, revealed on the pearl surface little by little.

When a third of the auras in the stone chamber disappeared into the Soul Gathering Pearl, the drop of Shi Yan's blood became too weak to perceive.

Not until this moment did the auras in the stone chamber stopped flowing.

Everything returned back to normal, except the glittering Soul Gathering Pearl. As many auras went into soul Gathering Pearl, it brought wonderful changes to it. Its surface texture became more close-grained.

"What is the Ancient Divine Blood?"

"I don't know either." After a short silence, Ice Cold Flame said again, "The Extreme Refining Skill you practice was from a nutty blacksmith. I got the information of Ancient Divine Blood from him as well. He obtained a page of an ancient incomplete book. It says in ancient times, there were three prime God Kings whose blood had special effects. As the blood of three God Kings had different infinite magical effects, so it was called Divine Blood. The blacksmith had no idea about the specific effect of their Divine Blood. But what he knew was once the divine blood falls into

treasures and weapons, it would immediately cause mutations like driving the auras around and let them crazily get into the treasures and weapons."

"As long as the descendants of the Three God Kings have the Divine Blood Inheritance, they would have the similar magic effects. Once the Soul Gathering Pearl has been refined by Earth Fire, the souls in it would form a pure soul power, what makes Soul Gathering Pearl loses the ability to absorb souls and becomes a container for spirit power."

"However, as you entered a drop of blood, the internal structure of the Soul Gathering Pearl seemed to quietly change, after it absorbed the Natural Auras. Now the Soul Gathering Pearl is showing signs of reviving. Unfortunately, your blood is not pure. Only the essential blood can be called Divine Blood. If the Soul Gathering Pearl absorbs the genuine Divine Blood, it will be able to completely recover according to its characteristics."

"If you refine your blood into the Divine Blood, you can integrate your blood into the treasures and weapons according to the ancient incomplete book from the blacksmith. It can make any damaged treasures and weapons recover. Your Divine Blood can repair any treasures and weapons. Once you manage to refine your blood into the Divine Blood, you can make Soul Gathering Pearl regain its ability of absorbing souls..."

The Ice Cold Flame explained slowly, and instilled in Shi Yan the knowledge of Ancient Divine Blood it knew.

Shi Yan was dazed for a while, staring blankly at the Soul Gathering Pearl in his hand with a strange expression.

Immortal Martial Spirit!

The Ancient Divine Blood should belong to the Immortal Martial Spirit. And the Immortal Martial Spirit could recover the human body. It was said when refine to the most esoteric realm, Immortal Martial Spirit can recover the human body and come to life with

merely one drop of essential blood.

Obviously, the abnormality of the divine blood in his body was related to the Immortal Martial Spirit.

But it was beyond his imagination that the blood could actually repair all the treasures and weapons, and let the useless ones regain their effectiveness.

This was a rather miraculous special effect.

In the Grace Mainland, most warriors who were born with a silver spoon have all kinds of treasures and weapons in their hands.

In this world, treasures and weapons were the lifeblood of warriors. When people engaged in battles, treasures and weapons may get damaged during bombardments and collisions. And then lose their effectiveness.

Once treasures and weapons turned into junks, even the best blacksmiths can hardly repair them, so they can only forge new ones.

When his blood was refined into divine blood, he can inject it into treasures and weapons with arcane methods, which could made them recover in a short time. The effect were very extraordinary.

Immortal blood! Immortal blood!



Shi Yan's eyes suddenly lighted up. He recalled that Emperor Yangqing had entered a drop of essential blood into Yanghai's body, and even after several decades he could still get Yanghai's location through that drop of immortal blood. Some time ago, Emperor Yangqing used three drops of immortal blood to calculate Shi Yan's life and death, and then sent Mo Duanhun to the Clouds Island to find him.

Obviously, Emperor Yangqing had known how to refine the immortal blood and the magical effect of the immortal blood.

After thinking about this, Shi Yan recollected himself. He glanced down at the Soul Gathering Pearl and communicated with Ice Cold Flame: "Got it. Now I begin to drive pure soul power in Soul Gathering Pearl to Xia Yinyan's soul. Well, for final confirmation. There will be nothing wrong with one extra drop of my blood in Soul Gathering Pearl, right?"



"Sure!"

Shi Yan put his mind at ease finally.

Looking at the beauty in the bed, Shi Yan's eyes showed his sorrow. He gently helped her up, and get on the stone bed at the same time, sitting cross-legged face to face with her.

With Soul Gathering Pearl in one hand, Shi Yan reached out the other hand to hold her slim cold hand, placing it on Soul Gathering Pearl.

Slowly closing his eyes, Shi Yan held his breath, concentrated his mind and then put a wisp of consciousness into the Soul Gathering Pearl.

He felt the soul power babbled, like streams flowed gently in Soul Gathering Pearl. As soon as he put his consciousness into Soul Gathering Pearl, immediately he got a wonderful feeling, as if the soul power inside came under his control.

According to the method Ice Cold Flame said, he let his consciousness lead the soul power in Soul Gathering Pearl and tried to pull it out of the pearl.

It was done with no difficulty. Under the guidance of his mental consciousness, a wisp of pure soul power, like a brand new bright filament, was taken out from Soul Gathering Pearl without stagnation, and quietly dived into the Xia Xinyan' cold palm.

Cheerfully, Shi Yan led this wisp of pure soul power to the brain of Xia Xinyan's with his consciousness slowly.

This wisp of soul power went along the meridian line of her arms, passed through her white slender neck, paused for a while and then went into her brain area.

Boom!

When Shi Yan's consciousness went into her brain area, Shi Yan had a quake in mind. Dimly, he felt himself fell into a soul battleground.

A variety of quick and forceful soul powers suddenly emerged in large numbers from her mind sea with full of hostility and unexpectedly appeared like they want to kill the wisp of Shi Yan's consciousness.

Shi Yan's facial expression remained unchanged. He had heard of the situation such as this from Ice Cold Flame.

He took back his consciousness from the mind of Xia xinyan's with lightning-fast speed.

Nevertheless, the pure soul power which was led by his consciousness, had easily reached Xia xinyan's mind sea, owing to the guidance of his consciousness before.

Suddenly, a strong soul force was released from Xia xinyan's brain. The soul wave was overwhelming with extremely violent rage, like a soul storm which can kill any soul within a second.

Looking Calm and unhurried, Shi Yan tightly held the Soul Gathering Pearl and made his consciousness enter an empty state.

At this moment, Shi Yan's soul seemed to be invisible. The soul storm from Xia Xinyan raged in the stone chamber for a while, and gradually subsided.

When Shi Yan could not detect any more abnormalities, he refined another wisp of spiritual consciousness by the same way

and brought it into Xia Xinyan's brain region.

Every time his consciousness went into her brain region, a violent soul storm would immediately come out from her body with instinctual conflict emotions.

And at this time, Shi Yan would not fight it head-on. He would hide all the consciousness rapidly, even his own soul breath, in accordance with the method from Ice Cold Flame.

Until her soul counterattack disappeared, Shi Yan began to bring out more soul powers and lead into her brain zone again.

Shi Yan was not impatient, and continued doing it little by little, again and again.

Gradually, he found that along with the constant injection of the soul power, the soul counterattack from Xia Xinyan had begun to reduce by degrees.

A delighted smile appeared on his face quietly. He knew that this method from the Ice Cold Flame worked.

With the injection of those pure soul powers, those scattered fragments of Xia Xinyan's consciousness had been gathering slowly. Xia Xinyan seemed to have a weak self-consciousness, and seemed to know about her current situation gradually.

Feeling relieved, Shi Yan didn't dare to hesitate, he sent more pure soul powers into Xia Xinyan's mind sea.

Time flew imperceptibly.

Finally one day, when Shi Yan was taking a wisp of soul power into her brain zone, but did not perceive any counterattacks from her soul. She did not instinctively let her soul power break out and make attacks on Shi Yan.

As the soul power was taken in, Xia Xinyan's consciousness showed signs of waking.

Meanwhile, her slender white hand that were on the Soul

Gathering Pearl unexpectedly produced a weak absorption power...

Shi Yan clearly felt a soul power in Soul Gathering Pearl. It initiated and flew out and slowly went toward Xia Xinyan's arm, as if led by something.

Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes.

In front of him, the beauty with rosy cheeks, was breathing evenly. Although she was still frowning, but at least she had some expressions on her unlike before.

-- She was subconsciously absorbing the soul power for her soul recovery.

Shi Yan immediately came to this conclusion.

Knowing this, Shi Yan could rest assured, realizing that the soul power that went into Xia Xinyan's brain zone had begun to play its due role.

"Done" Ice Cold flame sent the message over. "From now on, she has learned how to absorb the soul power inside the Soul Gathering Pearl on her own. You don't need to guide her any more. Well, you can finally work on your own business. Now, I will tell you how to evolve your consciousness and turn it into Soul consciousness through the absorption of the soul power. Then you can gather Soul consciousness to form your Sea of Consciousness."

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly lit up.

Chapter 209: Forming the Sea of Consciousness

In the mountains of the Yang family.

Shi Yan and Xia Xinyan were sitting cross-legged face to face. Between them, the Soul Gathering Pearl was pure soul power as it flew along their arms, necks, and lastly to their brains.

In the Soul Gathering Pearl, the water-like power of the soul was reducing.

Time flew. Suddenly, half year passed.

Shi Yan held his breath, as his forehead started shining. As strong soul fluctuations came out from his brain, and then slowly started spreading through the entire stone chamber.

It's a crucial moment.

According to the Ice Cold Flame, he had been absorbing the power of the Soul Gathering Pearl for half a year. Shi Yan felt himself full of spirit power with all the spirit power he has absorbed this past half year. His spiritual sensitivity could even cover a radius of hundred miles.

As he was absorbing the Soul power, his spirit power also grew several times not reducing in speed until today.

His spirit power increased by a large amount. Shi Yan never stopped focusing on condensing his spirit power. He combined a thousand strings of spirit power into one. In his brain, the spirit power was like hundreds of thousands of thin strings. Under the control of his mind, these hundreds of thousands of spirit strings combined into one thousand.

On this day, the spirit power in his mind had coalesced into several hundreds of strings after re-organizing.

Under his control, several hundred strings of spirit power were

injected into the soul stigma. Those strong spirit power went into a sudden contraction.

Shi Yan clearly saw the sudden changes of the spirit power in his brain.

His spirit power was flashing. Inside it, all of his his life experiences were stored.

Shi Yan could watch any scene of his past just like watching a movie, by drowning his mind into his spirit power.

The past seemed to be replayed.

Those spirit power deeply imprinted his life experience, and seemed to be a microcosm of his life.

In this process, his soul seemed to have sublimated, indulging in the spirit power.

At one moment, lightning seemed to jump out from his spirit power. The spirit power gradually became unclear. A strange energy fluctuation began to overflow from it. A mysterious change was happening quietly.

Shi Yan suddenly felt like he owned countless eyes! He seemed to have more souls!

Wonderful feelings came into the heart. His spirit power suddenly combined together even before he realized it.

In his brain, wisps of Profound Qi power gradually formed a Sea of Consciousness!

The Sea of Consciousness!

In his brain, wisps of Soul consciousness combined, and then became a Sea of Consciousness about one square meter in size.

He could see the little Sea of Consciousness and strong fluctuations in his mind, and his deeply imprinted memories among the Sea of Consciousness,.

He could see every experience of his past life!

As long as he wanted to see it, the Sea of Consciousness would become a screen, showing his past clearly.

Gradually, his head stopped shining. Everything seemed to return to normal.

Unknowingly, the Soul Gathering Pearl had stopped blinking and it appeared as if it has lost all the soul power.

The clear soul power formed by thousands of souls had been spent out after their continuous absorption.

Suddenly, Shi Yan opened his eyes.

As he willed, the Sea of Consciousness formed a strange wave. The soul spirit quickly spread in all directions.

Wherever his Soul consciousness passed, the mountains, the grass, demon beasts, palaces, a lot of Yang warriors, all kinds of scenes occurred in his Sea of Consciousness.

The small Sea of Consciousness divided into numerous images. Each image corresponded to a scene of outside world.

Shi Yan was stunned and a strange expression formed on his face.

When he released his Sea of Consciousness and soul consciousness, it gave him a very wonderful understanding.

The soul that he released was like intangible cameras or satellites that recorded all the scenes. Everything was revealed to him like on a screen.

With a weird smile, Shi Yan was sitting on the stone bed with his eyes shining.

After his Sea of Consciousness was formed, the martial practice had a magical effect, which was totally out of his expectation.

He knew that the Nirvana Realm warriors could sense the surroundings. However, he felt that their feeling did not have such

clarity.

However, now he also had the Sea of Consciousness and Soul consciousness. Which put him in an inexplicably happy mood.

He believed that his present ability could make him god in his previous world.

He stood still in his place, but he could still see everything miles away.

And That was not all!

The Sea of Consciousness changed again, and then suddenly attacked the crystal wall.

In the air, the aura of the world formed into white mist. Obviously it was under the attack of some invisible force. In the faint white mist, there was a vacuum from which a bunch of power suddenly shot out.

"Puff!"

This wave of Soul consciousness impact fell on top of that crystal wall, and the crystal wall conveyed a sound of clash.

A glint of happiness flashed across Shi Yan's eyes.

As expected.

Since the Soul consciousness had formed, he could now directly attack his enemy's soul.

Soul consciousness was different from spirit power. Although it was invisible, it can still used to perform strong soul attacks.

In time of need, it could be soft as hair and hard as a steel needle. It had direct destructive power to the soul!

Shi Yan sat on the stone bed with smiles on his face, using the power of Soul consciousness and Sea of Consciousness to gain insight into the changes again and again.

"Congratulations, you successfully formed the Sea of

Consciousness." The Ice Cold Flame sent the message from the ring, "However, you seem to have used all the power of the soul of Soul Gathering Pearl. What about the share you promised me?"

Shi Yan smiled bitterly, "I am sorry. When I was in practice, I totally forgot about this. The power of souls ran out while I wasn't conscious of the fact. Hum! You said, I do not have to use much power of the soul, but why did I end up using all of it?"

Ice Cold Flame thought for a moment and then said, "You have great potential. But you used more soul power than I imagined; you absorbed 60 percent of the soul power. Now, your sea of consciousness has expanded greatly. After absorbing, both your Sea of Consciousness and Soul consciousness have become strong. And as your girl's level is higher than you, she absorbed rest of the soul power, so I lost a lot. "

"Well, you said my blood can make the Soul Gathering Pearl absorb souls again?" Shi Yan also felt a little embarrassed, "So Once the Soul Gathering Pearl is restored, I will continue to gather more soul power. Next time, I will share some power of the soul with you. Is that ok?"

Ice Cold Flame was also helpless, "All right. But I hope you remember our agreement. That's all."

Shi Yan nodded and agreed immediately.

"Your woman, she's going to wake up..." The Ice Cold Flame said.

Shi Yan felt happy and immediately stopped communicating with the Ice Cold Flame, and then looked at Xia Xinyan.

From her eyebrows, that were slightly wrinkled as her long eyelashes slightly shook and her lips that were gently parted, she seemed to be waking up from the dream.

Shi Yan looked focused, even a little nervous.

Gradually, the soul of Xia Xinyan fluctuated, and then restored smoothly, causing her delicate face to become ruddy.

Even at this moment, she was still elegant with a sternly inviolable elegance.

Shi Yan was looking at this beauty with soft eyes and a smiling mouth.

After a long time, Xia Xinyan gently opened her eyes. Her bright eyes shone like the star, deep like the sea, as she quietly stared at Shi Yan.

"It's nice to see you again." Her mouth was curled in an elegant curvature as she said softly with a smile.

"Xinyan, you are fine." Shi Yan took a deep breath. His face was rippling gentle smiles as he jumped down from the stone bed, reached out his hand and then said, "Now walk. Carefully make sure that there is nothing wrong. Tell me if you feel something is wrong."

Xia Xinyan smiled, and gently shook her head, but still obediently put her hand out to Shi Yan, letting him pull her down from the stone bed.

Her perfect body walked a few steps in the stone room gracefully. With a smile on her beautiful face, she softly said, "I'm okay. I have also advanced into the Second Sky of Earth Realm."

Shi Yan stunned at first, but then immediately greeted, "Congratulations."

Xia Xinyan nodded, "Our bet still works. Before you beat me, hehe, be quiet." Then she withdrew her hand which was held by Shi Yan. She raised her eyebrows slightly, and then provoked him, "You have to work hard! If not, I will not promise you anything."

"Don't worry. I won't keep you waiting." Shi Yan grinned with a confident face, "I will become better than you soon!"

"Still bragging." Xia Xinyan smiled, "Don't brag. Prove it as soon as possible."

"I will."

Chapter 210: You're Really Something

When Shi Yan and Xia Xinyan came out from the cave, many warriors from Yang family were surprised and excitement can be clearly seen on their faces.

The news about the relationship between Shi Yan and Xia Xinyan had already been spread out these days.

Many old warriors from the Yang family knew that many years ago, there was someone from the Xia family who had the same symptoms as Xia Xinyan, at that time the head of the three big families in the Kyara sea gathered their wisdom but failed to wake up that Xia warrior and resulted the warrior died early.

After Xia Shenchuan brought Xia Xinyan to the Immortal island, he caused trouble a few times, so the warriors from Yang family all knew that Xia Xinyan, the pride from the Xia family new generation also suffered from the same symptoms and it was probably impossible to wake her up

And now, Shi Yan and Xia Xinyan came out side by side, which made everyone surprised and speechless.

The problem that even can't be solved by the heads from the three big families, was now solved by Shi yan, which no one knew what method he used to make Xia Xinyan wake up?

There are huge doubts in everyone minds and they looked sluggish at Shi Yan

Soon, Yang Lao and Xia Shenchuan received the message and also rushed over, gathering at Shi Yan side.

Xia Shenchuan couldn't believe his own eyes, after staring at Xia Xinyan for a long time, his body gently trembled, and he nodded: "Good... good... finally you woke up."

"Grandpa." Xia Xinyan smiled and said: "I'm fine, also, I have broken through into the second sky of Earth realm."

"What?"

Xia Shenchuan was shocked again and immediately used his spirit power to examine Xia Xinyan body, After that his smile became even more broader as he nodded: "Good, good girl, I knew that you will be showered with blessings once you escape this disaster, Hahahaha."

"Brother Xia, now you are satisfied right ?" Yang Lao smiled: "Now you won't force this kid to take responsibility right ? Hehehe!"

"Hahaha" Xia Shenchuan smiled and nodded, which his eyes were looking at Shi Yan: "Brat, you're really something, the problem that even your Great-Grandfather can't solve was solved by you, good, good, next time, if our family encounters this kind of trouble again, looks like we need your help to solve it, hahaha, good good!"

Shi Yan was stunned at first, but then he shook his head and said: "Don't! this time was merely luck, and also my secret treasure is already gone, if there is a similar situation in next time, I also can't do anything"

"No no, you definitely can solve it" Xian Shenchuan laughed "As long as you tell us the method, no matter what kind of secret treasure, the Xia family will re-refine it"

"Some of the secret treasure can't be refined out, they are naturally formed." Shi Yan appeared helpless, "Anyway, if there is a similar situation next time, don't rely on me, I also can't solve it."

"You brat." Xia Xinyan glared at him and she seems a little angry, "Why are you always making excuses?"

"This time, it was merely due to luck." Shi Yan smiled, "It's not like I don't want to help, in fact, the secret treasure that I have, already can't be used again"

"Forget it." Xia Shenchuan waved his hand and said: "We, the Xia family shouldn't be so unfortunate. After going back, I will tell

them to don't let something like this happen again. Xinyan, you just entered the second sky of the Earth realm, so you need to return, there is some martial skill that you need to learn as soon as possible, otherwise it may be bad for you."

His word made Shi Yan and Xia Xinyan startled.

"If I have known about this earlier, I would have stayed in the stone room for some time." In front of Xia Shenchuan, Shi Yan said to Xia Xinyan, "You say?"

Xia Xinyan cheeks became red, and she dropped head down without saying anything.

"Hoo! " Yang Lo laughed and he looks very excited

Yang Mu, Yang Meng, and the others Yang family were also staring at those two, with a strange expression on their faces.

Xia Shenchuan was stunned for a moment, and then he quickly looked at Shi Yan and Xia Xinyan, then he suddenly calm down.

In the Kyara Sea, Xia Xinyan was famous for being cold, she never put anyone who in same age with her in her eyes. And in her heart, there was only Xia family and cultivation.

Over the years, the men from every corner of the Kyara Sea came in pursuit of Xia Xinyan, even the genius young men in the other sea also coveted Xia Xinyan's beauty and often wandered to the Xia family just to get a glance of Xia Xinyan and catch her attention.

However, no matter who, and no matter how outstanding he was, Xia Xinyan never thought about them.

Even the leader of the new generations from the Evil Wonderland, Xie Kui, admired her for many years but there was never a slightest progress, which made him very unhappy.

In the Kyara sea, Xia Xinyan can be described as a misty cloud mountain, which can't be climbed, and only can be looked up from afar by the young men.

Even Yang Ke and the others from Yang family were also obsessed with Xia Xinyan for some time but didn't receive any attention, and at last, they gave up.

Now, because of some words from Shi Yan, this ice cold beauty's face blushed, which surprised everyone.

"Ahem, ahem!" Xia Shenchuan coughed, although he was slightly upset but because Shi Yan helped her granddaughter to wake up, so he didn't show it, and only said: "Ah, since the problem is solved, then we will leave now, come on"

"Wait a minute" Shi yan suddenly shouted.

"Brat, don't push your luck!" Xia Shenchuan said, "Although you saved her, but don't think something can happen between you two, my granddaughter is going to inherit the chair of the head of Xia family in the future, so there will be no chance of an affair. Even if she is going to marry, the groom has to bear my family surname and the baby born in the future will also bear our Xia family surname."

Xia Xinyan's blushing face slowly faded away, and in her eyes, a trace of sadness and sorrow appeared.

From childhood, she was taught to don't have an affair. In the future, she was going to inherit the chair of the Xia family head, even if she was going to have children, it will be arranged by the Xia family, and the groom needs to bear Xia surname.

Because of this, she never thought about having love affair in the Kyara sea

Because she knows that her future isn't up to her to decide it

"Hmph! " Yang Lao snorted, he was upset but didn't say anything

Shi Yan also frowned, his eyes gradually became gloomy and from Xia Xinyan expression, he saw the helplessness.

At this time, he knew that everything he said will be ignored, not

only it won't change Xia Shenchuan original intention, instead it will only leave a bad impression in Xia Shenchuan heart. And Xia Xinyan might have a difficult time because of this and it may even affect the long friendly relations between Xia family and Yang family.

He knew that if he wants to get Xia Xinyan, there is only one way, one day, he, Shi Yan will prove his ability and take over the Xia family

So the entire Xia family can only overlook him.

After a deep breath, Shi Yan face became normal. With a smile, he took out three nutrition pills that he won from Yang Lao, stepped forward to pass it to her and softly said: "These are three nutrition pills, next time if you are forced to use the reincarnation martial spirit, these nutrition pills can protect you for three times."

Xia Xinyan was a little happy as her bright eyes moved, and she secretly looked at Xia Shenchuan.

Xia Shenchuan was looking at the sky, his mouth was slightly pulled a bit and he looked indifferent, but he didn't stop her from accepting those three nutrition pills.

In the entire Kyara sea, only Yang family can refine the nutrition pill, even in the Yang family, this nutrition pill was very rare as only the direct descendants from Yang family and Shura King have the qualification to hold it. And Xia Shenchuan knew about the magical effects of the nutrition pill on the reincarnation martial spirit.

If replaced with another pill, maybe Xia Shenchuan will scold and stop her. However, for nutrition pill, this was difficult to do so.

"Thank you" Xia Xinyan was tacit. She can glimpse an approval from Xia Shenchuan expression and then received it with a thanks.

"Take care." Shi yan looked at her deeply and softly said: "Remember our promise"

Xia Xinyan face blushed again as bowed her head. She softly said: "Yes"

"Let's go." Xia Shenchuan was again upset. He didn't want her granddaughter to be too close with Shi Yan. With a slightly snort, they flew up as he held Xia Xinyan and then turned into a light which rushed into the clouds.

"Brat, you are really something." Yang Loa smiled and patted on Shi Yan's shoulder, "If you really can get that girl, then that old ghost Xia will definitely cry with tearless grief, hahaha, good good, you have my old style."

"Xiao Yanzi, this!" Yang Mu threw a thumb as he was amazed too: "In the Kyara sea, Xia Xinyan is like a goddess, many people covet her beauty, but she never blushed in front of anyone; You brat, you are really great, no wonder the great grandpa thinks highly of you."

"Brother Yan, I support you!" Yang Meng also cheered with a smile: "Sister Xia is so beautiful, she is the most beautiful girl in our Kyara sea, this kind of beauty should be subdued by us. Hahaha, brother Ke and the others were disappointing, at that time, I also despised them. I didn't expect that brother Yan is so great, you just came here, and already hooked sister Xia, you are really great."

"Hooked?" Shi yan smiled and shook his head: "You little girl, stop talking nonsense, I was using my charm to conquer her."

"It was same, anyway, the result is you guys can be together, hehe." Yang Meng laughed, and she behaved more and more like Shi Yan.

The warriors from the Yang family on the side also exposed an admiring expression, when they looked at Shi Yan. For them to be

able to get Xia Xinyan's heart was greater than waking her up.

Shi Yan was stunned, he didn't think that Xia Xinyan was like an inaccessible cloud mountain in the Kyara sea. The affair between him and Xia Xinyan meant that the cloud mountain already laid down a ladder to let him climb onto the peak.

"Brat, follow me, I will take you to see the demon beast that your great grandfather wanted you to tame." Yang Lao suddenly shouted.

Shi Yan became excited.

Chapter 211: Beast Ghost

Shi Yan followed Yang Lao, as the two headed for a valley between the two holy mountains.

When there were still some miles away, Shi Yan faintly felt a wave of ferocious and evil consciousness from the valley.

Above the valley, an extremely strong demon energy and Underworld dark energy came through unusual thick indigo and black clouds. The two totally different flavors singularly gathered together and both seemed to be coming from a monster.

"Howl!"

As if it felt someone was approaching, a loud roar that can shake heaven and earth was heard from the valley all of a sudden.

Just as the roar came out, varieties of captive demon beasts in the nearby valley prostrated on the ground in succession, they looked quite scared and didn't dare to straighten up.

"What a fierce thing!" Yang Lao whispered with a helpless face, "It's exhausting just to keep this demon beast. In only a year and a half, this demon beast had eaten nearly a hundred level three and level four demon beasts. If we didn't have abundant financial resources, we can hardly afford to keep it."

Shi Yan was aghast.

Even at the Kyara Sea, level three and level four demon beasts were considered precious. But this thing was able to devour so many high level demon beasts in only one and a half year. Just from that, it could be imagined how fierce this demon beast was. It must be not easy to deal with.

Its roar made even Yang Mu's Double-Headed Dragon hesitate and it remained stagnant with apparent fear.

The Double-headed Dragon was the a level six demon beast. In

Yan Family, the demon beasts at this level were already hard enough to tame. As they were even fiercer than Cyan Blood Bat. In the past, just a roar from this Double-Headed Dragon would let all the demon beasts in the nearby vicinity shiver. It was unexpected that there would be a demon beast that could make Double-headed Dragon stop his movements.

Yang Mu had to get off from his Double-Headed Dragon, and he gave Shi Yan a bitter smile, "Little Yan, as you can see, the thing is much harder to deal with. Alas! I really do not know what my grandpa is really thinking. Letting you tame it really is a joke. Even I tremble with terror when I meet that thing."

Shi Yan became more surprised.

"Let's go! Don't let that thing look down on us." Yang Lao said as he sneered, "Since we, Yan Family, can suppress it, we certainly have the way to deal with it. We've consumed so many resources on it. They must be paid back without doubt."

Shi Yan slightly nodded with a cool face and said: "I am really looking forward to it."

"Be careful with it! Otherwise, instead of taming it, you would be devoured by it." Yang Meng's little face was full of worries, "It's really not the thing to be trifled with. You must be discreet. If not so, you actually might be eaten with carelessness. Last time I was so frightened by its strong aura that I became unable to move, when I was not even close to it."

"Howl!"

In the valley, the roar of the demon beast resounded again. It seemed to be extremely unhappy with humans' approaching. Once it smells a humans' scent, it immediately showed its ferocious side.

As long as common warriors heard its fierce roar, most of them would tremble with terror and become afraid to get close.

Even Shi Yan was frowning and holding breath. He dared not let

his down guard.

Following Yang Lao's, Shi Yan arrived at the place between the two mountains.

The ground was littered with huge bones. They were obviously bones of demon beasts.

In the valley, the ground was full of bones. At a glance, it was like a bone sea, heart-stirring.

"Crack!"

While treading on the bones, and listening to cracking of bones, Shi Yan felt goosebumps.

Strong demon energy and dark energy filled the sky above the valley. In the center of cyan dark energy and demon energy, a figure of a demon beast baring its fangs, brandishing its claws and screaming to the sky can be partly seen.

Its body was bound by black chain about twelve arms thick, Which were connected with the two mountains. Every time the demon beast swayed and struggled, violent sounds of metal collision would come out from the iron chain.

"Hoop,hoop,hoop!"

The demon beast swallowed and spat to the sky. And the strong demon energy and dark energy in the sky suddenly disappeared in its body as a sponge absorbs water.

After that a faint figure was suddenly revealed from the bones.

Shi Yan had a look of horror on his face.

This was a huge demon beast like dragon and python. It had a ten meters long body, non-muscle wings and a belly full of scales. Its body was covered with ferocious arm length black thorns, which flashed with black light. Its two huge talons were flickering sharp lights, seemed to be capable of destroying any invincible stronghold.

Its talons whacked the hard stony ground and bombarded deep caves one by one. Every time a strike hit down, a huge boom can be heard from the valley.

The most terrible thing was the demon beast's head. It was just a hideous ghost face. Bloodthirsty green light was emitted from its copper bell like eyes. On the general features of the devil, there were black thorns as well. They were like sharp swords stuck in its face.

The demon beast with ten meters body like a dragon or python, had a ferocious ghost face. Even at first glance, it would make people tremble with fear.

Noticing someone was closing in, it suddenly blustered again. A very strong ferocious energy was spread out as a storm on its own axis.

The ferocious energy was like a materialized substance. Which made any human's' souls tremble. Every place the ferocious energy arrived at, the bones nearby would explode.

Both Yang Mu and Yang Meng could not help but take a few steps.

Shi Yan used his newly refined Soul Consciousness and Sea of Consciousness to resist the ferocious energy from the demon beast. Finally, he managed to stand rooted to the spot instead of stepping back with fear.

Yang Lao stared at Shi Yan with a surprised face.

From the time the demon beast had been here, a lot of warriors from the Yang Family experienced how fierce it was. Almost every new warrior who arrived here would be frightened by it. With fear all over their face, they would subconsciously step back and can not even look in its eyes.

Both Yang Mu and Yang Meng were Earth Realm warriors. But again, under the fury of the demon beast, they still couldn't help

but step back.

But Shi Yan was standing motionless. It was abnormal.

Shi Yan was only at the Disaster Realm. What made him remain motionless under the ferocious energy and the terrorizing gaze from the demon beast?

Yang Lao couldn't figure out and increasingly felt that What King Yang Qing said was true.

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness was waving under the fierce energy attack from the demon beast. The consciousness was quietly spread one after another to resist the energy attack with Soul Consciousness power. Seeing Yang Mu and Yang Meng retreating a few steps, he secretly felt surprised and also a little rejoiced. Shi Yan realized that it was entirely because he successfully refined Sea of Consciousness that kept him away from fear.

Sea of Consciousness had many magical effects. One of the simplest effects was leaning on the Soul Consciousness power and withstanding the soul shock caused by ferocious energy.

Although Yang Mu and Yang Meng were Earth Realm warriors, they hadn't refined the Sea of Consciousness. So facing the ferocious energy from the demon beast, they couldn't defend themselves with Soul Consciousness. As their souls were exposed, their minds and consciousness were be frightened. Which made them stepped backward.

"What the hell was that thing?" Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan asked in a low voice.

"Ghost Beast."

Yang Lao pondered for a moment and explained: "It is said that it's the hybrid of the Sky Ghost from the Underworld and the Beast Dragon from the Demon Area. They both are level eight demon beast. Whether in the Underworld or in the Demon Area, both of

them are famous. Both Dark Dwellers and Demon Dwellers were helpless in front of them. This Ghost Beast was found at a magical place in the Fourth Demon Area by your great grandfather. It was just a several hundred years old cub. But it was already a demon beast at level six. According to your great grandfather's saying, the ugly thing is the hybrid of two level-eight demon beasts, with unlimited capacity of evolution. It is said that if an opportunity arrives, it can at least evolve to level nine in the future. And the help of treasures and other magical things, it could even become a level-ten demon beast!"

Shi Yan was stunned.

Normally the demon beasts that could unceasingly evolve were extremely aggressive. The ones who could evolve into level-nine demon beasts were rarely found. And the ones that were able to evolve to level-ten demon beasts were almost heard only in legends. Very few people had ever met them.

The Ghost Beast not only had the ability of continuous evolution, but also could become a level-nine demon beast. What's more, it had the opportunity to become the sovereign demon beast at level ten.

Shi Yan had never met the demon beast at this level before, not even had heard of it.

"No one knows how Sky Ghost from Underworld could appear in The Fourth Demon Area and give birth to Ghost Beast with Beast Dragon of Demon Area." Yang Lao shook his head, "Even your great grandfather could not figure out how could the Sky Ghost appear in Demon Area. And it is harder to know why Sky Ghost could copulate with the Beast Dragon. The name of Beast Ghost was given by your great grandfather. It is the thing that had never appeared in the past and should be the rarest curiosity in the nature."

"Then how can we tame it?" Shi Yan murmured.

Yang Lao was stupefied. He shook his head with a bitter smile, "Don't ask me about this. I know nothing about it either. Your Great Grandfather bought it back to the Immortal Island and personally bounded it with twelve golden chains. He asked us to send a demon beast at level three or four to feed it every seven days. And he said it should be you to tame Beast Ghost when you come to Immortal Island."

"Me?" Shi Yan was dumbfounded, "My great grandpa really thought too highly of me."

"Well." Yang Lao nodded with a strange face, "All of us don't think you have the ability to tame Beast Ghost. But your Great Grandfather said that only you would have karma with Beast Ghost. I don't know what basis your Great Grandfather had, but he commanded that only you could be allowed to tame Beast Ghost. None of us can understand his thoughts."

"Great Grandpa must be muddled." Yang Meng stuck out her tongue cutely: "Brother Yan has never met it. And he has no experience of taming any other demon beast, so it's impossible for him to tame it."

"Never mind." Yang Lao thought for a while and said to Shi Yan: "Stay here and try to tame it. Well, Just remember always maintain a 100 meters distance. 100 meters is its physical attack range. Since your Great Grandfather said that, he must have his own reasons. Though I have many methods to tame demon beasts, but no one is suitable for this one. Your Great Grandfather also commanded me not to show you any skills of taming demon beasts."

After Yang Lao finished, he departed with Yang Meng and Yang Mu, leaving behind a worried Shi Yan alone on how to tame the Beast Ghost.

Chapter 212: Accident

Inside the valley. Shi Yan was facing the Demon Ghost alone, and had no idea what to do with it.

Demon beasts, like the Demon Ghost, were heterosexual. It had been sealed partly by King Yang Qing, so it could only attack within 100 meters. The 100 meters' range was the dangerous area besides the Demon Ghost. Once someone get close to it, the Demon Ghost would attack fiercely.

Shi Yan tried a lot of ways to get close to the 100 meter limit during the last three days. Whenever he entered the restricted area of 100 meters, this Demon Ghost would become violent. Its terrible flame almost destroyed Shi Yan.

There was no way to communicate with the Demon Ghost. He also tried to release his soul consciousness.

However, when his soul consciousness tried to communicate with the the Demon Ghost, he was overwhelmed by its terrible flame.

This day, Shi Yan tried to communicate with the the Demon Ghost again. But when he began to condensate his soul consciousness, there came out a irritable impatient aura from the Demon Ghost.

With Demon Ghost as the Center, a wave of fierce evil aura was released on the entire valley. The waves of fierce aura made the bones on the ground fly off towards Shi Yan like sharp swords.

Fortunately, Shi Yan withdrew in time and luckily managed to escape this enormous attack.

Shi Yan felt kind of slumped weakness.

This ghost and demon hybrid was indeed extremely frightening. It was not only fierce, but also extremely offensive. And was always full of energy. It never rested, always staring at him.

Before leaving, If Yang Lao hadn't told him that King Yang Qing once said this the Demon Ghost had great affinity with him, Shi Yan would have almost given up.

Instead of leaving, Shi Yan chose to believe in the mysterious powers of King Yang Qing and continued to find a way to communicate with the Demon Ghost.

Time flew. And half a month passed at once.

During this half month, Shi Yan did not hurried to get close to the Demon Ghost, and kept a safe distance from the Demon Ghost. He was not so anxious to get the Demon Ghost's recognition. In the valley, he sat down to understand the Electric Shift and the Phantom Shift.

The Yang family was indeed rich and powerful. During this period, all kinds of delicious food was taken to Shi Yan constantly. Shi Yan's stomach was always filled with the food.

Thousands year Ginseng, Polygonum Multiflorum of hundreds of years, various demon beasts' bones and muscles were sent each and every day, which he could not have in the Shi family. The nutritional food made Shi Yan full of blood and flesh.

Although Shi Yan didn't manage to succeed in taming the Demon Ghost, but he got enlightened in operating the Electric Shift after numerous trials and errors.

"Chuu!"

Shi Yan's shadow shuttled in the valley like lightening. Between his two legs, Profound Qi exploded, providing formidable impact.

Shi Yan's body was really flying like a lightning in the valley constantly.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The explosion of Profound Qi in the legs derived strong impact. Under the force of impact, Shi Yan moved so quickly that one

couldn't even see him by naked eyes.

"Hooo! Hooo!"

The noise of the Double-Headed Dragon quietly came from outside the valley. After a while, Yang Mu came down from the Double-Headed Dragon, laughing in front of Shi Yan, "Xiao Yan, how's it?"

Shaking his head, Shi Yan said helplessly, "I couldn't find a breakthrough. It isn't an easy thing to tame the the Demon Ghost."

"That's for sure." Yang Mu nodded, "This Demon Ghost is so fierce, and it is a hybrid of two formidable beasts. It is a miracle between the heaven and earth. if it is so easy to rein in, we would have taken this guy long time ago."

Shi Yan was not discouraged at all, "There is still time, anyway. I am not in a hurry. Since Great Grandfather said the demon beast and I have something special, he must have his reasons."

"Great Grandfather..."

While mentioning King Yang Qing, Yang Mu's eyes shone with a grudging smile.

Shi Yan was quite sensitive, so from Yang Mu's subtle change of expression, he caught something unusual. He frowned quietly, "What happened?"

"Ah..." Yang Mu smiled with a sigh. He wanted to say something, but he stopped.

Seeing Yang Mu like this, Shi Yan got a bad feeling.

Even since he knew Yang Mu, he had never saw him like this.

In his eyes, Yang Mu was an arrogant person, filled with infinite confidence, as if nothing can make him worry. But now this strange Yang Mu gave Shi Yan a bad feeling immediately.

"What happened?" Shi Yan said seriously.

"Great Grandfather might be in trouble." Yang Mu sighed, "Seven days ago, we lost contact with Great Grandfather. Uncle Mo and grandfather could not contact him through the secret method. It never happened before. Our Yang Family has a secret method of communicating between the two worlds. He used to lead us through that secret method. We could also report to Great-Grandfather about everything that happened in the Kyara Sea. But now..."

Shi Yan's face slightly changed, "Great-Grandfather has god like powers. Since he went to talk with the Demon King Bo Xun by himself, he must be full of confidence. How did that happen?"

"I don't know." Yang Mu shook his head and squeezed out a smile, "Maybe we will be able to contact him soon. Ha ha, Xiao Yan, don't worry, stay here and keep trying to tame the Demon Ghost. I believe you can find the solution one day and communicate with the Demon Ghost."

"Well."

"I just came to take a look at you, nothing else. I will go now." Yang Mu shook his hand leisurely, mounted on the Double-Headed Dragon and left the valley quickly.

Shi Yan's heart was overshadowed, as he felt something amiss. But he believed that King Yang Qing had the ability to leave the demon area.

Before arriving the Endless Sea, he knew this nominal Great Grandfather a little through the description from Xiao Hanyi and Xia Xinyan. From those people, Shi Yan realized that King Yang Qing was one of the most legendary men in the Endless Sea.

King Yang Qing's performance later also proved Shi Yan's suspect.

Such a powerful man must have a plan B. He would never get himself into a difficult situation. He believed that King Yang Qing

would be fine.

Shi Yan continued to stay in the valley. He was practicing the Electric Shift and thinking about how to communicate with the Demon Ghost.

Like this another two months passed.

Finally, Shi Yan's Electricity Shift got a breakthrough. After this period of penance, the Profound Qi between his leg became much stronger.

Naturally, once Shi Yan casted out the Electric Shift, his speed suddenly surged, which also made Shi Yan joyful.

Triggering the Electric Shift with all his might, Shi Yan ran at a lightning speed that was seven times quicker than normal. He was shuttling in the valley like thunder.

This day, Shi Yan thought for a long time, and finally realized he could use the Electric Shift in the Demon Ghost's taboo area. He was ready to take a risk to make sure that he can approach the Demon Ghost and retreat back safely.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan slowly operated the Profound Qi in his body and forced it into his legs.

"Boom! Boom! Boom! "

From the intersections of his legs came a sudden fierce explosion. The explosion passed through his joints as he heard sounds from his leg bones .

Suddenly, a figure enshrouded in lightning moved toward the Demon Ghost.

Prostrating on the floor, the Demon Ghost squinted his green eyes and perceived Shi Yan getting near him immediately.

"Howl❖❖"

The Demon Ghost roared, as its 10 meter long body stood up quickly and its evil power broke out directly.

Just like a wave, the fierce flame covered one hundred meter area instantly. The Demon Ghost's huge body acted, as its claw and thorns shone oddly. The dark energy and demon energy came out of it and spread directly till it covered the whole area.

In the forbidden area of the the Demon Ghost, Shi Yan sank into the mud and was enveloped by the flame of the Demon Ghost thoroughly.

Overwhelming fierce flame like a substance was covering his body which almost drowned Shi Yan.

"What's the matter?" The Ice Cold Flame suddenly sent a message, "This demon beast is so powerful that it can control the dark energy and demon energy, it's really awful!"

The Ice Cold Flame in the Blood Vein Ring was aware of the awful energy, so it talked to Shi Yan on its own.

facing the oppression of the fierce flame, Shi Yan's body was like being directly imprisoned and he could not move. The flame from the Demon Ghost formed the soul attack and went to the Shi Yan's head directly.

The Sea of consciousness stirred waves and plumes of soul consciousness were released from it. In an instant, they formed layers of soul consciousness and tried to resist the Demon Ghost's ferocious attacks.

Shi Yan was shocked that how difficult it became to leave this area.

"Bravo!" From inside the ring, came Ice Cold Flame's shocked voice, "This monster beast has potential, I've not seen such a great power before. How do you get this guy?"

Shi Yan tried hard to resist the soul attack from the the Demon Ghost. It was very demanding. His body was going down like a mountain collapsing in the dark and demon energy.

He was fifty meters away from the the Demon Ghost.

The Demon Ghost never attacked physically, but its fierce aura made Shi Yan shudder. He was like a leaf in a storm and that could be destroyed any time .

"What!"

The Ice cold flame screamed again. It seemed to have found something. It shouted in a sudden surprise, "The Blood Vein Ring released me. It wants me to help you?"

The next moment, Shi Yan suddenly felt extremely cold breath gushing into the Blood Vein Ring.

Just in an instant, Shi Yan's whole body froze like an ice sculpture. The Ice Cold Flame's power covered his body directly.

The Demon Ghost's ferocious attacks couldn't defeat Shi Yan under the intervene of the Ice Cold Flame.

Shi Yan felt slightly relieved.

"Howl!"

The Demon Ghost moved suddenly!

Accompanied by a roar, the chains came out with a loud noise. Shi Yan saw the Demon Ghost's huge body fell straight down to him like a dark cloud.

There were dark clouds in the sky.



Shi Yan face changed and he felt his soul locked on by the Demon Ghost. He had a frustrated feeling that wherever he fled he would be killed.

Chapter 213: The Ancient Gate of Heaven

"Marvelous!"

There was a type of urgency in Ice Cold Flame's voice, "Be careful. Leave right now! This guy has no emotions, only relentless murder. It will ruin everything, every soul! It is not a common demonic beast!"

Shi Yan was shocked.

Without hesitation, he triggered all his energy and moved his Profound Qi into his legs, initiating Lightning.

A flash of lightning crossed the valley.

It landed one hundred meters beyond the Demon Ghost.

"Howl, howl, howl!"

The Demon Ghost bellowed crazily, while its vicious green eyes were gazing at Shi Yan. Being bounded by the twelve chains, it stood just twenty meters away in front of Shi Yan.

A thundering sound came from the two Divine Mountains, the twelve chains connecting them were being stretched.

It was merely a Level Six demon beast, but its power was earth shaking!

Slowly breathing, Shi Yan looked calm. As he grinned to the Demon Ghost, "Well you are malicious enough!"

He hadn't thought that he will be restrained by the Demon Ghost as soon as he approached it. If the Ice Cold Flame hadn't come to his rescue, he could have been killed by the Demon Ghost.

Another failure.

"This demon beast is very special." From inside the Blood Vein Ring, the Ice Cold Flame's voice came, meanwhile, the Ice Cold Flame's aura got weaker and weaker. And the Blood Vein Ring

again restrained the Ice Cold Flame.

"Hmm, it is said that it's interbred by the Dark Area's Sky Ghost and the Demon Area's demon dragon."

Shi Yan told the story about the demon ghost to the Ice Cold Flame, "According to my Great Grandpa, this demon beast shouldn't have existed. Because the Dark Area and the Demon Area are not connected. This Demon Ghost originated magically."

"Bred by the Dark Area's Sky Ghost and the Demon Area's Demon Dragon?" The Ice Cold Flame was surprised, "Are you sure?"

"He did say so."

The Ice Cold Flame went silent.

After a long long time, the Ice Cold Flame voice came again, "You've got in a big trouble!"

Shi Yan's expression changed as he asked, "What does it mean?"

He knew although the Ice Cold Flame was not human being, it knew better than most experts about this world.

This guy was there for who knows how many years, possessing many ancient experts' memories. It knew many secrets of the Grace Mainland, and also about the Dark Area and the Demon Area.

It must have found something since it said so!

"The Demon Ghost's appearance means someone very dangerous and powerful broke the path between the Dark Area and the Demon Area. Once the path was broken, the space shield would be unstable, and there will be a lot of cracks on the space of the Grace Mainland."

"Which means?"

"Means the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers will ally to strike this world again!"

Shi Yan was astounded.

"The Dark Area and the Demon Area have been long jealous of the wealth here, which is quite rare in their worlds. Once the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers obtain what they want on the Grace Mainland, they will expand quickly, then your world will be in deep trouble."

"This Demon Ghost is a sign that the Dark Area and the Demon Area's cooperation. They are going to enter the Grace Mainland and start slaughter!"

"What?" Shi Yan was shocked.

"How old is the Demon Ghost?"

"Said to be hundreds of years."

"Recently, are there any Demon Dwellers coming to this world from the space nodes?"

"Yes!"

"That's a disaster!"

The Ice Cold Flame was now helpless," It takes about five hundred years to open a space path between the Dark Area and the Demon Area. The Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers need to invest tremendously during these five hundred years, to stabilize the path between the Dark Area and the Demon Area and then forcefully open the space nodes in the Grace Mainland. Once some Demon Dwellers appeared from the space nodes and if there are even high rank Demon Dwellers, then it means they come prepared."

"What's next then?"

"The Dark Area and our world are not connected through space nodes. The Dark Area and the Gate of Heaven of our world are one way only. We can only enter the Dark Area through the Gate of Heaven, but the Dark Dwellers can not enter the Grace Mainland

through the Gate of Heaven. It means, it's hard for the Dark Dwellers to enter our world. However, once the path between the Dark Area and the Demon Area is connected, the Dark Dwellers can enter our world through the space joints."

"And then?"

"And then, someday you will find a lot of high rank Demon Dwellers and Dark Dwellers suddenly popping up out of nowhere. At that time, all the warriors in the Endless Sea will be the prey of the Dark Dwellers and the Demon Dwellers. Maybe in a short time, this place will be slaughtered and you won't find a single human being any more."

"Why didn't the Demon Dwellers enter this world through the Gate of Heaven?"

"There is a rule that God Realm Demon Dwellers can't pass through the Gate of Heaven. If Demon Realm Demon Dwellers could easily enter the Gate of Heaven, it would have become a wasteland long ago. The Second and Third Demon Area was sealed because there were True God Demon Dwellers who didn't follow this rule!"

Shi Yan was totally shocked by what he heard.

He never suspected that the Demon Dwellers were so terrifying. According to the Ice Cold Flame, the Second and the Third Demon Area Demon Dwellers were more vicious. So the Gate of Heaven was destroyed to prevent them.

"Who created the Gate of Heaven?"

"Warriors of God Realms."

"Hmm? Warriors of God Realms?"

"Yes, in the ancient times, the Demon Dwellers, the Dark Dwellers and other tribes in different worlds got along well with each other. The Gate of Heaven existed to let the tribes communicate with each other. Since there was limited resources in

every world, they needed to exchange their materials for training."

"At that time, there was an area called the Connection Sea, where there were many Gates of Heaven leading to all worlds. The Connection Sea was the center of all worlds and was on the Grace Mainland. However, from a certain time, all the tribes began to fight. Because of the Gates of Heaven, those stronger tribes could enter other worlds and easily slaughter the people there."

"The battles among the tribes were fast and easy because of the Gates of Heaven. Many minor tribes became extinct. The Grace Mainland, the Demon Area, and the Dark Area were merely three worlds out of numerous worlds then. After thousands of years of battles, many tribes disappeared."

"Till one day, the experts of all tribes noticed that the existence of the Gate of Heaven was dangerous. So they set all sorts of rules to prevent battles when creating the Gate of Heaven. Some tribes lost a lot in the battles, so they had to destroy the Gate of Heaven to cut their connection with outside world."

"In that age, many Gates of Heaven disappeared, and many tribes went out of our reach. There were a few Gates of Heaven later, but they were all with all sorts of rules."

"The Dark Area is a vicious area. Their Gate of Heaven prevents other tribes from invading. And the Demon Area is also overwhelming strong, so their Gate of Heaven stopped God Realm Demon Dwellers too. Once the Gate is broken, there will be a disaster."

As it knew many things related to history, the Ice Cold Flame told everything it knew to Shi Yan.

After the Ice Cold Flame finished, Shi Yan realized a storm was coming in the Endless Sea.

"Shi Yan."

Yang Lao showed up secretly with a serious face. After he came,

he glanced the Demon Ghost and then deeply looked at Shi Yan, and said abruptly, "Stop it if you can't conquer the Demon Ghost in a month. Don't waste your time. I will take you to a safe place."

Shi Yan's expression changed, "What happened?"

No matter in the Kyara Sea or the Endless Sea, the Yang Family was the greatest power. And the Immortal Island was their home, along with the Divine Mountains here.

What kind of disaster it was that made the Yang Family leave the Immortal Island?

"Three days ago, the Demon King Bo Xun's bone shadow appeared in different areas. He said your great grandpa was trapped under the 'Demon Seal Formation' in the Fourth Demon Area. Even if he has the Immortal treasure, he would still be tortured to death." Yang Lao looked rigid.

"What? Bo Xun recovered?" Shi Yan was freaked out.

"The Demon Seal Pattern was not from Demon King Bo Xun, but another Demon King Chi Yan. Bo Xun and Chi Yan became allies." Yang Lao looked worried.

"The Demon Dwellers are invading this world?" After a deep breath, Shi Yan calmed himself down.

"The Demon Dwellers haven't arrived." Yang Lao shook his head, "But the great powers in other sea areas are sailing toward the Kyara Sea secretly. Those survived Demon Dwellers found the heads of those great powers and made some agreements with them to exchange materials with this world, on a condition--slaughter the Yang Family!"

Chapter 214: We Belong Together!

"I just got some information about the Ancient Gates of Heaven..."

Shi Yan's expression was sullen, as he explained all the information he got from the Ice Cold Flame to Yang Lao.

The information that the Ice Cold Flame knew, was extremely old. Old enough that even some of the warriors now can hardly notice them on ancient sites. Even Yang Lao had never heard of these information relayed by the Ice Cold Flame.

When Shi Yan clarified the situation, Yang Lao was extremely shocked and stayed silent for a long time.

"Where did you get these information from? Can you confirm whether they are true or not?" Yang Lao took in a deep breath with a serious expression.

"From the Ice Cold Flame." Shi Yan nodded, "In its long life, it once made a lot of contact with many God realm masters from ancient times. This information was from the memories of those God realm masters. I think, there won't be any mistake."

"In the Fourth Demon Area, the two Demon Kings Chi Yan and Bo Xun, seemed to always be unfriendly with each other. If your information is true, then these two demon kings probably have been plotting against our Yang family for ages. If a passageway connecting the Underworld and the Demon Area really takes hundreds of years to connect, then these two demon kings probably started to secretly plot against us hundreds of years ago."

Light flashed in Yang Lao's eyes, "In that case, Bo Xun came to capture Xiao Hanyi, his motive should be to force your Great Grandpa to seek him alone. Then he collaborated with Chi Yan, and used the 'Demon Seal Formation' to deal with your Great Grandpa. To deal with our Yang family, these two Demon Kings

sure planned deliberately."

"Even you, didn't know about the situation of the connection between the Underworld and the Demon Area?" Shi Yan was stunned.

Shaking his head, Yang Lao said: "Maybe the last time demon dwellers and dark dwellers collaborated was too long ago. So far that no one knew of this secret. I didn't know, the rest of the leaders of the forces in the Endless Sea, should not have known either. Aii, this thing is too troublesome now, I think even if the leaders of those forces hear us talk about the situation in this, they wouldn't believe it. Instead they will think our Yang family is trying to trick them on purpose."

Shi Yan was silent, he knew that Yang Lao's prediction might come true.

In front of this big change that might sweep through the entire Endless Sea, he, who was only in the Disaster realm, with no reputation or fame, can make no influence at all.

He also knew, that he as of now, cannot bring much help to the Yang family.

"It's alright, after getting this information, at least we know what the Demon Dweller and the Dark Dwellers plan to do. Being able to know their next moves, now we can make early preparations." Yang Lao patted Shi Yan's shoulder and comforted him: "Don't worry too much, the Yang family is able to stand in the Endless Sea for many years without falling, naturally we have things to back us up. In the worst case scenario, we can just temporarily retreat from this place. When those people can see through the situation, then we'll fight our way back. It's not a big deal to lose our territory, we will again take them back some time."

Shi Yan knew that he was talking about the magical mountains on the Immortal Island.

"Don't think about it too much, continue to stay here and think of a way to tame the Demon Ghost. Your Great Grandpa said you can do it, then I believe you definitely can. In this time I will prepare an emergency plan. When things go wrong, I will arrange for you to go to a safe place."

"Alright."

I'll be going now, you should be diligent yourself. Remember, our Yang family won't fall. Your generation is all quite well, in the future our Yang family is still going to stand in the Endless Sea. This small setback won't beat us down."

"I understand."

...

After Yang Lao left, Shi Yan temporarily stopped cultivating the Electric Shift. He crossed his legs and sat down in the valley, just intensely staring at Demon Ghost.

Time was running out, in a month, if he can't tame Demon Ghost, then he might not see Demon Ghost again, and lose this ultimate opportunity.

"Do you know, if there is a way to tame this demon beast?" Shi Yan asked the Ice Cold Flame.

"To tame a Demon Beast, usually you have to have a stronger capability than them. Only with overwhelming power, you can beat them until they are afraid of you and make them obey you." The Ice Cold Flame came with a quick reply, "But, your power obviously can't suppress this level six demon beast hybrid. Under this situation, you can only use soul communication. Or if the power on your body makes the demon beast feel approachable, making it feel like you and it are the same type of creature, then it might grow close with you."

'Soul communication? Similar power types?'

Shi Yan frowned deeply.

Why would Yang Qingdi think that he is destined with this Demon Ghost? Why would he think that only he, can get the affection of the Demon Ghost.

In all of this, there had to be some secret he didn't know about.

Shi Yan felt like he seemed to have gotten a grasp on something, but thinking of it closely, in this time he almost used every possible method, but Demon Ghost just won't comply.

Was there anything he hadn't used in him? A similar power type? In his own body, is there a power that was unused when taming the Demon Ghost?

Suddenly a light flashed in his head and Shi Yan abruptly stood up.

'Negative energies!'

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly brightened as he stared at the Demon Ghost without blinking, and seemed to have grasped a crucial point.

In these days, he kept trying to use soul communication with the Demon Ghost, in order to get close to it. He tried many different methods, but he had never really used the negative energies.

On the Demon Ghost, there was constantly a violent, bloodthirsty, cruel presence, this was the absolute evil power.

These powers were obviously not from the right path, it was completely different from the presence of other creatures. In the Demon Ghost's heart, it seemed to have been filled with hate and devastation towards people!

The evil presence and the negative powers flowing out of his own meridians were they extremely similar in type?

"What have you thought of?" The Ice Cold Flame was very surprised, "Did you find a way?"

Shi Yan didn't answer and with a cold expression, he walked step

by step towards the Demon Ghost.

"Roar!"

The Demon Ghost roared again, and a flow of hurricane-like fierce power suddenly released from it towards all directions.

On its creepy ghost face, its bright green evil eyes, kept watching Shi Yan.

With the blast of the fierce power, the evil power that went straight for the soul, also quietly went towards Shi Yan's area. Once Shi Yan steps into the forbidden area, the evil power from the Demon Ghost will completely burst out.

"Dude you're going in again? You have to be careful this time, my power is sealed by your stupid ring again..." The Ice Cold Flame reminded him.

Shi Yan already stopped communicating with it.

He stepped towards the Demon Ghost, and soon he was approaching the hundred-meter forbidden area. He could already feel the dark energy and demon energy stirring in the evil flames. These two powers, that were not from this dimension, flared in the evil flame while bringing with them the Demon Ghost's evil soul consciousness. It was like hurricanes and giant tides, that were extremely fierce and violent.

"Roar!"

The Demon Ghost roared again, it seemed to think that Shi Yan was challenging its patience. Its ten meter-long body suddenly stood up violently, and the metal chains wrapping around its body made loud clashing sounds.

Shi Yan suddenly stirred the negative powers in his meridians.

In just a mere moment, negative emotions like violence, madness, hate, and devastation immediately filled Shi Yan's mind. Inside his body, the negative powers surged, forming into a cold

and evil, while light mist.

The Demon Ghost suddenly became quiet.

A hundred and ten meters away, the Demon Ghost that was always rampaging, for the first time a trace of confusion appeared in its green evil eyes. It just looked at Shi Yan, and actually didn't move its body to try to escape from the chains again.

The vibrant green eyes that should've been filled with bloodthirsty murderous thoughts, at this moment, became extremely focused. It seemed to be thinking, hesitating, and deciding about something.

Shi Yan's body did not stop, he just kept stirring the negative power to spread around his entire body, and stepped into the Demon Ghost's forbidden area.

One foot in.

There seemed to be hesitation in the Demon Ghost's green eyes. The evil and violent negative energies slowly spread out, and actually surged towards the Demon Ghost.

At the same time.

The overflowing negative emotions in his head, combined with wisps of soul consciousness, formed into extremely evil conscious thoughts, also flew towards the Demon Ghost at the same time.

The conscious thoughts this time were completely different from other times. Inside it contained negative emotions, making Shi Yan almost go insane, giving him a thought to destroy everything and slaughter all the creatures in the world.

Normally when these thoughts appear in Shi Yan's mind, Shi Yan wouldn't be far from madness. Normally, he would keep suppressing it, to sustain the clarity in his mind.

However, at this moment, he did not hold back at all. He forwardly let go his sense of reason, and let those negative

emotions take charge.

Shi Yan's eyes slowly turned red, as if blood was dripping out of them. He seemed like an evil creature that crawled out of the depths of hell with a body full of devastating insane powers.

The Demon Ghost suddenly became quiet.

The evil presence that surrounded it suddenly ceased like tides. It just blankly stared at Shi Yan, those evil green eyes that were supposed to be filled with bloodthirst, actually showed a joyful emotion.

Shi Yan stepped towards it with his bright red eyes, and was slowly losing his sanity.

The Demon Ghost just happily looked at him, all his hostility was completely gone now. It seemed to be waiting, anticipating something.

"Hu, hu, hu!"

The Demon Ghost's breathing was heavy, it actually seemed a little ecstatic. The enormous body that originally stood up, slowly laid down on the ground.

Shi Yan arrived in front of the Demon Ghost, its back that was covered with sharp spikes, suddenly lightly shook in one area. It could be seen that the spikes in that area slowly contracted, and shrank back into its body.

On The Demon Ghost's back, there was suddenly a blotch of flat ground, that could fit exactly one person.

Shi Yan leaped up and flew towards that area, then steadily crossed his legs to sit down. He grinned and laughed: "We belong together."

"Boom, boom, boom!"

The twelve chains binding the Demon Ghost's body, suddenly shattered.

The constraints that Yang Qingdi put on the Demon Ghost were completely gone now.

"Roar!"

The Demon Ghost issued a carefree roar, its enormous body shook and flew into the sky with flared teeth and open claws. It flew joyfully in the valley.

A person and a beast, they fit seamlessly.

Chapter 215: The Three Choices

When Shi Yan was riding from the valley to the Yang palace, he was quite surprised.

Those palaces were full of Yang warriors. Looking from top, it was like an army of ants, roughly, maybe there were nearly ten thousand people.

They were gathered on a huge square.

In the middle of that square, there was an ancient array, which was surrounded by shining best quality crystals. A surge of natural spirit qi was flowing out from these crystals and was injected into that ancient array, which made it look like that ancient array had a rainbow light curled up on it.

Many Yang warriors were separated into small team and surrounded the ancient array.

Yang Luo and Mo Duanhun looked respectful, and constantly fiddle with the strange compass on that ancient array.

The Yang warriors, under the command from those two, entered into the ancient array in order and stood on it. Following that dazzling light flashed and those warriors who stood on the ancient array disappeared.

Transmission array.

Just by a glance, Shi yan realized that the ancient array was a magical array that connected two places.

Only a Royalty rank blacksmith can make such complex transmission array. In the Kyara sea, only the powerful family like Yang family can afford to hire those Royalty rank blacksmiths and spend an unimaginable amount of materials to build this thing.

One after one, the warriors from Yang family entered into the transmission array under the command from Yang Luo and Mo

Duanhun. It took one best quality crystal to teleported them into an unknown area.

When Shi Yan arrived there with the Demon Ghost, it caused a huge fuss among the people.

Under the pressure from the Ghost Beast, the demon beasts groveled on the ground and didn't dare to look into Ghost Beast eyes. Their body was shivering as if they saw their natural enemy.

Yang Lao looked up on the sky and upon seeing Shi Yan with Ghost Beast he was startled.

Mo Duanhun also gently nodded toward Shi Yan and seemed like he was surprised with Shi Yan's ability.

"Brat, good, very good" Yang Lao smiled, "This Ghost Beast really has an affinity with you, It already stayed in the Immortal island for a long time, and there was never anyone who can go near it and you can tame this unusual demon beast, which means the heaven still care about our Yang family."

Many Yang warriors showed excitement in their faces when they heard Yang Lao's word, seems like they discerned something from it.

"What is the situation now?" Shi Yan came down from the Ghost Beast and gently patted Ghost Beast, suddenly the Ghost Beast which keeps releasing ferocious and evil atmosphere quited down, lazily lying on the ground and didn't continue to show its ferocious side.

"The warriors from the other families are moving towards Kyara sea, and soon, those people will appear here" Yang Lao face became gloomy," The news about your great grandfather, who is trapped under the 'Demon Seal Formation' has already spread throughout the endless sea, after Bo Xun spoke up, no one thinks that your great grandfather can escape from that Demon Seal Formation, so, those who have been afraid of us, the Yang family, caught this

golden opportunity to exterminate our Yang family."

Yang Lao explained the situation in brief.

The Demon King Bo Xun's bone shadow which appeared in different areas already indicated that this time Yang Qingdi will definitely die, many demon dwellers who have entered from the unstable points in space long time ago already frequently contacted the heads from the major families, and explained to them the goodwill from Bo Xun and Chi Yan.

And they even showed their sincerity by sending many rare goods and materials, that only exist in the Demon Area, to those major families.

Chi Yan and Bo Xun already spoke up to get along with the endless sea, by connecting the two worlds and exchanging materials.

The proposal from the two demon king made many people restless and those magical materials from the Demon Area also made so that many people could hardly stay still.

In the past, the gate of heaven that connected the endless sea and the fourth Demon Area was in the hands of the Yang, only the Yang family can go through that door to enter the fourth Demon Area and bring many strange materials that didn't exist in this world.

And because of this, the resources from Yang family were extremely tremendous in the endless sea, and with this advantage the Yang family can firmly stand proudly in the endless sea.

There was nobody that can coveted the materials from the Demon Area, in the past, the Yang was controlling the gate, and because the powerful Yang family, those people didn't dare to mess and only can exchange that material from the Yang family, which made Yang family acquire many rare treasures.

And now, Yang Qingdi was imprisoned, Chi Yan and Bo Xun also

gave them a treaty that was difficult to refuse by them, in order to obtain the materials from Demon Area and the wealth that has been accumulated by the Yang family for hundreds of years, those people finally teamed up and planned to destroy the Yang family and share with the Demon Area.

After deciding, those major families will no longer hesitated and started sending experts toward Kyara sea.

That force was very powerful, the Evil Wonderland and Xia family who were in alliance with the Yang family in the past also suddenly quited down.

The Xia family was pretty modest, Xia Shenchuan already spoke up to Yang Lao in advance that the Xia family won't face those forces for Yang family, and won't make any move, regardless if their decision was right or wrong.

And the Evil Wonderland, not only didn't help the Yang family, but they also secretly contacted with those forces, seemed like they were determined to help those people, and replace the Yang family in the endless sea.

In just one night, the Yang family was isolated and became the target of many people

Many feracious families started to open their bloody mouth, trying to devour the Yang family after they received the message from Bo Xun that Yang Qingdi will definitely die.

The Yang family's situation has reached the most dangerous moment.

In desperation, Yang Lao began to start the evacuation plan, by dividing the wealth that has been accumulated by the Yang family and Yang warriors into small groups and quietly transferring it.

"You're just in time" Yang Lao frowned, "This time we need to evacuate, and now we have three evacuation area, the first one is the Demon Area, the second one is the Underwater Desolate City,

and the last is the Chasm Battlefield, you can choose where you want to go."

"Demon Area?" Shi Yan was shocked, "How would you guys want to evacuate to Demon Area? If we enter the Demon Area this time, then wouldn't we be killed by Bo Xun and Chi Yan?"

"The situation in the Demon Area is different from what you think" Yang Luo smiled, during the critical time of the family, he still remained calm, "In the fourth Demon Area, there are many regions, even Bo Xun and Chi Yan can't sense the situation inside it, the Demon Area is extremely vast, so this kind of magical field is countless, the Yang family has been operating in the Demon Area for a long time, so we understand some regions even better than the demon dwellers, this time, the Yang family members that entered the Demon Area number up to eighty percent! A long time ago, we build a masking array with the help of the environment in there, so it would be difficult for Bo Xun and Chi Yan to find us"

Shi Yan was surprised.

At first, he thought that in the fourth Demon Area, the demon king Bo Xun and Chi Yan who had the cultivation of the third sky of Spirit realm can easily find out the situation in the Demon Area, and now, after listening to Yang Lao's explanation, he knew that the magical field in the Demon Area are so powerful that even the demon king Bo Xun and Chi Yan can do nothing about it

"The Underwater Desolate City is a magical place in the endless sea, the sea warriors are the inhabitants in there and the sea is their world, if there is large number of endless sea people entered there, it would cause a huge fuss and maybe there would be a war with them, but we have some contact with some families in there, so there shouldn't be any problem if we enter into the city.

"What about the Chasm Battlefield? What kind of place is that?"

"The Chasm Battlefield is in the sky sea, it's said it originally belonged to this world, but don't know why it was split out from

this world. The Chasm Battlefield is very strange, the heaven gate that connects the Chasm Battlefield is always changing, every hundred years, it would change once"

"What do you mean ?"

"Three hundred years ago, only the warriors from elementary realm to spirit realm can enter the door, two hundred years ago, the heaven gate changed, the spirit realm warriors already can't enter it, a hundred years ago, that heaven gate changed again, even the sky realm warriors can't enter it. And now, even nirvana realm warriors can't enter that heaven gate, this time, only earth realm warriors and below earth realm warriors can enter it"

"What? So there is a limit in that gate every hundred years ?"

"That's right" Yang Lao nodded, "This time, we would divide into three groups, one would go into the Demon Area, next one would go into the Underwater Desolate City, and the last one will go to the Chasm Battlefield, with that, we can prevent some damage, after all, if we focus on one area, there is a chance that we could be exterminated, so by dividing into three groups, we can increase the chance of blood retention "

"I will go to the Chasm Battlefield" Yang Mu sneered, "I won't only enter the Chasm Battlefield, but also I will spread out the information, telling those people that I am inside it. Hehe, this time, the nirvana realm warriors can't enter it, and for those major families who want to exterminate us, they would have to send their warriors below nirvana realm to kill me, hmph, I will wait inside the Chasm Battlefield, and those who dare to come to kill me, I will kill them all"

"I also will go to the Chasm Battlefield" Shi Yan nodded lightly, "I think it will be more interesting there"

The warriors above earth realm can't enter the Chasm Battlefield, this means that the experts that will be sent by those families at most would only be in the third sky of earth realm.

Shi Yan believes that with his power, he can face the earth realm warriors.

Which means, the Chasm Battlefield is the most suitable place for him, which may also be the most secure place, and it can also increase his strength by killing those warriors from other families.

"Hahaha, good one, Xiao Yanzi" Yang mu laughed, "After we arrive there, I would want to see how many people dare to come to kill us, the more they are, the better it will be, so I can kill as many as I want"

"The Chasm Battlefield is very mysterious, it's said that it was the battlefield of the mighty warriors from the ancient times, inside it, there are many barriers and forbidden area, and also there are some magical treasures and martial skills that are left from the ancient times, if you guys want to enter it, not only you to be careful of those guys who want to kill you but also the forbidden area and dangerous array inside the Chasm Battlefield." Yang Luo frowned, said.

"Inside it, there is a legendary magical treasure that can release master from the Demon Seal Formation" Mo Duanhun who has been silent suddenly spoke up, and stared at Shi Yan as if he was thinking about something.

Yang Lao looked startled and quite weird, and was also staring at Shi Yan.

"What? Is there a connection between it and Xiao Yanzi?" Yang Mu also exclaimed.

Yang Luo and Mo Duanhun nodded.

Chapter 216: Sky-breaking Shuttle

Yang warriors entered the transfer formation one by one, and disappeared after a bunch of dazzling light.

Beside the Transfer Formation, there was a crowd of thousands of warriors, whose realms varied, but they all looked in high spirits. They were quite confident.

Yang Lao and Mo Duanhun stared at Shi Yan with meaningful eyes.

Pointing at himself, Shi Yan was rather confused, "To do with me?"

"There are many rare secret treasures of elite experts from the ancient times on the Chasm Battlefield." Mo Duanhun nodded, "In the Endless Sea, many experts have gone to the Chasm Battlefield and never came back. They just disappeared. Among them, there was one called Tie Long, a very famous Sacred Realm blacksmith. Thousands of years ago, his skill was known across the Endless Sea, and his works were invaluable."

"He died on the battle field?" Shi Yan frowned.

"I don't know." Yang Lao replied, "But he never appeared in the Endless Sea later on. That's a extremely talented blacksmith, whose most famous secret treasure was Sky-breaking Shuttle, which was a Sacred Realm secret treasure, and it could break any barriers in the space and tear any pattern. With the Sky-breaking Shuttle, Tie Long could enter and shuttle through any world without the help of Gates of Heavens. Nothing could trap him."

"You mean, as long as you master the Sky-breaking Shuttle, you can take Great Grandpa out of the Demon Seal Formation?" Shi Yan began to understand.

"If the legend about the Sky-breaking Shuttle is true, then it is capable of that." Mo Duanhun assured.

"Really?" Yang Mu didn't know it either, as he asked in surprise, "If that secret treasure is truly so magic, why didn't Tie Long use it to get out of the Chasm Battlefield? Don't they say that Chasm Battlefield is full of barriers? With the secret treasure, can't he go anywhere he wants on the Chasm Battle Field?"

"It is said that Tie Long died on the Chasm Battle Field due to a Sky Flame. He intended to tame the Sky Flame, but was counter-devoured by it." Mo Duanhun paused, and continued, "Although Tie Long was a Sacred Realm blacksmith, his martial level was merely in the Third Sky of Sky Realm, which was not enough to tame the Sky Flame."

"What's it to do with Xiao Yan then?" Yang Mu asked again.

Shi Yan got confused, "Yeah, what's it to do with me?"

"The two Sky Flames could perceive each other when they are in the same area." Mo Duanhun explained, "The Flames are mysterious, some can co-exist, and some would fight. Shi Yan, when you go into the Chasm Battlefield, you may perceive the position of the Sky Flame. and with the help of Ice Cold Flame you may be able to get the secret treasure Sky-breaking Shuttle."

"Got it." Shi Yan nodded with a smile, "This time on the Chasm Battle Field, I will communicate with the Ice Cold Flame, and will mainly look for Tie Long's Sky-breaking Shuttle."

"Um, be careful. Don't push yourself too hard. When you perceive the Sky flame's position, let Yang Mu search for the Sky-breaking Shuttle. Or if the Sky Flame discovers the Ice Cold Flame in you, it may attack you. Understand?" Mo Duanhun said.

"Hmm, I know what to do."

"Well, wait for a moment. You can do it together in a couple of days when Yang Ke and Yang Xue come."

Three days later.

Yang Ke, Yang Xue and Li Feng'er came back together to the

Immortal Island.

Yang Ke and Yang Xue were both direct descendants of the Yang Family, and were both at the Second Sky of Earth Realm. Li Feng'er was at the First Sky of Earth Realm, the daughter of one of the Shura Kings, Li Mu.

"Yang Mu, Yang Ke, Yang Xue, Li Feng'er, Shi Yan, you five each lead a group of ten Earth Realm warriors. You together enter the Chasm Battlefield and stay there quietly for three years." Yang Lao ordered when everybody was there.

Shi Yan, Yang Mu and others nodded together.

"Shi Yan is merely at Disaster Realm, and is inexperienced. Is it ok that he leads a group?" Li Feng'er frowned, looking at Shi Yan with strange eyes, "You sure you can manage it?"

Li Feng'er was Shura King Li Mu's single daughter, who was at the First Sky of Earth Realm. In the Yang Family, she was treated as Yang Mu and alike, getting the best training materials. She looked pretty. Having fought everywhere for the Yang Family, she was considered important and she herself regarded the immortal Island as her home.

As one of the three Shura Kings, Li Mu took her every time he went for a battle. Although she was young, her hands were covered with blood of many people. She had met with all sorts of dangers. And she had been to the Chasm Battlefield, so she knew how dangerous it was there.

She was worried that the ten warriors would die due to wrong decisions Shi Yan would make.

"True." Yang Xue nodded, "Xiao Yan, are you sure you can take care of ten people?"

Yang Xue was Shi Yan's so-called second sister. It's her first time to meet Shi Yan too. Knowing little about him, she also doubted that Disaster Realm Shi Yan could lead ten Earth Realm warriors.

Shi Yan Before lived in rural areas, so she guessed he lacked experience of leading others.

Even in the Yang Family, Earth Realm warriors were precious.

The ten warriors they carefully picked were all potential candidates for Nirvana Realm. For the interest of the Yang Family, she didn't think it was a good idea for Shi Yan to lead the team.

"I will give it a try." Shi Yan gave a brief smile, "I'm not that experienced, so I won't separate from you on the Chasm Battlefield."

"The situation on the Chasm Battlefield is quite complicated." Li Fenger shook her head, and explained, "Some barriers can't be detected by anyone, although we will be together, if someone touches the barrier, we will be separated. If that happened, we can't give you the right suggestion."

"Um..." Shi Yan looked to Yang Lao.

"Nevermind." Yang Lao smiled to a warrior at the Second Sky of Earth Realm, "Jiang Huquan, follow Shi Yan. I believe it will be fine if you are with him."

Jiang Huquan nodded with a smile, and said to Shi Yan, "Don't worry Young Master Yan. I will be after you."

Yang Lao appoint Jiang Huquan, so Li Fenger and Yang Xue got reassured, and smiled.

"It will be fine if Uncle Jiang is there. Ha ha, Uncle Jiang is the best disciple of Grandpa An." Yang Mu said.

Shao'an was a minister of the Yang Family, at the First Sky of Sky Realm. He was good at breaking barriers, and so was his disciple Jiang Huquan.

Seeing Jiang Huquan was in his team, Shi Yan thought about something.

So at crucial points, it was Jiang Huquan who played the role of

decision maker. It was rather put this way, that the ten warriors were sent to protect Shi Yan.

"Demon beast can't go inside the Chasm Battlefield. Remember, after you arrive at the Gate of Heaven in the Sky Sea Area, arrange for the demon beast first. Hmm, in the Demon Mountain nearby there are all sorts of demon beasts, including Level Eight demon beasts. You can place your demon beast in the Demon Mountain." Yang Lao told them some details.

Shi Yan listened quietly.

One hour later, Yang Lao said, "Well, all get into the Transfer Formation with your demon beasts. I will send you to the Sky Sea. The Transfer Formation there, is just 20 thousand miles to the Gate of Heaven toward the Chasm Battle Field. You can get there in three days."

Shi Yan patted on the Demon Ghost, and stood inside the Transfer Formation obediently.

The Demon Ghost growled, and glanced once at the Double-Headed Dragon among the transfer formation including Yang Mu.

Inside the Formation, Yang Mu, Yang Ke, Yang Xue's Double-Headed Dragon, and Li Fenger's Cyan Blood Bat all withdrew as they saw the Demon Ghost enter.

The Demon Ghost was ten meters long, while the Double-Headed Dragon and the Cyan Blood Bat were only five to six meters. The Demon Ghost was larger with stronger flame. At level six, the Demon Ghost looked stronger than the Double-headed Dragon and the Cyan Blood Bat.

"Be careful about the people from the Penglai Divine land." Before he triggered the Transfer Formation, Yang Lao reminded, "The Martial Spirit Palace never cared about the disputes in the Endless Sea and didn't take actions to the Yang Family this time. But the Penglai Divine Land took action. Although our Transfer

Formation in the sky sea is hidden well, when so many of you appear, they will definitely notice it. So be careful before you enter the Gate of Heaven."

"Got it." Yang Mu bursted into laughter, "It's better that they know. If they knew it, other experts must also known. I guess they won't stay still as they want to kill us. I believe you will encounter some pursuers in the Chasm Battlefield, which is good for you."

"Humph!" Yang Ke gave a grim smile, "I heard seven people from the young generation are on the list of the Power Rankings. I hope they will be in the Chasm Battlefield too."

"The Power Rankings?" Shi Yan was confused.

"The rankings of the ability of young experts in the Endless Sea. There are eighteen of them in all on the Power Rankings, who are the top experts in the Endless Sea and will become leaders in the future." Li Fenger explained.

"How many of us are on the list?" Shi Yan asked.

"Yang Mu, Yang Zhou, and Yang Ke are all on it." Li Fenger grinned, and glanced at Yang Ke, "But, Yang Ke is on the bottom, the eighteenth of the Power Rankings. Haha."

Shi Yan put on a solemn look.

Chapter 217: The Power Rankings

At the center of an isolated island in the Sky Sea. The sea water gave out hustling sound.

The blue sea water rippled away while silver light spots skimmed over.

"Hua La La!"

After a huge stir in the water, a huge monster appeared from it.

Five demon beasts flew out of the sea and landed on a nearby island. Yang warriors swam out of the sea water and moved toward the island.

Under the blue sky and white clouds, Shi Yan looked around, secretly releasing his consciousness to detect anything unusual the surroundings.

There was no sign of life wherever the consciousness passed. No danger here, Shi Yan was assured.

The Transfer Formation of the Yang Family here was hidden. There were many isolated islands under the sea water and the Transfer Formation was under one of them. It could be only seen from deep in the sea.

Standing on the isolated island, Shi Yan detected with his consciousness. After being assured that there was no danger, he stood beside the Demon Ghost.

"Xiao Yan, how about your group? Do you want to ride our demon beast's?" Yang Mu raised his voice to ask.

There were in all fifty five people and five demon beasts, who were divided into five groups. Yang Mu and others' double-headed dragons could carry one dozen people. The warriors had all mounted on the demon beasts now.

Shi Yan's ten warriors just watched the Demon Ghost in fear and

didn't dare approach.

The Demon Ghost was ten meters long, and it would be more comfortable to sit on it. But the Demon Ghost was so grumpy and its back was covered with thorns, so those warriors didn't dare to get close to it.

"Never mind." Shi Yan smiled, pressed on the Demon Ghost's neck, and quietly communicated with the Demon Ghost.

Since the Demon Ghost was tamed by Shi Yan in the Immortal Valley, it regarded Shi Yan as his companion. So once Shi Yan sent his will to the Demon Ghost, the latter would do as told obediently.

As it received the message, it was unwilling, but still, the Demon Ghost withdrew its thorns on the back into its body.

"It's OK now." Shi Yan beamed at Jiang Huquan, and turned to the warriors, "All of you come up now."

Jiang Huquan took in a deep breath. While observing the Demon Ghost, he approached it. After he found the Demon Ghost didn't mean to hurt him, he mounted on the Demon Ghost.

"Let's go!" Yang Mu yelled.

His double-headed dragon flew out into the sky like a wind.

Yang Ke and Yang Xue's Double-headed Dragon followed closely. Li Fenger's Cyan Magic Bat flew a little slower.

"Hoo hoo!"

The Demon Ghost dashed out like a sword into the sky and surpassed the bat at once, then Yang Mu, Yang Ke, and Yang Xue's double-headed dragons, and went ahead of the line.

"Your demon beast is really bossy, it wants to be the first." Yang Mu praised, "It is said these demon beasts could evolve endlessly. Can't imagine how powerful it would be when it reaches Level Eight and Nine."

"How did you tame this demon beast?" Li Fenger was confused,

"After this demon beast was taken back to the Immortal Island, many demon beasts on the island went quiet. It swallows Level two and level three demon beasts every day. How does he obey you, a Disaster Realm warrior?"

Shi Yan grinned, "Luck."

"You are so lucky." Li Fenger admired.

"Be careful, the Sky Sea belongs to the Penglai Divine Land. There must be warriors from the Penglai Divine Land on the nearby islands. We will be spotted easily if we fly in the sky." Yang Xue frowned, "We don't get along well with the Penglai Divine Land. Now that they had taken action, they won't spare us. They will attack us as soon as they see us."

"Um." Yang Mu also nodded, "Pan Zhe from the Penglai Divine land is at the Third Sky of Earth Realm, ranked fifth on the power ranks, a little weaker than me. We have to be careful if we meet him. I have dealt with him before. He is great, capable of all sorts of martial Skills."

Shi Yan also went on alert.

From Yang Mu and the group, he got to know about the ranks well. Only young warriors under 30 in the Endless Sea could be included into the list.

Only four young people in the Kyara Sea were listed on the ranks, who were Yang Mu, Yang Zhou, Yang Ke and Xie Kui, while none of the Xia Family was on the ranks.

Yang Mu ranked fourth, Yang Zhou twelfth, Yang Ke eighteenth, while Xie Kui from the Evil Wonderland was the tenth.

The eighteen young experts on the ranks were all extraordinary with huge potential. They were the future leaders of the Endless Sea.

Three Yang Family members were on the Power rankings, which showed how powerful the Yang Family was.

The Demon Ghost dashed forward toward the Gourd Island where the Gate of Heaven was, followed by the double-headed dragon and the Cyan magic bat.

"Enemies here."

As they went to an unknown island, Shi Yan softly patted the Demon Ghost and slowed it down.

"Hmm?" Yang Mu was stunned, "Xiao Yan, you can detect the enemies?"

"Yes." Shi Yan nodded, "They are on the island in front of us. Dozens of them including Nirvana Realm experts."

"Xiao Yan, are you sure?" Yang Xue was surprised.

"We can count on him." Yang Mu answered, and explained, "When on the Black Stone Island, Xiao Yan could perceive the demon dwellers' smell with the secret treasure. He must be detecting with it now."

He didn't know that this time Shi Yan had refined the sea of consciousness and obtained more acute sense.

"Do we need to avoid them?" Yang Xue frowned, "There are Nirvana Realm warriors. Tough. We should get into the Chasm Battlefield first and wait for the pursuers to come."

"We can't avoid them." Yang Mu shook his head, "since there are Nirvana Realm warriors, they must have detected us with their consciousness sea. We have proceeded here for one day, they must have known it."

"Exactly, we can't avoid them. They are already here." Shi Yan nodded too.

"We can't know who they are." Yang Mu pondered, "Our five demon beasts are at Level Six. If there is only one or two warriors, we don't need to be nervous. But it's tough if they have too many Nirvana Realm warriors. Xiao Yan, can you detect how many

Nirvana Realm warriors there are?"

"Three."

"Three? Then it's fine."

...

"Hoo hoo hoo!"

In the strong wind, a silver triangled ship was flying rapidly in the sky, with several human figures on it.

"Silver Horn Ship!" Yang Mu sneered, "They are from the Penglai Divine Land. The Silver Horn Ship could fly in the sky and sail on the sea. Only important people can have it. In the Penglai Divine land, even Nirvana Realm warriors are not allowed to use The Silver Horn Ship. Pan Zhe must be there."

"Brother Yang Mu, long time no see, he he." Loud laughter suddenly came from the Silver Horn Ship, as a handsome young man stood in the front with a feathered fan in his hand.

Shi Yan sat up straight on the Demon Ghost, after deeply looking in that direction for a while, his face became gloomy.

Gu Jiange, from the Gu Family, and Divine Girl Qu Yanqing were also standing on the ship. On the Munro Island, she nearly killed him. Now they met here again! After being redeemed, Gu Jiange was still alive.

"Shi Ya!!" From dozens of meters away, came Gu Jiange's cold sound, "Here you are!"

"Yes, here we are." Shi Yan looked at Gu Jiange coldly, "I can't believe you are still alive. Very good, then I can kill you in person."

"You are Shi Yan? Don't bullshit! I can kill you at once!" Beside Gu Jiange, a pretty young girl in a green dress was quite arrogant.

"Gu Linglong, the Second Sky of Earth Realm, Ranked eighth, much stronger than Gu Jiange." Li Fenger introduced softly.

"I don't believe it." Shi Yan looked unconcerned, as he looked over to Gu Linglong, "Gal, you haven't even grown up! Stop boasting."

"You are seeking your own death!" Gu Linglong sneered, with anger in her eyes. A silver long sword flew out from her sleeve and shot toward Shi Yan as lightning.

Shi Yan frowned, sitting still on the Demon Ghost without taking action.

"Chee chee chee!"

The Demon Ghost breathed green Dark Qi, which was like a green cloud gushing to the silver sword. The sword stabbed into the green clouds and was imprisoned. It couldn't move a bit.

Even the sword soul inside it was blown away by the Dark Qi.

"Dark Qi!"

Those people on the Silver Horn Ship became anxious, gazing at the Demon Ghost in fear, as they cried out.

"Demon beast from the Dark World!" Pan Zhe withdrew his smile, "When did you Yang Family get connected to the Dark World? The portals are all one-sided. Their demon beasts and dwellers can't enter our world. How did you get this Dark World demon beast?"

"Stop the f*** bullshit!" Yang Mu was impatient, "Pan Zhe, do you want to fight?"

Chapter 218: The Demon Ghost Shows Its Viciousness

"Pan Zhe, do you dare fight with me?"

Yang Mu, sitting on the Double-headed Dragon, gazed afar at Pan Zhe on the Silver Horn Ship and yelled.

The silver huge sword flew out and hovered on Yang Mu's head, letting out ten meter long light, which was orientated at Pan Zhe directly.

On the Silver Horn Ship, Pan Zhe smiled with the fan in his hand, "Yang Mu, we came to destroy your Yang Family. Not to waste our time."

"You chickened? Don't you?" Yang Mu laughed, "Pan Zhe, ah, Pan Zhe, I know you are a coward."

Pan Zhe didn't appeared irritated but shook his head with a smile, then turned to the warriors beside him, "Don't waste time. Take them."

"Divine son is correct." Wei Qing, the Nirvana Realm warrior from the Penglai Divine Land nodded, "We can't settled down if the Yang Family is not destroyed. They often came to the Sky Sea to make trouble. They deserve it."

"Kill." Pan Zhe waved his hand.

"Boom, boom, boom!"

Huge thunders suddenly came from the Silver Horn Ship, while a bunch of spiral golden light shot out towards Shi Yan and Yang Mu.

"Spiral Divine Light!" Yang Mu yelled, "Separate!"

Shi Yan's expression changed a bit, as he hurried to send a message to the Demon Ghost to avoid the light.

The Demon Ghost bellowed with a burst of evil energy. Green Dark Qi and Black Demon Qi gushed out from its body and formed a wave, striking directly to the Spiral Divine Light.

"Shi Yan!" Yang Mu urged the demon beast to leave, but seeing Shi Yan was about to be hit, he screamed, "The Spiral Divine Light is condensed by three hundred Profound crystals. It is unbreakable!"

Yang Mu's scream suddenly stopped.

"Chee chee chee!"

The Dark Qi and Demon Qi from the Demon Ghost congealed and formed a strange shield, while the Spiral Divine Light hit on it, the latter was controlled.

Like a spiral, the light span quickly, getting a little stronger every time it span.

In the Endless Sea, the Spiral Divine Light generated by the Silver Horn Ship could easily took a Nirvana Realm warrior's life.

However, this strike was stopped by the shield formed by the Demon Ghost.

"Dark Qi!"

"Demon Qi!"

The warriors standing on the Silver Horn Ship couldn't help but scream.

Pan Zhe looked gloomy, as he couldn't believe what he had seen. After a while, he said, "What demon beast is it? Why can it trigger Dark Qi, even the demon Qi from the Demon Area? What did you do? How did you make this hybrid creature!"

New generation experts as Gu Linglong and Qu Yanqing were surprised by the Demon Ghost.

Yang Mu, Yang Xue, and Li Fenger were also shocked by the power of the Demon Ghost.

"Shoo shoo shoo!"

From the shield formed by the Demon Ghost with Dark Qi and Demon Qi, suddenly came sharp whistles, along with it, evil energy shot toward the Silver Horn Ship like arrows.

Dense evil energy poured out like rain of arrows. Pan Zhe, Qu Yan Qing and the fellow warriors panicked to fight back.

Shi Yan sat on the Demon Ghost, smiled coldly.

The Demon Ghost was a hybrid of the ghost from the Dark World and the Dragon from the Demon Area, and was an extremely vicious creature. Although the Demon Ghost was merely at level Six, its evil energy was much stronger than normal Level Six Demon Beasts.

Endless evil energy shot to the Silver Horn Ship, and without an order, the Demon Ghost suddenly bellowed and struck towards the Silver Horn Ship.

The Spiral Divine Light couldn't defend against the Demon Ghost at all, as it was broken apart by the Demon Ghost and became golden light spots until they disappeared.

"Kill!" Seeing the Demon Ghost began to attack, Yang Mu laughed, "Xiao Yan, here we are. You are really lucky! Haha!"

Yang Ke, Yang Xue, Li Fenger and the group also drove their Double-headed Dragons, Cyan magic Bats to fly over the golden spots and land on the Silver Horn Ship.

"Bang!"

The Demon Ghost's ten meter long body landed on the Silver Horn Ship first, while the Ship could hardly bear the Demon Ghost as it shook greatly.

"Bad!" Pan Zhe's expression changed, "Wei Qing, quickly stable the Ship!"

This warrior from the Penglai Divine Land rushed into the cabin.

In an instant, a strong energy wave came from inside the Ship. And the Silver Horn Ship went stable at once.

"Shi Yan, I wanna kill you!" Gu Jiange whistled as a Dragon-Killing sword with a fire tail flew out from his back, towards Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was calm, as he threw out a Green Moonstone towards that sword.

The Green Moonstone became a cold green light after striking on the Dragon-Killing Sword. Its immediately cold energy put off the fire at once.

Gu Jiange panicked. As he stood the closest to the Dragon-Killing Sword, he was covered by thirty ice light shots. Feeling freezing cold, his Profound Qi also slowed down.

"Seal of Death!"

Shi Yan yelled in his mind, and stretched out his left hand, while seven hand prints exploded towards Gu Jiange with the power of death.

Gu Jiange was frightened. Though they were both at the Second Sky of Disaster Realm, Shi Yan's seal of death was overwhelming to him. He could hardly defend against it. Thus he got close to Gu Linglong to avoid it.

"Useless." Gu Linglong sneered, as two magical swords twisted and flew out like two mud fish.

"Bang bang!"

The Seal of Death struck on the Yin Swords, but was diverted by it.

Gu Linglong's long eyebrows went high. She had the martial Spirit of "The heart of magical sword", so she could perceive that the sword soul was polluted by the seal.

"Bastard, what evil Martial Skill is that?" Gu Linglong turned

serious, and she shouted madly, "You damaged my Sword soul! I won't let you go!"

At once, a sword of wind character broke the sky and appeared in front of Shi Yan.

The sword could hide itself so Shi Yan didn't even notice it. When he first saw the sword, it was already at his face.

"Hooo!"

The Demon Ghost let out dirty air and spitted it on the sword. The sword at once changed its direction and flew toward Qu Yanqing.

Qu Yanqing, who was fighting against Yang Xue and Yang Ke, was frightened, so she retreated away to avoid the sword. She reproached coldly, "Gu Linglong, what the hell are you doing!"

"Accident." Gu Linglong stuck out her tongue and withdrew the sword. She went angrier, "You bastard! What a shame, you used your demon beast! Fight with me! I can kill you at once!"

Shi Yan didn't move but stayed on the Demon Ghost, watching what's happening on the Silver Horn Ship.

The five groups of Yang warriors had got down from the demon beasts, which were standing on the Silver Horn Ship with warriors from the Penglai Divine Land, the Heaven Lake Sacred Land and the Gu Family. Yang Mu's demon beast gazed at two nirvana warriors so they couldn't make a move.

Yang Mu, Yang Xue, Yang Ke, and Li Fenger performed their best Martial skills against Pan Zhe and Qu Yanqing.

Apart from Pan Zhe, Qu Yanqing, Gu Jiange, Gu Linglong, there were still thirty some warriors on the Silver Horn Ship. Their realms varied. Some were at the Third Sky of Earth Realm, while some were at Disaster Realm. They were in a fierce war.

Without responding to Gu Linglong, Shi Yan observed the Ship

and secretly generated the Gravitational Field.

The Gravitational Field was invisible, as warriors under Nirvana Realm couldn't even detect it.

Shi Yan was clear-minded, as he got the timing to control those warriors with his Gravitational Field.

In the fierce battle, one's life was determined in one or two seconds. As the Gravitational Field suddenly generated, those enemy warriors couldn't even use the slightest energy to fight back.

The Yang warrior quickly took the opportunity to slaughter them.

Shi Yan sat up straight on the Demon Ghost, while secretly gathering the Profound Qi from the dead warriors.

The battle on the Ship was messed up by the Gravitational Field, while the Yang family got the upper hand and started slaughtering.

Looking back at those enemy warriors, who were now in great confusion about the situation, while they could hardly fight.

"That bastard is playing a trick!" Coming out from the Cabin, Wei Qing realized something. After detecting by his consciousness, he shouted at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan suddenly became their mutual target.

Chapter 219: Lame!

Wei Qing came out from the the Silver Horn Ship, then he released soul consciousness of the Nirvana Realm. Just feeling for a moment, he found that there were a lot of strange energy waves controlled by Shi Yan. Which imprisoned the warriors of the Penglai Divine land, the Heaven Lake Divine Land and the Gu family, so they could be killed by the Yang family easily.

Shi Yan was the cause of this one-sided situation. When Wei Qing found the strange energy, he yelled. It made everyone focusing their gaze on Shi Yan.

Pan Zhe, Qu Yan Ching, Gu Linglong, these young superiors, stared at Shi Yan immediately .

The three Nirvana Realm warriors dropped the Double-headed Dragon and Cyan Magic bat immediately, and got close to the Demon Ghost. The three old warriors used their power together and surrounded the Demon Ghost from three directions.

"Damn it! Stop!"

Gu Linglong yelled and took a deep breath. There were seven light rays of different colors coming towards Shi Yan in different directions.

The seven rays of light were seven swords of Gu Linglong. The seven swords were arranged in a sword array. Light interweave formed a network and flied down towards Shi Yan.

The swordlight mixed, energy fluctuations were triggered under Gu Linglong's control, carrying a extremely sharp shock wave.

Shi Yan's face changed a little.

Gu Linglong was at the second Sky of Earth Realm. Everyone of her seven swords were very powerful. The power of the sword array was shocking that even Nirvana warriors could not resist it.

He didn't hesitate, and in a moment, he released the dark light shield and the Petrification Martial Spirit.

Shi Yan was sitting on the Demon Ghost gathering negative power again. He instantly hit the Seal of life and death, as they intervened together. He used his strongest move to fight against the seven swords array.

The seal of life and death overlapped. There were seven huge hand prints in a row like leaf fans. A strange energy came out of the seal of life and death suddenly.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

A burst of energy roars suddenly exploded in the sky with dazzling light like beautiful fireworks.

The Seal of life and death came into the swords array. The fluctuations from it contained the mixed power of life and death.

The seven swords array's light dimmed down abruptly. It was disorganized under the bombardment of the seal of life and death.

Gu Linglong's beautiful face turned pale and her body shook.

From the swords array, seven attributes of different energy fluctuations were releasing. They followed Shi Yan's life fluctuations and attacked him.

Sitting on the Demon Ghost, Shi Yan was attacked by the sword array. As his Dark Light shield was broken, his body was thrown out from the Demon Ghost.

"Puff!"

Shi Yan sprayed a mouth of blood. His organs seemed to be moved. He was in extreme pain.

Using third stage of Petrification Martial Spirit, he prevented the seven swords' force, so that his body was safe and secure. But the force penetrated in Shi Yan's body and began to destroy his body.

His face turned extremely white, Shi Yan quickly released the

negative power in his meridians to resist the power of the seven swords into his body.

Negative power, Profound Qi defense, Shi Yan hurried to remove the destruction power from his body.

At the same time, a hot inflammatory force also came out from the Blood Vein ring and gushed into his tendons to help him remove the power of the Sword.

This was fire power of the Earth Core fire of thousands of years.

Three kinds of strange power flowed along Shi Yan's tendons. In a very short period of time, the power of the seven swords was consumed.

Colorful light emerged from Shi Yan's skin .

At first glance, he seemed to be a strange light source and the energy fluctuations in his body were in chaos.

"Hoo!"

Lightly breathing, Shi Yan had a poker face, then he wiped off the blood on his mouth. Taking a quick leap, Shi Yan flew onto the back of Demon Ghost. He took an exquisite sight at Gu Linglong and said, "So lame!"

Gu Linglong's beautiful eyes showed a cold light and her body shook slightly, gritting her teeth.

As the seven sword blew, she believed that only Yang Mu and Yang Zhou could resist it among the young superiors of the Yang family. Shi Yan was a warrior of Disaster Realm. She expected that Shi Yan should be killed instantly.

However, Shi Yan's martial skill intercepted it. The impact of seven swords had stormed Shi Yan's body, but was consumed by him.

It was so strange that it was utterly beyond Gu Linglong's expectation.

Shi Yan was sitting on the Demon Ghost again. It made her feel unfathomable. When Gu Linglong looked at Shi Yan again, she had no contempt.

"Howl!"

The Demon Ghost roared. The green eyes on the its ferocious face emits faint green light instantly .

Different lights shoot towards Wei Qing's three Nirvana Realm warriors. Due to the strange green light, the three men's Sea of Consciousness became a mess, so they could not form effective attack any more.

The Demon Ghost growled. Its huge body, angrily, landed on the Ship. It ripped one after another warrior from the Penglai Divine land into pieces. There was misty blood fog filling the air around the Demon Ghost.

As more evil energy gathered in the bloody mist. It became more and more intense.

With the Demon Ghost as a center the bloody mist spreaded out like a storm. Wherever the mist of blood swept, all people retreated. Even Wei Qing's three warriors of Nirvana Realm stayed away.

Shi Yan also became aware of the violent anger of the Demon Ghost.

Because Shi Yan was attacked by Gu Linglong, the demon beast seemed to be irritated. It was crazy to arouse its bloodthirsty temper.

The Demon Ghost ran wild on the Silver Horn Ship. Its green eyes shot out green faint light.

It was just a Demon Ghost of level six. But at this moment, it erupted like a level seven monster beast.

Pan Zhe, Qu Yan Ching, Gu Linglong and Gu Jiange were all

shocked by the evil fierceness of the Demon Ghost. They dared not to get close to the Demon Ghost and stayed away.

Yang Mu, Li Fenger and other warriors of the Yang family were about to get close to Shi Yan, but as they saw the Demon Ghost suddenly go mad, they stepped aside.

At that time, the Silver Horn Ship became a stage for the Demon Ghost to kill. It received Shi Yan's will and tore the warriors from the Penglai Divine land and the Heaven Lake Divine Land to shreds.

There were blood and remains scattered everywhere on the Silver Horn Ship.

Sitting on the Demon Ghost, Shi Yan was enjoying the power of those dead bodies. His meridians started to get a hurt.

A variety of negative emotions were flowing into Shi Yan's mind, he could barely manage his consciousness.

Evil forces of fear, blood thirstiness, resentment and negative energy exploded and formed a white light mist around Shi Yan's body and dissipated quietly.

Gu Jiange wanted to sneak attack Shi Yan. But he was careless and was instantly surrounded by the white mist formed from Shi Yan's negative emotions.

Just in a moment, Gu Jiange suddenly lost his mind. He was like a prisoner which had been trapped for hundreds of years, and moved to kill Gu Linglong.

Gu Jiange became crazy.

"You are crazy!" Gu Linglong got a bad feeling and wanted to move, but she found that there was endless resentment in Gu Jiange.

Gu Linglong immediately realized that he really became crazy.

Shi Yan was also shocked after he found that the waves of the

negative emotions could make people mad, and even make them kill their companions.

Shi Yan immediately realized that this was an extremely uncommon magic ability; He immediately wrapped the negative emotion mist with his soul consciousness, and covered it onto the warriors of the Penglai Divine land and Heaven Lake Divine Land.

As expected.

Once covered by the white mist, those warriors immediately became delirious and bloodthirsty, and began to kill each other.

"What black magic!"

Wei Qing screamed when he saw his men lose their mind and killed each other. All of a sudden, he felt helpless.

"Howl!"

The Demon Ghost jumped towards Wei Qing and there was a strong dark energy wave flowing from him.

Wei Qing's face changed. He didn't care about his men, and jumped off the Silver Horn Ship while shouting "go".

The warriors on the Silver Horn Ship also saw something was wrong. They immediately followed Wei Qing and jumped into the sea.

Below them was the endless ocean. These people knew that it will be fine to fall into the sea. So they just jumped into the sea.

"Shi Yan, remember, I will kill you." Gu Linglong stared at him bitterly, and then caught the delirious Gu Jiange and went into the sea drawing a beautiful line.

Only three seconds, the survived warriors all jumped into the ocean.

"Let's go." Shi Yan patted the Demon Ghost lightly and stopped the Demon Ghost from going after them. He said to Yang Mu, "Pan Zhe, they are just a single group, but there are other warriors

coming here. They are stronger than Pan Zhe, including five Nirvana Realm warriors."

Yang Mu expression changed and he nodded showing his understanding.

After Yang Mu called them, the warriors of the Yang family on the Ship boarded onto the Demon Ghost, the Double-headed Dragon and the Cyan Magic Bat. Then they flew away from the Ship like a wind.

Chapter 220: There Is No Need to be So Direct, Right?

A blue sky, in the endless sea.

The warm wind was slowly blowing, under the blue sky, five demon beasts were soaring in the sky; On the demon beasts, the Yang warriors were sitting in high spirits and laughing.

The victory in the war on half day before was very glorious; In the clash of three big forces in the Endless sea, they slaughtered twenty warriors with the same realm as them, forcing the warriors from those three big forces to jump into the sea to escape.

At this war, Shi Yan who only had the cultivation of Disaster realm played a decisive role!

Yang Xue, Li Fenger and the others who despised Shi Yan at first, now when they looked at him, there was some splendor in their eyes, as if they re-recognized Shi Yan.

Li Fenger who had always been stand-offish also smiled with joy and showed an interest toward Shi Yan.

Li Fenger had a tall posture and very pretty and usually she was quite arrogant.

Because of her outstanding strength, she received the same treatment as Yang Mu and the others in the Yang family. In the entire Kyara sea, she was also very famous, this time her smile made many Yang family warriors to secretly peek at her.

"I didn't expect that you're this good" Li Fenger smiled sweetly "At first, I think that the head made a fuss by using three drops of immortal blood to calculate your life and death and now I know that the head has a great foresight, I think the head knew you're extraordinary, so he was willing to do that."

At that time, in the Immortal islands, after Mo Duanhun told

Yang Qingdi about the accident that occurred with Shi Yan in Menluo island, Yang Qingdi only hesitated a bit, and then he decided to use three drops of immortal blood to determine Shi Yan's life and death.

At that time, many people thought that Yang Qingdi was too concerned with Shi Yan, Shi Yan who only had the cultivation of Disaster realm wasn't worth for him to use three drops of immortal blood.

Li Fenger was also one of them, after she knew this thing, she even secretly complained to her father that Shi Yan was burdensome, he even hasn't come to Yang family but already made Yang Qingdi spent three drops of Immortal blood.

And after meeting Shi Yan at Immortal island, she saw there wasn't anything special in Shi Yan, she even believed that the reason that Shi Yan can tame the Demon Ghost was with the help from Yang Qingdi, so that he can easily tame the Demon Ghost.

She hadn't had any deep impression on Shi Yan, and felt that Shi Yan was only a very normal warrior on Yang family and wasn't worthy of much attention.

Until this war, the moment when Shi Yan used Gravitational field to reverse the situation and didn't suffer any damage from the seven swords of Gu Linglong, who is in the Power rankings, she started to change her view and finally realized that Yang Qingdi was right and the three drops of Immortal blood that he used to determine Shi Yan's life and death weren't wasted.

Sitting on the Demon Ghost, Shi Yan frowned and slightly glimpsed at Li Fenger, but didn't speak anything.

He was focusing his mind on sensing the changes inside his meridian.

On the silver horn ship, the profound qi from those dead warriors of the three big forces was quietly absorbed by him, after

getting the profound qi, the mysterious martial spirit started to purify the qi.

In the purification process, many negative emotions continued to emerge and affected his consciousness.

He was about to lose control.

This time his meridian absorbed too much power, at this moment his meridian was purifying the profound qi and the seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his body felt like they were burning, now he only focused on the changes in his meridian and can't be distracted by other things.

"Hey!" Li Fenger appeared slightly upset, "You, why you are so cold? I know that you have some skill, but if a beauty was talking with you, you should respond happily right? Hmph, you know, in this Kyara sea, there are many people who want to speak with me, but I didn't care at all? I take the initiative to talk to, but your attitude is like this, you are really arrogant, aren't you?"

"Xiao Yanzi, Fenger is one of the Four Golden Flowers in our Kyara sea, how can you behave like this when there is a beauty flirting with you?" Yang Mu smiled.

There are four golden flowers in the Kyara sea, Yang Mu already told Shi Yan when they met the first time.

In the Four Golden Flowers, Xia Xinyan ranked first, the second one was He Qingman, the third was Yang Xue and Li Fenger was the fourth.

Although Li Fenger was the last, but can be famed as one of the Four Golden Flowers in the Kyara sea was definitely true, because she was indeed a very eye-catching beauty.

Li Fenger has tall posture and slender legs and her snake-like waist was the area that made many people aroused.

snake-like waist, Shi Yan suddenly remembered that there was a simplest way to resolve the backlash when the Mysterious Martial

Spirit was purifying the profound qi.

The desire that can't be restrained suddenly emerged in his heart, he tried to not think but found that desire was becoming more and more strong.

At the same time, his eyes were different from when he looked at Li Fenger before, now it became gradually filled with lust and desire,

"You, what do you want to do ? " Li Fenger blushed, she couldn't withstand the look from Shi Yan, and fiercely stared at Shi Yan, cursed: "At first, I think you are pretty good, but it turns out that you are just a pervert"

Yang Xue also frowned.

That look in Shi Yan eyes and the desire in it was extremely obvious, as long as one was a adult, then the special meaning from those eyes can be seen.

"Xiao Yanzi? There is no need to be so direct, right?" Yang Mu laughed "Although we all have the same evil thoughts on Fenger, but no one dared to show it clearly, you are really a special one."

"Brother Yang, you also aren't a good person" Li Fenger stared at Yang Mu.

"Brother bind me!" Shi Yan suddenly shouted, "It's better if you use metal chain and wrap it around my body, otherwise, I'm afraid that I can't control myself anymore"

"You!" Li Fenger slightly shouted, looked strangely at him "This is the first time I heard that one need to be tied by a chain because he is a pervert, I have seen many perverts, but this is the first time I have seen a pervert like you "

Yang Ke also stunned, said: "There isn't a need to do that right?"

"I know that Fenger is a beauty, but, that Xia Xinyan is even more beautiful, don't tell me that you were also like this when you met

that girl for the first time?" Yang Mu secretly gasped, " Xiao Yanzi, did you eat an aphrodisiac, if not, why are you behaving so strange?"

"I practice a martial skill that has a backlash, once forced to use it, the backlash will make me lose my mind..." Shi Yan couldn't say anything about the mysterious martial spirit, and only tell about rampage, while panting heavily he urgently said: "I'm not kidding, Brother, Quick, tie me, otherwise, I definitely will go crazy and will become the same as that Gu Jiange"

Yang Mu face changed, he quickly replied: "You really mean it?"

Shi Yan nodded again and again.

This time, Yang Xue and Li Fenger also started to panic, from Shi Yan changes, they can see that there was something wrong and knew that Shi Yan wasn't kidding, after all, they also saw Gu Jiange who suddenly went crazy.

"Alright! " Yang Mu was very decisive, he quickly flew out from that Double-Headed Dragon and the magic ring in his hand flashed, and suddenly a green iron chain appeared, " This chain is a soul rank secret treasure and it can bind a Nirvana realm warrior, do you really want to bind yourself?"

"Yes!"

Yang Mu frowned, didn't said anything and tied Shi Yan with that chain.

After being bounded, the flow of profound qi in Shi Yan body suddenly slowed down, the chain released a strange oppressive power, and after being tied with this chain, Shi Yan felt like there was a huge mountain crushing him, even moving became extremely difficult, the various energies inside his body slowed down, after tied by that chain.

"It's okay now" Shi Yan growled, On the Demon Ghost's body he closed his eyes and his body was gently trembling, he seemed to be

enduring a great pain.

Yang Mu and the others were looking at him with a strange expression

Suddenly, evil, dark, violent and negative auras came out from Shi Yan's body, those powers were like sharp sword, wandering inside Shi Yan body.

They clearly saw that Shi Yan's skin began to split and also blood was starting to flow out from his mouth and eyes under the backlash.

This time Shi Yan absorbed too much power, the backlash from that much power was also extremely violent, even his body couldn't withstand that amount of power. Under the outbreak from the backlash, his body was being destroyed from inside, the tendons in his body were shaking and some were even snapped.

"What kind of evil martial skills this kid practiced? Why is the backlash so terrifying?" Li Fenger was staring at Shi Yan.

"He only has the cultivation of the second sky of Disaster realm. But, he was fearlessly under the attack from the seven swords of Gu Linglong, he even managed to survive from it," Yang Xue expression became complicated "As you know, Gu Linglong is ranked eighth on the Power rankings, her heart of divine sword is a Sacred Rank Martial Spirit"

Li Fenger's body trembled "In other words, if he used this evil martial skill, then he can defeat me?"

"Fenger, you only have the cultivation of the first sky of Earth realm, yeah, although your talent is extraordinary, but if Xiao Yanzi really wants to kill you, from the strength that he showed, maybe... maybe there is a possibility of it happening" Yang Xue nodded.

Li Fenger became shocked.

After Yang Xue said that, she then realized Shi Yan's frightful

strength, the ability to kill people above his own realm was really terrifying.

"Now I felt more and more that the head is really wise, looks like, it is really worthy to spend three drops of immortal blood for him"

Chapter 221: Peak of the Disaster Realm

Shi Yan sat on top of the Demon Ghost, he started trembling more and more, as blood dripped from his lips, and his entire body was shrouded with evil energies.

Yang Mu, Yang Xue, and Li Fenger all appeared to be very surprised. They stared at Shi Yan and thoughtful expressions can be seen on their faces.

"This backlash is truly very frightening." Yang Ke pondered for a moment, and said: "Truly, there is only our Yang family's Immortality Martial Spirit that can hold against this. I can see the destructive speed of little Yan's body, and it is very rapid. However, the recovering speed of his body is also not weak."

"Having the ability to make his power suddenly rise to a level where he can fight with a Earth realm first sky warrior, this martial skill, naturally won't have a weak backlash force." Yang Mu nodded, "Like Xia Xinyan, once she activates the Reincarnation Martial Spirit, she can instantly step into the Sky realm. However, once the Reincarnation power disappears, not only would she turn back to her true form, it would be hard for her to battle for another few months. In order to use any power that doesn't belong to yourself, you will have to suffer the constraints of the rules of nature."

"Right, can the Nutrition Pills help him?" Yang Xue's expression changed, "I still have two Nutrition Pills on me."

"It's no use." Yang Mu shook his head, "Little Yan's martial spirits recoil is a little different than other people's. His recoil has a very strong soul fluctuation, it's not just pure physical damage. Hmm, the Nutrition Pill will only work when he regains consciousness. But, he has our Yang family's Immortal Martial Spirit on him, so, the Nutrition Pill may not be any use for him."

"That's true." Yang Xue was silent for a moment, and then

noded.

Everyone became silent, they continued to look at Shi Yan.

Soon, Shi Yan seemed to become overwhelmed by the pain from the recoil. He clenched his teeth and roared, at that moment his expression was the most ferocious.

He was about to lose his sanity.

"Guard him well, this moment is the most crucial for him." Yang Mu's face was serious, he quietly went closer towards Shi Yan, in fear that Shi Yan might not be able to handle the stinging pain in his body at this important time.

Yang Ke and the rest, also quietly moved a few steps closer.

Shi Yan roared, like a demon beast that went mad, he kept roaring in the silent sky.

His roars were extremely harsh, they spread far beyond, and seemed to have caught the attention of many warriors in the Sky Sea. Many warriors on the island all looked up towards the sky, unaware of what was happening.

However, when they realized that under the white clouds, it was Double-Headed Dragon and the Cyan Blood Bat that were flying, these warriors that were not from the Penglai Divine Land, all had frightened expressions on their faces, even scared to reveal a single trace of discontent.

Yang family warriors once wreaked havoc in the Sky Sea. Many Sky Sea warriors knew that the Double-Headed Dragons and Cyan Blood Bats were demon beasts tamed by the Yang family. These warriors didn't know about the mysterious change that happened in the Yang family, they only thought that this time the Yang family warriors were there to make trouble in the Sky Sea again.

Yang Mu and the rest all had serious expressions on their faces. They didn't dare to relax even for a single moment. They all carefully took precautions, in fear that there would be Penglai

Divine Land warriors that would come for them.

While Shi Yan was screaming, the Demon Ghost seemed to have become excited, the dark energy and the demon energy whirled on his body, and air waves kept forming outside his body. Watching from the island down below, the Demon Ghost seemed to be riding with clouds and mists in the thick dark sky, it gave people a very profound and stunning impression.

After roaring for god knows how long, when Yang Mu and the rest were at their most tense moment, Shi Yan suddenly became quiet.

All the evil energies on his body, suddenly disappeared without a trace. Shi Yan seemed to have completely calmed down. After exhausting both his body and mind, he fell limp on the body of the Demon Ghost, as if he had lost consciousness.

Yang Mu went to check on him.

"It's alright, he's just temporarily passed out. But the Immortal Martial Spirit inside him is already working to recover his physical body." Checking for a moment, Yang Mu quietly set his mind at rest, "He's going to be fine, his Immortal Martial Spirit, is actually already in its third stage."

"What?"

Yang Xie, Yang Ke, and Li Fenger all exclaimed. They shockingly looked at Yang Mu, with unbelievable expressions.

"It is indeed in the third stage." Yang Mu smiled with ease, "I know you guys are very confused, after all, the third stage of the Immortal Martial Spirit requires you to be in the Earth realm. Hmm, before this I also had this question in mind, I thought it was truly unbelievable. However, this guy is really abnormal, his Immortal Martial Spirit is really in its third stage."

After Yang Mu's reminder, the three blankly stared at Shi Yan.

Under the gaze of the three, the wounds on Shi Yan's body was

indeed healing at a speed that was visible to the naked eye. Looking at this speed, it was absolutely unquestionable that this was indeed the third stage of the Immortal Martial Spirit.

"How is that possible?" Li Fenger's beautiful eyes were filled with shock and curiosity, "Exactly how many secrets are on this guy? I never knew that Disaster realm warriors can also achieve the third stage of the Immortal Martial Spirit. Could it be that he really is abnormal?"

"The reason why Great Grandpa values him so much, must be because of his special traits." Yang Mu smiled.

Everyone all nodded.

...

In the cold night sky, countless stars decorated the sky above.

Five demon beasts flew quickly in the night sky. The one in the lead was the Demon Ghost. Shi Yan was lying limp on the Demon Ghost, he had been unconscious for most of the day.

In this time, the visible wounds on his body were all completely healed.

In the second half of the night.

Shi Yan lightly breathed out, and slowly woke up. When he opened his eyes, he didn't bother with anyone, instead he immediately sat down with his legs crossed and started to strenuously cultivate with his eyes closed.

Yang Mu and the rest were all looking at him.

Everyone felt a strange energy fluctuation on his body. That energy fluctuation was extremely strange. It kept flowing rapidly in his body, as if it was quickly strengthening his Profound Qi.

They had a feeling, that Shi Yan's spirit, energy, and mind, were all having a intriguing change.

Time passed by quickly.

Before the break of dawn, the natural energies in the nearby area all quietly gathered towards Shi Yan, and flowed into his body.

A flow of cold star power also poured down from the heavens, and entered into Shi Yan's body.

When the sun had just risen, Shi Yan finally re-opened his eyes. His eyes looked like stars, two beams of strange light, suddenly shot out from his eyes, they actually reached three feet out from his eyes, and then quickly went back inside his eyes again.

"Lighting formed from the eyes! The peak of the Disaster realm!"

Li Fenger screamed.

Yang Mu and the rest were also startled, they looked at Shi Yan in shock, the expressions on all of their faces were extremely stunned.

Profound Qi enters into the head, and gathers in the eyes, forming into spirit light. This was the direct sign of the peak level of the Disaster realm.

Now that Shi Yan has just woke up, there was already electric light shooting out from his eyes. He had clearly stepped into the third sky peak state of the Disaster realm.

In just a short night, he leaped up from the second sky of Disaster realm, and directly stepped into the peak state of third sky of Disaster realm.

Shi Yan revealed a smile, and nodded, "Yeah, I stepped into the third sky of the Disaster realm."

"Aren't you too much of a freak?" Yang Ke's expression looked like he was defeated by Shi Yan, "Didn't you suffer from the backlash force? Logically, you should be severely injured? Why are you not only completely fine, but also able to fly up and reach a new level? Dude, how many secrets do you have on you?"

"Luck." Shi Yan smiled, and didn't explained much.

"Alright, stop asking." After the shock, Yang Mu also recovered. He knew that Shi Yan probably had some secrets that he didn't wish to talk about. He didn't want to force him either, so he only smiled: "Little Yan is indeed a freak, no wonder Great Grandpa values you so much, This guy, truly has endless potential. This trip to the Chasm Battlefield might just take you go one step further into the Earth realm."

Everyone's eyes brightened.

Shi Yan smiled, "I'll try, hmm, I can also slightly sense that I'm probably going to step into the Earth realm very soon."

That time on that ship, the Profound Qi that Shi Yan had absorbed was extremely vigorous. The strange power it had changed to was also out of his expectations, and it actually helped him reach straight into the third sky of the Disaster realm. Plus he also seemed to be only one step away from the Earth realm.

It seemed as if once he gains insight on a certain aspect, he would be able to smoothly step into the Earth realm.

Everyone were stunned again.

"Madman, you are truly a cultivation madman." Li Fenger shook her head and sighed, "I originally thought Yang Mu and Yang Ke as monsters. But this time, I've found that there is the existence of a monster among the monsters."

Everyone seemed to agree with Li Fenger's words, as they all nodded their heads showing their approval to her words.

...

Two days later.

After continuously riding the five demon beasts they finally landed on Gourd Island.

This Gourd Island was extremely big in size. From above, it looked like a giant gourd, formed by two giant islands. On the

bigger piece of the island, there were endless Sky Demon Mountain Ranges, where countless demon beasts roamed arrogantly.

Separated by many kilometers, Shi Yan could almost hear the roars of the demon beasts coming from that side.

The Demon Ghost was also slightly excited.

Its evil green eyes, gazed afar towards the Sky Demon Mountain Range, listening on to the roars of those demon beasts coming from within. It seemed to be irresistibly tempted by the delicious meals, and was waiting to make a move.

The smaller piece of the island was covered with swamps. Poisonous mists hovered over there, and was filled with a deathly ambience.

"The Gate of Heaven that leads to the Chasm Battlefield is inside that swamp. Hmm, there shouldn't be any dangers nearby, back then the Penglai Divine Land still guarded this Gate of Heaven, treating the Gate of Heaven that lead to the Abyss Battlefield as a treasured land. However, the people that went to the Abyss Battlefield, many of them died in their. Those that came back mostly obtained no benefits, so soon the Penglai Divine Land stopped valuing this Gate of Heaven, and now no one guards here anymore, anyone can go in." Li Fenger said loudly.

The five demon beasts slowly came, and stopped in the middle of the green swamps. In the swamps, green light flashed, and a Gate of Heaven floated quietly on top of a swamped area, a flow of deathly and ancient air quietly flew out from that Gate of Heaven.

"That is the Gate of Heaven." Li Fenger pointed, and said calmly: "There is nothing abnormal here, however, once we step inside, it would be another world. Inside the Abyss Battlefield, there are dangers all around. We might not be able to find any secret treasures, but as long as we live, our objective will be achieved."

"Yes, live on." Yang Mu nodded, "We have to stay there for at

least three years, in those three years of time, we can do many things."

"You go to that side, in a while I will come to find you." Shi Yan patted the Demon Ghost, and pointed towards the direction of the Sky Demon Mountain Range, "There are many demon beasts there, this is your heaven."

The Demon Ghost roared, and flew into the sky. Its enormous body faded into a black dot in the sky, going further and further.

"Let's go." Yang Mu and the others also ordered their demon beasts, and finally stepped into the Gate of Heaven that lead to the Chasm Battlefield.

Shi Yan calmly followed.

Chapter 222: Becoming Famous

As the drizzling rain continued to fall.

Three silver horn ships slowly headed towards The Gourd island, on that ship, grimly looking warriors were standing in rows.

In one of the ships, Pan Zhe, Qu Yanching, Gu Linglong were standing together and were having a conversation with a warrior from another ship.

The young experts in the Endless Sea were gathered together with experts from another big sea to eradicate the young Yang warriors.

"I didn't expect that this time, the Yang family will be hiding in the Chasm battlefield, if I had known that then we would have stopped them at the Gourd island" Pan Zhe frowned, "Once they enter the Chasm Battlefield, it would be difficult to find them, the situation inside there is quite complex so you guys have to be careful."

"The Yang family is finished, even Yang Mu and others had to hide in the Chasm Battlefield, even this can't change anything" Qu Yanching looked indifferent, under the drizzling rain, a circle of silver-white light wisp came out from her body and blocked the rain, and not a single drop of rain can stain her.

"The Immortal Island is empty, this time the Yang family has really made up their mind" Gu Linglong sniffed, "it's said that the Yang family is divided into three groups, the first one will go to the Undersea Desolate City, the other one goes to the Chasm Battlefield, and the largest one goes to the Fourth Demon Area. They are really daring, even they know that two Demon King from Fourth Demon Area wants to exterminate them, yet they still dare to move their main force into the demon area, Bo Xun and Chi yan have already said that they will eradicate the Yang Family in the Demon Area."

"Brother Panzhe, how much further is the Gourd island?" Xie Kui smiled indifferently and shouted from another ship.

"Soon, but Yang Mu and the others probably will have already gone into the Chasm Battlefield, looks like we have to meet with them inside the Chasm Battlefield" Pan Zhe laughed.

Beside Xie Kui, stood a leisurely looking beautiful woman with fair white skin in a green dress.

Cao Zhilan, The lady from Cao family in Tuta sea, having the cultivation of the third sky of Earth realm, and ranked third in the Power Rankings, and the most formidable expert among the new generation from the endless sea.

"You guys have fought with Yang Mu two days ago, so what do you guys think about him?" Cao Zhilan slightly raised her neck, her soft voice was like a spring breeze which gently touched everyones heart, "At that time, there were warriors of the third sky of Nirvana Realm among you, but how can you end up in the embarrassment state that you have to abandon the ship?"

Xie Kui was also quite curious about this, "Although Yang Mu was difficult to deal with, but at most he can only fight with one Nirvana realm warrior, and you guys still lose, which is really strange."

Pan Zhe, Qu Yangching, and Gu Linglong looked embarrassed and slightly awkward.

"This time we aren't defeated by Yang Mu" Gu Linglong stammered, and bitterly said: "But it's another guy that made us fail to keep them"

"Oh?" Cao Zhilan also seemed interested in this, her bright moon-like eyes were sparkling, while slightly raising her lips she asked, "Who?"

Xie Kui, who was standing beside Cao Zhilan after listening to her beautiful voice, looked at her face, he couldn't help but to

compare her with Xia Xinyan in his heart, and he found that both in appearance or aura, Cao Zhilan wasn't any less than Xia Xinyan, their charm was actually on the same level.

However, Cao Zhilan was a ranked warrior in the Power Rankings, which made her aura more superior.

"Shi Yan!" Gu Linglong bite her teeth, and her eyes shown with a cold light, "I don't know where this kid emerged from, but with his appearance, he made our Gu family bear a huge loss, if it wasn't for him, we certainly had retained Yang Mu and the others, and then wait for you guys to come to exterminate them"

"Shi Yan?" Cao Zhilan smiled "This name is very strange, who is he? There shouldn't be an expert like this in Yang family's new generation"

Xiu Kui looked toward He Qing who was on the third ship, and lightly said: "Little sister, you are the one who understands Shi Yan very well, I think, you can explain about him to us"

He Qingman wore a red armor, her face was flirtatious with a unique seductive aura in her eyes.

The young warriors who were on the same ship with her have been quietly watching her, and secretly gulped, some warriors who thought that they were worthy of her were trying to please her, hoping to get her attention.

This time, the Evil Wonderland has completely turn against the Yang family, after knowing that Yang Qingdi was trapped with the Demon Seal Pattern, the head of Evil Wonderland tore up the treaty of alliance between Evil Wonderland and Yang family, and revealed the information about Yang family's evacuation and waited for the arrival of warriors from other sea, after meeting they were led by Evil wonderland experts to kill all the way into the immortal island.

The Evil Wonderland was pressed by the Yang family for

hundred of years, and now they finally got the opportunity to stand up, so naturally they won't remain silent.

The Yang family in Kyara sea was controlling hundred of islands with rich resources, these islands were the most precious islands in the Kyara sea.

For all this time, the Evil Wonderland coveted those islands, but because of Yang family, they didn't dared to act recklessly, and now, with the help of forces from another sea, the Evil Wonderland will finally be able to take control over those islands.

This time's situation made the Immortal Island a sharing field among those big forces, the nine sacred mountains in Immortal Island became the best place for cultivating for the new generation, and the islands that were originally controlled by Yang family were divided up by those forces, and the Evil Wonderland had the biggest benefits among them, taking up most of the divided islands.

The Xia family, because they remained silent this whole time, didn't get any share of materials, and now the Evil Wonderland after controlling those islands from the Yang family became more powerful and already far surpassed Xia family.

The Evil Wonderland morale was rising greatly, since they have gone against the Yang family, there was no longer any scruples. After hearing that Yang Mu and the others went to the Chasm Battlefield, without any hesitation, they sent out Xie Kui, He Qingman, and the other experts, trying to exterminate the Yang family new generation.

"Little sister! " after seeing He Qingman remained silence, Xie Kui face became ugly and he slightly shouted, reminding He Qingman to pay attention to the situation.

When in the Black Rock Island, Xie Kui was quite dissatisfied with He Qingman who protected Shi Yan, and after they left from there, they also quarreled several times and their relationship was

greatly affected.

After this incident with the Yang family, He Qingman wasn't keen to deal with Yang family, when the Evil Wonderland wanted to send her to Sky sea, she refused, but then she was forced to go by Evil Wonderland head.

Xie Kui knew that Shi Yan had saved He Qingman's life when they were inside the cave in the Black rock island, and also knew that Mo Duanhun helped the He family, so He Qingman didn't wanted to go against the Yang family.

But Xie Kui didn't think like that, he already thought that he was the next head of Evil Wonderland, so he naturally wanted to seek the greatest benefit for Evil Wonderland.

Only by making Evil Wonderland more powerful, would he be able suppress the Xia family and get Xia Xinyan.

"Shi Yan didn't come from Endless sea, but from a remote place, his time spent in the endless sea is extremely short, and he is the one who was pointed by Yang Qingdi to enter the Yang family" Under Xie Kui excoriate, He Qingman helplessly told about Shi Yan's origin, "Shi Yan only has the cultivation of the Second Sky of Disaster Realm, but, even so, he can fight with Earth realm warriors, this person has a lot of mysterious things, and can't be underestimated."

Gu Linglong grunted "This man is indeed different, he only has the cultivation of the Second Sky of Disaster Realm, but he can withstand my full blow, and also, he practiced a very magical martial skill that can quietly layout traps, this time we suffered heavy losses due to the trap arranged by him. "

"Shi Yan..." Cao Zhilan murmured and nodded her head, softly saying: "After listening to you guys, it looks like this guy should be an interesting person, I hope that he won't disappoint me inside the Chasm Battlefield."

.....

Xia family, inside a huge discussion hall.

Many Xia family heads were gathered, and Xia Shenchuan was sitting on the throne, with a solemn look.

Xia Xinyan was sitting gracefully under the throne, slightly frowning, and quietly listening to Xia Shenchuan words.

"Brother, the Yang family is finished, why don't we join with the other forces? As long as we show that we are against the Yang family, we will also be able to take over some of those islands, the islands and forces that previously belonged to Yang family already can't do anything, we can easily get those islands which belonged to Yang family" Xia Shenmou complained.

Many Xia warriors also agreed with him and nodded

"As long as Yang Qingdi isn't dead, then don't say that the Yang family has perish" Xia Shenchuan sniffed, "Yang Qingdi has been running amuck in the Endless Sea for many years and is very powerful, even he is captured by Demon Seal Pattern, as long as he didn't die, the Yang family foundation is still solid, you also know Yang Qingdi's character, if one day he returned to Endless sea, then accordance to his style, he would definitely deal with those people who dared to go against the Yang Family."

"The demon Seal Pattern from Demon King Chi Yan can even exterminate God realm warriors, and now not only Chi Yan is guarding that Demon Seal Pattern, even Bo Xun is also guarding it, with those two demon kings teaming up, I don't believe that Yang Qingdi can escape from it, this time he would definitely die" Xia Shenmou quickly said, "the Evil Wonderland has already reaped greatest benefit by getting two hundred islands, the Evil Wonderland has become more powerful than us, and now their power will only greatly increase, how can we deal with them in the future?"

"Silence, these are father's words, you have other opinions?" Xia Shenchuan said with impatience.

After hearing it, Xia Shenmou was immediately stunned, and went silent for a moment, he slowly sat down and no longer said anything.

"Xin yan, don't go out for some time" Xia Shenchuan thought for a moment and said: "After you entered into the Second Sky of Earth realm, there are more and more people coming to propose a marriage, those people want to merge with our Xia family through marrying you, especially the Evil Wonderland, they already want to conquer the entire Kyara Sea, this time Xie Kui has gone to the Sky Sea, and he may kill Shi Yan, so you had better prepare in advance."

"If there is anything wrong with Shi Yan, I will definitely kill Xie Kui" Xia Xinyan eyes look indifferent, she lightly said: "And also, I don't think that Xie Kui can succeed even with his cultivation of the second sky of Earth realm, I believe Shi Yan can escape."

Suddenly there was an uproar in Xia family, they thought that Xia Xinyan has probably got the cackle fever.

"Just wait for it, in the future Shi Yan will surpass all of the people in the Power Rankings in the new generation and there will be no one who can beat him" Xia Xinyan didn't explain anymore, and leisurely stood up, and indifferent left the discussion hall, "I'll be heading into closed-door cultivation, if Shi Yan didn't return from the Chasm Battlefield, then don't call me"

Chapter 223: The Chasm Battlefield

In an abandoned ancient wasteland with grey sky, no sun and moon, and barren natural auras.

The gate of heaven was floating on a flat-like mirrored mountain summit.

Shi Yan was standing on that summit. As he looked around, he found that this entire world was covered with a layer of gray clouds, his spirit power was blocked by those gray clouds and it was very difficult even to see several kilometers.

When looking far ahead, there were many huge, unimaginably deep, swarthy pits.

The river were dried up and there weren't any life signs, which made this place look like a dead land, and gave a very dull feeling.

"So this is the chasm battlefield" Li Fenger gently sighed, "There is no sense of direction here, no sun, moon, and stars, barren natural auras. This place really is not suitable for cultivation for a warrior. In the ancient time, this place was a battlefield, many powerful ancient warriors were here, those ancient warriors left many secret treasures and magical martial skills in this chasm battlefield, but it is extremely difficult to get those treasures. "

"From the time when the chasm battlefield appeared, a lot of endless sea warriors were buried in it, many warriors who came here in search of those treasures, nine out of ten can't get out alive from here. This time, our journey to this chasm battlefield isn't to find those treasure, but to live" Yang Mu frowned, looked dignified.

"I have been here before, so I can take you guys to a safer area, look at that direction, the gray clouds are very thick there, there is an old palace in there. Inside the palace, there are many restrictions and barriers that have become invalid, so we can stay

in there for some time" Li Fenger pointed to a direction, gently said: "Follow me, at least there is no danger before we arrive at that area"

Yang Mu nodded, "Yes, Fenger, you lead the way, we will leave mark on the way, so that those people who want to kill us know our direction"

"No Problem" Li Fenger chuckled and glanced at Shi Yan, said: "Shi Yan, inside here, you have, to be honest. Hmm, remember to hear uncle Jiang words, uncle Jiang have a great understanding of barriers and restrictions and know some array method, so you can avoid a lot of danger"

Shi Yan looks indifferent and slowly nodded.

"Xiao Yanzi, here is a magic ring, there is food and water inside it and also a bottle of restoration pills, which can help you quickly restore profound Qi" Yang Mu handed over a green ring "Inside the chasm battlefield, it is difficult to find food and water, the natural auras inside here are also very barren, once the profound qi loss is too huge, it will be very difficult to restore, there are a hundred restoration pills inside. With the restoration pills you can quickly recover after a fight"

Shi Yan received the magic ring and when he looked at it, he immediately found that inside the ring there is a dimension as big as a house. Inside it, there are many food and water and a white bottle was placed on the food, which probably contained the restoration pills.

"The magic ring can store items, and this ring is worth one thousand best quality crystals in the endless sea, only royalty rank blacksmiths can refine this item, so don't lose it" Yang Mu smiled.

Shi Yan nodded.

"And also, keep this sound stone, the usage is very simple, you just need to inject your profound qi into it, then speak into it, then

we can hear what you want to speak about from the sound stone" Yang Mu continued to explain "Inside the Chasm Battlefield, there are many strange restrictions, if we are careless, we may be separated, with this sound stone, even if we aren't in the same area, we still can communicate."

"Yes" As he grasp the stone and inject profound qi into it, the sound stone immediately shone with white light, seems like there is a sound coming from the sound holes in the sound stone

"Shi Yan is a pervert! "

A clear and melodious sound suddenly came from the sound stone, this voice was clearly from Li Fenger who was in the front and which made Shi Yan surprised.

"Hehe, it's interesting right?" Li Fenger who has been 100 meters in the front smiled back and she also held a sound stone and waved highly toward Shi Yan

Shi Yan shook his head, lightly said: "Next time, don't be so loud, I'm very timid and afraid of being scared by you"

"Let's go, we will follow Feng'er so before we arrive at that palace, we should be safe" Yang Mu smiled and thought for a moment, then he used his hand to leave a line on a mark: "We went this way, Come if you dare.-Yang Mu"

Shi Yan looked at that line of words and didn't say anything, but in his heart, he really look forward that Gu Linglong and the others can chase over.

He faintly felt that he only need an epiphany before he can enter the earth realm, in his view, Gu Linglong, Panzhe, and the others were the natural elixir in this Chasm Battlefield and also a whetstone to sharpen himself, through these people, maybe he would be able to gain a insight and enter in the Earth realm.

He, who is combative definitely won't fear the chase from Gu Linglong and the others, instead, he secretly excited.

Li Feng'er took the lead and led the warrior team from the summit heading toward the direction where the gray clouds were very thick. Yang Mu, Yang Ke, and Yang Xue followed and Shi Yan who was at the last constantly analysed the situation.

Soon, the group came down from the summit and looked back at the gate of heaven that was in the summit, Shi Yan suddenly said: "Do we need to come back here if we want to go back?"

"Yes, the gate of heaven in here is very bright, so we can see the gate of heaven from far away, in the Chasm battlefield, there isn't any sun, moon, and stars, so the light from this gate of heaven is the light that leads the way. Normally, we can see this light inside the hundred li radius, if we remember the direction, then it isn't too difficult" Li Feng'er stopped and explained to the crowd.

[Ed: 1 Li is 0.5 Km]

Shi Yan nodded and no longer said anything, quietly followed behind Li Feng'er, he silently went into the blood vein ring and shows a friendly and gentle feeling toward the Ten Thousand Years Core Fire to maintain the friendly relationship between him and the core fire.

At the war with Gu Linglong, if the Core Fire hadn't suddenly released its fire power, then he wouldn't be able to get rid of the seven swords that invaded his body, the help from the core fire at the critical moment really made him very grateful and thus his feeling to core fire greatly increased.

Inside the blood vein ring, after converging with the core fire, Shi Yan immediately felt a feeling of joy from the core fire.

Aware of Shi Yan's arrival, the core fire was very happy, it used its consciousness to wrap Shi Yan's thought and entangled with it inside the light, like a child fawning on their parent.

A surging soul force came out from the light, Shi Yan clearly felt that the core fire soul seems to be changing, become more and

more intelligent and powerful.

As if, not long in the future, its evolution will be complete, and it can possess a complete soul of Sky fire.

The evolution of the core fire was already in the final step, as long as his life form formed, then the core fire already can be called as a Sky fire, having more powerful divine ability and becoming more intelligent.

After converging with the core fire for a while, Shi Yan draw back his consciousness and talked to the Ice Cold Flame, "I have arrived in the Chasm battlefield."

"The Chasm battlefield?" the Ice Cold Flame immediately replied, "What are you doing here? This is a very dangerous place, with your current cultivation, you will only die in this Chasm battlefield. Inside the Chasm battlefield, the natural auras are very barren and also don't suit your cultivation, so why did you come here?"

"How much do you know about the Chasm Battlefield?"

"Not really," The Ice cold flame think for some time, "I haven't been here before so I didn't understand the Chasm battlefield, but, I got some memories from the guy who has come to the Chasm battlefield, and even into the depths of the chasm battlefield. He had the cultivation of Spirit realm, and was trapped in a restriction for 300 hundred years, almost dying there. After he got out from the restriction, he immediately left the Chasm Battlefield and wasn't able gain anything from here, so, I know very little about this place."

"Okay, I got it" Shi Yan nodded, "Pay some attention, maybe there is another sky fire in here, if you feel its presence, remember to tell me immediately"

"Another Sky fire?" the Ice cold flame slightly excited, "My kind, interesting, it has been some time since I met my own kind, hope

that I can meet with it here"

"Do you want to run into it?"

"Of course, maybe its element is the same as me, and we can evolve together. Hmph, but, there is also a possibility where it want to devour me, between the Sky fire, most of us can devour each other, once the devouring finishes, the victor will gain more power and become more intelligent"

"Your strength is being limited by the Blood Vein Ring, so if you run into another sky fire, you definitely will suffer."

"Yeah, but if it dares to come into the Blood Vein Ring, maybe it also will be captured by the Blood Vein Ring, your ring is very mysterious, it even can shackle life forms like us, it can bind me, so probably it's the same with another Sky Fire. "

Shi Yan became startled.

The gate of heaven in the chasm battlefield flashed.

Pan Zhe, Cao Zhilan, Gu Linglong, Xie Kui and hundreds of Earth realm warriors, came out from the gate of heaven one by one.

Looked up at the gray sky, Pan Zhe looking serious lightly shouted: "Finally, we are here"

"We went this way, Come if you dare. Yang Mu" Xie Kui looked sullen, read out the words on the ground and sneered: "Looks like they are seeking death, they even dared to take the initiative to leave traces, the Yang family is really arrogant."

"Great" Gu Linglong bite her teeth: "Looks like we don't have to search for them now, the Demon Beasts can't enter the Chasm Battlefield, this time I want to see how the Yang Family can escape"

"Don't need to be afraid of Yang Mu and the others, as long as we can catch up, then they definitely can't escape" Pan Zhe frowned, reminding everyone: "But inside the Chasm battlefield, there are many dangerous restrictions, so you guys need to be more careful,

don't die inside the restriction"

"As long as you guys follow me, I can guarantee your safety." Cao Zhilan smiled indifferently "My Martial Spirit has the greatest advantage in this chasm battlefield, any restriction, barrier or array needs the power to support it, so I can find out the exact location of danger and can ensure that you guys will not fall into it"

After she said that, everyone looked delighted.

Chapter 224: Meteor Formation

The nine broken palaces, held by stone pillars, stood in a field of white bones, each palace was like a small mountain.

There were already many pillars broken among those nine palaces, three of them didn't even had any stone pillars for support, it appeared that they will collapse at any time.

"Damn, there must be a lot of people who came here before, these bones are very clean, even their clothes are stripped with nothing left" Yang Ke shook his head and complained loudly as he walked around inside one of the palaces, and didn't find anything from those bones.

After Shi Yan came, even he didn't move, he already knew that there wasn't any treasure here.

"Of course, I already told you guys that you won't get anything in here" Li Fenger frowned, "The restrictions and barriers inside the palaces have already disappeared, if we can enter it, of course, the others can too, how could there be something left for you? The last time I came here, I'd also carefully checked, but still couldn't find anything, if you can find something, that would be very strange. "

"Yeah, it's very safe in here, so there must be nothing here" Yang Mu nodded, searched for a while and said: " I think Pan Zhe and the others will arrive soon, this place is quite wide, so it's pretty good to fight. Yeah, the problem is we don't know how many people they have with them, if there are too many and they came altogether then it will be very difficult to kill them."

"Let's make our retreat path first" Yang Xue hesitated for a bit, "If they are too many and we are in a disadvantageous situation, then we need to withdraw immediately from here, then we will find another chance to fight them, anyway, this chasm battlefield is very deep and also we need to stay here for three years so we don't really have to fight with them"

"These nine palaces are also a magical formation, but this formation is already damaged and didn't function properly" Jiang Huquan pondered for a moment, said: "It's easy to pass through these nine palaces, the gray clouds over there are very thick, and they have a very unusual energy flow, I believe that there is some restriction in there, but we need to pass from there if we want to retreat, so the area that is dangerous for us is also a threat for them too"

Shi Yan looked at the area where the gray clouds were very thick, when he released his consciousness, he couldn't find any signs of life but can feel a very strange energy flow in there.

As if, the restriction has already been operating, waiting for someone to fell into it.

"Let's make sure of our retreat path first." Yang Mu nodded towards Jiang Huquan.

"Yeah, I will take a look first." Jiang Huquan headed towards that direction alone, after looking at the area of the gray clouds, he hesitated for a while then said toward Yang Mu: "You guys don't come in first, I will take a look first to ensure there is no danger there, after that, i will call you."

After saying that Jiang Huquan entered into the depth, after he stepped into it, his figure immediately disappeared.

As if he stepped into another world, even his presence also disappeared.

Shi Yan face slightly changed, after he quietly used his consciousness to look, he found that there was no sign of life from Jiang Huquan.

Secretly frightened, Shi Yan realized that this chasm battlefield was really strange and he immediately became cautious.

After some time, Jiang Huquang came out miserably, with his body full of dust and messy hair, he seemed to have experienced a

disaster.

"How is it?" Yang Mu quickly asked.

"Meteor formation! The moment I entered, suddenly there were huge meteorites falling over, those meteorites were very dense and big, and the impact from the meteorites is also very huge, if we want to pass through, we must face the attack from those meteorites, if we are careless, we will be smashed by those meteorites" Jiang Huquan looked grimly.

"Is there any way to break it?" Li Fenger asked

"I haven't found it yet, I need to recover first, then I will enter again to find it" Jiang Huquan shook his head, quietly sat down and ate three restoration pills.

"This place is really dangerous, looks like it really isn't easy to survive in this chasm battlefield" Yang Ke exclaimed.

"Yeah, in this chasm battlefield, there are countless restrictions and barriers, it is more difficult to deal than our pursuers" Yang Mu also looked grimly.

After Jiang Huquan recovered for a while, he stood up and entered again.

After some time, he came out miserably again, but this time there was a trace of blood came out from his mouth, it seemed like he had been hit by those meteorites.

After coming out, Jiang Huquan didn't speak anything and once again took the restoration pills and continued to recover.

Shi Yan and the others didn't say anything, just quietly watched Jiang Huquan

After entering two times, Jiang Huquan became more and more miserable, he who understood formations very well became like this, then if there was someone who didn't understand formation and entered recklessly, then it definitely would be difficult to come

out alive from there.

The Meteor formation, was one of the formations that they encountered inside the chasm battlefield, and Jiang Huquan who had the cultivation of Earth realm and a deep knowledge toward formations became so miserable, then did they still need to pass through from there?

"Looks like this chasm battlefield isn't so easy to stay" Yang Mu slightly sighed, "I have always heard the strange rumours about it before, but I didn't believe some of it, and felt that those rumors may exaggerate the dangerous at the chasm battlefield, but now I know that those rumors were true if I didn't experience it myself, I really can't imagine it"

"Well" Shi Yan smiled, lightly said: "The more dangerous this place is, then it will be more advantage to us, even we will die, then those people will also face the same problem as us. Hehe, I think, their overall strength should be stronger than us, which also mean, at here, they will suffer greater losses."

"Yeah, that's why we are here" Yang Xue nodded, "Because this place is really dangerous, it will be very difficult to deal with us."

As they were speaking, Jiang Huquan opened his eyes

"Uncle Jiang, how is it?" Yang Ke quickly asked

Shaking his head, Jiang Huquan looked grim "I saw a eye controlling the formation, but there are many ancient letters on it, even I didn't recognize those ancient letters, if I didn't understand the meaning of those letters, then it will be very difficult for me to find a way to break it "

"Ancient letters?" Shi Yan was surprised for a moment, then immediately he asked: "What kind of ancient text?"

"It should be cuneiform letters from the ancient time, primary used on formations and restrictions, only formation master from the ancient times understood these ancient letters. In our time

now, there is almost no one who has knowledge about these ancient letters." Jiang Huquan sighed, "Even my teacher can't recognize these ancient letters, and I'm even worse."

"Then what should we do?" Yang Ke was stunned, "If we couldn't understand those ancient texts, then we will never be able to break this formation right?"

"Before I understand the meaning of those ancient letters, I definitely won't act recklessly, otherwise, it will be more dangerous." Jiang Huquan nodded helplessly.

"Can you write down the ancient letters that you saw? " Shi Yan suddenly said.

Everyone was surprised and looked strangely at Shi Yan, they didn't know why he suddenly said that.

"Xiao Yanzi, what do you want to do?" Yang Mu was stunned, he asked: "Could it be that you understand letters from ancient time?"

"Only some, but I don't know if those ancient letters are the one that I know." Shi Yan nodded.

"What?" You really know it? Li Fenger immediately shook her head as she couldn't believe it, "You are not kidding right? Even uncle Jiang's teacher couldn't recognize all of it, do you really know it?"

"Uncle Jang, just write them down for me" Shi Yan insisted.

Jiang Huquan was also confused, he pondered for a moment, and said: "There are only a few letters that I saw on the formation's eye, so I still remembered them, i just don't know what it means, if you want to see, I will show it to you."

Jiang Huquang crouched, held a dagger and depicted six strange letters.

"Arrival! Rest! Fire! Wind! Life! Death!"

Shi Yan pointed at the ancient letters on the ground, and read it

word by word "That is all, fortunately, I recognize all of it."

Everyone was stunned.

"You aren't talking nonsense right?" Li Fenger exclaimed.

Yang Mu, Yang Ke, and the others also showed an expression of disbelief, their eyes were odd and they doubted if Shi Yan really recognized those letters or not.

"Master Yan, is it really these letters?" Jiang Huquan looked startled, suddenly stood up and his eyes flashed.

"I can't be wrong." Shi Yan nodded, "Before I was 17 years old, I had a great interest towards ancient text, and fortunately I recognized those letters, so I can be certain that it is these six letters."

"I will enter again" Jiang Huquan pondered for a moment, suddenly said: "This time I will try moving the formation eye's, if the message that master Yan gave to me is right, then i think i can break this formation, but, if the message is wrong, i think i won't come back again."

Jiang Huquan looked at Shi Yan deeply, seemed like he was waiting for something.

Everyone's face changed as they heard the meaning from Jiang Huquan words and looked at Shi Yan again.

"I definitely am not wrong." Under the looks from everyone, Shi Yan calmly replied: "Don't worry uncle Jiang, I won't harm you, these six letters absolutely aren't wrong"

"Alright!" Jiang Huquan replied, he no longer hesitated and entered into the restriction again.

"Xiao Yanzi" Yang Mu lightly said, it seemed like he wanted to say something, but eventually he shook his head, smiled wryly, and didn't said the following words.

"I know what you guys are worried about." Shi Yan looked

indifferent and grinned "Brother, Did you see me as a man who acts recklessly?"

Yang Mu immediately shook his head.

"That's right, rest assured, Uncle Jiang definitely will be okay" Shi Yan comforted them.

"There is someone coming, pretty quick though" Li Fenger shouted, don't know when, she already stood on a broken stone pillar and looked at far away, her face gradually changed "Pan Zhe, Gu Linglong, Cao Zhilan, Xie Kui, He Qingman.."

"Xie kui! He Qingman! " Yang Mu eyes suddenly became cold, he sneered: "The Evil Wonderland is really audacious, to deal with us, Yang family, at this time they really have no scruples."

"He Qingman also came?" Yang Xue eyes became cold and he angrily said: "I can't believe she is also involved in this"

"I know that the relationship between you and her is quite good" Yang Mu sighed, "But at this time, no matter how good the relationship is, it is the same, if this girl is only pretending, then we don't need to fight with her, but if she really want to kill us, hmph, don't give her mercy."

"I know what to do." Yang Mu took a deep breath and nodded.

Chapter 225: Ambush

Inside the broken palace, Shi Yan and Yang Mu's group were quietly waiting for something with serious faces.

This time, the time that Jiang Huquan spent inside the Meteor Array was longer than before. While Pan Zhen, Cao Zhilan, and the others have been approaching closer and closer, everyone was quite anxious because their retreat path hasn't been confirmed.

Yang Ke with his knitted eyebrows kept walking around, regularly looking at the thick gray clouds area where Jiang Huquan had entered.

Li Fenger stood on the broken pillar. Her body was slender and soft; her eyelashes were long and prominent on her face. She slightly shouted, "Nearly a hundred Earth Realm warriors, this force isn't just double stronger than us. Cao Zhilan and Xie Kui have also joined this time, as well as He Qingman; those are tough characters. It looks like we got some troubles. "

"Cao Zhilan! " Yang Mu's face looked heavy. "This woman was the high-class warrior from the young generation of the Cao family. Rumor said that she has an extraordinary strength, ranked third in the Combat List, one rank higher than me. I haven't fought with her yet, so I didn't know how her real ability is. However, since she was ranked third, her ability mustn't be weak."

Yang Mu thought for a moment and then suddenly said, "If the situation turns bad, regardless of whether Uncle Jiang has come out or not, we must enter that Meteor Array."

Yang Xue's beautiful face slightly changed; she couldn't help but exclaim, "If that Meteor Array isn't broken yet, I'm afraid we will suffer a great loss if we enter it. You guys also have seen that even Uncle Jiang who has a deep knowledge of array was stuck in there. If we enter there, we definitely will be worse than Uncle Jiang"

Li Fenger, Yang Ke, and the others also looked somber; they all looked at Yang Mu.

"The Meteor Array is dangerous for us, but it is also the barrier that deters Pan Zhe and Cao Zhilan. They are more than us, so if they keep chasing us, their loss will be certainly bigger than ours." Yang Mu said calmly. "So, regardless of whether Uncle Jiang can come out or not, we still need to enter it."

"Shi Yan..." Yang Xue's face was confused. "Do you think Uncle Jiang will be fine?"

"Of course," Shi Yan shook his head. "If Uncle Jiang understands that Meteor Array, he definitely can break it. I believe the message that I have given him is correct."

Gently nodding her head, Yang Xue still dubious, sadly said, "I hope so."

It was not that she didn't believe in Shi Yan, but this time, Jiang Huquan had entered for a long time and still hadn't come out yet. In their mind, Jiang Huquan could have probably encountered some danger.

They subconsciously thought that Jiang Huquan had died inside the Meteor Array. Even Yang Mu had said that once the situation got bad, regardless of whether Jiang Huquan came out or not, they still needed to enter the Meteor Array. It proved that that he didn't have too much confidence.

"They will arrive here soon." Li Fenger raised her head looking up for a while, "I think we should prepare first. By using the terrain here, we can ambush them, and maybe we can kill some of them."

Li Fenger gritted her teeth; her eyes shot out a cold beam of light. She looked like she was ready to fight.

Shi Yan secretly nodded and then quietly urged the power inside his body to form gravitational field without saying anything.

Yang Mu, Yang Ke, Yang Xue began to command the other

warriors to split up and temporarily hid inside the palaces. As soon as the enemies arrived, they would signal their warriors to take action.

"Master Yan, what should we do?" Ka Ma asked respectfully

Ka Ma was in the Third sky of the Earth Realm and belonged to Shi Yan's team. His cultivation base was the highest; he was two meters tall with a sturdy body. His strength was very superior because he had trained the Shura Blood Guard of Shura King Li Mu.

"You guys hide inside the palaces first. Don't need to prepare anything, just seize the opportunity to kill the enemies when facing them." Shi Yan's face became solemn. "Just focus, you only have fleeting chances. I will give you guys the opportunity to kill them in one blow so you guys must seize that chance."

"Understood, Master Yan." Ka Ma's face was convulsive.

Previously, in the battle on the Silver Horn Ships, Ka Ma had seen Shi Yan's miraculous ability. He knew that Shi Yan could quietly release mysterious martial technique that could affect the entire battle and also could constrain the enemies' movements so that the others have the chance to kill the enemies.

Therefore, although Shi Yan only had the cultivation of the Disaster Realm, Ka Ma and the others still had little respect for him and didn't look down on him.

"Oh."

Shi Yan slightly shouted and looked toward the thick gray clouds area. His soul consciousness sensed some anomalies from there.

In the area that Jiang Huquan had entered before, the energy flow was very chaotic at the beginning, but it seemed to become restful all of a sudden. The energy inside seemed to turn into a long river, slowly flowing in a special current as if someone had repaired the mess inside the energy, restoring their order.

"Jiang Huquan!" Shi Yan's mind was slightly agitated. He

immediately realized that Jiang Huquan had probably succeeded in breaking the Meteor Array and changing the energy flow inside the Meteor Array

"Uncle Jiang is going to come back." Shi Yan revealed a faint smile and slightly shouted.

"What?" Li Fenger was still standing above him, looking at Shi Yan below "You, are you a prophet now?"

Shi Yan smiled and shook his head, looking up toward Li Fenger and said, "I am not a prophet, but I can vaguely sense his presence. Hmm, I have a magical treasure that can help my spirit insight become sensitive."

"Little Yan, Uncle Jiang has succeeded?" Yang Mu overjoyed, "The enemies will come here soon. If Uncle Jiang has succeeded, we will have a greater advantage."

"Yeah, he will come out soon." Shi Yan nodded. As soon as he had finished his word, a body covered with dust suddenly ran out.

Jiang Huquan face was full of dust, but he was very energetic. He excitedly looked toward Shi Yan and happily said, "The message that master Yan has given me is indeed true. Thanks to master Yan's knowledge of the ancient text, I could break the Meteor Array."

Yang Ke, Li Fenger, Yang Xue and the others were very surprised when they heard Jiang Huquan's words. They all looked at Shi Yan with a meaningful look in their eyes.

Ka Ma and the other warriors who had been assigned to Shi Yan's team was very excited and had more confidence in Shi Yan now.

"After we enter into the Meteor Array, remember to take seven steps on the left path first and then take five steps on the right path, and then take the left path and repeat the steps again. Remember, seven steps to the left, five steps to the right. Don't forget it. If you follow this, the meteorite will not hit you guys."

Jiang Huquan grinned, "If the enemies dare to enter it, I believe that they won't be able to figure this out and definitely will suffer a great loss."

"That's the best." Yang Mu laughed comfortably. "Let's prepare first. We will ambush them and kill some of them first. If the situation changes, we will immediately retreat into the Meteor Array. This time we are lucky to have Uncle Jing's and Little Yan's help; otherwise, we undoubtedly will face a big problem. Hahaha. Now, we have the advantage, and we should make those pursuers taste the defeat."

.....

"Those are nine broken palaces."

Pan Zhe stopped all of a sudden. He stood on a solid stone, looking at the distance, "I have gone through those nine palaces over there before. All of the ancient arrays inside there have been broken, so there is no danger. However, behind the nine palaces, there are still many forbiddances and barriers; so it all depends on luck when we want to pass through it."

"Those Yang's people maybe have left from there?" Gu Linglong frowned.

"I don't know." Pan Zhe shook his head. "Just be careful. There are many hiding places inside those nine palaces. If the Yang's people stay hidden there, it will be tough for us. Even we have more people; we still can't let our guard down. Remember, don't act recklessly. The gray clouds behind the nine palaces are very thick; thus, our sight dropped greatly, and many forbiddances blocked our spirit power as well. Over there was the real Chasm Battlefield."

"Yang's people are inside the palaces." Cao Zhilan dashed forward, passing Pan Zhe like a feather drifting forward. Her slender body was swaying and swinging as if it was weightless, giving people a strange feeling.

"Follow up, just be careful. Shi Yan that you guys have mentioned has formed strange confining vortexes inside the palaces. Those vortexes also keep shaking. Yeah, you guys will tell me who is Shi Yan later. I will deal with him first to prevent him from playing tricks with you and creating a chance for the Yang people to kill you guys."

Cao Zhilan was like a floating feather; her body moved in the air randomly, leaping up from the ground from time to time which made her movement turn into a blurred shadow that seems very slow, but in fact, it was dashing incredibly fast toward the palace.

"Miss Cao, your Spirit God Martial Spirit can detect any energy flow and also know that energy's movement rule; and thus, it enables you to find a way to deal with it. This Spirit God Martial Spirit is a sacred rank martial spirit. It can even sense the tiny weakness of the opponent's martial technique. It is genuinely magical. So, just follow her words." The Saintess from the Heaven Lake Divine Land, Qu Yangqing, displayed a strange emotion in her beautiful eyes as she explained Cao Zhilan's miraculous Martial Spirit.

Cao Zhilan's Martial Spirit was very mysterious. Many warriors from the Endless Sea have heard about this; however, only a few people knew the magical effect and the strength of her martial spirit. Qu Yangqing was one of the few of them.

Pan Zhe, Xie Kui, Gu Linglong eyes were shining after hearing Qu Yangqing's words.

Cao Zhilan Spirit God Martial Spirit can detect any energy flow and even can know the movement rule of from that energy; this means that the forbiddances and barriers inside the Chasm Battlefield couldn't escape from the Martial Spirit's detection. She could even find the way to break those obstacles.

Inside the Chasm battlefield, Cao Zhilan's Spirit God Martial Spirit was apparently very useful; it could help them significantly

reduce their loss.

.

"Don't hide anymore. Just come out and fight with us." Outside the palace, Cao Zhilan calmly walked inside with a smile on her face. Her slender body could easily avoid three moving Gravitational Fields. She shook her head and revealed a smile. "Yeah, these active traps are very magical. No wonder why Pan Zhe and the others had to suffer a great loss. Shi Yan, right? You have surprised me by making those traps. Can you show up please?"

Shi Yan was hiding behind a stone pillar, his face slightly changed. He coldly harrumphed and walked out step by step with a dark face. He appeared from the stone pillar where he had been hiding. Watching this beautiful woman who breaks his gravitational field and hearing her praise made him become focused and cautious without daring to let down his guard even a bit. He could feel that he was the target of this woman.

Chapter 226: You Guys Go First!

Cao Zhilan quietly stood outside of the palace. She didn't rush to enter, but instead, she smilingly looked towards Shi Yan who poked his head out from behind the stone pillar. The look in her eyes was somewhat shady.

Pan Zhe and the rest saw that Cao Zhilan was already there. They didn't dare to delay, all sped up their pace and quickly appeared behind her.

Almost a hundred Earth Realm warriors lined up neatly and stood behind Pan Zhe, Gu Linglong, Xie Kui, and Qu Yanqing. They coldly watched the crumbled palaces, seeming to wait for something.

"Are you hiding because you guys want to make a stealthy attack?" Cao Zhilan chuckled and shook her head. Her thin hand slightly raised up, and beams of blue light flew out of her five delicate fingers, attacking the Yang family warriors that were hiding inside the broken palace.

Yang Mu and the rest who were staying hidden in the dark seemed surprised. Under the attack of the bright blue lights, they had to move out of their hiding spots, and thus all of them revealed their whereabouts.

Shi Yan's expression slightly shifted.

It was even harder to deal with this gorgeous woman than the Nirvana Realm warriors. Inside the Chasm Battlefield, mind power was restrained, and even vision was greatly affected. Even the Nirvana Realm warriors had a difficult time detecting the life forces' fluctuations around them.

This woman was still fifty meters away from the palace. However, she seemed to have an extra Heaven Eye; she alternately pointed out the all the Yang family warriors that were hiding.

With her sole power, she had broken the stealthy attack plan of Shi Yan and the rest.

"You don't need to hide; it's useless. I know your exact spots." Cao Zhilan smiled. She kept waving her hand and shot out more bright lights, forcing the Yang family warriors to shift and appear in plain sight.

Pan Zhe smiled casually; he stepped forward and stood beside Cao Zhilan. He nodded towards Yang Mu from a short distance, "We meet again so soon. Hehe, this time you can't use demon beasts to deter us. I wonder if you can still escape this time."

"I remember that the ones who fled in a panic last time were not us?" Yang Mu seemed stunned, he scratched his head and looked towards Yang Ke, "I am not wrong, am I? It wasn't us who jumped into the sea?"

Yang Ke chuckled coldly, "Big brother, you might have remembered it wrong. Some people seem to think that they have won before."

When facing enemies who were twice their number, Yang Mu and Yang Ke were not startled at all. They still had the leisure to mock Pan Zhe as if they didn't take the danger seriously this time.

Pan Zhe, Qu Yanqing, and Gu Linglong immediately darkened their expressions.

"Hmm, everyone is all out now as it is supposed to be. Isn't this great?" Cao Zhilan smiled, turned her head back glimpsing at Pan Zhe and the rest and said confidently, "You can go inside to complete the mission now. Don't worry; there won't be any messy traps for you to deal with."

Upon her words, Cao Zhilan suddenly whistled.

The crisp whistle spread far and loud. When the sound of the whistle rose up, her delicate body shot straight towards Shi Yan like lightning.

At the same time, rings of blue aura flew out of her body. These blue auras were like hula hoops, quickly flying inside the palace with the intention of aiming towards the Gravitational Fields that Shi Yan had made.

Inside the blue auras, there was a flow of extremely obvious soul fluctuation. Inside of every blue aura seemed to contain Cao Zhilan's mind power. Once these blue auras fell inside the Gravitational Fields, they immediately rippled with bright blue light. The blue light then instantly filled the entire Gravitational Field.

The Gravitational Fields that were hard to be seen by the naked eye now appeared in plain sight because of the blue light.

When the blue auras fell into the Gravitational Fields, the bright blue light that it had released had no effect on the operation of the Gravitational Fields. However, the existence of these blue lights marked the placement of the Fields, letting Pan Zhe and the rest know where the traps were so that they could dodge them.

Although Cao Zhilan hadn't reminded them, from the location of the blue lights, Pan Zhe and the rest could see the traps that Shi Yan had secretly made earlier.

The Gravitational Fields were now useless.

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

In the whistling sounds, Cao Zhilan shot towards Shi Yan like lightning. In a mere moment, her delicate body appeared in front of Shi Yan.

"Sky Spirit Bound!" Cao Zhilan shouted. A blue light cover formed by the condensation of the vigorous Sky and Earth aura suddenly fell on Shi Yan's head.

The Sky Spirit Bound was a Mortal level martial technique. It used the Sky and Earth aura to form a constraint capturing the opponent. As long as the Sky and Earth aura remained, the

constraint of the Sky Spirit Bound would not disappear.

Performing the Sky Spirit Bound while being in the Third Sky of the Earth Realm, Cao Zhilan was confident that she could even detain Yang Mu for a while.

"It's not that hard." Cao Zhilan chuckled. She looked at Shi Yan's figure inside the blue light cover and then shook her head, feeling slightly disappointed, "I thought you would have some things up your sleeve, but it seems that you're nothing more than this. Boring."

"What are you mumbling about?" Shi Yan snorted coldly.

"Hmm?" Cao Zhilan's bright eyes lit up, excitedly looking at Shi Yan who was outside the light cover. She then immediately looked toward the blue light cover and suddenly realized that the original figure of Shi Yan was slowly dissipating and disappearing bit by bit.

"Shadow?" Cao Zhilan's pretty face got smilingly brighter. She nodded, "You somehow have some skills. You have successfully kept yourself from being captured. Hmm, very good, very good, this is more interesting."

"Yang Mu, you won't get away!" Pan Zhe yelled. With the feather fan in his hand, he had already started battling with Yang Mu.

The Earth Realm warriors were also rushing in from outside the palace, quickly searching for the opponents. They formed into an arc and surrounded the Yang family warriors, moving closer towards them.

Yang Mu, Yang Ke, and the rest were dealing with their opponents and quietly backing up at the same time. They moved closer towards the area behind the palace with the thick dark clouds.

When Cao Zhilan pointed out their exact spots, Yang Mu already had the thought of retreat. At the moment his figure appeared, he

already made hand gestures, signaling everyone to retreat to the area where the meteorite formation was.

Li Fenger and the rest all knew that the situation was not worth to put their lives at risk. Following Yang Mu's idea, they all moved closer to that side.

"Pan Zhe, you have never been worth of being my opponent, and it is still the same now." On the other side, Yang Mu laughed out loud with a bold expression on his face. While many warriors were surrounding him, an extremely explosive power was bursting from his body. The giant sword pressed towards them like surging waves, forming continuous explosions sounds, beating the hell out of those tight-knit warriors.

As Yang Mu had the Immortal Martial Spirit, he wasn't scared of being heavily injured at all. He even purposely injured his body just to kill those surrounding attackers.

Very soon, there were many wounds on Yang Mu's body. Many of the wounds were so deep that the bone was visible; they seemed extremely severe.

At the expense of heavily injuring his body, in this mere moment, Yang Mu had already killed three warriors in the First Sky of the Earth Realm. Moreover, this result was under the situation in which he was facing Pan Zhe's attacks at the same time.

Yang Ke and Yang Xue were in the similar situation with Yang Mu's. Relying on their fearlessness of wounds, they often didn't care about getting injuries on their body when battling with attackers. They killed the surrounding attackers at the expense of injuring their bodies.

"Shi Yan! How are you going to escape this time?" Gu Linglong shouted coldly. A long God sword flew out through the air. This God sword's hilt was in a strange prism shape with a chilling cold ambiance.

The look in Shi Yan's eyes was calm; he didn't look at the Ice Magic Sword that Gu Linglong had just shot out. Instead, he gravely stared at Cao Zhilan.

After having launched one strike, Cao Zhilan didn't attack again. Instead, she observed the situation in the battlefield with interest. She watched Pan Zhe and his fellows quietly surrounding Yang Mu's group; she also saw the Yang family warriors retreating towards that meteorite formation in an orderly manner.

Although Cao Zhilan didn't continue attacking, Shi Yan didn't dare to let his guard down. This woman's cultivation base was in the Third Sky of the Earth Realm. Not only did her cultivation be unpredictably profound but her sense was also extremely sharp. Shi Yan didn't know how powerful of her next strike would be.

As soon as Gu Linglong's Ice Magic Sword attacked, Shi Yan immediately figured out her intentions.

In the last battle, the aftershock power of the seven magic swords of Gu Linglong had once rushed into his body. However, the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame had completely burnt them down.

As the master of the Magic Sword, Gu Linglong naturally knew that there was scorching aura inside Shi Yan's body. Therefore, she didn't shoot out all the seven magic swords this time. Instead, she concentrated the power in her body and shot out this magic sword's icy hilt with icy aura. She wanted to use the icy aura on this magic sword to suppress the burning fire power in Shi Yan's body.

The Ice Magic Sword pierced through the air.

Shi Yan's expression was cold and cruel. He didn't take any actions yet. When he sensed that bone-chilling cold aura, a chilling grin suddenly appeared on the corner of his mouth.

"Boom!"

Raising his hand, he gathered the negative energies and launched

a Death Seal all of a sudden.

The Death Seal explosively shot onto the Ice Magic Sword. Negative powers that were several times stronger than the last battle massively exploded, blowing away that Ice Magic Sword into the air.

Gu Linglong's delicate body shook; her face suddenly became paler, and her eyes were extremely surprised. However, after the surprise, she suddenly revealed a smile, "Let me see how you are going to get rid of that ice power this time."

The moment when the Death Seal struck on the Ice Magic Sword, the bone-chilling ice power in the Ice Magic Sword also took this opportunity to impetuously flow out, seeping through Shi Yan's entire body.

The true motive of Gu Linglong was to let the ice power of this Ice Magic Sword completely freeze Shi Yan's body up.

Cao Zhilan chuckled; she looked towards Shi Yan with interest and said, "The ice power has entered your body. How are you going to deal with it?"

"Why is there a need to deal with it?" Shi Yan frowned and glanced toward Gu Linglong at afar. He mocked, "Didn't that retard Gu Jiange tell you that I was once sealed in ice by the Ice Cold Flame for three years? Even the ice power the Ice Cold Flame couldn't do anything to me. So, can the cold power of your little Ice Magic Sword be stronger than the cold power of the Ice Cold Flame?"

Gu Linglong's face suddenly changed.

"Retreat!"

At this very moment, Yang Mu suddenly roared. The light in his giant sword shone, and beams of extremely sharp sword aura accurately shot towards Pan Zhe and the rest.

Taking this opportunity, Yang Mu and the group of Yang family

warriors immediately stepped inside the meteorite formation.

"Let's go." Karma waved his hand and shouted: "Young master Yan, we should leave now."

"You guys go first!"

Shi Yan's face suddenly changed; all the hair on his body seemed to raise; his eyes stared straight at Cao Zhilan.

Chapter 227: You Really Surprised Me!

"You're quite alert."

Cao Zhilan smiled like blooming flowers.

A flow of terrifying power swept towards Shi Yan like surging tides. This flow of frightening power came out of nowhere. Shi Yan only noticed it when it had already arrived three meters in front of Shi Yan.

This horrendous power flowed out from Cao Zhilan, spreading out everywhere. It had already sealed all escape routes around Shi Yan in silence.

This power engulfed everything regardless of whether it was in the sky or below the ground. Despite which way Shi Yan had retreated, he would touch this flow of power.

This flow of terrifying power did not flow towards Shi Yan with a fast speed. Perhaps it was because the overcast power was too broad, making it go extremely slowly when in action.

"Damned little brat, I'll see how you're going to block it now." In the distance, Gu Linglong shouted coldly. She was going to activate the magical sword to attack again.

"Little sister Gu, you can leave this guy to me. You don't need to intervene." Cao Zhilan frowned, turned his head back glancing at Gu Linglong, and then said, "Don't worry. When I capture him, I'll let you take out your anger on him."

"Capture him?" Gu Linglong was in a daze; her nose twitched. "Why won't you just kill him?"

Gu Linglong's bright eyes darted, and then she smiled, "He has something that I want. If he dies too soon, I might not be able to get those things from his body."

Shi Yan's expression was serious, "What do you want?"

"The things inside that ring of yours." Cao Zhilan smiled joyfully. Her jade-like fingers pointed at the Blood Vein Ring on Shi Yan's hand, "You might not know that my Martial Spirit can sense any extraordinary power. Hmm, as for what is inside your ring, of course you know it better than I do..."

The Ice Cold Flame and the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame!

Shi Yan's expression changed. When he looked at Cao Zhilan again, the alertness in his eyes got more intense.

This woman could actually sense the Ice Cold Flame and the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring. What kind of magical Martial Spirit did she have? Shi Yan was secretly stunned. He urged his negative powers and petrified his body, performing the Dark Light Shield at the same time. He pushed out all of his defensive powers, preparing to handle the attack of the slowly approaching flow of power that had blocked all the escapes off.

"You can't get away." Cao Zhilan seemed to know what he wanted to do. She chuckled and shook her head, "Even Yang Mu can't save you now."

As soon as she finished her words, a colorful ribbon flew out of Cao Zhilan's sleeve. That ribbon was like a snake, wiggling in mid-air and dragging out streaks of blinding rainbow light.

The rainbow lights weaved into a net and also formed another layer of barrier constraint. While that ribbon was flying around, the power inside that barrier seemed to get more complicated and vigorous as if it was made with several different forces. The power also had the same marvelous effect as that of Shi Yan's Gravitational Field.

"Boom!"

Yang Mu's giant sword suddenly slashed onto the light net. The rainbow lights were like strong silk threads, some of the rainbow

lights shattered from the strike of the giant sword. However, more rainbow lights from that light net soon gathered towards the point at which the giant sword had slashed down and quickly repaired the damaged area.

"Yang Mu, if you want to break my rainbow net in a short time, it probably won't be easy." Cao Zhilan calmly waved her thin hand. The rainbow ribbons quickly flew and weaved into more rainbow lights, "Yang Mu, why don't you try a few more times? I think if you try a few times more, you would surely be able to break my rainbow net."

"Big brother!" Yang Ke roared, "We need to go now!"

"Little Yan!" Yang Mu roared angrily, "Can you get out? If you don't go now, it would be very hard to leave."

Yang Mu also sensed that Cao Zhilan was attacking Shi Yan, and Shi Yan was temporarily trapped. Thus, he hurriedly intervened in an attempt to shatter the terrifying energies around Shi Yan, helping him break out of the trap.

Yang Mu wanted to save Shi Yan, but the situation at the moment was not so good. Many warriors from the Yang family already went ahead into the meteor formation.

At the moment, a few ones left outside were only Yang Mu, Yang Ke, and Li Fenger. At this time, if they got entangled with the opponents, it would be hard even for them to get into the meteor formation.

It was obvious that Cao Zhilan intentionally stimulate Yang Mu to linger and jump into the fight with her.

After observing the situation for a while, the three people of Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Lung, Xie Kui also realized Cao Zhilan's intention. They secretly gathered altogether beside Yang Mu, urging their power to lock Yang Mu in.

"Big brother, you go first!" Shi Yan roared. "Don't fall into their

trap. You will only get more opportunities if you enter inside. Don't get the everyone else implicated because of me."

"The brotherly love is so touching." Xie Kui sneered. He glared at Yang Mu with a dark evil look in his eyes, "If you're brothers, then you should live together and die together. Hmm, Yang Mu, last time at Black Rock Island, you killed my junior disciple for this kid. In the eyes of Yang family people, our lives aren't worth a thing. This time the reason why our Evil Wonderland is going against your Yang family also has something to do with your unhesitating murder! This kid is in trouble again now. Are you going to die with him for his sake this time?"

"Big brother!" Yang Ke screamed.

While he was talking, Xie Kui and his group already surrounded Yang Mu.

Gu Linglong, Xie Kui, and Pan Zhe attacked together. They formed into a triangular formation to deal with Yang Mu. The three of them didn't make a murderous attempt immediately; instead, they directed their sharp attacks towards the meteor formation behind Yang Mu.

Once Yang Mu backs off, he would land himself into the trap where all the attacks had gathered. Xie Kui and the rest were trying to block Yang Mu's escape off first so that he wouldn't be able to escape into the meteor formation even at a life and death emergency.

"I won't leave then."

Yang Mu suddenly relaxed; he glimpsed behind him at the spot where lights gathered and said with cold pride, "Even if I can't leave, I will drag you guys down with me! Xie Kui, stop making your f*cking excuses. The Evil Wonderland has unilaterally broken the treaty of alliance and colluded with people from other seas to go against our Yang family. For what other reason can it be than their greed for our Yang family's wealth? And that they want to

take the Yang family's place in the Kyara Sea?"

Xie Kui sneered, "Your Yang family has been arrogant in the Kyara Sea for too long. Because of the belligerent nature of the Yang family, none of the neighboring big seas have been at peace. The warriors from those seas have held grudges against the Yang family for a long time. With Yang Qingdi getting trapped this time, it's just the right fuse for the situation. "

"Hmm, Yang Mu, since you don't want to leave anymore, I won't waste any more time either." Cao Zhilan pressed her lips and smiled. She casually looked towards Shi Yan, "Your big brother wants to protect you, but now he's getting the same outcome as you. Having someone to go to the afterlife, you won't be that lonely anymore. Hmm, later when you tell me the method to opening your ring, I will let you die easily, I won't give you extra pain."

"Bitch, you think you've got me for sure now?" Shi Yan took in a deep breath, his expression soon turned vicious.

"Curse all you want, you can curse a few more times before you die, I won't mind." Cao Zhilan still had that calm careless look as if no matter how badly Shi Yan cursed her, it won't move her at all, and it cannot affect her mind.

"Yang Ke, you guys go!" Under the siege of Xie Kui and the two others, he suddenly roared. "Remember to revenge for me!"

"Big brother." Yang Ke suddenly smiled, he shook his head, "We've been brothers for all this time, if you are to stay, how can I escape alone? Isn't it just death? When have the Yang family members been scared of death?"

Li Fenger already had one foot in the meteor formation, but she didn't enter yet; she stopped instead. Her eyes gleamed with cold light as she said coldly: "As if I'm scared of death."

Then, Li Fenger stepped back from the meteor formation and

stood next to Yang Ke again.

"Huff! Huff!"

Heavy panting sounds suddenly came from inside the field. The attackers who had originally had their attention on Yang Mu, Yang Ke and Yang Fenger couldn't help but look towards Shi Yan when they heard the panting.

Unknowingly, Shi Yan's eyes had turned into a bright red color. His facial expressions were twisted and ferocious. Violent, crazy, bloodthirsty energies surged from all over his body, giving people an extremely dangerous feeling.

His bright red eyes stared deep into the soul like a ferocious ghost from the depths of hell with the most extreme evil.

The Second Sky of Rampage!

"Little Yan!" Yang Mu's face changed, he exclaimed, "What happened to you?"

"I'm fine! Better than ever!"

Shi Yan clenched his teeth, he roared with a low voice. The different negative powers surged towards all directions like enormous waves with him as the center.

The terrifying power that came from Cao Zhilan was struck more than ten meters away in the middle of the frightening air wave formed by these negative powers.

A mass of murderous thoughts uncontrollably appeared from the bottom of his heart.

At this moment, Shi Yan was in the Second Sky of Rampage. The different negative emotions had started to rush into his mind, gathering with his consciousness, forming into a spiritual storm, sweeping towards where the other warriors gathered.

The spiritual storm formed by different negative emotions had the evil power to delude people's minds, making them fall into a

state of madness.

Wherever the spiritual storm went, those Earth Realm warriors seemed to have lost control of the murderous thoughts in their minds and couldn't help but raise their weapons to attack the people beside them.

"That trick again!" Pan Zhe's handsome face showed some signs of fear, "Be careful, don't get affected by his evil spiritual power!"

Wisps of negative powers formed and gathered on Shi Yan's body.

The Second Sky of Rampage martial skill had doubled the power in the Disaster Realm body.

Shi Yan's expression was extremely ferocious like an evil spirit. He used the negative energies on him to push away the gushing powers that surrounded him and then walked step by step towards Cao Zhilan.

"No wonder Pan Zhe and the rest had lost."

Cao Zhilan revealed a serious expression for the first time. Her bright eyes shone with a mysterious light, "A Disaster realm warrior can actually have such terrifying power! Shi Yan, you really surprised me, it seems that I've underestimated you before. You actually haven't brought out your real power until now."

"He's actually even stronger than in that battle!" Gu Linglong's pretty face changed. She looked at Shi Yan with an unbelievable expression and couldn't help but exclaim.

In the last battle, Shi Yan was in the Second Sky of Disaster Realm, and he had only activated the First Sky of Rampage.

This time, Shi Yan was at the peak of the Disaster realm, performing the Second Sky of Rampage. The aura on him was not just a bit stronger than the last battle!

Chapter 228: Turning the Tide

Turn the Tide

In the crumbled palace, most of the warriors from the Yang family had already gone ahead into the meteor formation.

The only ones who still stayed outside were Yang Mu, Yang Ke, Li Fenger, and Shi Yan.

However, there were almost a hundred warriors on Cao Zhilan's and Pan Zhe's side, of which Pan Zhe, Cao Zhilan, Xie Kui, Qu Yanqing, and Gu Linglong were all elite figures on the Combat List. These five people were enough to win against Shi Yan's group.

Cao Zhilan had released wave-like powers besieging Shi Yan when he had been neglectful. Yang Mu also got in the mess by trying to save him. Afterward, Yang Ke and Li Fenger both knew that their chances were slim, but they stopped, turned around, and stood with Yang Mu.

In the field, Shi Yan finally performed the Second Sky of Rampage in such a severe crisis, making the rolling negative energies in his meridians merge with the blood in his body.

At that moment, the power in Shi Yan's body doubled again!

Being at the peak of the Disaster Realm, the power on his body kept increasing. Under the refining of the surging negative powers, they instantly formed into frightening evil impacts and struck away the omnipresent powers that Cao Zhilan had quietly cast everywhere.

Shi Yan started walking step by step towards Cao Zhilan.

The evil powers of Resentment, Fear, Despair, Bloodshed, and Violence gushed out of Shi Yan's body. This flow of the evil powers rushed up into the sky like a whirlwind. As Shi Yan walked, the waves of these evil powers kept forming and transformed into three magnificent mountain-like demonic shadows.

Three demonic shadows were formed with different negative powers. They had Shi Yan's soul imprint on them and carried surging negative emotions.

The demonic phantoms were foggy and floated above Shi Yan's head. Their faces were blurred but gave a terrifying feeling to others.

Shi Yan's eyes were bright red. He coldly glared at Cao Zhilan while murderous thoughts came into his mind. Those three giant demonic phantoms suddenly flew out simultaneously; their big demon claws were like overcast, dark clouds pressing towards Cao Zhilan.

The faces of everyone in the field suddenly changed.

Shi Yan's power instantly soared and formed the three giant demonic phantoms on top of his head. The three demonic phantoms seemed illusory but brought out extremely fierce and frightening energy fluctuations. Anyone could see that once they got hit by a demonic phantom, it wouldn't be weaker than a full-power hit from Shi Yan.

"Little Yan! You are something!" Yang Mu stood on one side laughing out loud. He held a big sword in one hand and swung it at the sky. The giant sword in his hand seemed as light as a feather; it drew a beautiful arc in the sky. A cluster of bright silver light suddenly shot out and forced back the approaching Pan Zhe with one blow.

Qu Yan Qing's eyebrows slammed together. She shouted, instantly disappeared, and then reappeared behind Yang Mu in just a blink. The jade brooch on her head suddenly darted out. When it was still in the air, it separated and formed a triangle shape, blockading all the death corners behind Yang Mu.

At the same time, Pan Zhe and Xie Kui both dashed forward again, one on the left and one on the right, blocking Yang Mu off. Yang Mu now fell into the danger.

Yang Ke, Li Fenger wanted to storm in, but they were being wrapped by Gu Ling Lung's seven Magic Swords. Many of the other warriors also took actions altogether, launching different kinds of chaotic attacks that could dazzle others' eyes toward Yang Ke and Li Fenger.

The three of the Yang people were in a razor-edge.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

Suddenly, Yang Xue, Karma, and Jaing Hu Quan appeared from inside the meteor formation. These Yang family warriors who had entered the meteor formation saw that Yang Mu and the others were at such a delay, and they finally realized that Yang Mu had probably encountered danger. They decided to come back and jumped out again.

The help from Yang Xue and the other Yang family warriors temporarily resolved the attacks towards Yang Mu and the two others, unburdening them.

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

Three giant demonic phantoms, under the murderous thoughts from Shi Yan's mind, crazily pounced towards Cao Zhilan. The three demonic phantoms were formed purely with the negative powers in the meridians. They weren't afraid of physical attacks, and no godly weapon could kill these phantoms.

Under the attacks of these three demonic phantoms, Cao Zhilan's expression also became more somber. While being encircled by the three giant phantoms, Cao Zhilan's delicate hand waved slightly, and different energy fluctuations that were different from Profound Qi flew out of her palm. Those strange power fluctuations rippled like water.

Energy fluctuations formed into a strange barrier that is hard to see by the naked eye. This barrier had extraordinary defense power. Under the bombarding of the three demonic phantoms,

that strange barrier kept twisting but never broke.

More traces of sweat appeared on Cao Zhilan's supple cheek. It seemed that although she could defend against the attack of the three demonic shadows with the profoundness of her martial technique, she still had to use up quite a lot of power.

"The Life and Death Seal!" Shi Yan roared.

The patterns from both hands suddenly glowed in the bright light. With seven seals per hand, the seals merged in pairs and suddenly darted towards Cao Zhilan.

"Boom boom boom boom boom boom boom!"

Cao Zhilan had produced seven deep and fierce bursts from the barrier. The extraordinary barrier that was difficult to see by the naked eye turned into firefly-like lights that shattered into the sky and spread everywhere.

Cao Zhilan's pretty face changed slightly; she exclaimed, "Star Shift!"

The lights that spread throughout the sky gathered quickly and formed into a smooth flat mirror in front of Cao Zhilan.

At the moment the mirror surface formed, the three giant demonic phantoms just happened to press forward. Their claws fiercely pounced on Cao Zhilan.

Magically, the three giant demonic phantoms suddenly disappeared without a trace when they fell into the mirror surface.

Just right in front of Cao Zhilan, those three demonic phantoms seemed as if they had vanished into thin air without leaving a single trace.

A surprising light flashed across Shi Yan's bright red eyes.

His mind shifted, and with the help of his senses, he realized that those three giant demonic phantoms appeared outside the palace, three li away from here.

Cao Zhilan used a profound martial spirit that managed to transport the demonic phantoms formed by the negative powers and easily resolved his fatal blow.

"You sure have some tricks. Only with the Disaster Realm cultivation, you have already forced me to use such a defensive martial skill. Hmm, you have enough to take pride in." Cao Zhilan gave a light sigh and shook her head. With some sympathy, she said, "I originally wanted to catch you alive, but since you had such an eye-catching performance, it seems that I'll have to kill you first and then slowly try to figure out the secrets on you."

After those words came out, strange lights suddenly glimmered in Cao Zhilan's deep beautiful eyes. Those strange lights circulated in a special pattern in her eyes like the stars up in the sky moving in their mysterious tracks according to the laws of the universe.

At the same time, flows of different types of powers quickly surged in Cao Zhilan's delicate body. Five different lights with the colors of red, yellow, green, blue, and green quietly appeared inside her body. These five different-colored lights became more and more obvious; each holy light seemed to be a power entirely different from the Profound Qi.

"Five-Colored Holy Light!"

Yang Mu's expression was extremely stern; he suddenly roared, "Shi Yan, you can't fight the enemy head-on, retreat immediately!"

Shi Yan's bright red eyes coldly at Cao Zhilan. At this most breathtaking moment, he suddenly closed his eyes!

The faces of Yang Xue, Yang Ke, and Li Fenger suddenly changed. Together they all yelled out, trying to convince Shi Yan to dodge.

The Five-Colored Holy Light was a Sacred Level Martial Spirit from the Cao family. It is said that the cultivation of this technique was extremely difficult. First, warriors had to cultivate five martial spirits that released different powers and then tried to master all of

those five martial techniques to own five different types of powers in their body. Only then could they start cultivating the Five-Colored Holy Light.

Because the Five-Colored Holy Light was so hard to cultivate, even in the Cao family, there was rarely anyone who could successfully cultivate it. It was said that the power of the technique was extremely astonishing.

Once Yang Mu and the rest saw the five different-colored lights coming from inside Cao Zhilan's body, they immediately recognized this legendary Martial Technique. They hurriedly tried to advise Shi Yan to dodge.

However, at this crucial moment, Shi Yan close his eyes.

After Yang family warriors like Yang Mu, Yang Xue, Li Fenger shouted in shock; their expressions appeared to be extremely anxious. They wanted to help Shi Yan, but they were stopped by the opponents in front of them and had no time to spare.

"I know those three giant demonic phantoms are quickly flying this way, but I think you won't be able to wait until their help comes." the Five-Colored Holy Light came out, and a flow of extremely dangerous power presence came from her body. That Five-Colored Holy Light suddenly gathered in front of her voluminous breasts.

Five types of holy light quickly formed into one broad beam holy light that was as wide as a sky-reaching pillar. Devastating energy fluctuations came from inside that holy light and suddenly shot out.

It aimed straight at Shi Yan!

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

The vast Five-Colored Holy Light shot out of thin air. Its speed was faster than the naked eye could catch.

Shi Yan stood firmly in his place.

"Whoosh!"

The Five-Colored God Light shoot through his body. Its force was like a laser beam; it shattered one of the skyscraping pillars behind him and continued to shoot forward, crumbling another palace on its way.

"Little Yan!" Yang Mu screamed, his expression was grievous.

"Hmm?" Bits of mysterious light gleamed in Cao Zhilan's beautiful eyes. Her pretty face was a little surprised. She said faintly, "Another illusion. You've escaped this time, but are you going to have such great luck next time?"

In the stone fragments that scattered all over the sky, another Shi Yan's shadow slowly appeared. Using the Electric Shift and the Phantom Shift, together with the magical mental state of the Second Sky of Rampage, Shi Yan was able to predict the attack speed and the direction of the holy light ahead of time; and he thus could dodge the fatal blow of the Five-Colored Holy Light.

"This time, I won't dodge."

His bright red eyes calmly looked at Cao Zhilan. Shi Yan's tone was flat without a single trace of emotion.

Wisps of scorching flame power quietly seeped out of the Blood Vein Ring. The flame power swept through his meridian; wisps of flames came out of the nostrils and eye corners of Shi Yan. The condition of his body was extremely strange.

At the crucial moment, the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame had reached out in aid once again, injecting the fire power that can burn all beings into his body!

Chapter 229: Counter-attack

"Dude, you scared the crap out of me." Li Fenger stuck out her tongue and revealed an expression of lingering fear, "Ha, you can even dodge the Five-Colored Holy Light, you certainly are no ordinary person."

Yang Mu's expression also loosened. He threw a look at Shi Yan from far away, signaling Shi Yan to find an opportunity to retreat to the Meteor Formation.

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

The harsh wind sound came again.

The wave of Five-Colored Holy Light that had missed Shi Yan came back. It shot towards Shi Yan's back after crushing another palace.

"You're not going to dodge anymore? Are you for real?" There was a mocking smile on Cao Zhilan's lips, "Let me see your courage then."

"Little Yan, don't get triggered by her. This Five-Colored Holy Light is formed by five different types of powers. Even an ordinary Disaster Realm warrior probably won't be able to handle it. Don't act rashly." Yang Mu shouted.

Yang Ke and Yang Xue also tried to advise him.

Shi Yan closed his eyes again.

The Five-Colored Holy Light returned, bringing an earth-shaking energy fluctuation. It struck towards Shi Yan's back.

"Boom."

Clusters of burning fires continuously flew out of Shi Yan's body.

The scorching flame power of the Earth Flame instantly turned the area behind Shi Yan into a sea of fire. Crackling sounds appeared in the air, and the fiery power that could destroy all

beings gushed inside that flame.

Just like that, the Five-Colored Holy Light fell into the sea of fire formed by the flames of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame.

"Sssss!"

Inside the sea of fire, there came strange sounds. The flame power was burning the Five-Colored Holy Light down inside the sea of fire.

Firelight of five different colors appeared from inside the sea of fire. The sea of fire rapidly burned the power of this Five-Colored Holy Light, making it quickly weaken.

The Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame at the moment could count as a Heaven Flame. The power of a Heaven Flame was earth-shattering, able to burn all beings.

The sea of fire formed by the flame power of this Earth Flame also had the elemental properties of a Heaven Flame. That scorching flame power was able to burn anything into ashes.

The different types of powers and energies were also no exception.

After the Five-Colored Holy Light had fallen into the sea of fire, the flame power turned it to ashes at such a quick speed, only leaving colorful five-colored smoke and ashes behind.

"I told you, I won't dodge anymore."

Shi Yan finally opened his eyes again. He glared coldly at Cao Zhilan, "Inside your Five-Colored Holy Light, there is your soul seal and your soul consciousness can lock my location. Next time, no matter how I try to dodge, I would still be endlessly chased by your Five-Colored Holy Light. So, I'm not going to avoid anymore."

"You can sense my soul consciousness?" Cao Zhilan's beautiful eyes glinted with mysterious colors. "Only a Nirvana realm warrior that has formed a Sea of Consciousness can sense my soul lock."

You're only in the Disaster Realm, how can you possibly sense my soul lock? I don't understand."

"There are way more things that you don't understand." A trace of disdain flashed in Shi Yan's bright red eyes. He then lightly shouted, "Counter-attack!"

The three demonic phantoms flew in from outside the palace. They suddenly surged into the middle of the pursuing warriors. At the same time, Shi Yan's soul consciousness formed into a soul storm. With the different negative emotions added into it, the soul storm began a raging slaughter, starting where the crowd of people was the most concentrated.

Warriors under the Nirvana Realm couldn't form the sea of consciousness and could only use their mind power. They couldn't create attacks that can target souls.

However, Shi Yan was able to use the Soul Gathering Pearl to form the Sea of Consciousness unbelievably ahead of time. With the help of his Sea of Consciousness, he first saw through all the secrets of Cao Zhilan's soul lock, and now he was using soul attacks to bombard those pursuing killers.

The formation of the Sea of Consciousness meant that Shi Yan's evolution of the soul was more successful than everyone here!

With the Sea of Consciousness, Shi Yan's soul consciousness was in every corner. He could use soul attacks to go against any soul or to perform a surprise attack.

The Sea of Consciousness that had never been used before suddenly burst out with the assault of the soul storm!

Wherever the soul storm swept over, those pursuing attackers became red-headed, and then they completely forgot who they were and raised the weapons in their hands to attack the allies next to them.

Waves of the soul storm affected dozens of pursuing attackers,

making those attackers go into disorder and become insane.

Taking advantage of the situation, Shi Yan used his mind to control those three demonic phantoms. Those demonic phantoms were formed with pure negative energies and flew around in the field, going through the bodies of warriors.

Whenever a demonic phantom went through the body of a warrior, that person's life force would be immediately cut off and die on the spot.

Shi Yan suddenly crossed his legs and sat down on his spot.

Besides using his mind to control the three giant demonic phantoms, he was also gathering the soul consciousness at the same time, adding in the negative emotions, forming a soul storm that made people lose their sanity. Thus, he continuously influenced the battling enemies, making the pursuing attackers start to go crazy.

"Soul consciousness! It is soul consciousness!"

After a moment of comprehension, Cao Zhilan's Spirit God Martial Spirit finally realized something. She couldn't help but shout; her face was filled with shock.

"What?"

Gu Linglong's beautiful face changed drastically, she shook her head unbelievably, "This kid is only in the Disaster realm, how can he possess the Sea of Consciousness?"

Cao Zhilan didn't answer, she copied Shi Yan and also sat down. The storage ring on her hand flashed, and a red leather battle drum appeared in the palm of her hand.

"Bum! Bum! Bum!"

Across from Shi Yan, Cao Zhilan was sitting cross-legged, and her fair hands hit beat by beat on that battle drum.

The sound of the drum seemed to have a mysterious power that

twisted soul consciousness. The beating of the drum seemed to have stabbed into Shi Yan's head like a piercer, seeping into Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, making him unable to form the soul consciousness to launch an attack again.

This battle drum was made to go against the Sea of Consciousness of Nirvana Realm warriors.

"Bum! Bum! Bum!"

The strange sound of the drum rang throughout the field. Each of the warriors that had been turned to insanity by Shi Yan's soul storm regained clarity in their eyes and slowly awakened.

Shi Yan's face changed; he abruptly stood up and nodded towards Yang Mu, "Retreat."

The three demonic phantoms that were formed with negative energies became a little out of control due to the disorder in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. They started to split into streaks of pale smoke, dashing towards Gu Linglong and the others.

The soul storm was no longer working, and even the demonic phantoms formed with negative energies were hard to control. At the same time, the fatigue in his body became heavier and heavier. The aftereffect of the Second Sky of Rampage seemed to have slowly started.

In this kind of situation, Shi Yan made a prompt decision. He knew that if he and his fellows continued the fight, they were probably going to be killed one by one by the opponents.

"Retreat!"

Yang Mu roared; his shoulder bumped and sent Yang Ke straight back into the Meteor Formation.

He was scared that Yang Ke might act stupidly again, so he sent him inside ahead of time. After that, he finally shouted towards Li Fenger and the rest that were not far away: "Let's go!"

Feeling the fatigue in his body rush in like waves, Shi Yan no longer overexerted himself and hurriedly retreated backward.

A graceful figure wearing a fiery red armor suddenly appeared into view. Shi Yan slightly dazed, and then he realized that the beautiful figure was He Qingman.

He Qingman's pretty face was cold, she performed an intense martial technique, fighting with Yang Xue.

When Yang Mu's loud roar came, He Qingman snorted coldly. The movements of hers became more and more intense with the ferocious look on her face as if she was going to keep Yang Xue from escaping.

"You want to die!"

Shi Yan was just about to storm back towards Yang Xue's direction when he saw the sharp movements on He Qingman's hands. He snorted coldly and raised his hand, the Life Seal that was condensed and refined by the Profound Qi suddenly burst out.

He Qingman was just concentrating on her fight with Yang Xue, and out of nowhere, she realized there was a turbulent fluctuation coming from behind her. Her pretty face changed, and when she turned her head, she immediately noticed Shi Yan's Life Seal attack.

A strange expression appeared on He Qingman's flirtatious face. She bitterly threw a glare at Shi Yan and then suddenly withdrew herself of Yang Xue to back off towards the other direction.

Yang Xue, who was dueling with her, had a great opportunity but surprisingly didn't make a killing attempt. Instead, she suddenly backed off into the Meteor Formation.

Shi Yan was stunned.

Yang Xue had apparently held back. If she didn't hurriedly back into the Meteor Formation and fought back at He Qingman, He Qingman, who was busy with dodging the blow of the Life Seal,

definitely would not have been able to block the attack from behind her.

"Mind your own business!" He Qingman's charming figure drifted away like the wind. She quietly cursed out while dodging Shi Yan's Life Seal.

Shi Yan was dazed.

Glimpsing towards He Qingman a few more times and remembering back to Yang Xue's strange actions, Shi Yan suddenly came to a realization.

So these two women had been pretending all along.

The two seemed to be fighting very intensely, but in reality, they never made murderous attempts. They were only making a show in front of everyone.

Shi Yan had figured it out but still had a cold expression on his face. He said coldly, "Piss off!"

He let out the Dark Shield and petrified his body. Shi Yan was like a sharp sword, quickly sweeping past He Qingman's side and quickly rushing towards that Meteor Formation.

He Qingman raised her hand; beams of sharp, bright light shot out from her five fingers and struck on Shi Yan's back.

The bright light that seemed intense but didn't have much invading power when touching his body. If Shi Yan didn't shatter his Dark Shield on purpose, this blow from He Qingman, wouldn't even be able to break the simplest Dark Shield.

This woman still had some touches of sentiment in her.

Through this blow, Shi Yan had finally confirmed that even though He Qingman came to the Chasm Battlefield, her objectives were different from Xie Kui's. She didn't actually want to kill them.

Shi Yan's figure disappeared within a flash. He vanished at where

the dark gray cloud was the most intense. Yang Mu laughed loudly and disappeared last.

Pan Zhe and the rest had ugly expressions on their faces. They all rushed towards that area and were just about to enter into the Meteor Formation.

"Let's not chase first!"

Cao Zhilan, who was sitting cross-legged on the ground, suddenly stood up. She shook her head with a serious expression and explained: "There is a formation in there, it's quite dangerous. The reason why the Yang family members can get in and out safely is that they already resolved the formation. But if you enter rashly, you will be attacked by the formation."

"Then what do we do?" Gu Linglong clenched her teeth and said bitterly, "Are we just going to let this go? Hmm, I thought you were pretty strong, yet you still can't do anything with that brat Shi Yan? And you said to leave him to you. I just shouldn't have trusted you. If I had come along, we definitely would've been able to kill him!"

"Little sister Gu, if you're so confident, then I'll give him to you next time." Cao Zhilan didn't get mad, she smiled casually and said: "But now, everyone, calm down. Can you wait for me to break the formation for you first?"

Everyone was silent, and then they all nodded.

Chapter 230: Lost

Inside the Meteor Formation.

Meteorites as big as millstones were falling from the sky one after one, and their impacts were extremely violent.

As soon as he entered the Meteor Formation, Shi Yan immediately saw a meteorite landing beside him. Gray smoke was very thick in this place; Shi Yan couldn't see anyone. When he used his Soul Consciousness, he couldn't sense any life signal around him, either.

As he entered the formation, Shi Yan felt as if he had walked into a strange environment where his five senses were clogged up, and his Soul Consciousness was hindered.

Remembering the words of Jiang Hu Quan, seven steps to the left then five steps to the right, Shi Yan followed this simple footwork and walked deeper into this strange Meteor Formation.

He couldn't see people nor sense anything with his Soul Consciousness except for the meteorites falling over one after another.

Jiang Hu Quan's footwork was indeed very magical. Following this pattern, Shi Yan could see the meteorites falling one by one, but none of those meteors could hit him. When some of the meteorites were about to hit him, Shi Yan wanted to try to block the meteorites using his body, but he soon found out that the meteorites fell to his side instead of hitting on him. It was like as long as he followed Jiang Hu Quan's footwork, he would never get hit.

Shi Yan calmed down and sped up his pace to get through this Meteor Formation.

Suddenly, a strange thought came out from the Blood Vein Ring. Shi Yan was startled. He halted immediately. He used his Soul

Consciousness to sense, and his face slightly changed.

The Earth Flame became very excited. It even wanted to break out from the Blood Vein Ring's constraint. It was unknown why it became agitated inside this Meteor array.

The Ice Cold Flame was also present inside the Blood Vein Ring. As the Blood Vein Ring seemed to know that the Ice Cold Flame was all along a threat toward Shi Yan, it used a magical power inside the ring to bind the Ice Cold Flame to prevent it from using its ability to attack Shi Yan.

However, the Blood Vein Ring's attitude was very loose towards the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame. It seemed to know that the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame wouldn't harm Shi Yan, so not only did it construct a comfortable environment for it inside the ring, but also didn't bind the Earth Flame.

This meant the Earth Flame could come out from the ring as easily as it wished.

This time, the Earth Flame's abnormality was that it wanted to come out.

"Don't."

Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness to try to stop the Earth Flame, but he found that he was already too late. From the moment he released his Soul Consciousness, the Earth Flame had already flown away from the Blood Vein Ring, heading towards his right side.

Inside the Meteor Formation, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't detect any life fluctuations around him, but this restriction seemed not to degrade his connection to the Earth Flame.

Maybe that was because the relationship between him and the Earth Flame was already too close; that there was a strange connection between them. Even Shi Yan if didn't release his Soul

Consciousness, he still could feel the location of the Earth Flame.

Boom Boom Boom!

One after another, the meteorites continued to fall from the sky. If Shi Yan didn't follow the footwork pattern, he definitely would have been hit.

The Earth Flame ignored Shi Yan's warning and flew away. It seemed to be attracted to something. At this time, if Shi Yan still didn't continue to move, he would probably lose the Earth Flame's location if the distance between him and the flame became too far.

Inside the Chasm Battlefield, there were many barriers, if he lost the connection with the Earth Flame, it would not be easy to find it again. At this time, the Earth Flame was only one step away from fully ascending from their location.

Also at this time, if there were someone who wanted to catch it, as long as they knew the right way, they could ultimately replace Shi Yan and establish a deep connection between him and the Earth Flame, and thus become the Earth Flame's new master.

Shi Yan's face looked uncertain. He pondered for a while, and then he decided to catch up with the Earth Flame.

As he changed his pace, he immediately used his Essence Qi to burst toward the Earth Flame's location like a sharp sword.

Boom Boom Boom!

At the moment he changed his footwork, the meteorites inside the Meteor Formation suddenly came and crashed at him as if they had eyes.

Whosshhhh!

His shadow was like lightning, passing the falling meteorites with his fastest speed while avoiding them.

Boom Boom!

A huge meteorite suddenly came and crashed Shi Yan's back.

An extreme force of impact burst out from his back. Although his petrified body could withstand the impact, he couldn't maintain his speed, and thus he became the target for other meteorites.

In just a few seconds, his body couldn't bear the impact from five meteorites, and his body was also exhausted. Under this bombardment, his mouth started to gush out blood again.

Shi Yan stopped and didn't dare to make any move. He silently sensed his injuries with a little impatience.

At the previous fight with Cao Zhi Lan, he had used the Second Sky of Rampage, and his meridians had also absorbed a lot of Essence Qi from the dead. Now, the backlash started to show its effect, and his body became weaker.

At this time, he was hit by five meteorites and damaged badly. If it wasn't because of his Petrification Martial Spirit, he would have already have fallen to the ground under those attacks.

The Earth Flame was 100 meters in front of him. For now, this distance was like a death road which was tough to pass through. If he weren't careful, he would be hit again.

Inside this array, he was not sure when Cao Zhilan's group would appear. If he lost his consciousness here, not only would he continue bearing the impact of those meteorites but he also had to face the risk of being detected by Cao Zhilan and the others.

But if he followed the footwork, he could still get through this Meteor Formation and thus avoid the danger from the meteorites and Cao Zhilan.

However, if he did so, he would probably lose the Earth Flame.

With a sullen face, Shi Yan looked hesitated. In his mind, he kept weighing gains and losses and needed to make a decision soon.

I'll ignore it for now.

Ten seconds later, Shi Yan made up his mind to put aside the

Earth Flame first and wait for his body to recover before he returns to find the Earth Flame.

He was ready to leave.

Bzz Bzz Bzz

Suddenly, a dazzling red light came from Earth Flame's direction. A strong burning fire energy suddenly burst out. The Earth Flame was very excited; it used its mind power to urge Shi Yan to keep up.

Shi Yan was stunned.

The mind power from the Earth Flame was very clear; it seemed like it had found something and told Shi Yan to hurry up.

As the Earth Flame didn't have a solid form, it couldn't be hit inside the Meteor Formation. It also didn't know that every step that Shi Yan took faced a considerable danger. It was just calling Shi Yan, wanting to share its findings with him.

Struggling inside his heart and feeling the call from the Earth Flame, Shi Yan eyes changed again and again.

Damn, bring it on!

A moment later, Shi Yan changed his decision; he took a deep breath and swallowed a few of Qi Refining Pills. After he had felt the Profound qi inside his body restored a bit, he triggered the Electric Shift and flew toward the Earth Flame's direction.

"Boom Boom Boom !"

Another three meteorites hit his body; the fierce impact-power damaged his body and blew him into the air. He gushed out a mouthful of blood.

By relying on Petrification and Immortal Martial Spirits, he didn't care about his damaged body; he triggered the Electric Shift again, and finally, he arrived at the Earth Flame's location before other meteorites fell near his location.

Everything became quiet again.

As he entered the area where the Earth Flame was, the meteorites suddenly disappeared.

With the mouth full of blood, Shi Yan fell on the ground, and his face looked surprised at this area.

It was an ancient array with the size of a house. Outside the ancient array, many circles of the energy flow were formed. These energy flow blocked the meteorites and prevented those meteorites from entering this array.

Inside the ancient array, Shi Yan couldn't hear anything.

The Earth Flame was floating in the middle of the ancient array.

A thumb-sized crimson red crystal laid inside the groove in the center.

It seemed like that crystal was the supply source of this ancient array, overflowing red firelight and transmitting some sort of energy to this array.

Outside the ancient array, there were also many grooves. Each of those grooves had a different color crystal, and each of the crystals transmitted a strange energy to provide energy to this ancient array.

The Earth Flame was floating above that red crystal and jumping cheerfully, seeming like it wanted to absorb the energy inside the crystal.

After Shi Yan had entered and examined this ancient array, he was about to ask the Earth Flame what this red crystal was used for, but he found the crystals around the ancient array burst out a colorful halo all of a sudden.

The ancient array that was initially quiet started to run automatically after he had entered. Being surprised a bit, Shi Yan knew that this array was probably going to be activated.

Without thinking furthermore, he quickly sent a message to the Earth Flame, "Get in first!"

The Earth Flame bounced as it seemed to find something abnormal. It only hesitated for a bit before immediately drilling into Shi Yan's Blood Vein Ring.

After seeing the Earth Flame return, Shi Yan was relaxed and prepared to leave this mysterious ancient array.

However, when he wanted to leave, he found that the strange energy flow outside the ancient array became a barrier that blocked the way in and out at the moment the ancient array started moving.

Shi Yan's head hit the barrier while it directly pushed his exhausted body into the middle of the ancient array.

Shi Yan was aghast.

The crystals outside the array were shining dazzlingly. The ancient array suddenly spun up as if it was a disc. Through a dazzling crystal light, an extraordinary energy wave came over.

Shi Yan disappeared instantly.

Chapter 231: Breakthrough

The Meteor Formation.

Inside an ancient formation at another location.

Yang Mu, Yang Xue, Yang Ke, Li Feng Er, and other warriors of the Yang family were all standing inside an ancient formation. This formation was quite similar to the one that Shi Yan had entered, except for a minor difference in the surrounding power crystals.

At this moment, the energy crystals surrounding the Ancient Formation were regularly releasing beautifully dazzling beams of light.

A group of the Yang family's warriors entered the ancient formation and continuously disappeared with the flashes of those beams. Yang Mu's group was following Jian Hu Quan's method. Each person of the Yang family had used this method precisely to move forward when entering this ancient formation. They were not affected by the celestial meteorites.

According to Jian Hu Quan, this was the exit of the Meteor Formation.

As having been reminded by Jian Hu Quan, the Yang family's members weren't hesitant while standing in the middle of the Ancient Formation. They had then teleported away.

All warriors of the Yang family quickly disappeared from the Meteor Formation through this Ancient Formation. Similar to what had happened to Shi Yan, as everyone's vision had disappeared, and couldn't see anything inside the Meteor Formation. Instantly teleport away, no one knew the other's situation. This was the reason that Shi Yan and Yang Mu's warriors got separated.

However, thanks to Jian Hu Quan's advice, they didn't hesitate to

enter the Ancient Formation right away.

Outside the Meteor Formation.

Cao Zhi Lan, the long-limbed woman, had a strange light in her eyes. The Spirit Divine Martial Spirit, which was controlled by her spirit, started analyzing the transformation of that Meteor Formation to comprehend its miraculous movement. The people of Pan Zhe's group were all standing outside the Meteor Formation. They didn't dare to go in.

After having used the Spirit Divine Martial Spirit for a while, Cao Zhi Lan suddenly burst into laughter. She slowly stood up and said, "In the Meteor Formation, you can go either on the left or the right. As long as you don't make a wrong move, the meteorites won't attack you. Well, if you choose to go on the left, take seven steps to the left, then five steps to the right. And vice versa, you can also take seven steps to the right then five steps to the left. Both ways can get you out of the Meteor Formation."

"So, should we go to the left or the right after all?" Gu Ling Long knitted her eyebrows and irritatingly said, "Inside this Meteor Formation, there are surely two ways out, which possibly lead to the two different areas. Because our target is the Yang family, the first thing to do is to identify their direction to pursue them."

"How can we know which direction the Yang family has chosen?" said Cao Zhi Lan.

Xie Kui's face darkened with a murderous look in his eyes. "Yang Mu isn't easy to deal with. If he isn't dead this time, he will certainly find a way to take revenge against us. If we decide to take action, we can't let them have a single chance to survive. No one can live."

"When Shi Yan and I fought, I recognized that he had a vigorous Flame power. My Spirit Divine Martial Spirit has recently detected an adamant fire movement on the right." Cao Zhi Lan smiled faintly. "Maybe Shi Yan's on the way out on the right. Yang Mu

will not separate from Shi Yan for sure. If Shi Yan is there, the Yang family will be there as well."

"Good, we'll follow the way on the right then." Pan Zhe nodded and talked to the warriors of the Penglai Divine Land who were standing behind him, "Remember Miss Cao's words carefully, once entering the Meteor Formation, take seven steps to the right first and then five steps to the left. Don't make any mistakes."

"Ok, I'll lead," Cao Zhi Lan calmly entered first.

In the middle of the vast and oppressively hot desert, lay an exhausted man with arms and legs up. He was breathing slowly. Many different energies inside his body started to recover. Each stream of negative energy silently scattered out in his meridians.

The desert was burning, but there was no sun. The sky was vivid-red which was like the color of fresh blood. Uneven dunes scattered here and there in the desert where there was neither living fluctuations nor green nor sound.

A bunch of red burning fires flew out from the ring. It danced, bouncing up and down in the scorching desert. It seemed to be secretly sensing something.

"This place makes me uncomfortable." The Ice Cold Flame sent out a message from the Blood Vein Ring. "This peculiar space is oppressively hot. This scorching aura seems to belong to the Sun. However, there is no sun here; I don't know what's going on..."

"This should be an area of the Chasm Battlefield. Hmm, strange indeed. The Earth Flame seems to like this place very much. It instantly showed its enthusiasm as soon as it arrived here." Shi Yan responded.

The ancient formation had thrown him here, and he had fallen in this vast desert. There wasn't any other ancient formation near him.

His entire body had been severely injured. He didn't have any

energy left to explore the mystery of this place. He could only lie on the ground motionlessly and recovered slowly. "Hmm, we can't see the sun from here, but its intense power still exists. Very strange, indeed." The Ice Cold Flame contemplated for a while before speaking all of a sudden. "This place's very suitable for your Extreme Refining Technique. You can rely on the mysterious power here and use the Earth Flame to cultivate your Extreme Refining Technique devotedly. It will help your body get stronger."

"Let me recover first, and we will see later." Shi Yan did not refuse, looking up to the sky with a forced smile. He stopped communicating with the Ice Cold Flame and started to recover slowly.

After taking ten Refining Pills and absorbing their power, by spreading this energy out to combine with his remaining Essence Qi. Shi Yan could quickly restore his consumed Profound Qi without requiring too much of the Sky and Earth aura.

Refining Pills were precious pellets which could magically restore the Profound Qi. Refining Pills were treasured in the Endless Sea, and only mighty warriors could take them. Regular warriors did not have enough ability or materials to refine the Refining Pills.

The healing power of the ten Refining Pills was sufficient to restore the consumed Essence Qi of an Earth Realm warrior. For Shi Yan who was only at the Peak of Disaster Realm, the effect of these ten Refining Pills was more than enough.

While the Essence Qi was silently gathering, Shi Yan relaxed his mind and started to comprehend the peculiar things in his body.

The Immortal Martial Spirit could cure his wounded body quickly, strengthen his bones, which had been destroyed by the meteorites, and heal the broken blood vessels in just a short time.

An ordinary person would require a few days to restore, but it only took him a few minutes to regain his strength.

Inside his meridians, many flows of whirling air quickly span and filtered the Essence Qi that would be refined by the Mystery Martial Spirit, turning into a special energy. Shi Yan could absorb this energy easily.

However, the negative feelings spread out in his body slowly disturbed Shi Yan's mind as it wanted to pull him down to a deep dark abyss.

About ten pursuers were dead inside the Palace this time around. His meridians had absorbed these ten dead Earth Realm warriors' Essence Qi entirely. The negative feelings, which had been created by refining their Essence Qi, were enough for him to lose his consciousness.

After sensing these feelings for a while, he realized that it was not easy to stay strong-minded. Shi Yan contemplated a little bit before deciding to sink into a dune.

If he could come to this place, so could his pursuers. If Cao Zhi Lan's warriors came at the time he lost his consciousness due to the process of refining energy, he would certainly be dead.

After a long time of recovery, his body had already restored a little bit of power. As soon as he launched the Finger Spear Technique, his ten fingers became sabers. He burrowed into the dune like a pangolin.

The Earth Flame was bouncing up and down outside the dune. However, as it seemed to realize Shi Yan's intention, it stopped running about and went back into the Blood Vein Ring before Shi Yan disappeared into the dune.

Shi Yan went ten meters deep inside the dune while holding his breath. He only stopped when the sand had covered his entire body and hindered his movement.

Not long after that, the refining process in his meridians had reached the critical point of time. Eventually, Shi Yan could no

longer resist the negative feelings and started to lose his consciousness.

At a depth of ten meters inside the dune, the sand shrouding Shi Yan was deterring his struggle, even his scream could hardly be heard. Sand had become the natural prison that temporarily confined him.

Shi Yan had lost his consciousness. He was continually wriggling. He didn't think of using the Finger Spear to make a way out. Instead, he only kept struggling helplessly under the dune.

It was unknown how much time had passed.

Shi Yan's struggle seemed to be less potent, and the screams also stopped. Many flows of strange energy, one after one, silently flew out from his meridians, spreading to all of his vessels and bones.

Shi Yan had gradually lost his senses, so he didn't realize the transformations of his body. He subconsciously let peculiar forces freely flow inside his body, scattering all over his vessels and bones.

Time flew slowly.

Shi Yan suddenly awakened after a long time. He immediately realized that his exhausted body had already regained the overwhelming lively power.

No matter if it was the Essence Qi or his body, both had sufficiently recovered to the acme. He couldn't be better than right now.

"Oh?" The Essence Qi halo on his belly kept condensing and shrinking. That Essence Qi halo inside of his body was quickly condensing without any guidance.

During the transformation of the Profound Qi halo in his body, all the vessels of his body, which were like sponges, were absorbing the refined Profound Qi that had been spreading out from that halo.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness was running around both inside and outside of his entire body. A flash of light suddenly appeared in his head.

Right after that, Shi Yan beamed a contented smile. He started to relax his spirit, relied on the transformation of his body to guide the Essence Qi that had been refined from inside of the halo to penetrate into the vessels inside his body.

After taking power from those forces, his vessels became sparkling and translucid as if they had turned to delicate jades. It was such a miracle.

During the vessels' transformation, the more Essence Qi being poured in, the more his vessels expanded.

With the larger vessels, his Essence Qi would be able to move faster inside his body. At the same time, the ability to contain Essence Qi was higher, and his body's movements were also quicker.

The anomaly of the vessels was the best visible sign to prove that his Peak of Disaster Realm had been broken through into the Earth Realm.

Chapter 232: The Earth Realm

Inside the dune.

Shi Yan's entire body was glowing like a crystal as his tendons and vessels had been overwhelmed with the bountiful Profound Qi, making his vessels sleek and smooth. Consequently, the veins in his body were developing. They enlarged and obtained great tenacity.

The running speed of his Profound Qi was getting faster while Profound Qi flows kept moving nonstop then branched forth, pouring into the blinding rays of the Profound Qi halo.

The Profound Qi's halo on his lower abdomen was compressed unceasingly and refined. It had propelled the stored energy inside the halo, increasing it, and resulted in his strange power developing further.

The fantastic strength that was released from his meridians then promoted the Profound Qi halo's miraculous effect. Thanks to this mysterious effect, the Profound Qi halo kept condensing and refining nonstop. And, it didn't seem to stop although it had already tripled in size.

As the vessels had been enlarged and hardened, Shi Yan's body seemed to swell up while he was swarmed by heavy sensations of pain. However, the pain that ensued from his swelling was nothing compared to the previous hardships of his martial arts cultivation.

Shi Yan held his breath as he was initiating the realm while his entire body and mind were concentrating on the process in which the Profound Qi halo was transforming his body.

"Ah!" said the Ice Cold Flame, as it suddenly sent out a message from the Blood Vein Ring, "Are you going to break through the Earth Realm?"

"Yes, I am."

"Very good...very good..!" the Ice Cold Flame said with a wicked tone, "You have already obtained another Flame. If you use the burning fires of the Earth Flame to temper your vessels during your cultivation, your vessels will be more tenacious and resilient. As long as you can withstand this arduous cultivation, the circulation speed of the Profound Qi in your vessels will be much stronger than that of the other ordinary Earth Realm warriors that have been trained with the same martial techniques. Naturally, it means you will be quicker than them when performing such techniques,... what do you think?"

Shi Yan's eyes had suddenly brightened as he exclaimed, "Not a problem at all. I'll call the Earth Flame now. You won't have to do anything this time. Anyway, you are in the confinement area of the Blood Vein Ring, and the communication between the Earth Flame and me is no longer difficult."

"That's good since I can't use my strength. Either way for now I will not be able to help you. Alright, after using the Earth Flame's power to temper your body, you still have to be cautious and try not to be too harsh because the Earth Flame's now equivalent to the other Heaven Flames; its heating power can easily burn you down. Remember carefully: You have to carry on just one step at a time."

"Got it."

Shi Yan then moved his Soul Consciousness from the Ice Cold Flame to the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame's direction in the Blood Vein Ring, sending a clear message that he wanted to ask for the support using its heating power to temper his body.

The Earth Flame could not send him a message, but it still showed its excitement and joy. As soon as the Earth Flame showed him its emotions, Shi Yan immediately realized many scorching energy fibers had shot out from the Blood Vein Ring. Flames were now running along his finger toward the vessels in his body.

The torment of being burned by the fiery flame had been spreading all over his body. His once comfortable face now became fierce.

He gritted his teeth and took a deep breath before urging the power of the burning flame to disperse the heating power into his vessels. Right after the Earth Flame's burning fires had thoroughly penetrated into his vessels, the once bright translucent vessels were now turned into the brilliant color of a fire crystal.

At the same time, when the Earth Flame's power had seeped into his body, tiny dots of black impurities were instantly incinerated into ashes, and then expelled through his pores.

Absorbing a few impurities was inevitable when his vessels were developing. Although the existence of contaminants would have certainly affected the resilience and tenaciousness of his tendons and vessels, after breaking through the Earth Realm warriors would usually be so overwhelmed with joy that most of the time they wouldn't have noticed these contaminants.

Even though they had known that the impurities would be generated while their vessels were developed, they had no solutions to avoid it.

However, these peculiar body refining martial techniques could have easily taken advantage of the Heaven Flame's power to purify all the contaminants left in Shi Yan's body. At the same time, it would enhance his vessels' resilience.

Anyway, the techniques of the body refining martial techniques were initially used to temper magical weapons, since each magical weapon needed to have gone through thousands of tempering and purification processes for the purities to be removed. After that, these weapons would dominate the battlefield without being defeated by other superior weapons.

"Alright," as the Earth Flame was pouring more scorching forces into his body, Shi Yan could feel that even his vessels would have

burned down if this continued. He hastily sent a message to ask the Earth Flame to stop. Thus, the sweltering power of the fiery flame of the Earth Flame was ceased quietly.

Exhaling in relief, Shi Yan stopped thinking and then put his mind into the ethereal state, and sustained his restful mind, while suffering the pain from the heat moving inside his vessels. He cautiously gritted his teeth.

He gradually relaxed and enlarged his vessels to receive many streams of Profound Qi massively flowing into his vessels like surging tides. After a while, his vessels had quietly absorbed a lot of the Profound Qi, which resulted in the decrease of the Profound Qi that were now moving inside the vessels.

The Profound Qi also blended with the strange energy that had been refined by his Mystery Martial Spirit. This energy seeped deeply into Shi Yan's vessels, amending and soothing his painfully cracked vessels a little bit.

He could feel this strange energy's existence which seemed to make his vessels sturdy and tenacious. As long as these mysterious energies ran inside his vessels, he instantly felt a miraculous fantasy that his vessels would never break.

The Mystery Martial Spirit was marvelous, indeed.

Time passed by quickly.

After an unknown duration of time, his vessels had stopped enlarging. At this moment, they were like a fire crystal that flared up the heart-stirring glowing red light. When the power of the fiery flame gradually vanished and the red light also faded away, his vessels were finally recovered. Little by little, they regained their normal state.

The Profound Qi halo on his belly shrank to peach-sized, radiating sparkling light which contained powerful energy fluctuations.

After going through this refinement, his Profound Qi had been increased five times more than before.

Shi Yan's mind flickered as the Profound Qi was suddenly poured into his vessels, inducing its moving speed to be tripled. The vessels' capacity that carried the Profound Qi had also increased significantly.

Shi Yan then comfortably released a Life Seal.

The handprint was sparkling with seven beams of light. It was now big as a basin compared to the previous palm-sized seal. He suddenly launched the strike, shooting over his head.

As soon as the Life Seal was released, it pierced through the ten-meter-tall dune above his head like a magical weapon, breaking the dune, opening up to the glowing red sky outside.

The sky was as red as fire. It was burning hot. Everything stayed the same.

Shi Yan beamed a faint smile as the vessels on his feet suddenly produced an explosive sound. His body then instantly moved like lightning, soaring aloft.

Standing on the dune, scooping down at the sand crater, Shi Yan saw his illusory figure had gradually disappeared.

After breaking through with the power of the Earth Flame, the speed of his martial technique performance was several times faster. His strength also skyrocket as well.

Previously, he hadn't been skillful in changing the phantoms. However, as he had just reached the Earth Realm, he could now arbitrarily perform it.

Facing up to the sky, Shi Yan gradually restrained his joy as he then searched inside the Blood Vein Ring for a while before taking out the Sound Stone. He then tried to contact Yang Mu's group.

However, there was no response after his voice had been

transmitted into the Sound Stone. It seemed that the Sound Stone wasn't working anymore.

Shi Yan's face became grave while he knitted his eyebrows tightly. He then tried again to transmit his voice into the Sound Stone, with the hope again for a response to come out. Regretfully, it was unknown whether because of the situation or other reasons that the Sound Stone didn't have any reactions.

Eventually, Shi Yan had to accept that he had lost contact with the Yang family's people.

In the vast Chasm Battlefield, being an outsider, coupled together without the Sound Stone's communication, he had no way to find Yang Mu's group. In this immense desert, his Soul Consciousness couldn't detect any living fluctuations. There was neither sun, nor moon, nor stars in this place. He couldn't find the direction to move forward, didn't know where the road ahead led him to.

Shi Yan suddenly felt a little confused.

A small crimson red flame was quietly flying out of the Blood Vein Ring, gathering on his chest, dancing and jumping joyfully.

"You're going out again?" Shi Yan forced a smile and temporarily forgot his distressed matter of the unknown directions. He then used his Soul Consciousness to send a message to ask with excitement. "So? Do you know the direction? Hmm, I still don't know which way to go. If you have any suggestion, I'll follow you."

The Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame flickered beautifully in the air like a fire wizard and then concernedly retrieved most of its flame power to reduce the heat that Shi Yan was unlikely to endure.

Receiving Shi Yan's message, the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame didn't waste more time and proactively led the way.

Without the sun, the moon, and the stars, Shi Yan couldn't identify the direction, though he just vaguely felt the direction that

the Earth Flame was heading towards was the hottest place in the desert.

"Okay. I'm going with you." Shi Yan beamed a smile and nodded. He joyfully followed the Earth Flame, heading with it towards the direction that it was leading him without overthinking.

It was still early anyway, and even if he had to stay in this Chasm Battlefield for three more years, temporarily losing his direction was not a terrible thing. Thus, he was not too anxious.

...

Under the red fire sky.

In this endless desert, many beams of light flashed up in different areas at the same time.

Besides Shi Yan, the group of Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Lung, Xie Kui, Qu Yan Qing, He Qing Man, and almost a hundred of the other warriors that had also arrived at this desert. Although they had entered that Ancient Formation as a group, for some reason, they had been transported to different areas.

Pan Zhe, Cao Zhi Lan, and more than ten other warriors who didn't belong to their group had been teleported to the same area. Meanwhile, Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing had been transferred to another different area. Xie Kui and He Qing Man, who were always together, had appeared in two different but close areas; they then quickly found each other.

Many of the Earth Realm warriors, who had also been scattered in different regions of this immense desert, were mentally fatigued since they couldn't identify their coordinates because they didn't see the sun, the moon, or the stars.

Like Shi Yan, those who had arrived at this strange space couldn't use the Sound Stone to contact anyone. In this place, the sensibility of the Soul Consciousness was dramatically weakened.

Once falling into this place as well as being unlikely to find the

other companions, when the warriors realized that both the Sound Stone and the sensing power was of no use, they were all in a daze like Shi Yan. They didn't know which direction or where to go first in this boundless desert.

The feeling of losing their purpose had dispirited them severely.

Arriving at this place, as those pursuers all realized that it was tough to find their target as well as the way to go back, they all had a toneless look on their faces.

Chapter 233: I Can Kill Them!

"Miss Cao, your Spirit Divine Martial Spirit has always been miraculous. Can you detect the locations of Shi Yan and the Yang family from here?" On a dune, after having tried the Yin Ball as well as failing in releasing the mental power, Pan Zhe dispiritedly asked Cao Zhi Lan in the end, setting his hope on this woman.

Cao Zhi Lan's eyebrows slightly slammed together. She closed her eyes and sensed around for a while before opening her eyes again, shaking her head gently. "I can only feel some special power fluctuations in a particular range. I think the Yang family's group has been out of my searching range right now. I can't identify their direction".

"As per what you said, staying here means we're all lost?" Pan Zhe shook his head and burst out laughing. "This damn place doesn't even have the Teleport Formation to go back. Would we get stuck here forever?"

"I don't want it, either." Cao Zhi Lan's face was indifferent. "Although we don't know how vast this place is, we can continue to search around, and we'll probably find some unusual things. The one who has created this place couldn't just leave no trace. Hmm, I need more time."

"Being in the same place with Miss Cao is my honor," Pan Zhe said eagerly, his eyes slightly brightened.

Cao Zhi Lan did not reply and started searching for the unusual traces. A strange light flashed again from between her beautiful eyes.

"Ge, what should we do now?" He Qing Man and Xie Kui were standing on the same dune.

Five other Earth Realm warriors of the Evil Wonderland were surrounding them. These five warriors, together with the other

two, were also lucky to be teleported to the same place.

The five warriors were circling He Qing Man and Xia Kui in silence, preventing the warriors of other groups from eavesdropping their conversation.

Xia Kui harrumphed coldly and replied with a somber face and cold eyes. "You ask me, but then I ask whom?"

"Ge, you weren't like that before." He Qing Man was a bit upset. Her beautiful face looked like she wanted to cry. "I remember that you liked me a lot before. Why are you treating me this way? Why?"

Xia Kui's look was cruel. "You don't know?"

"Not at all." Under Xia Kui's fierce gaze, He Qing Man was startled, timorously stepped back, but she still tried to show her stoutness.

"When we had arrived the Vault of Heaven Sea Area, you insistently refused to come here. Since then, I figured out your innermost feelings. You are not heartfully with our Evil Wonderland. However, I still did not expect that you could act recklessly like this! The fight between you and Yan Xue inside the Palace was just a game?" Xia Kui suddenly shouted.

He Qing Man's soft body trembled. "Brother, you could recognize it, couldn't you?"

"Yes!" Xia Kui laughed coldly. "Not only me realized that. You did not even use the Martial Spirit. How much energy did you use? You think Cao Zhi Lan, Qu Yan Qing, and Pan Zhe are all stupid? They just don't want to be nosy. If this stuff is spread out, your honor and the Evil Wonderland's reputation will be ruined! I don't want people to say that we, the Evil Wonderland, still have any relation with the Yang family!"

"Ge, the relationship between Yang... Yang Xue and I have always been good; I couldn't kill." He Qing Man shook her head, her eyes

red.

"This is a war! You are not allowed to let your personal feelings disturb you!" Xia Kui's face was cruel and wicked. "You did not use all of your energy on the last shot to defeat Shi Yan. You and Yang Xue might be close, but this Shi Yan, how come you still could not defeat him? I doubt if it a wrong decision to keep you with us."

He Qing Man gritted her teeth as she could not deny it.

"I can let go of what happened, pretending I didn't see it. But if it happens again, don't blame me for being heartless." Xia Kui continued coldly, "Remember, the Evil Wonderland's involved in this war. From now on, every one of the Yang family is our archenemy. It will never change. You and I are both outstanding warriors of the Evil Wonderland. Everything we are doing now is for ourselves, do you understand?"

He Qing Man's head scooped down and said nothing.

"You should think about it yourself. I've said what I should say; I hope you won't let me down next time. If it happens again, we are no more brother and sister, and I will be the first one who punishes you!" Xia Kui flipped his sleeves and left with a cold face. As he considered the future of the Evil Wonderland to be his, catching and killing the Yang family was his compulsory oath.

Anyway, the Evil Wonderland's foundation was in the Kyara Sea, once the Yang family recovered its power and wanted to take revenge, the first ones they would kill were them.

A stream of the red burning fires drew a beautiful curve in the void ahead. Flames sparkled everywhere as that fire halo moved faster and faster.

Behind the red halo of firelight was a majestic figure, which looked like a dead spirit, as fast as lightning. He followed the halo and kept the distance of ten meters from that halo all the time.

While the Earth Flame was flying fast in the air, the supreme burning fiery power spread out uncontrollably. Shi Yan also felt that heating power was unbearable.

The ten-meter distance was the maximum that Shi Yan could endure, the limit he could do.

If shortening the distance with the Earth Flame, that burning firepower would make him hardly breathe. If the flaming fires penetrated into the Essence Qi in his body, his Essence Qi would proactively release the opposing forces to resist, consuming a lot of his energy and exhausting him quickly.

Therefore, ten meters was the most comfortable distance for him to break through to the Earth Realm. Shi Yan felt that the forces inside his body had gone through an earth-shaking transformation. This change was not simply a tremendous increase in his energy but also an enhancement of his knowledge of using powers, and his control of Essence Qi. Everything had leaped into the new Realm.

He could now skillfully control his Essence Qi. His Soul Consciousness seemed to be present in each flow of the Essence Qi. When his mind flickered, the Essence Qi from every vessel of his body would quickly spread out and transform into the shape that he wanted.

The Essence Qi stopped struggling and became easier to control.

As long as his mind could imagine and his spirit could take control. The Essence Qi would be able to instantly condense and transform into many marvelous desired forms, no matter if they were birds, trees, nunchakus or other weapons, etc... A bird which was created by the profound Qi could deliberately fly in the sky; plants and trees could be vivacious; arms could be incredibly powerful and firm. The Earth Realm was a process of clearly understanding the energy inside the body. In the beginning, the profound Qi was only one of many kinds of energy in his body. At

this moment, the Essence Qi had become the extension of his body, a part of his body, the core of the power, and also the holy spirit on which he could rely.

"Is it still far ahead?" Shi Yan sent the message while his body was quickly gliding above the sand. He suddenly stalled, took out some Refine Pills and swallowed them all. Afterward, he continued moving forward but with a slower speed while waiting for the pills' therapeutic effects to spread out all over his body.

In the Chasm Battlefield, Refine Pills were the simplest and the most efficient way to restore the Essence Qi. Anyway, the Sky and Earth spiritual auras here were extremely diluted; it should take ten times longer to recover the Essence Qi here than in other areas. As soon as the Earth Flame realized Shi Yan's speed decreasing, it also slowed down, transmitting its happiness and eagerness.

"Is it very fast?" Shi Yan stopped and released his Soul Consciousness to search around carefully.

His Soul Consciousness was like rippling waves, but they were hindered by this strange space. They could not move as comfortably as they were outside. The spreading speed of his Soul Consciousness was also slower several times, and its coverage was also smaller dozens of times.

"Oh? There are traces of living beings!" Suddenly, ambiguous living vibrations appeared from the remote area where his soul Consciousness was exploring. These fluctuations evidently belonged to Earth Realm warriors. Shi Yan's spirit was convulsive. His instinct told him that it was probably Yang Mu's group. Or even if it wasn't Yang Mu, as long as they are adventurers, he still could exchange information, asking them where he was and how to get out of here.

It was unknown how long and how far he had been following the Earth Flame in this area. He had doubts about this place. He was lonely for so long. He wanted to talk to someone.

"You come back here first. Slow down a little bit. I will go over there to see if there are some people." Shi Yan sent a message. The Earth Flame twisted involuntarily, and slowly got into the Blood Vein Ring afterward. The Earth Flame was the Heaven Flame, which was incredibly powerful, but it hasn't ascended yet. Even if it finished its evolution, there were still many other existences that could dominate it. Otherwise, the Ice Cold Flame shouldn't have been imprisoned many times.

There were many miraculously precious treasures in this world which prevented the Heaven Flames from fleeing away. For example, he could take advantage of the Soul Gathering Pearl to make the soul of that Demon Master separate from his body. There were also some other miraculous treasures which could capture and confine the Heaven Flames. The Earth Flame was safe when staying inside the Blood Vein Ring.

After the Earth Flame had got into the Blood Vein ring, Shi Yan retrieved his Soul Consciousness. He then followed the direction his Soul Consciousness had guided him and kept moving toward the target.

After half an hour, Shi Yan quickly moved behind a dune all of a sudden. He extruded his head out of the dune while peeping and looking toward some people in the distance. They were approaching where he was now.

Shi Yan could easily see people coming from behind the dune. However, as the distance was far and he only extruded his head out, it was hard to see things. Shi Yan was not hasty and still kept waiting.

Finally, he recognized a beautiful figure in a firing-red armor among those people. Although he couldn't see her appearance, he was confident that that prominent appealing body belonged to He Qing Man.

Realizing it was He Qing Man, Shi Yan fixed his eyes on the other

people behind her. He then recognized Xie Kui according to his old memory.

After observing for a long time as well as releasing his Soul Consciousness once again, he could identify Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing. Those were the outstanding warriors on the combat list. They were not accompanying Xie Kui's group.

His Soul Consciousness was like the Heaven eyes, which helped him gradually realize the real competences of that group. Shi Yan slowly retracted his head, activated the Finger Spear to bury himself under the dune. He slowed down his breaths and started to hide his auras.

There were total eleven Earth Realm warriors including Xie Kui and He Qing Man. No Third Sky of the Earth Realm warrior. I can kill them!

Chapter 234: Burst you off!

The sky above the immense desert was vivid red, and it was sweltering.

A line of eleven warriors were moving slowly in the burning desert. Xie Kui was leading, while He Qing Man lagged far behind him.

The warriors of the Evil Wonderland gathered around Xie Kui, ignoring He Qing Man. As they seemed to know who was going to be the future Master of the Evil Wonderland, they decided to follow Xie Kui after the dispute between Xie Kui and He Qing Man without making any attempts in mediating the conflict between the two.

He Qing Man with her appealing body fell behind alone. Her gorgeous face looked worried.

"Remember, in the fight with the Yangs this time, if He Qing Man continues not using her full capacity, you guys can detain her so that she won't be our burden." While leading with a cold and gloomy face, Xie Kui lowered his voice commanding the following warriors of the Evil Wonderland.

"Yes, sir!" They nodded and quietly peered at He Qing Man far behind with meaningful eyes.

He Qing Man's beautiful eyes had a dull look. She apparently knew that her fellows kept their watchful eyes on her, but she couldn't do anything. At this time, she regretted not leaving the Chasm Battlefield and returning to the Kyara Sea sooner. She did not want to be part of this anymore.

However, no one could find the way back. Going back alone without being sure about the direction was just dumb.

Although she was in a dead-end situation and she knew that Xie Kui and his fellows wouldn't be nice to her, she had no choice but

follow them.

A patrol of eleven warriors gradually approached a dune. Five warriors of the Evil Wonderland were following Xie Kui closely and considered Xie Kui's command their mission.

The other warriors who belonged to the Penglai Divine Land and the Heaven Lake Divine Land did not talk much, either. They silently followed Xie Kui, hoping that Xie Kui would help them find their other fellows and a way to get out of this devilish desert.

Boom Boom!

Suddenly, a loud explosion came up from the dune in front of them.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

A screeching tornado suddenly appeared and approached them quickly. Yellow sand engulfed the entire sky, while six massive whirls wholly covered this area. No one could see anything in this thick yellow sandstorm.

A warrior was pulled into the howling tornado and was twisted by the yellow sand. He couldn't even struggle.

"Who did that?" Xie Kui shouted. A small long snow-white sword instantly emerged from his wrist.

The hilt of this sword generated a dazzling gold halo. As soon as Xie Kui launched a slash, white light dots spread out from the dazzling gold halo, forming a beautiful curve, entering into the dune in front of him.

Bang!

Abruptly, a figure soared from the dune and dashed towards Xie Kui quickly, crossing through the gold halo.

"Shi Yan!" Xie Kui's face slightly changed. He suddenly burst out laughing coldly. "It's good that you're here! I was worried I could not find you! You turn yourself in all of a sudden. Ha ha. You do

court death!"

Right after finishing his words, Xie Kui slightly leaped up, retreated into the dune and disappeared, leaving no trace.

Next, another warrior was dragged up by the tornado that was formed by the Gravitational Field in the desert. The torque moment in this field didn't allow that warrior to move. He could only scream inside the tornado while the Essence Qi speed in his body was getting stagnant as well.

The howling wind arose. He Qing Man, who lagged far behind, also lunged towards Shi Yan like a strong wind.

There were full of complicated emotions in He Qing Man's eyes. However, she wasn't hesitant to launch the attacks toward Shi Yan. As soon as her appealing body leaped up, many sharp wind blades plunged out, creating strange screechy sounds in the air.

At the same time, Xie Kui extruded his head out of the dune where he was hiding. His snow-white sword discharged a dazzling yellow streak of light.

An earth dragon made of yellow sand suddenly flew out from the dune. Many yellow sand walls also emerged next to Shi Yan.

"Shi Yan, my Martial Spirit can control soils and sand. Killing you here is as easy as turning my hand over." Xie Kui smiled coldly. "You should have died sooner! Who are you to have Xin Yan's attention? Only I who is the future master of the Evil Wonderland deserve a beautiful lady like Xin Yan! You don't deserve her!"

Shi Yan was standing motionlessly with a cold face in the middle of the yellow sand. He looked cold-hearted.

He Qing Man's wind blades darted towards Shi Yan, striking his face. However, he kept standing motionlessly.

After all of the wind blades had pierced through Shi Yan's body, He Qing Man realized that they had shot his shadow only.

Xie Kui's eyes shrank with fear. He recognized that his yellow sand Earth Dragon, together with those walls, had made Shi Yan's shadow its target. The real Shi Yan had already stayed away to avoid the attack.

"I wanted to fight with Xie Kui only, right in this dune area. You should not be involved."

After Shi Yan raised his eyebrows and flickered his consciousness, an invisible Gravitational Field swept over from his right and instantly detained He Qing Man's sexy body.

At the same time, another Gravitational Field silently approached Xie Kui and also tightly tied him up abruptly, giving him no time to make precautions.

"Ah!"

Activating the Electric Shift, Shi Yan rocketed to Xie Kui as fast as the lightning.

"As long as my legs still touch the ground, this thing of yours doesn't affect me." Xie Kui frigidly laughed while his body went back into the dune again in a blink, escaping the confinement of the Gravitational Field.

Xie Kui had two kinds of Martial Arts, the Wood class and the Earth class. As long as his foot remained on the ground, he could comfortably hide underground. It was not easy to defeat him except the case his opponent was capable of killing him with only one strike.

Although Xie Kui had already disappeared into the sand, his voice still came up from underneath. "Shi Yan, I will cut your head off! I will keep it until I see Xin Yan again. I will take your head and give it to her. Does it sound interesting?"

Shi Yan was standing on the dune with an emotionless face while quietly accumulating his negative energy.

Right after the three big demon illusions condensed by the

negative energy appeared, they immediately dashed towards the warriors who had been held up by the tornados.

Shi Yan stood still on the spot. His eyes closed as he seemed to wait for something.

Out of Shi Yan's expectation, Xie Kui didn't care to save his fellows who had been in the confinement of the Gravitational Field. Instead, he stayed hidden inside the dune and quickly moved to Shi Yan's feet discreetly.

A cruel smile beamed out from the corner of his mouth. A harsh light flashed up and instantly disappeared into his eyes.

No matter how Xie Kui could imagine, he would never believe that Shi Yan had successfully formed the Sea of Consciousness. In a particular range, no living movements could escape the vision of his Soul Consciousness.

Xie Kui kept himself completely hidden inside the dune without exposing any part of his body. It wasn't easy for Shi Yan to catch and kill him although Shi Yan could detect his location. However, if Xie Kui wanted to attack Shi Yan, he had to expose himself, and it was a good chance for Shi Yan.

Boom Boom Boom!

Grumbling noise reverberated right under Shi Yan's feet. A bunch of earth clubs emerged from underneath the sand layer. Shi Yan's body kept swaying and swinging in the middle of those earth clubs and then suddenly cast out toward one direction.

Inside the dune, Xie Kui quickly moved to the place where Shi Yan would land and wait patiently. As soon as Shi Yan descended, he would instantly burst through the sand and launch one single powerful strike to kill him.

While Shi Yan was still in the air, his hands were making many hand seals. One after another, Life Seals and Death Seals had already stacked over each other even before his feet touched the

ground.

The Death and Life Seal pounded straight down on the ground.

Boom!

A terrified explosion echoed from the place where Shi Yan was going to land. When the blast resounded, a figure was knocked straight out from inside the dune. The snow-white sword was also struck away from his hand by the mighty Death and Life Seal.

After Shi Yan had landed, he stretched out his hands grabbing the hilt of Xie Kui's sword and then activated the Electric Shift dashing towards Xie Kui like an electrical current.

Blood trickled down the corners of Xie Kui's mouth. His body was injured received the Death and Life Seal's powerful impact. If there wasn't the protection of the earth armor, his body should have been entirely crushed into ashes by the Life and Death Seal.

Seeing Shi Yan approaching as fast as the lightning, Xie Kui hurriedly used his old trick going back inside the dune.

As soon as one of his feet touched the ground, Shi Yan quickly glided over and lifted his left foot stepping on Xie Kui's right foot. Xie Kui felt extremely painful on his right foot right before he was about to disappear underneath the sand.

Although he still tried to hide in the sand, he had realized that a long sword had nailed his other foot.

"Run? You still want to run?" Shi Yan's eyes looked cruel, his face brutal. He was staring at Xie Kui while laughing coldly.

"You! You!" Xie Kui's face changed dramatically. Shi Yan was still stepping on his left foot. The sword pierced through Shi Yan's left foot first and then through Xie Kui's right foot. Their left and right feet both stuck together.

To prevent Xie Kui from hiding in the sand, Shi Yan had daringly speared the sword through his right foot.

Boom Boom!

As their feet had been pierced through altogether, Xie Kui and Shi Yan were now in the face-to-face position. Powers inside their bodies furiously rose. Their martial techniques were ready to be launched. A drastic fight was about to happen.

With one foot tightly nailed down and the other one heavily stepped on by Shi Yan's foot, Xie Kui had no way to make any moves.

At the same time, Shi Yan's Petrification Martial Spirit was activated. Shi Yan's entire body became as hard as iron. The Second Sky of Rampage appeared once again. The quantity of energy in his body doubled in just a blink.

Boom.

Hand Seals violently exploded between Shi Yan and Xie Kui. Faint yellow lights emitted around Xie Kui's body while his two hands formed an invisible Seal which created miraculous rippling waves outside his chest to protect himself from Shi Yan's attack.

"Cut my head off?" Shi Yan wore a fierce look while freely releasing the tremendous power of the Second Sky of Rampage. Life Seals and Death Seals were continually striking Xie Kui's chest and destroying all of Xie Kui's opposing energy.

Shi Yan's Petrification Martial Spirit, his Extreme Refining Body, and his body's sturdiness were things Xie Kui could never acquire.

In the Second Sky of Rampage, the energy that Shi Yan could gather was far more than what Xie Kui had. In a close combat like this, Xie Kui was the only one who would be crushed and destroyed as he had no remaining energy to defend.

"Burst!" Shi Yan shouted crazily. The Life Seals and Death Seals piled up, striking Xie Kui's head altogether.

Xie Kui's head exploded after this strike. Skull and blood scattered everywhere. He died immediately.

Chapter 235: Times have changed!

When Xie Kui's head exploded, the three devil phantoms had swallowed a group of warriors entangled inside those tornados.

After gathering the negative feelings, the three devil phantoms inside the Gravitational Field could submerge those Earth Realm warriors in craziness after only one strike and then easily took their lives.

In Kyraa Sea, these Earth Realm warriors weren't exceptional. They didn't have the Martial Spirits, any secret weapons, nor peculiar defensive forces to protect their bodies. In the confinement of the Gravitational Field, they were just like a herd of sheep waiting to be killed.

Xie Kui's soft, headless body fell. Essence Qi of his entire body flowed out and went into Shi Yan's meridians.

Swoosh.

While one of his hands grabbed the long snow-white sword and drew it out from his foot, Shi Yan looked at Xie Kui's headless body and cruelly said with a sarcastic tone, "You dared to do close combat with me. You deserve to have a terrible death like this!"

With the Petrification Martial Spirit and the Immortal Martial Spirit continually being practiced and tempered, the sturdiness of Shi Yan's body was not something that other warriors could ever imagine. None of the same level warriors could defeat Shi Yan in close combat.

With the effect of the Immortal Martial Spirit, his pierced foot started to recover little by little.

Shi Yan urged the Electric Shift again. He went into the tornados, standing inside them. His Mystery Martial Spirit absorbed all the Essence Qi flowing out from the dead warriors' corpses.

The Gravitational Field confining He Qing Man shrank all of

sudden. As the yellow sand had blocked her vision, she didn't know what had happened. As soon as she saw Shi Yan, she instantly launched another attack.

"Enough!" Shi Yan frowned and shouted. "Everyone's dead. You still want to fight?"

"Everyone's dead?" He Qing Man's beautiful eyes were confused. "Where's my brother? You aren't capable of defeating him. His Realm's higher than yours; he can also easily hide in the sand. You are not his opponent."

"Are you talking about Xie Kui?" Shi Yan pointed at the headless body. "He's over there. Except for you and me, there is no one alive here."

He Qing Man was frightened. Her prominent body quickly flew to Xie Kui's body.

"Ah!" He Qing Man screamed with fear.

She stood beside Xie Kui's corpse, covering her mouth, her beautiful eyes full of sadness. She said in a low tone. "He's dead. Everyone's dead. The future hope of the Evil Wonderland, the pride of being the future master of the next generation has gone just like this..."

He Qing Man was stunned as if she was facing a fatal attack. She mumbled to herself with a shocked face.

Shi Yan wasn't in a hurry to leave yet. Instead, he stood motionlessly, releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense the living movements around.

Shi Yan didn't know that Xie Kui and He Qing Man had separated from Cao Zhi Lan before she got here. He had thought that Cao Zhi Lan's fellows were nearby. In this fight, Shi Yan had killed everyone except He Qing Man, but he had also consumed a lot of his power. Although he was still in the Second Sky of Rampage Realm, he would quickly exhaust when the counter-attack spread

out.

If Cao Zhi Lan was nearby, he had to immediately retreat as he couldn't continue fighting with his current status.

He closed his eyes, released his soul consciousness and silently sensed around for a while. After being sure that there were no living signals, he felt assured and slowly walked to He Qing Man. "Where are other people?"

"Who?" He Qing Man lifted her head up, bewilderedly looked at Shi Yan with a dark countenance.

"Where are Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe?" Shi Yan asked again.

"I don't know." He Qing Man shook her head. "We were pushed out from that Ancient Formation and separated. You're the first one we met since then."

Shi Yan contemplated for a while before speaking calmly, "Okay, I got it. See you next time."

"Hey! Where are you going?" He Qing Man shouted.

"I don't know." Shi Yan stopped for a while, looking at her. "Our standpoints are opposite. You better return to the Kyara Sea. Staying alone in the Chasm Battlefield is very dangerous."

"You've killed my brother; I have to take revenge for him." He Qing Man sighed. "You've killed him. You can also take my life. Shi Yan, I couldn't imagine how come your power could have improved that much in such a short time. I remember when you were on the Black Rock Island, your cultivation base was only the Second Sky of Disaster Realm. If Yang Mu didn't save you that time, maybe you...."

Shi Yan contemplated without saying a word.

"All of them are dead. I'm the only one who survived. Tell me, what others would say when they see me later?" He Qing Man revealed a sad smile.

Shi Yan shook his head and released a sigh. "You shouldn't have gone to the Chasm Battlefield."

"I did not want to go there either." He Qing Man gently shook her head and reluctantly said, "It was my Master's command. If I didn't go, it meant I disobeyed the order. Not only would I have trouble, but the He family would also be involved."

"Hmm, you stand in between, it isn't easy." Shi Yan's face was astounded. "Maybe Yan Mu's fellows are not here. Perhaps I am alone in this place. Your group of pursuers might be on the way to come here. Currently, no one knows the exit of this immense desert or where to search. Hmm, still, we should separate soon. If others find you here with me at the same place, I am afraid it is not good for you."

"Even if they don't see you and me at the same location, it is still uncomfortable to face them." He Qing Man smiled miserably. "When we were outside the palace, Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe already recognized the fake fight between Yang Xue and me. If my brother and my fellows were still alive, they would have said nothing. But now I am alone; I don't know how those guys will treat me."

Shi Yan knitted his brows in silence.

He suddenly said after a while, "Anyway, because you and them are allies, they may provoke you, but they will not kill you. Don't worry, having regard for Yang Xue and Xin Yan, I will not harm you if I see you next time. I need to go now. Take care of yourself." After speaking, Shi Yan turned around and quickly left without leaving Ha Qing Man a chance to talk more.

After Shi Yan had absorbed all of the energy from eleven warriors including Xie Kui, his acupuncture points currently started to refine the energy, and powerful negative feelings also started spreading out. Perhaps he would sink into insanity and lose his consciousness again.

Once losing his consciousness, he only had two options, either finding women to give vent, or binding himself and suffering the pain alone.

The relationship among He Qing Man, Yang Xue, and Xia Xin Yan was good. Because of Yang Xue, He Qing Man had been mistrusted. She had already sacrificed a lot. Shi Yan couldn't consider her the target to whom he would give vent.

Moreover, as He Qing Man belonged to the Evil Wonderland, he could not trust her completely. He couldn't let himself be unconscious next to that lady. Very dangerous.

Leaving He Qing Man, Shi Yan quickly moved towards the hottest direction in the desert as fast as lightning.

While moving forward in the desert, he could feel the pain on his foot fading away, and the wound was healing little by little.

Inside his acupuncture points, the Essence Qi of Xie Kui's fellows was refining rapidly; different kinds of negative feelings started spreading out. Shi Yan was trying to restrain himself.

It was unknown whether because he was entering the Earth Realm or because his nerves were getting stronger that the negative feelings spreading out from his acupuncture points still didn't drive him crazy yet. It was still bearable.

Except for the heavy breathing, the reddened face, and a little pain in his head, the negative feelings did not pull him into the endlessly deep abyss or make him unconscious this time.

A long time afterward.

The familiar peculiar energy spread out from his acupuncture points. Seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his entire body released the energy that refreshed his mind altogether. With this energy moving inside the body, he felt comfortably warm as if he was soaking in a hot spring.

This time, the Petrification Martial Spirit and the Immortal

Martial Spirit didn't take this strange energy. Instead, all of it torrentially poured into his heart.

The Star Martial Spirit!

Shi Yan's pupils shrank. He couldn't help but curse and immediately used his mind to change the direction of the strange energy.

Regretfully, before he could do something, his heart had already released a powerful attraction force to absorb the strange energy completely.

He halted.

Gritting his teeth, Shi Yan sensed his body for a while silently. He then discovered that even though more and more star dots appeared in his heart, there wasn't any transformation occurring. The Star Martial Spirit in his heart couldn't gather the Star power, and he didn't know how to urge the Star Martial Spirit, either. Pouring the strange, mysterious into his heart was such a waste.

Anyway, before he could obtain the technique to control the Star Martial Spirit of the Three Gods Sect, it was helpless in increasing his power.

Whoosh.

After seeing no one beside Shi Yan, the Earth Flame flew out from the Blood Vein Ring again without Shi Yan's command.

Turning into a dazzling flame, the Earth Flame started to lead the way again, eagerly flying in the hottest direction in this desert.

Shi Yan followed it reluctantly.

He had neither a target nor direction to seek in this desert. Therefore, following the Earth Flame was not a bad choice, anyway. The Earth Flame might lead to an unknown exit. Perhaps the area that excited the Earth Flame could have something which also surprised him.

With this thought in his mind, Shi Yan followed the Earth Flame in silence although he didn't know what was awaiting him.

Time passed quickly.

He didn't know how long he had been following the Earth Flame in this desert, but he had already taken the Refine Pills three times since his Essence Qi had run out. He had used all of his Essence Qi moving in this desert, and he also had to replenish it three times. Shi Yan guessed he could be going around in this desert for more than half a month.

This strange place had neither Sun, Moon, Stars, nor the darkness; only the glowing red sky.

After a long journey, he had shortened the distance between him and the hottest point. The Earth Flame was getting more excited; Shi Yan could even feel its soul shivering in thrill.

However, Shi Yan was getting weaker.

The closer he got to the hottest point, the more uncomfortable he could feel. Under the terrifying heat, even though the Heaven Flames had tempered his body, he still had to use more of his Essence Qi to resist it.

Having kept running for quite a while, when he nearly couldn't endure it anymore. The Earth Flame joyfully shouted eventually. Shi Yan finally saw the place for which the Earth Flame had been longing for.

Chapter 236: Sun Essence

A large lozenge meteorite was plunged into the desert generating beautiful rays of light. The whole object was glowing red, emitting terrifying Sun burning flames. The sunlight was too robust and dazzling that people could hardly open their eyes.

The meteorite was like a small mountain. A big part of it was buried deep inside the dune, leaving only one-third exposed.

Blinding red light was discharging from the meteorite, and its scorching firepower engulfed the entire area, which evaporated water inside living bodies rapidly.

If an ordinary person came here, he would be burnt and quickly become a desiccated corpse in about one hour's time.

Although Shi Yan had gone through the annealing process by the Earth Flame many times, he still could feel the severe pressure which made him hardly breathe facing this horrible heating power of the meteorite.

There was a mysterious soul fluctuation coming out from the meteorite. While watching the meteorite from a distance, Shi Yan immediately felt his Sea of Consciousness was agitated nonstop. As he was affected by the strange power from the meteorite, he was nearly unable to control himself, heading into that meteorite.

Shi Yan believed that once he came closer to the meteorite, as soon as his body touched the burning fires around the meteorite, he would immediately turn into ashes.

Not to mention the Earth Realm warriors, even the body of a God Realm expert was not sure to remain intact under that meteorite's burning fires.

Shi Yan did not dare to take risks as he just silently watched the huge meteorite from a distance.

The Thousand Year Earth Flame had soon flown out. When he

was still startled, the Earth Flame had headed towards the meteorite and disappeared into it.

Shi Yan was surprised. When he tried to contact with the Earth Flame, he realized that once he released his Soul Consciousness, the meteorite instantly emitted a terrifying power that stirred up his Sea of Consciousness, forcing him to retreat.

"How come?" The Ice Cold Flame's message reached him from the Blood Vein Ring. It had been a long time since the Ice Cold Flame had communicated with him. As soon as it appeared, it released waves of cold energy.

The icy power quickly rose in Shi Yan's body, spreading out to every corner. Under the effect of the icy power, Shi Yan's emotion and reckless body were soon stabilized. "Oh? You can use your powers?"

"Yeah, this devilish ring knows you are in trouble, so it has loosened its restraint a little bit." The Ice Cold Flame replied and kept silent again. It seemed the flame was releasing its spiritual power to survey the area.

Not long after that, the Ice Cold Flame sent him a surprising feeling. "The Sun Essence."

"What?" Shi Yan was astonished. "What did you say?"

"That red meteorite is the Sun Essence from the core of the Sun. It is the precious Heat of the universe", The Ice Cold Flame explained. "The Sun Essence can only be found in the core of the Sun. It is the core firepower of the Sun. For people who cultivate the special flaming techniques, if they have the Sun Essence, their power will increase immensely."

"Is it useful for the Thousand Year Earth Flame?"

"Not only useful! This Sun Essence is enough for it to have a quick breakthrough. Its soul would complete quickly. Moreover, it could have strong firepower which is not less than mine. Once the

Earth Flame absorbs the Sun Flame in the Sun Essence and fuses with its burning fires, its living form will immediately change."

Shi Yan was panicked.

"What? Anything else?"

The Ice Cold Flame hesitated a bit before continuing. "There seems to be something hidden inside the Sun Essence. That item has an extreme energy fluctuation, as strong as the powerful soul attack of a God Realm expert."

"Something inside?" Shi Yan got surprised with his eyes and mouth wide opened. "The Sun Essence is obviously from the Sun in the sky. How come there is something inside? Would it come from the Sun?"

"It is not always from the Sun." The Ice Cold Flame contemplated for a while. "According to legend, warriors who reach the True God Realm can be considered Gods. They have the superpower that can destroy the earth. Their bodies can break all restraints in the world. They can fly to the outer space. It means the True God Realm warriors can go to the Sun..."

"Go to the Sun?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened. "According to you, although the thing inside the Sun Essence is not from the Sun, it is something from the True God Realm warriors?"

"Yes, that's what I meant."

Shi Yan didn't say anything else.

From a hundred meters far away, staring at that Sun Essence releasing dazzling burning fires and feeling his eyes hurt, Shi Yan slowly closed his eyes and mumbled to himself. "Impossible to come closer..."

Although the Earth Flame had tempered his body and there was a lot of burning energy of the Earth Flame inside his body, he still hardly endured the scorching Sun Flame surrounding the Sun Essence.

From a hundred meters away, he could feel his body was burning already. If he reached the Sun Essence, perhaps he would be burnt to ashes.

"Do you want to come closer?" The Ice Cold Flame seemed to know his intention. "With your sole ability, you are unable to come closer. However, with my help, it is still possible..."

"What are you waiting for then?" Shi Yan shouted. Right after that, he could immediately feel the icy freezing power. Under the icy power, his body got frozen in just a blink.

A solid ice layer spread out his entire body. It was like an ice armor covering him.

Under the ice shield's protection, Shi Yan realized that the heat from the Sun Essence had disappeared. He didn't have the feeling that his body was burning anymore.

Thump Thump Thump.

With the ice armor, Shi Yan was more daring, taking step by step towards the Sun Essence. However, he still didn't dare to go too fast.

Fifty meters...

Thirty meters...

Twenty meters...

Ten meters, Shi Yan halted.

From ten meters away, a bunch of scorching Sun Flames flew around the Sun Essence but didn't scatter.

The Sun Essence was very close to him now. If he moved a little more, he could reach it; however, he didn't know what was going to happen.

"You should not come closer. That is enough." The Ice Cold Flame warned him. "Close your eyes as well. You will be blind if you keep staring at it for a long time."

Shi Yan stammered in fear and hurried to close his eyes. From the distance of ten meters, he wanted to release his Soul Consciousness to communicate with the Earth Flame again.

"If you don't want to be attacked by the Sun Essence, you better not release your Soul Consciousness. Once your Soul Consciousness is released, the thing hiding inside will immediately realize and attack it. I've also recognized that the energy discharged from the Sun Essence can damage your soul much more terribly than I can. In other words, you are not able to resist it."

Shi Yan immediately stopped releasing his Soul Consciousness being warned by the Ice Cold Flame.

"What should we do now?"

"We can do nothing except for waiting for the Earth Flame. Only the Earth Flame is not affected by the Sun Essence. The Earth Flame's living form is unique. Since it dares to go closer, it is probably not afraid of the thing inside. Hmm, wait for the Earth Flame to come back or until it proactively contacts you. Until then, don't do anything."

As Shi Yan could do nothing, he closed his eyes, standing motionlessly ten meters away from the Sun Essence and waiting. He did not dare to release his soul consciousness either, only used his body to feel the scorching Sun power from the Sun Essence.

"Oh?" Many streams of burning Sun power from inside the Sun Essence were rolling towards Shi Yan. They seemed to be under the control of something, they quietly went into Shi Yan's chest and poured into Shi Yan's heart.

Having received the Sun power, his heart suddenly projected a red light. The starlights in his heart started to twinkle little by little and seemed to begin moving around his heart as if it was some miraculous unpredictable formation. It was utterly out of Shi Yan's expectation.

"This.... What is this?" The Ice Cold Flame was astonished. The icy power inside The Blood Vein Ring became weakened.

Many sun powers went into Shi Yan's chest and quickly poured into Shi Yan's heart, which might result in some transformation in his heart. The burning flame power was getting more intense while his heart was able to receive more and more energy, becoming incredibly dazzling.

Dazzling sunlight shot out from Shi Yan's heart. Shi Yan instantly became a light generator as his entire body generated many powerful beams of light

"What's going on?" The Ice Cold Flame seem not understand anything. It hurriedly communicated with Shi Yan. "Why... Why can your heart absorb sunlight? The Star Martial Spirit! I got it! The sun is also a star. The sun power is also considered the power of stars. Absolutely."

While the sun power kept rolling into his heart, Shi Yan felt as if he was soaking in a boiling oil pot. This kind of pain was indescribable.

That was why he couldn't even communicate with the Ice Cold Flame. He could only passively suffer the pain, letting the sun power flow into his heart.

A bunch of mysterious whirls appeared on his chest at this moment. The Mysterious Yin Secret Art belonged to the Three Gods Sect started to activate.

The existence of these three whirls attracted more and more sun energy. It kept pouring into his heart with the speed that was getting crazily faster.

Boom!

His body suddenly burst into flame. The scorching Sun Flame started to burn his body from inside.

The Ice Cold Flame hardly contacted Shi Yan. It knew that if it let

the sun energy burn Shi Yan to ashes, Shi Yan's soul would never be liberated. It would obviously vanish in the end.

If Shi Yan died, the Blood Vein Ring would have no master anymore. Thus, it would be confined forever which was not the result that the Ice Cold Flame wanted to see.

The heavenly icy power was getting denser and suddenly spread out from the Blood Vein Ring.

The Ice Cold Flame quickly released its power. It didn't regret using the billion-year-trained icy power to help Shi Yan resist the Sun Flame inside his body. Thanks to a right amount of the icy power that had absorbed into Shi Yan's body, the Sun Flames were immediately neutralized.

One of Shi Yan's eyes shot out the burning fires while the other projected the icy power. His entire body had entered an extraordinary state.

Chapter 237: An extraordinary treasure

The Sun Essence in the dune continuously shot out stronger sun energy. Some external force seemed to be drawing the chaotic Sun Flame towards a place.

Ten meters away from the Sun Essence stood a muscular body covered in furious flames as he was enduring the most horrible fight between the flaming power and the icy power.

At this moment, the burning energy of the Sun Flame and the icy energy of the Ice Cold Flame were battling inside his body, leading his body into the fire and ice twofold situation. His body shifted from being freezing to uncomfortable burning just in a second.

His Sea of Consciousness also became chaotic. A lot of negative feelings from his acupuncture points spread out uncontrollably.

Shi Yan did not know what was going on. He could only passively suffer everything.

The struggle between the Sun Flame and the Ice Cold Flame was still taking place inside his body. While these two powers continued attacking each other, his heart was still absorbing the sun powers from the Sun Essence.

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness was fuzzy. His consciousness became hazy and gradually Shi Yan got lost, not knowing who he was.

Meanwhile, the negative emotions also started to diffuse in his body. Different kinds of negative emotions became rebellious, stirring up in his head, making him almost lose himself.

Under the tier of the red cloud.

A majestic figure covered in fires was facing the sky and screeching with the red eyes as if he wanted to destroy the

universe.

Horrible scream hovered around the desert and could be heard from more than ten miles away.

"Who's screaming?"

In the desert, a line of warriors was strolling aimlessly. They all looked exhausted.

A girl with an elegant body was leading this group. Her eyebrows suddenly slammed together while she quickly turned around and looked toward the general direction of the scream. After a while, she shouted out loud, "Gu xiao-mei, I think the guy who's screaming is your enemy." Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful face was bizarre.

This group consisted Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing. In the beginning, they had separated, but they had found each other again during the long time going around in this desert.

After having seen each other again, they voluntarily gathered and stayed together in this desert to search for the Yang family's warriors. However, no matter how hard they had sought or how many times Cao Zhi Lan had used her Spirit God Martial Spirit, they were still like the blind walking through this desert. It seemed impossible to find a way out.

Currently, even Cao Zhi Lan was somewhat confused.

While they were all exhausted and didn't know what to do, they suddenly heard a terrifying scream. Cao Zhi Lan's sharp sensing power could immediately identify the person from that cry. They instantly became excited again.

"Hahaha, we finally identified the target."

Gu Ling Lung urged, "What are we waiting for then? We should kill him right away."

Pan Zhe smiled, nodded then said, "We've been walking for a long

time. We've been in this desert for almost half a year. Hmm, the sooner we kill the Yangs, the sooner we can get out of here."

"Get out of here soon?" Cao Zhi Lan laughed and glanced at Pan Zhe. "I don't know what miraculous solution you have to get us out of here."

"I think that guy is the key. He should be the first one who came here; he probably knows the way out." Pan Zhe scratched his head, embarrassedly said with a faint smile. "If it doesn't work, we still have Miss Cao here, right? I believe that with Miss Cao's Spirit God Martial Spirit, we will certainly find out the way to get out of this desert sooner or later."

"I don't think so," Cao Zhi Lan shook her head, her face serious. "Shi Yan's direction leads to a scorching area. I don't think everyone can adapt to that hot temperature. If I want to go there, I have to use my secret treasure. You yourselves should carefully consider the next step."

Everyone's face changed immediately.

After a short pause, Gu Ling Lung and other people slightly nodded their heads and then turned around to remind their fellows to be careful and not to freely move forward to avoid being killed by the burning fires.

After reassigning their fellows, Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, Qu Yan Qing caught up with Cao Zhi Lan and quickly moved towards Shi Yan's general direction.

After a while, Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, Qu Yan Qing, and Pan Zhe appeared at the distance of five hundred meters away from the Sun Essence. From five hundred meters away, because of the tremendous dazzling sunlight of the Sun Essence, the four of them could neither see Shi Yan nor know what was going on over there.

The other warriors did not dare to follow them anymore.

Under the scorching power of the sun, even some Third Sky of

Earth Realm warriors could not stand the heat and stopped far away.

The reason Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, Qu Yan Qing, and Pan Zhe dared to come close was that they were the outstanding future Masters of the Endless Sea. Not only had they had cultivated the special martial techniques but they also had many secret treasures. Thanks to those secret treasures and the magical martial spirits, they were able to stand the heat at the distance of five hundred meters from the Sun Essence.

However, even though they had brought some weapons, they could only watch from a distance because their bodies had not been tempered by the Heaven Flames. Shi Yan, on the contrary, could stand in the distance of one hundred meters from the Sun Essence, and he wasn't worried to be burnt by the Sun Refined Flame even without the support of the Ice Cold Flame's icy power.

"I cannot open my eyes!" Gu Ling Long screamed out loud in fright. "What is that place after all? It's like a small dazzling sun. I can't see anything. I don't dare to look, either."

"Don't open your eyes." Cao Zhi Lan couldn't help but shout. "This, this can only be the Sun Essence, the Sun Essence in the core of the sun. Naked eyes will be blind if looking at that sunlight."

"The Sun Essence!" Pan Zhe panicked. "If the Three Gods Sect's people come here, will they be crazily excited to see the Sun Essence?"

"Regretfully, the Three Gods Sect is busy fighting with the Dark Dwellers right now. They didn't join us to fight with the Yang family this time. Hmm, it's their mistake. If the Three Gods Sect's warriors came here with their Sun Martial Spirits, and they found the Sun Essence here, their Flaming Sun Martial Spirits would have reached the terrifying level." Qu Yan Qing slowly closed her eyes. She couldn't stand the heat anymore.

Cao Zhi Lan did not utter a word. She just silently released her

Spirit God Martial Spirit in an attempt to survey the situation over there.

However, as soon as she released her Spirit God Martial Spirit, she immediately realized that the Sun Essence launched a strong flow of soul energy, forming a great soul attack on Cao Zhi Lan's Spirit God Martial Spirit. Then, it penetrated into her head.

"Ptui." Cao Zhi Lan could help but spit a mouthful blood. Her beautiful body strenuously moved backward a few steps. She shouted with her red face, "Do not use any mental power to sense. Something strange is inside the Sun Essence."

"Ptui."

"Ptui."

Pan Zhe and Gu Ling Long also spat out mouthful blood, staggeringly stepped backward, their face grimaced.

Qu Yan Qing was panicked, retreating her power timely.

Just one second late, Pan Zhe and Gu Ling Long already got severely injured. As soon as they had released her mental power, the strange thing inside the Sun Essence had instantly attacked them.

"Be careful! Do not release any of your mental powers at all cost. Do not continuously open your eyes. Only peep at it and immediately close your eyes to avoid being dazzled by the sunlight!" Cao Zhi Lan hastened to remind them.

"Not good!" Qu Yan Qing cried all of a sudden.

"What's happened?" Pan Zhe asked quickly.

"Shi... Shi Yan is coming!" Qu Yan Qing stepped backward with fear. "His body is full of burning flames as well as some strange icy power. What happened?"

"What?" Cao Zhi Lan was terrified. She couldn't help but open her eyes.

In their sight, the dazzling sunlight shone on a powerful and imposing figure who was quickly approaching them. That figure shot out two kinds of red fires and dark blue fires. The red burning fires were scalding while the dark blue burning fires were freezing. These two types of fires spread out all over the body. It looked like they were engaging in a drastic fight.

However, he looked comfortable with those two kinds of fires lingering on his body. He was dashing towards other people like lightning. His speed was getting faster and faster.

Nobody knew why a bunch of these Sun Flames seemed to be attracted to his body. Although he was lunging away from the center very quickly, these flames still closely followed him.

The earth-shaking burning power came up as if it had to burn the whole world into ashes. Until the moment that her eyes were painful, Cao Zhi Lan realized she could not endure anymore. She quickly turned around without hesitation, fleeing away at the highest speed.

"Retreat!"

Pan Zhe had been waiting for her to say something, but he realized Cao Zhi Lan had already disappeared in a blink.

His handsome face slightly changed. He did not dare to say anything else and staggeringly followed Cao Zhi Lan, trying to escape this place.

Qu Yan Qing and Gu Ling Long still wanted to stay and fight. However, after seeing Cao Zhi Lan who ranked at the top of the combat list running away, they felt unsafe and also quickly followed her and Pan Zhe.

Puff!

At the same time, a two-meter-long, half-meter-wide red sword like a burning flame suddenly flew out from the Sun Essence.

The surface of this giant glowing red sword was full of ancient

flame symbols on it. A single red eye opened on the blade. As soon as the sword flew out, the red eye quickly projected devilish red lights.

A malicious soul fluctuation instantly spread out from the red sword. This brutal energy fluctuation was like a deadly tornado wiping out all the living things as if it wanted to deprive all lives.

The silhouette of a muscular figure was crazily chasing after Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe. When the sword spread out the malicious soul fluctuations, Shi Yan halted, his eyes bewildered.

Then, it was unknown when the Blood Vein Ring on his finger had shot out the red light which matched the blood color of the light radiating from the sword. They were surprisingly alike!

Chapter 238: Absorp

In the middle of the desert, the soul fluctuation spread out everywhere from the giant sword, like surging waves massively rolling towards Pan Zhe and others.

The Sun Flames of the Sun Essence erupted fiercely as soon as the giant sword flew out.

A bunch of burning fires flew out from the Sun Essence. The color of the burning flames was the same with the red sky, making this scorching desert uncomfortably hotter.

Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, Qu Yan Qing were the outstanding talents of the new generation in the Endless Sea. They now looked extremely miserable, staying far away from the Sun Essence, wishing that they would have never come here.

At the farther place, the other warriors didn't dare to get closer to the Sun Essence. Instead, they stayed in the distance, watching the flames engulfing the entire sky, and the cruel spiritual vibration diffusing everywhere. They were scared of out their wits and didn't dare to take any further steps although they still wanted to know what was going on over there.

However, after a while, they couldn't help but watchfully walk to that area as they were so curious.

After only one hundred steps, they saw Cao Zhi Lan quickly approaching with a serious face.

"Run! NOW!" Cao Zhi Lan's face darkened. She shouted without explaining. She urgently passed these fellows and continued dashing forwards.

Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing lagged behind. When they saw other warriors, they also shouted, telling them to leave this place immediately. They didn't allow anyone to linger.

The warriors did not know what was happening. However,

seeing their leaders in such miserable situation, they hurriedly followed Pan Zhe's group, leaving this place as fast as they could without overthinking about what was happening.

Close to the Sun Essence, a bunch of fires flew out and covered the entire sky like a group of heavy fire clouds collapsing.

The giant red sword was hovering in the air, emitting devilish soul waves. The blinking red eye on the sword discharged a strange garnet light.

At this moment, the blinking red eye on the giant sword seemed to be staring at a direction.

Below the giant sword, Shi Yan's eyes were congested while his mind was not clear. He raised his head looking at the two-meter-long, half-a-meter-wide giant sword with a bewildered look.

The Blood Vein Ring on his finger bloomed a powerful blood red halo, which was precisely similar to the red halo on the giant sword's handle.

As soon as the blinding deadly light exploded and shot out from the Blood Vein Ring, the power of the Ice Cold Flame was confined.

The moment when the Blood Vein Ring emitted the dazzling bloody light, the giant sword hovering in the sky flew towards Shi Yan. It seemed to either discover a target of interest or be attracted by something.

Shi Yan was confused as he didn't appear to know what had happened. He instinctively lifted up the Bloody Vein Ring on his finger. A strange, beautiful, garnet light emitted from the Blood Vein Ring, covering the entire sky as if blood had dyed the sky with its vivid color.

At the same time, the negative feelings inside Shi Yan's body impetuously rolled into the Blood Vein Ring like surging tides. Receiving those negative emotions, the Blood Vein Ring suddenly spread out a powerful soul fluctuation.

The red Gigantic Sword turned into a sparkling light, flying straight to the Blood Vein Ring. Instantly, it disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring leaving no trace.

Shi Yan's unconscious mind suddenly became clear. Different negative feelings messing around in his Sea of Consciousness instantly disappeared. The Sun power from the Sun Essence continued boiling and rolling into his heart, making his heart sparkling as if there were thousands of stars twinkling at the same time. A ring of fire was bursting bright.

His body was in extreme pain as if the heated flames were burning him. The icy power of the Ice Cold Flame was like a cold-water stream comforting his body, easing off his pain a little bit.

In the middle of the desert, although Shi Yan was standing at the distance of more than one thousand meters from the Sun Essence, he still felt the sun power of the Sun Essence getting more powerful.

Turning his head around and looking at the Sun Essence from afar, Shi Yan could feel that after a short time of the transformation, the scorching sunlight of the Sun Essence from the core of the sun was also gradually dimming.

The sun power and the Sun Flames inside the Sun Essence were drained quickly as Shi Yan and the Earth Flame had consumed them a lot. Their strength had been depleted by more than half just after a short time.

The sunlight discharged from the meteorite was less dazzling.

Shi Yan knitted the brows as he didn't know what was happening.

However, he still vaguely remembered that some people were coming here, and he quickly moved towards them from the location of Sun Essence. He seemed to pursue someone.

Hesitated a little bit, he released his Soul Consciousness to see if

there were any strong living fluctuation.

One, two, three people...

Inside his Sea of Consciousness, he could sense more than ten warriors, who were only two miles away from him. They were running away from this place as fast as they could.

Shi Yan was surprised and startled a little bit. He didn't know why those people avoided him, nor did he have the intention of chasing them. After thinking for a while, he turned around and ran towards the Sun Essence.

"Why are we running away?" After a long while, Gu Ling Long halted, turning her head looking at the red sky behind, knitting her eyebrows. "It's only Shi Yan. Do we need to run?"

Cao Zhi Lan shook her head and said, "Shi Yan? We are running away not because of Shi Yan, but it is because of that giant sword. It's why we had to run."

"That giant sword ..." Gu Ling Long didn't seem to understand; her small face was a little odd. "The moment when that Gigantic Sword appeared, my divine swords transmitted a strong warning, urging me to leave. Is that Gigantic Sword dangerous?"

"It's hard to say how dangerous it is." Cao Zhi Lan said in a serious voice. "However, that Gigantic Sword can kill us all. That sword's devilish power alone can crush our souls completely."

Everyone was shocked with their eyes and mouths wide open.

"That dangerous?" Pan Zhe quietly clicked his tongue. "If so, that Gigantic Sword is a Sacred Grade Secret Treasure."

"At least, it is Sacred Grade!" Qu Yan Qing also nodded her head. "The devilish spirit vibration of that Gigantic Sword is frightening. From a far distance, I almost lost my thought of running away. If I did not have the secret treasure from my Master, I would have died there. The eye on the Gigantic Sword has a fascinating power indeed. It also has an evil life."

The faces of Pan Zhe's fellows slightly changed.

Qu Yan Qing's words made them remember the eye on the Gigantic Sword. That eye discharged blood red lights like a bunch of demons. It made people feel extremely dangerous, scared the future masters of the Endless Sea out of their wits, making them not dare to resist.

"What should we do now?" Gu Ling Long asked. "Shi Yan is certainly over there. We can't come closer to him. We don't know whom the Gigantic Sword belongs to. Do you think if we have anybody else in this place?"

"I will use my martial spirit to see if the burning fires are still there or not. When there is no more danger, we can go there. Hmm, Shi Yan cannot frighten us. If he still survives by that time, he is not worthy to be our opponent." Cao Zhi Lan assured her fellows.

Everyone nodded.

Many strange lights flared up in Shi Yan's eyes. He walked to the Sun Essence with a surprise.

"How come a Gigantic Sword appears inside this ring. It is surely a real object. How could the ring keep this evil thing?"

The Ice Cold Flame's message from the Blood Vein Ring came up. "I have taken a look at the structure of this ring. Logically, the place in this ring is not supposed to contain an object. How can it store this peculiar sword?"

"I think this sword's hilt has something related to my ring."

"Why do you say that?"

"I don't know the reason, I hazily supposed it. The Blood Vein Ring's and this sword's auras are very similar. Especially strange blood symbols on the sword are very similar to the ones on the ring. Maybe the ring and that sword have been created by the same person." Shi Yan soothed the Blood Vein Ring with a strange face.

He sent his soul into the Blood Vein Ring. He saw an open space inside the ring. The sword was silently hovering in this devilish blood red space without any auras.

The earth-shaking wicked soul fluctuation of the Gigantic Sword had disappeared, leaving no traces.

Relaxing his mind, Shi Yan tried to sense the energy fluctuation of this sword but got nothing. He couldn't find anything on the sword no matter how hard he worked to connect with it.

If he hadn't seen the strange power of this sword, he would have felt it was just an ordinary sword, and nothing could be miraculous.

It was hard to neither connect with the Gigantic Sword nor sense any soul fluctuation. This Gigantic Sword seemed to get stuck in the Blood Vein Ring. It had withdrawn all dazzling lights. It turned from a divine sword to an ordinary sword, losing its earth-shaking power.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

A strange hiss came up from the Sun Essence.

Shi Yan halted, observing the Sun Essence from ten meters away, feeling the sun power inside it.

The sun powers massively emitted out from the Sun Essence, absorbing into his body and then running to his heart.

It was unknown why and how his body seemed to gradually adapt to the scorching sun powers after that earth-shaking transformation.

When the sun powers poured into his body, his body no longer generated the Sun Flames or the fires that burned his body burn.

It seemed his body had been transformed to adapt to the Sun Flames and blend well with the Star Martial Spirit.

Chapter 239: Giant Ancient Stone City

Just like that, Shi Yan stood not far from the Sun Refined Spirit. He could feel the massive Sun Refined Flames of the Sun Refined Spirit continually pouring into his heart.

There was the Star Martial Spirit of the Star God from The Three Gods Sect inside his heart.

At first, the Star Martial Spirit could only absorb the star power, not the sunlight. However, when facing the Sun Refined Spirit this time, as soon as the sun power went into his body, the Star Martial Spirit had developed its effects, also absorbing the sun power.

What was the reason?

Shi Yan knew it was not as simple as the Ice Cold Flame had explained. It was not because that the sun was also a star itself so it could just absorb the sun power that way.

If this were true, the Three Gods Sect would not separate the Sun Martial Spirit and the Star Martial Spirit. The Sun Martial Spirit and the Star Martial Spirit should have its differences, could not be identical. If it so, how could the Star Martial Spirit absorb the sun power?

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows; many thoughts flared up in his mind. He seemed to understand something.

Peculiar forces started spreading out from his meridians.

When lightning zoomed over him, Shi Yan suddenly understood the situation.

During this time, his heart was absorbing a lot of the mysterious energy. It could stimulate the transformations of the Immortal Martial Spirit and the Petrification Martial Spirit. Should it also make a useful change for the Star Martial Spirit, helping it reach this miraculous level? It should be so. Shi Yan nodded his head affirmatively.

"Swoosh!"

The Earth Flame was absorbing the scorching power of the Sun Refined Flames inside the Sun Refined Spirit. A bunch of the Sun Refined Flames like fire serpents disappeared into the burning fire halo of the Earth Flame, becoming a part of the Earth Flame's power, causing a marvelous transformation of the Earth Flame's burning power.

From ten meters away, Shi Yan was still motionless. The Star Martial Spirit in his body, on the contrary, was still absorbing the sun power of the Sun Refined Spirit, contesting the power from the Sun Refined Spirit with the Earth Flame.

Being consumed by the two powers, the dazzling hot sunlight started relenting gradually. Dazzling lights of the blazing red outer meteorite were disappearing little by little. The entire oppressively hot desert with the decreasing power in the Sun Refined Spirits became cooler.

"Do you feel that it is getting cooler?"

"Yeah, the temperature in the desert seems to be decreasing."

"Uh, it's getting very comfortable now. It looks like something is happening here. I don't know if this can help us find the way out?"

"Who knows. I don't want to stay in this devilish place any longer. Gosh, where is the end of the road if we keep on walking like this?"

"Don't talk rubbish. We came to the Chasm Battlefield to kill the Yang family. We have not seen anyone of the Yang family yet. Even if we find a way out, don't you feel ashamed if returning without completing your mission?"

The warriors from different forces in the Endless Sea were gathering into groups of three or five, discussing something.

Cao Zhi Lan sat alone with her knitted eyebrows. Her enchanting eyes beamed out a ray of light. After silently releasing the Spirit

God Martial Spirit, Cao Zhi Lan started to observe everywhere and everything, including the tiny transformations of the air in the desert, to understand the weird change of this desert.

After a while, Cao Zhi Lan suddenly stood up and said, "We can go over there to see. I've recognized that neither the vigorous burning fires nor the attacking souls that could destroy our spirits exist there anymore. Now is a suitable time to go. There should not be any danger".

"I'll go!" Pan Zhe quickly stood up.

One hour later.

The four people of Cao Zhi Lan, Qu Yan Qing, Gu Ling Long, and Pan Zhe returned and stopped at the distance of more than ten meters away from the Sun Refined Spirit. They watched the Sun Refined Spirit with strange faces.

"Where is Shi Yan?" Gu Ling Long angrily asked. "That stupid guy disappeared again. How can we find him?"

Cao Zhi Lan still kept silent, looking at the Sun Refined Spirit with a strange face. She felt extremely confused.

Is this still the Sun Refined Spirit? It is just an ordinary meteorite from outer space. The Sun Refined Spirit from the center of the Sun has the purified burning powers of the Sun, how come it has become like this?! Who could absorb all the sun powers inside the Sun Refined Spirits in such a short time? Is it Shi Yan?

A big question mark appeared in Cao Zhi Lan's head. She was staring at the Sun Refined Spirits which had become a common meteorite. She did not say anything for a while.

For the first time, she was concerned about Shi Yan. There were so many secrets about Shi Yan that she could not capture. Her Spirit God Martial Spirit could easily see through people's minds, sensing all kinds of wonderful martial spirits or the opponents' potential tricks.

Presently, she failed in discovering Shi Yan's secrets, and it made her anxious and worried. She was not used to letting anyone slip out of her sense control. She greatly hated this feeling of incompetence.

Pan Zhe and Qu Yan Qing also knew a little about the Sun Refined Spirit's legend. They were bewildered while looking at the Sun Refined Spirit which had turned into an ordinary stone. They didn't know what to say momentarily.

A long time after that.

"I think Shi Yan has left. Hmm, what we have to do now is identifying his direction." Cao Zhi Lan took a deep breath and released her Spirit God Martial Spirit to sense around. After a while, she suddenly pointed in one direction. "There seem to be some movements over there." After a short pause, Cao Zhi Lan slightly exclaimed with a strange face, "Oh!"

"How is it?" Pan Zhe asked.

"Do you realize that the desert now is not the same as when we have just arrived? You guys can release your spiritual powers now. Isn't it prevented anymore? My Spirit God Martial Spirit can finally cover its usual range. Hmm, the place over there should exist some Ancient Formation and defensive formation. I think we can now get out of this place." Cao Zhi Lan calmly said.

"Is it for real?", Gu Ling Long shouted excitedly. "The desert was getting cooler and cooler. The peculiar opposing forces in the desert had seemingly disappeared."

"That's true. All the changes were because of this meteorite". Qu Yan Qing looked at the Sun Refined Spirit which had become an ordinary meteorite. "Because of this Sun Refined Spirit's transformation, everything in the desert has changed."

"I've known it already." Cao Zhi Lan's appealing body was in shock; her eyes brightened. She said in fear, "The entire desert is a

devilish formation! The Sun Refined Spirit is both the power generator and the eye of the formation. When the power of the eye of the formation disappears, the mighty formation is immediately disabled and shows its true color."

"My god, there is such a significant formation like that?" Gu Ling Long shouted, covering her mouth.

"Yes!" Cao Zhi Lan nodded. She contemplated for a while before continuing, "It's not necessary to stay here anymore. I can feel that that direction is where the Transfer Formation has left. Hmm, we can take that direction. I think Shi Yan also followed that way."

A moment later.

Cao Zhi Lan and the others discovered an Ancient Formation in the desert indeed. This Ancient Formation was very similar to the one which they had used to enter the desert. Without much hesitation, they all stepped in that formation without any hesitation. As soon as the pink light flared up, they instantly disappeared from this desert without a trace.

... ..

The forest was boundless, the sky and earth aura were incredibly dense. Inside the woods, the fragrance of flowers and fresh air engulfed the entire forest, making people feel refreshed and comfortable.

On an ancient tree that pierced through the sky, Shi Yan was hiding inside the thick, dense layers of leaves one hundred meters up from the ground, looking around.

After having followed the Transfer Formation to come here, in the beginning, Shi Yan had thought he already returned to the Endless Sea, arriving at an island with full of sultry spiritual aura. However, after raising his head looking up to the sky, he knew that he was wrong, he was still in the Chasm Battlefield.

The blue sky was clear, masses of white clouds were hovering

around. However, there were none of the three gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star. It was impossible to discover whether any star powers were pouring into the Star Martial Spirit or not.

The world without the three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star was obviously not the Endless Sea. This place was still inside of the Chasm Battlefield; only the environment had changed.

Although this place was in the Chasm Battlefield, the sky and earth auras were extremely dense. It seemed to be different from the description of Yang Mu's warriors.

According to Yang Mu's group, the sky and earth auras in the Chasm Battlefield should be very diluted. It wasn't a suitable place for warriors to cultivate. This place had been the ancient battlefield, and only ancient mummies or explorers lived here. No warrior could be found in this area.

From the distance of one hundred meters from the ground, Shi Yan looked around and discovered there were many vital lives inside the forest.

From afar, there seemed to be an imposing Giant Ancient City. The entire Ancient City was made of huge stones; the colored flag was flaunting on top of the wall of the Ancient City. He could vaguely see some people inside there.

The location of the Giant Stone Ancient City was more than ten miles away from Shi Yan. The Ancient City was protected by a mysterious power which prevented Shi Yan from using his soul consciousness to peep at it.

Looking further, he could see nothing else but the endless forest. His ears could even hear the terrifying roars of some animals.

This place was not much different from any other places in the outside world. There were spiritual auras, beasts, and also warriors, but there were no three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star.

After observing at the distance of one hundred meters high from the ground, Shi Yan contemplated for a while before deciding to go to the Giant Stone Ancient City to see if warriors were living there or not.

"Thump."

Shi Yan plunged down like a big bird and then steadily landing on the ground.

In a moment, a flow of miasmatic power like billions of rope twisted around his body. As soon as he descended, he realized that he was captured and confined without being able to move.

"Damn Pagan!"

A clear but cold whisper came to his ears from behind.

Shi Yan wanted to turn his head around to look at the source of the whisper but realized that he could not do it. He suddenly smelled a fragrance of orchids which sneaked into his mind, making him dizzy and fall unconsciously.

Chapter 240: Demonic Sound Clan

In the darkness where nothing could be seen, Shi Yan gradually woke up.

After opening his eyes, he released his soul consciousness to observe around. However, as soon as his soul consciousness flickered, there appeared an extreme pain in the sea of consciousness. This pain outburst so strongly in his sea of consciousness that he almost fainted again.

His face slightly changed while he tried to control the pain, hastily holding his breath and retrieving his soul consciousness. After that, the pain disappeared.

His eyes flared up in the dark, but he was still unable to see anything.

While groping in the dark, he realized that surrounding him was all icy lava rocks. These lava rocks were very hard, robust and rough; he did not know what kind of rocks they were. A formation technique seemed to have been placed in his soul consciousness. If he released the soul consciousness again, that formation technique would instantly spread out, causing him a splitting headache.

Putting more effort to look around carefully, he still could not see anything. He then stood up to warm up a little bit. When he tried to urge the forces inside his body, he realized that his Profound Qi had been confined as well. He could not activate his power no matter how hard he tried.

When the profound Qi and the sea of consciousness were both in confinement, it was like an ordinary warrior's life was captured without being able to use any force.

However, Shi Yan was different. Although his profound Qi and the sea of consciousness were being confined, he could still use the negative powers inside his meridians which had gone through a lot

of training for a long time. It was just that he did not know how to get out of this place.

Because he couldn't use his soul consciousness, and even his spirit was restricted, it was hard for him to communicate with the Blood Vein Ring nor receive the messages of the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame.

The stone chamber was pitch black. Shi Yan was sitting still, waiting in silence. He knew that the one who had captured him and still let him alive would appear sooner or later. As he didn't know this place, he had to be careful, not urging the negative forces to destroy the stone chamber. He should just wait in silence.

"From where has Miss Yi Cu Bi captured him? There have been no human beings in our place for a very long time. It is unknown where that guy came from."

"Hmm, humankind rarely appears in our place. Miss Yi Cu Bi has gone out and brought that guy back this time, but she just detains him instead of killing him right away. We don't know what she wants."

"Whatever, bring that guy to Miss Yi Cu Bi."

Shi Yan could hear the two miasmatic male voices outside of the stone chamber.

Not long after that, a creaking sound reverberated in this airtight stone chamber. The dim light from the outside sneaked in, and two sickly miasmatic guys appeared from there.

In the dim light, Shi Yan focused and realized that their faces were pale, and their bodies were very skinny. They emitted a faint icy miasmal aura and didn't seem to have a temperature. It was devilish indeed.

"Stand up, follow us. Our Lady wants to see you." One of the two guys coldly said.

Shi Yan lifted his eyebrows but didn't say anything. He did as he

had been told.

"You should obey us. I am not afraid to teach you some rules." The guy threw a sharp glance at Shi Yan and then went ahead to lead. "Follow us."

Shi Yan said nothing, quickly going out of the stone chamber and silently observing around.

It was a big and long corridor; both sides were stone walls where there were many drawings of beasts as well as some luminesced stones to light up the hallway.

Those luminescent stones were not bright; they were a little bit dim actually. In that faint glow, Shi Yan could not realize what kind of the beasts drawn on the walls.

The two guys with the cold miasmatic bodies looked quite good-looking. While they were leading, they often turned their head back, watchfully glancing at Shi Yan.

As the sea of consciousness was in confinement, Shi Yan wasn't able to release his soul consciousness. Thus, he had no idea about those two guys' ability. However, from the miasmatic movements spreading out from their bodies, Shi Yan could guess that their level was not high. If his strength recovered, he could easily kill these two guys.

However, in the situation where he did not know what was going on, Shi Yan did not dare to do anything recklessly.

Being capable of avoiding his soul consciousness and effortlessly capturing him, that lady with the clear, cold voice apparently had a profound Realm.

Facing such a high-class master like that, he would surely have a horrible consequence if he recklessly took any actions.

After having followed the two guys through a long corridor, Shi Yan entered a huge hall.

This large hall had a round-shape; several big stone columns situated inside of the hall. Many miasmatic guys and girls were standing, seeming to wait for something or someone.

They all had miasmatic aura with a slender body shape and the pale skin as if they rarely exposed themselves under the sunlight.

There was a senior man with long, regular breaths, a goatee, and ashy-gray pupils inside the great hall. He was sitting alone in the center of the hall. Other guys and girls were all standing at the side; they were obviously his servants and guards.

Next to him was an exceptional lady wearing a royal dress. Her eyelashes were picturesque and incredibly beautiful.

At this moment, her deep crystal clear eyes were looking at Shi Yan from a distance. She coldly said, "Father, this is the human being that I have captured."

The elder stroke his beard and slightly nodded his head. His two ashy-gray eyes looked at Shi Yan neglectfully.

Shi Yan stood at one spot but recognized that a flow of miasmatic aura seeped into his pores, silently moving in his body, seemingly exploring everything inside of his body.

"Humankind, where are you from?" After looking at Shi Yan for a while, the old man moderately asked with a voice which was unexpectedly pleasant to hear.

"Who are you guys?" Shi Yan asked without replying the man's question. "Inside this Chasm Battlefield, there were no warriors even in the legends. This place was the warriors' battlefield in the ancient time. The Sky and Earth aura here is extremely diluted. Why do you stay here? Who are you after all? Is this place the Chasm Battlefield?"

"Sass." The beautiful girl frowned and coldly said. "Answer my father's question. Don't sputter any rubbish." A flow of the sharp spiritual soul like a sword stabbed through Shi Yan's head.

The formation technique in Shi Yan's sea of consciousness suddenly spread out as if there were billions of worms nibbling him from the inside, causing him a splitting headache. He nearly couldn't help but scream out loud.

Gritting his teeth, Shi Yan displayed the fierceness on his face but didn't utter a sound, only staring at that woman.

"It's ok, Yi Cu Bi." The senior man waved his hand signaling Yi Cu Bi to stop destroying Shi Yan's sea of consciousness. He curiously looked at Shi Yan and said, "You are not bad. Although being hit by the Devouring Thousand Souls of the Demonic Sound Clan, you did not groan a word. If I am not wrong, your cultivation base is only at the Earth Realm."

"Ah? Father, it can't be." The beautiful woman Yi Cu Bi couldn't stand by but scream out loud.

"He had formed the sea of consciousness. Only the Nirvana Realm warriors can do it. How come an Earth Realm warrior can also do it?"

"You are right. My cultivation base is only at the Earth Realm." Shi Yan slowly nodded. "I have come here from the outside world; I don't belong to the Chasm Battlefield. Because of some unknown reasons have I arrived here. I was in an scorching desert earlier, and come here through the Transfer Formation."

"Are you truly ranked at the Earth Realm?" Her beautiful, lucid eyes astonished, looking at Shi Yan with curiosity. "You should have experienced some enlightenment. If not, you are not able to form the sea of consciousness at the Earth Realm. Hmm, not bad, you are not just an ordinary warrior".

The senior man stared at Shi Yan, nodding slowly. He was silent for a while and then said, "You told me you are from the outside world. Have you heard about the Demonic Sound Clan?"

Shi Yan shook his head.

The elder's face looked gloomy; his eyes showed the loneliness. He said, "We left that place a long time ago, so long that the humankind does not even remember the Demonic Sound Clan. Such a regret that we cannot leave this place. I want to know how the humankind has turned out."

"Father, isn't our life in here very good? Why do you still want to go to the outside world?" Yi Cu Bi confusingly asked.

"You don't understand." The senior man sighed, he did not say anything more.

Shi Yan was surprised. After Yi Cu Bi had stirred up his sea of consciousness, he was much more obedient. Although he still had some doubts, he did not dare to ask more.

"I have some questions, and I hope you answer them honestly. If your answers please me, I can let you go wherever you want. However, if your answers do not satisfy me, your life will be in danger. I will make you completely disappear." The senior man bowed his head before lifting it up and speaking to Shi Yan.

At the same time, a flow of strange vibrations suddenly came out from that elder. The formation technique inside Shi Yan's body was deactivated in a blink. His sea of consciousness recovered, his profound Qi started to move again.

Releasing the soul consciousness, Shi Yan silently watched the senior man in front of him and his daughter Yi Cu Bi.

His soul consciousness approached that elder but seemed to be prevented by an invisible power. On the contrary, it wasn't hindered too much when it came closer to Yi Cu Bi.

The Sky Realm.

Shi Yan displayed terrible fear on his face and almost screamed out after his soul consciousness circled Yi Cu Bi one round. This woman was still very young, but she was already at the Sky Realm.

If her cultivation base was the Sky Realm, what about the senior

man?

"Don't think too much, you will not be able to escape from here." The old man said with an indifferent face. "First, tell me how you came here? Before entering the desert, where did you go? Can you go back through the old route? If you can do it, I will not make it hard on you and will spare your life."

"I can't find the way to go back. Sorry. Although I also want to leave, there is no way indeed." Shi Yan shook his head reluctantly.

The old man raised his eyebrows and seemed to consider something.

However, at this moment, a guy hurriedly came in the hall. After kowtowing, he respectfully said, "Great Master, we have just discovered other warriors, but the number is almost one hundred this time."

Shi Yan's pupil instantly shrank. He knew for sure that they were Cao Zhi Lan and her fellow warriors.

Chapter 241: The Sound Beast Mountain

"Your people? The demeanor on the old man's face did not change. He seriously sat still, slightly knitting his eyebrows, curiously looking at Shi Yan. "Have those people come here together with you?"

Shi Yan shook his head and said, "Not with me, but I know them. They are my enemies, and they have been chasing me here since I was in the outside world. Hmm, I'm their target."

"Is their hatred of you that much?" Cu Bi was curious. "Hundreds of warriors have been chasing after you here to kill you. After all, what did you do?"

Shi Yan forced a miserable smile, "Nothing..."

"No matter what their target was, everyone had to act moderately in the Demonic Sound Clan's territory." The old man frowned and said, "Yi Feng, go arrest them now. Bring some people with you. Don't let them escape."

A skinny guy at the Nirvana Realm nodded his head indicating his obedience and quickly left.

"OK, let's continue where we left off." The old man calmly took one sip of tea. "The outside world, what is the situation now? What is the name of your area? Is there anything special there?"

"The outside world?"

"Uh."

"I came here from the Endless Sea through the Heaven gate at the Sky Sea. At the Endless Sea, many different forces of humankind warriors have been competing to dominate the areas with full of resources." After contemplating for a while, Shi Yan explained the senior man of the Demonic Sound Clan a little of what he knew about the Endless Sea.

The old man listened to Shi Yan without saying anything.

"Father, the Endless Sea doesn't seem to be our ancient land?" After thinking for a while, she couldn't help but speak up.

"No, it is not our ancient land. But don't worry. When we reach the outside world, we will find our ancient land." The elder nodded his head. "If those humankind warriors can come here, it means that the formation technique has recently eased off a little bit. Hmm, it's time to talk to the Wings Race."

"The Wings Race has always been looking for a way to get out of here, but they are not friendly with us. They even have attacked us recently. Father, you want to make contact with the Wings Race?" Cu Bi didn't seem to agree with him. "The Wings Race has evil intentions; they want to get out of here and conquer the outside world. Once they leave this place, it would not be a good thing for the outside world."

"After a few years of recuperating, the Wings Race's strength has improved a lot. The reason we have been deported here is that we had cooperated with the Wings Race. I know the Wings Race's bad ambition, but with the Demonic Sound Clan's ability alone, I am afraid we cannot leave here." The senior man convinced the girl. "Only if the two tribes can cooperate can we get out of here. Otherwise, we may be trapped here forever. Don't worry. Before talking to the Wings Race, I will ask other leaders for more information. If everything is fine, I will contact the Wings Race."

Shi Yan still kept silent but was surprised.

According to the conversation between the old man and the girl named Cu Bi, he knew that besides the Demonic Sound Clan, there was also another tribe called the Wings Race. These two big tribes might have been from the Neolithic Age, and no one knew the reason that had led to their deportation and confinement here.

The Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race should have belonged to the Grace Mainland before. Moreover, the ability of

these two tribes should be very mighty. Although they had been deported here for many years, they still preserve the intention of breaking out to go back to the Grace Mainland, their ancient land.

As the formation technique in the soul consciousness had been deactivated, Shi Yan could inaudibly observe around now, realizing that inside of the hall, there were more than ten Nirvana Realm and the Sky Realm warriors. The senior man's cultivation base should be at the God Realm.

The senior man seemed to be one of the leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan. According to him, there were also other leaders. If they also had the same cultivation base as he did, the Demonic Sound Clan's strength could easily defeat any forces of the Endless Sea.

The Demonic Sound Clan was terrifying already, but they seemed to be very cautious when talking about the Wings Race. The Wings Race's strength appeared to be even stronger than the Demonic Sound Clan's.

If this was the truth, once the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race cooperated to escape from this place, going to the Endless Sea, he couldn't imagine what problem they would bring to the Endless Sea.

"You want to go back to the Grace Mainland?" As different thoughts kept popping up in his mind, Shi Yan suddenly came up with an idea and spoke up.

"That is right. We don't want to live here. We hope to go back to our Ancestry Land. It has been almost ten thousand years since we had been deported. We want to know how our Ancestry Land looks like; we don't originally belong to this place." Cu Bi's eyes were clear and anxious. "Our Ancestry Land, we miss our Ancestry Land. There were the three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star, big oceans, the scenes that we have never seen before."

"The Endless Sea is not peaceful at this time. It may be not a good

time to go back there now." Shi Yan said with a low voice.

"Tell me more?" The old man said with a serious face.

"Because the Demon Dwellers of the Fourth Demon Area and the Dark Dwellers of the Netherworld may invade the Endless Sea. Once they arrive the Endless Sea, it should be a disaster for all the tribes living there. If you go back this time, you will face the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers." After thinking for a while, Shi Yan decided to tell them about the current situation. He didn't know anything about the Demonic Sound Clan or the Wings Race, nor was he sure that if the return of these two tribes to the Endless Sea was a good or bad thing for the Endless Sea. Telling them about the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers. She Yan wanted to see their attitude.

"The Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers..."

When the old man heard of these two pagan tribes, his face changed dramatically. He suddenly said after a while, "No worries. We only want to go back to our Ancestry Land. We will not stay in the Endless Sea for long, nor will we get into any troubles with them."

"The Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers. Father, what is the origin of these two pagan tribes?" Cu Bi asked with curiosity.

"I will tell you later." The old man shook his head and explained nothing more. However, his ashy-gray eyes flared up the complicated light; it seemed that the names of Demon Dwellers and Dark Dwellers had called up something. A subtle smile beamed out from the corner of his mouth; his face looked very strange.

As the old man stopped asking questions, Shi Yan also kept silent and secretly released his soul consciousness to observe outside the hall, wanting to leave this place.

However, the lava stone in this hall seemed to have the mighty power that prevented his soul consciousness from going through

it. His soul consciousness encountered a big hindrance when it was on the way flying out.

Shi Yan reluctantly gave up and quietly looked at the old man.

Yi Feng came back after having left for a while. After kowtowing, he respectfully said, "Great Master, we were a little bit late. Ya Meng has arrested all of the human warriors."

"Ya Meng." The senior man raised his eyebrows and calmly said, "I am afraid those people are done. Several human warriors came here and killed Ya Meng's son a few years ago. Although he tortured those guys for long periods, his animosity against human warriors never ends. As he has arrested many warriors this time, he might have enough to play with for a long time."

A strange light flared up and instantly disappeared in Shi Yan's eyes.

"You should be jubilant because Ya Meng has arrested your enemies while you are here." He coldly looked at Shi Yan. "Our prejudice towards the humankind is not as profound as Ya Meng's. I will not treat you bad as long as you honestly cooperate with me. Not only can I let you free but also give you some things that you cannot find from the outside world."

"I will do my best." Shi Yan smiled and said. "I don't want to die; I only want to live well. However, my strength is limited; I am not sure if I can be much of help."

"There is an intense burning fires' movement inside your body. Can you use that burning fire power?" The senior man suddenly said.

"The burning fires has tempered my body, and that is how I have the power of the burning fires. I think I can use a part of it, but I am not confident it will be as much as you expect."

"Cu Bi, you and he go to the Sound Beast Mountain to see if you can catch more of the Sound Beasts' heads with the burning fires'

power in his body." After thinking for a while, the old man looked at his daughter and assigned a mission for her. "As Ka Ba's people often wandered around the Sound Beast Mountain recently, the Sound Beasts do not dare to take risks to expose themselves. I don't know if we can get more of them."

Cu Bi mumbled to herself, and then slowly walked towards Shi Yan, throwing a sharp glance at him, speaking, "Outsider, follow me. If you can help me catch some Sound Beasts' heads, maybe I will feel better and let you free."

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows. Under the scrutinized look of the old man, he said nothing, bowing his head and following Cu Bi to go outside.

After crossing a very long corridor, Shi Yan saw the bright sky again eventually.

He was standing on a pile of stones near a five-hundred-meter-high architectural building. In his view, there were many other ten-meter-high ancient stone structures nearby. In a further distance, another two mighty five-hundred-meter-high imposing ancient structures like the immeasurably magnificent and splendid mountains in the sky that could stir people's eyesight. This place was a Great Ancient Stone City.

Among these structures, the lowest one was tens of meters high, covering thousands of square meters; the biggest one was similar to the one he was standing on, which was hundreds of meters high and covered about tens of thousands square meters. It was even bigger than the biggest one he had seen in the outside world, and it was unknown how it had been built.

In this Giant Stone Ancient City, everyone in the Demonic Sound Clan looked very pale with their miasmatic spirits and unusual physical strength. They seemed to be very light and not to be restricted by the limit of Realms. Even the Earth Realm or the Nirvana Realm warriors could freely fly around in the city. It was

very strange.

A dense mist gray-white fog covered the entire Ancient City. There should be some formation technique inside that mist to protect the City.

The dense sky and earth spiritual aura overflow every corner of the City. Although the Sky and Earth aura here was not as good as the one in the Immortal Island, it was still superb compared with other places of the Endless Sea and enough for the warriors to use for their cultivation.

"Shi Yan." A voice suddenly came up from a distance. That was Cao Zhi Lan's voice.

Shi Yan's face slightly changed. He looked toward the direction where the voice resounded. In the distance, he saw a big wooden cage being pulled up to the sky by some strange beasts' heads.

These beasts had small thin wings like a layer of flesh. Their bodies had adamant miasmatic power which was somehow similar to that of the Demonic Sound Clan's pagans.

The beasts spread their five or six-meter-wide wings like Falcons; their entire bodies were turquoise and had moving lights.

The top of the wooden cage, which had pulled up by the beasts, was fully covered by creepers. Those vines like spiritual snakes wrapped around the wooden cage, radiating a green ray of light and creating a miraculous constraint binding the wooden cage.

Inside the wooden cage, Cao Zhi Lan, Qu Yan Qing, Gu Ling Long, Pan Zhe, and a flock of other warriors were all restricted by a formation technique. They all looked like slaves with dark faces in a cage. They seemed to suffer a lot of torture that they became honestly obedient without daring to resist.

Some guys with gloomy, pale faces in dark green armors were riding those beasts, gathering and discussing with each other in a low tone.

Some of them turned their heads around, coldly glancing at Cao Zhi Lan when they heard her scream. She looked towards Shi Yan's direction with a slight happiness in her eyes.

Those guys pulled up the wooden cage away, seemingly wanting to change the direction. Cao Zhi Lan's Spirit God Martial Spirit was unique; it was not affected by the formation technique and thus quickly realized the living vibration from Shi Yan's body as soon as he had gone out of the imposing architectural structure. That was why she couldn't help but scream.

In a distance of one hundred meters, Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows, looking at Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Qu Yan Qing, and other warriors who were being confined like livestock. He couldn't help but release a sigh, feeling pity for them.

Although Cao Zhi Lan and the others were his opponents, they all came here from the outside world. However, Ya Meng has captured and confined them like livestock and would soon torture them to death. He could not feel good looking at them.

"Cu Bi, you have captured this human being?" A guy of the Demonic Sound Clan who was in the lead suddenly raised his hand signaling the beasts to stop. He then gently flew over, hovering about in the air while coldly looking at Shi Yan.

Cu Bi slightly frowned and then calmly said, "Ya Ji, you are quick. You have captured those outsiders just in a short while. Hmm, if I knew that there were more than one person, you wouldn't have been able to reap such a big spoil."

The guy dragged a strange smile out of his mouth and said, "I was just lucky. While I was wandering outside, I detected these outsiders and easily captured them. Hahaha, the cultivation base of some of them are not bad, but their souls are too weak compared to mine."

"Ah." Cu Bi quickly said, "Regarding souls, the Demonic Sound Clan has the God-given advantage. Those aliens obviously cannot

be compared to us. If you have already captured them, you should leave soon. Why do you need to waste your time with me?"

"How can talking to you be a waste of time?" Ya Ji smiled. As seeing no reaction from Cu Bi, he pointed to Shi Yan and said, "I am also interested in that guy. Cu Bi, say a price, I pay her to take him. What do you think?"

While Ya Ji was talking, his strange eyes fixed on Shi Yan's body.

A flow of miraculous soul vibration like a thin fiber of soul explored and went into Shi Yan's head, intruding his sea of consciousness, taking the secret life in his mind.

Shi Yan's face changed dramatically. When he was about to gather his forces to resist this soul vibration, another flow of soul vibration like a cold wind zoomed over, quickly covering his head.

Ya Ji's soul power was instantly wiped out completely, disappearing from his head without leaving a trace.

"This guy belongs to me. Without my consent, no one can touch his soul." Cu Bi's clear, cold voice rose up; she displeasingly stared at Ya Ji. "You can torture those in the cage however you want, but you are not allowed to touch mine. Otherwise, don't blame me for treating you badly."

"I can bargain." Ya Ji forced a smile. "I will pay you a very good price for this guy. Is it ok?"

"You have already captured many warriors, why do you still want him?" Cu Bi felt a bit strange when listening to what he said. "You already have many, why him?"

"Hahaha, I see it's useful." Ya Ji thought for a while and said. "Cu Bi, if you are interested in humankind warriors, we can exchange. Hmm, those warriors over there, except the three ladies, I can trade anyone of the rest, even two of them. What do you think?"

"Why must you have him?" Cu Bi was surprised, confusingly looking at Ya Ji and then at Shi Yan. "Is he special?"

"Very special."

Ya Ji nodded his head. "So, do you want to exchange or not?"

"No!" Cu Bi harrumphed. She thought for a while before grabbing Shi Yan's shoulder, flying away and speaking at the same time, "This guy is useful, I do not want to give him to you now. Wait until I feel that he is not useful anymore, then I might sell him to you".

"Cu Bi, be careful, he is very dangerous." Ya Ji warned her from a distance.

"Dangerous?" Cu Bi uttered a word with despise, coldly glancing at Shi Yan. She continued, "You should better be honestly obedient. Otherwise, I will make your soul disappear in a second. Maybe you don't know yet, but it's not hard for the Demonic Sound Clan to ruin your humankind."

"Yeah, I know your soul competency went beyond that of the human warriors." Shi Yan's face remained unchanged. "Your physical strength is very unusual, and the brain is also peculiar. They are very suitable for soul cultivation. Hmm, your soul is very powerful, it can be compared with the one of the Sky Realm warrior, but your body, on the contrary, is not as strong as a human Sky Realm warrior. However, you still can use your powerful soul to dominate and easily destroy my sea of consciousness. Isn't that so?"

Shi Yan didn't say anything since he got out of the Ancient City with Yi Cu Bi, but it didn't mean that he knew nothing.

He had been quietly observing the Demonic Sound Clan for a while, realizing that all of the Demonic Sound Clan's people were very powerful. Regarding soul cultivation, the Demonic Sound Clan's people were much stronger than many of the humankind warriors. Their knowledge of soul was much more profound than that of the humankind warriors. However, because of their particular physical structure, they looked very feeble. Not to

mention Shi Yan's body, their bodies were much weaker than those of the ordinary humankind warriors.

Not only this, the profound Qi in their bodies were also peculiar. Their Profound Qi did not converge in one place; it spread out everywhere inside the body. The nerves and veins were also fragile and narrow, preventing them from receiving too much of the profound Qi.

After observing in silence for a while, Shi Yan realized that the intensity of the woman's soul had reached the Sky Realm, and her subtle body contained a lot of profound Qi. However, her Profound Qi could not be more than his because of her weak body and narrow veins. Her body strength should also be limited. If she did not rely on the God-given soul advantage, she might have been unable to defeat an ordinary Earth Realm warrior.

Thanks to the strong strength of the sea of consciousness, Shi Yan gradually understood everything.

"You, you can see through many things in such a short time?" Cu Bi was terrified; a shocking look appeared on her face. She gazed at Shi Yan for a moment and then said, "I should have placed more soul formation techniques on you."

"Don't; I am very savvy. I know that your soul power is very vigorous. If I do something wrong, you can easily recognize it in this short distance. You can use your soul to kill me easily before I can do anything. Therefore, I will not do anything stupid, so you should not waste too much of your power. Don't worry; I will try my best for you." Shi Yan quickly shouted.

"You have such a sweet mouth." Cu Bi's beautiful eyes stared at Shi Yan and firmly nodded her head. "You are very smart, smarter than many of the Demonic Sound Clan's people. Moreover, although you are only at Earth Realm, you've already possessed the sea of consciousness. You are not bad at all. You should have some secrets; otherwise, Ya Ji shouldn't be interested in you like this."

After taking a big breath of air, Cu Bi said, "Maybe, I should analyze your soul, seizing everything inside of your head to know everything hidden there. There is nothing you can hide; I will know all your secrets. Although this might get me seriously injured, I am still really excited about doing it."

Shi Yan slightly shivered; his eyes shot out a cold ray of light. He seemed to be ready to risk his life.

"I already knew that you are very cunning. Hmm, don't think you can take anything from me. Right now, I just don't want to kill you yet. If you dare to do anything stupid, you will know the consequence." Cu Bi's face coldly darkened, but a hesitating look appeared on her face. "If you can help me catch the sound beasts at the fifth or sixth level, I will set you free. Otherwise, I will detain you and give you to Ya Ji."

"Sound Beasts? Aren't they beasts?"

"The Sound Beasts are one kind of beasts. They only live in the Sound Beast Mountain where the miasmatic aura is incredibly dense. The Sound Beasts are made from Yin; their Demons Crystal Pearls also have the icy yin trait. They are very useful for us. Our cultivation will be prosperous if we can have these Demons Crystal Pearls. The Sound Beast Mountain has the "Ancient Thunder Formation" which discharged lightning. The Sound Beasts do not have any big problem if being hit by lightning. The Demonic Sound Clan, on the other hand, is naturally afraid of lightning so we cannot go any further into the Sound Beast Mountain, except that we can only stay outside the mountain and catch the Sound Beasts that venture out."

"How is it useful with my help?"

"The Sound Beasts' trait is icy Yin, and their souls are also unique. It is not easy for the Demonic Sound Clan to use our soul advantage to deal with them. To catch them, we also need to make use of the direct attacking weapons. However, once the Sound

Beasts cannot win, they will quickly retrieve and hide inside of the Sound Beast Mountain. Thus, we cannot do anything. The Sound Beasts had one weakness, they are afraid of the burning fires. If you can use the burning fires, it is easier to catch them. Of course, we have to see if your burning fires are useful or not. Weak burning fires cannot affect the Sound Beasts."

"Ok, I understand. I will help you arrest the Sound Beasts. Hmm, our deal is ten of the fifth or sixth level Sound Beasts. Is it ok?"

"If you can help me capture ten of the fifth or sixth level sound beasts, I will set you free. If you can capture more, I can buy them at a reasonable price. Hmm, the Demons Crystal Pearls of the Sound Beasts are very treasurable. You can use them to exchange for any essential things that you want."

"Can I exchange for slaves?"

"Anything."

"Good, maybe I will use some Demons Crystal Pearls of the Sound Beasts to exchange for some female slaves." Shi Yan thought about Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing, the three ladies who were being confined by Ya Ji.

"Rotten." Seeing the lust in Shi Yan's eyes, Cu Bi couldn't help but curse. "Human beings, no one is good indeed! My father was right."

"I assume that the Demonic Sound Clan's people have a strong prejudice against human beings?"

"Humankind is cruel. If it were not because of humankind, we wouldn't have been deported to this place. Hmm, because of you, we all could not return to our Ancestry Land, being forced to stay here forever where there aren't the three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star." Cu Bi coldly said.

"Why were you deported to this place? They wouldn't do it without any reasons."

"Shut up!" Cu Bi jangled. Her beautiful face suddenly sharpened.

Shi Yan got surprised and said no more. He was afraid that Cu Bi would not be able to control herself and take actions with him.

After having got out of the Giant Stone Ancient City and crossing the extensive forest for a long time, a mighty, ten-thousand-meter high mountain struck his eyes.

The mighty imposing mountain dominated the skyline; masses of white clouds hovered around in the middle of the mountain flank. The mountain peak pierced straight up into the sky. Each striking lightning like a giant dragon minced around the giant mountain, discharging powerful electric streams.

On the giant mountain, ancient trees and deep black caves intensely scattered around the mountain cliffs. Many big Sound Beasts appeared, howling from the inside of the caves. The howls had a strange, powerful energy that terrified people.

When these howls reverberated, the vibrations churned up in Shi Yan's sea of consciousness; his soul consciousness was not stable either.

"The Sky and Earth aura gathered and created the Sound Beasts. Their soul is also very particular. Thus, their howls can badly hurt the ordinary warriors. However, you don't seem to be affected by the howls; you are no an ordinary person indeed. Hmm, so I don't need to worry too much. Sending the soul protection forces to your head has decreased my energy." Cu Bi soon relaxed her vigilance.

She and Shi Yan were standing shoulder-to-shoulder on a big long branch of an ancient tree. He raised her head looking toward the Sound Beast Mountain in front of them and asked, "What is the level of the strongest Sound Beast of the Sound Beast Mountain?" Shi Yan looked ahead. As his sea of consciousness was agitated, and he couldn't release soul consciousness, it was hard for him to recognize the real strength of all the Sound Beasts in the Sound Beast Mountain.

"The strongest Sound Beast..." Cu Bi shook her head. "Because of

lightning, the Demonic Sound Clan cannot intrude inside, so we don't know what is the level of the strongest Sound Beast is. Hmm, the Wings Race used to invade the Sound Beast Mountain, but none of them have ever got out alive."

"You and the Wings Race have always been fighting?"

"Almost. The Wings Race people live just behind the Sound Beast Mountain. They consider themselves to be the true lords of this land; they want to rule the Demonic Sound Clan. In recent years, the Wings Race' strength has been stronger than ours. If it isn't because that the Wings Race people have conflicts with each other, we should have become their slaves." Cu Bi dispiritedly replied.

"The Wings Race!" Shi Yan thought for a moment. "You have God-given soul advantages, and you can easily destroy our souls, but you cannot deal with the Wings Race?"

"The Wings Race is more dangerous than humankind. No human being can compare with their solid physical body. Although the Wings Race's soul is not as good as the humankind's, they still have many ways to protect their soul from being violated. Humankind absolutely cannot compare with them." Cu Bi coldly said.

"Oa oa, Boohoo boohoo"

A strange noise like a baby crying came out from one cave on the Sound Beast Mountain.

When that peculiar crying resounded, inside of that crave instantly emitted many flows of the gray yin aura. This gray miasmatic aura spread out violently and quickly, covering the entire small area in just a blink.

A bunch of large figures was dancing in the middle of the gray aura, coming down the Sound Beast Mountain together with the gray aura, walking towards an icy lake in the distance.

"Child Devil."

Cu Bi's face changed dramatically. Her subtle body slightly

shivered while she was staring at the place where the gray aura gathered. She said in fear, "This thing shouldn't appear at this time of the year. Is the defensive formation weakening? Irrational, really irrational! No, we might have to cancel our plan now."

Turning around, Cu Bi hold Shi Yan with one hand and hurriedly said, "We should leave now. Forget this time; I have to inform my clan about the Child Devil!"

"Are you sure we will be able to escape." Shi Yan's eyes slightly changed while he pointed toward something ahead. "That thing seems to have detected us already. They started changing the direction?!"

"What?" Cu Bi shouted in panic; her white face got chalky.

Chapter 242: Everything has its conqueror

Each long skinny figure zoomed through the gray miasmatic aura, quickly descending as if they wanted to wrap and tie Shi Yan and Cu Bi up tightly.

Many long thin figures appeared more and more clearly inside that fuzzy aura. They were a particular kind of beasts with a human child face, a dreary pale look, and a mouth full of fangs. This creature was three meters tall with a sturdy body, a white child-like face, and long fangs. It looked terribly scary.

The Child Devil's body projected a powerful miasmatic yin aura. The soul of this creature was unique. There seemed to have a particular layer of flesh in their brain to prevent any soul attacks. Their movement was very fast. With a slight sway, they were in the air plunging more than ten zhangs already (1 zhang is equivalent to 3.33 meters).

Three Child Devils appeared in a short moment, showing their fangs and claws, closely approaching Shi Yan and Cu Bi below.

Although Cu Bi's soul could be as powerful as a Sky Realm warrior's, it was still hard for her to release the soul attacks when facing with the Child Devils. Thus, she could do nothing but grab Shi Yan, hurriedly leaving this place.

"We cannot leave. Your speed is fast but apparently not as fast as those strange beasts." Shi Yan stood motionlessly, seeming to be unexpectedly conscious. According to him, although those Child Devils were powerful, they still had their weaknesses. Although the icy yin aura on their bodies was very mighty, and their living power was very powerful, they should be at the fifth or sixth level at most, just equivalent to the Earth Realm or Nirvana Realm warriors. Shi Yan was not afraid of the beasts at the level.

"Boohooooooooo."

The three Child Devils cried out like babies. Their white fangs quickly became sharper and longer; red blood flowed out from the corners of their mouths. That looked terribly horrible.

"Child Devils are not afraid of the Demonic Sound Clan's souls. They are our mortal enemy. When they are out, we have to hide inside of the Ancient City." Cu Bi's face was not rubicund but turning to white pale.

The three Child Devils had already been not far from him, separating and besieging Shi Yan and Cu Bi.

The Child Devils were flying around, dragging flows of bleary smoke. Their speed was extremely fast, even Shi Yan's eyes could not follow their figures. He could only rely on his soul consciousness to identify their direction.

Perhaps because the three demon children could have realized the strong burning fires inside Shi Yan, they hadn't killed Shi Yan and Cu Bi yet, only besieging them and seeming to wait for something.

Cu Bi was scared of the gaze of the deep blue eyes of the three Child Devils; her beautiful face was full of fear. Her behavior now was entirely different from the way she had treated Shi Yan earlier. She started being terrified.

"Don't worry. Have you forgotten why you and I come here? These three Child Devils should be the Sound Beasts at the fifth level. The Demonic Sound Clan cannot deal with them, but I can." Shi Yan's eyes were cold. He didn't seem to be frightened when facing these three Child Devils.

"Leave them to me."

"Shriek shriek." Three Child Devils kept shrieking and crying nonstop. Some responding sounds sometimes reverberated from a cave somewhere on the Sound Beast Mountain not far from their current place.

"They are calling for more Sound Beasts to come." Cu Bi suddenly felt unsafe. "The defensive formation around the Sound Beast Mountain is decreasing. I feel that a major upheaval is going to happen. No, we have to go back to the Ancient City immediately. The city has all kinds of the defensive formations that can prevent the Sound Beasts from intruding."

"I want to finish my promise earlier." Shi Yan frowned. "Don't use any soul attacks on me. I take actions now."

Upon these words, Shi Yan immediately communicated with the Earth Flame in the Blood Vein Ring.

Many flows of the burning fires quickly spread out from the Blood Vein Ring and instantly rolled into Shi Yan's body. After a moment, Shi Yan's body became blazing red; inflaming formidably.

As the Earth Flame had devoured the sun power of the Sun Refined Spirit, it had quickly evolved. Its intelligence had recently increased, its burning fires were stronger than what Shi Yan had expected. It had almost gained enough power to be able to compete with the icy power of the Ice Cold Flame.

Having been burnt by the sun flames, Shi Yan's body had miraculously transformed, being able to receive more power of the Earth Flame. All the nerves and veins in his body completely absorbed this power from the Earth Flame. He felt warmer and less painful than when his system had been burnt.

His consciousness slightly flickered. Flames suddenly flew out from Shi Yan's body, instantly gathering and turning into fire clouds expanding next to Shi Yan. Each group of fire clouds contained Shi Yan's consciousness, quickly dashing toward the three Child Devils and wrapping them.

"Screech screech screech."

Three Child Devils made strange ear-piercing shrieks. Seeing the

burning fires coming, they hastily ran away with fear in their dark blue eyes.

"Stay." Shi Yan shouted while his spirits had some transformations again.

The fire clouds abruptly exploded, turning into countless fire points of light covering the entire area. The fire points of light were intense and dense like drizzling rain, covering every corner of this area. After the explosion, the number of the fire points of light had compensated for their moderate power, leaving the three Child Devils with no place to hide.

"Sizzle sizzle sizzle."

White smoke instantly rose up as soon as the fire points of light hit the three Child Devils' bodies. The fire points of light were like the strongest acid in the world, rotting their bodies in a blink because their bodies were made of the icy miasmatic aura. As soon as the fire points of light touched the Child Devils, they eroded the Child Devils' bodies creating big holes immediately.

Those fire points of light of the Earth Flame conquered these Child Devils' bodies. The fire points of light scattered everywhere in the sky. The three Child Devils cried out terribly while their bodies smoked. Thus, their movements were also getting much slower.

"The Demons Crystal Pearls of these three Child Devils are robust enough?" Shi Yan turned his head towards Cu Bi and asked. She avoided his look and moved further away from him. She nodded and responded him with the shock remaining on her face. "They are all solid!"

The Heaven Flame! That is the forces of the Heaven Flame! Confusion waves surged up in Cu Bi's mind; her clear eyes looked fearful. She started to be scared of Shi Yan. She knew how dangerous the Child Devils were. Although they were one kind of the Sound Beasts, they were immune from the burning fires. As

they were not scared of being hit by the ordinary burning fires, they kept attacking and slaughtering the Demonic Sound Clan's people.

However, Shi Yan's fire points of light could erode the Child Devils' bodies once the fires touched them and almost crushed them to ashes. What kind of forces was this?

Only the nemesis of the Sound Beasts in the legend, the power of the Heaven Flame, was capable of destroying them.

Cu Bi had never seen the Heaven Flame. She learned from her father the legend about the Heaven Flame conquering the Sound Beasts. The scorching Heaven Flame was the genuine terrifying conqueror of the Sound Beasts.

To the Demonic Sound Clan, wasn't this the most frightening thing?

The Demonic Sound Clan's physical bodies had the icy miasmatic trait. Although their souls were very powerful, once the scorching Heaven Flame touched them, the result was not better than what the Sound Beasts had to suffer.

In other words, if the fire points of light from Shi Yan's body hit on her body, she would quickly erode like those Child Devils. The miasmatic aura on the Demonic Sound Clan's body could not prevent it from being burnt by the Heaven Flame.

If the Demonic Sound Clan did not have the God-given advantage of souls, and if Shi Yan was not afraid of the Demonic Sound Clan's confinement, he alone, together with that Heaven Flame's power in his body, could lay down the law and rule the root in the Ancient City. He could even take advantage of the Heaven Flame's power to slaughter the whole Demonic Sound Clan.

Except if the Demonic Sound Clan had an icy secret treasure, they could use it to resist the Heaven Flame's attack. Other than that, their bodies would evaporate like steam under the Heaven

Flame's power.

Cu Bi felt chilled to the bone.

When Yi Cu Bi saw Shi Yan control the power of the Earth Flame to burn the three Child Devils, making them shrieking terribly, her eyes flared up a strange ray of light. A thought came up in her mind.

Should she kill him right now?

Her eyes kept flickering. She felt that killing Shi Yan now was the best decision. Otherwise, if Shi Yan could find out a way to not be afraid of the Demonic Sound Clan's soul attacks, his existence would be a nightmare for the Demonic Sound Clan.

"Very simple." When her mind was still in chaos with many thoughts, Shi Yan had already handled the three Child Devils; three Blue Demons Crystal Pearls were hovering about in the air. His Profound Qi then quickly pulled down the three Demons Crystal Pearls into his hand.

"Here, three Demons Crystal Pearls for you. Hmm, don't worry. I will find enough Demons Crystal Pearls." Shi Yan forced a smile. When he saw Cu Bi's panic face, he said, "This world is very mysterious. The Demonic Sound Clan with the profound soul competency can easily kill me, but the Child Devils are your nemesis who can easily tear you down into pieces. Meanwhile, I am the nemesis of the Child Devils, using the burning fires' power to kill them quickly. Everything has its conqueror. Isn't that the law of nature?"

Cu Bi's face was confused. She stretched out her hand to take the three Blue Demons Crystal Pearls and said, "These three Demons Crystal Pearls of the Child Devils are more valuable than the ones of the other Sound Beasts. The Child Devils contain miasmatic yin aura and spirits which are very useful for our cultivation. If relying only on the Demonic Sound Clan's strength alone, there is no way to collect the Demons Crystal Pearls. Only the Wings Race can hunt

the Child Devils down. They will use the Demons Crystal Pearls of the Child Devils to exchange for some valuable things of the Demonic Sound Clan..."

"I will find enough Demons Crystal Pearls for you." Shi Yan slightly knitted his eyebrows. "You only need to keep your promise. Hmm, being confined is not something fun and comfortable, but I am a man of my words."

"Do you hate us?" Cu Bi quickly asked.

Chapter 243: Birdman

Shi Yan was surprised, knitting his brows and thinking.

Cu Bi slightly gritted her teeth and then coldly said, "If I let you free, will you find me and take revenge in the future? I have captured you and used your freedom to force you in catching the beasts for me. Will you hate me?"

"Hate you?" Shi Yan was astonished. He contemplated for a while before bursting into laughter, shaking his head. "Not that much of hatred. I am only a little discontented. If you treated me friendly at the beginning instead of threatening, I think I would still be happy to help you catch more Sound Beasts."

Cu Bi's eyes glowed, staring at Shi Yan without blinking, seemingly wanting to see through his real thought.

Shi Yan's eyes beamed out an innocent look; a faint smile appeared at the corner of his mouth. Under her gaze, he didn't seem to be startled. He shrugged and calmly said, "If you fraternize with me, we can become friends. Hmm, I am human, and you are pagan of the Demonic Sound Clan. Although it is the pagan race, it is ok for me."

"I am Cu Bi, Yi Cu Bi, glad to know you. I hope you can consider me a friend." Cu Bi thought for a while before comfortably stretching her white hand towards Shi Yan and sincerely saying, "Sorry for my rude behavior earlier. I hope that you can forget it. Now, we shall start over again."

"Shi Yan." Stretching his big hand and gently holding Yi Cu Bi's jade-like hand, Shi Yan gave out a broad smile. "That is very good."

"Thank you." Yi Cu Bi cheerfully said. "Without your help, I think those Child Devils would have devoured me. After a certain time, many Child Devils go out from the Sound Beast Mountain, considering pagans their preys. It is like when we hunt the Sound

Beasts down, the Child Devils chase us, devouring us so that they can progress faster and stronger."

Shi Yan was frightened.

"The Child Devils are the Demonic Sound Clan's natural enemy. The Child Devils have been evolving non-stop, and thus they have become terrifying. They are not afraid of our clan's soul attacks and able to tear our bodies apart into pieces." Yi Cu Bi was still frightened. "Each time the Child Devils go out of the Sound Beast Mountain, the Demonic Sound Clan's people have to stay inside of the castle without daring to take one step outside. My father told me that the Child Devils and we both have been deported to this place. The people expelling us here have sent the Child Devils together with us because they were scared of the Demonic Sound Clan..."

"Argh, I did not know anything about the story of your Demonic Sound Clan before, I don't want to judge anything." Shi Yan was silent for a moment before speaking. "But I have no prejudice against the Demonic Sound Clan. I treat everyone the same way, either pagan race or humankind. If people treat me well, I will treat them the same way. If not, I will give them a hard time. It is my most basic human behavior. Hmm, I know you also want to leave this place, that is also my purpose. Thus, I hope we can get along well together in the coming days to find out a way to get out of here".

"My father is one of the leaders of the Ancient City. The Demonic Sound Clan's people are very unfriendly with humankind; you probably recognized this already. When you are still here, I will treat you like a servant so that others will not pay attention to you. I hope you understand". Yi Cu Bi said with sincerity.

"I understand." Although Shi Yan did not like it, there wasn't anything else that he could do. Thus, he reluctantly nodded his head.

"One more thing, I hope that you use just a small part of the Heaven Flame's forces. It is better not to let other people of the Demonic Sound Clan see it; otherwise, I am afraid everyone will disturb you." Yi Cu Bi softly said, "To be honest, I had wanted to kill you earlier. Your ability to emit the Sun power is the Sound Beasts' disaster. It is also the same for our bodies; we cannot bear being burnt by the Sun power..."

Shi Yan's body was agitated.

"Do you understand how dangerous it is?"

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan nodded his head and said, "I got it. If you do not restrict my soul, you are afraid that I can use the Heaven Flame to kill all of you. Is it right?"

Yi Cu Bi smiled agonizingly and nodded. "Yes, it is. So, if you let someone know about this power of yours, they will not hesitate to kill you right away. Because once you progress to the point where you are not afraid of our soul attack, your threat is even more terrible than that of the Wings Race. Anyway, this place does not have any particular icy weapons to prevent the Heaven Flame' attack. It is also the reason we have to return to our Ancestry Land. It has been said that there is a secret weapon in our Ancestry Land that can help the Demonic Sound Clan not be scared of the power of the burning fires nor the Child Devils' carnage".

"Hiss hiss hiss."

Flows of gray smoke flew out one after one from inside of the Sound Beast Mountain. When the gray aura flooded the area, many strange Sound Beasts stormed out from the mountain.

There was variety in the appearances of the beasts. Some were like Apes with two curved horns on their head, some were like Tigons, some were like the Scale Armour Beasts... A bunch of them had different shapes with furious icy auras on their bodies. They should be the Sound Beasts dwelled inside of the Sound Beast Mountain, also excellent resources for the cultivation of the

Demonic Sound Clan's people.

"My god, so many Sound Beasts are coming out; the formation technique seems to have weakened a lot." Yi Cu Bi fearfully screamed out loud. "Not good! The commotions of those Sound Beasts are too big, and it will disturb the Wings Race for sure. Perhaps they are on the way here. No, I have to go back to inform my father about this."

"Those Sound Beasts do not dare to come here." Shi Yan faintly smiled, "Hmm, let me retrieve the Heaven Flame first. If the Heaven Flame's aura is still there, those Sound Beasts will not act recklessly. If we want to hunt more sound beasts, we should pretend a little bit like this so that they will take the bait."

Clouds of burning fires turned into many flows of light going into the Blood Vein Ring from every corner and were retrieved by the Earth Flame. The burning fires' power on Shi Yan's body also went back into the Blood Vein Ring. His glowing red body quickly recovered and regained its normal state.

Not long after that, there were no burning fires around Shi Yan anymore.

A group of the Sound Beasts on the flank of the Sound Beast Mountain was strangely staring at Shi Yan, but they hesitated to move forward and seemed to know that it wasn't easy to bully Shi Yan.

Lightning struck down around the Sound Beast Mountain. It was unknown why the lightning appeared to get weaker; the giant-dragon-sized lightning now gradually became as small as an arm.

"The formation technique kept getting weaker!" Yi Cu Bi was very astonished. "Abnormal, really strange. Something strange is happening apparently. If not, the Sound Beast Mountain cannot be this weird."

"Shriek shriek shriek."

A shrieking sound echoed from the left of the Sound Beast Mountain. Not long after that, many black points appeared on the left of the Sound Beast Mountain.

"Birdman!"

Shi Yan squinted to have a careful look, and he suddenly screamed out in fear, "No, is this the Wings Race that you have described?"

A bunch of black points in a distance looked like humankind with wings. The differences between them and the others were the wings growing from their backs and a sturdy body shape.

Five guys of the Wings Race had wicked appearances, hooked nose, and cold eyes. They flapped their wings flying out from behind the Sound Beast Mountain towards Shi Yan's place very fast.

"They are the Wings Race's people." Yi Cu Bi nodded with her tightly knitted eyebrows. "Perhaps the commotions of the Sound Beasts have disturbed the Wings Race. Hmm, if even they got astounded, I think the people in the Ancient City might also know about this already; perhaps they are on their way to come here."

Five men of the Wings Race flapped their gray wings, quickly zooming to Shi Yan 's location.

In a short moment, the five men of the Wings Race arrived in front of Shi Yan. They stayed away in the distance, throwing a sharp glance at Shi Yan. Their cold eyes were even more freezing. One of the guys in the lead unfriendly looked at Shi Yan with a bitter smile and said, "Humankind, unexpectedly!" All of these five men of the Wings Race were at the Earth Realm; their gray wings emitted spiritual powers.

Their soul competency seemed feeble; even their spiritual power had not formed yet. They apparently couldn't confine Shi Yan's sea of consciousness in just a blink like Demonic Sound Clan had done.

However, the brain structure of the Wings Race was very special, and it seemed to be able to prevent the invasion of the spiritual powers like a soul isolator. Shi Yan's soul consciousness could not intrude into their brains.

Perhaps the reason that the Wings Race's people encountered difficulties in cultivating their soul power should be related to their particular brain structure. The particular brain structure gave them mighty protection forces that could resist the soul attack of the Demonic Sound Clan, but it also limited them from improving their soul cultivation.

"What about the humankind?" Shi Yan looked calm, dragging a smile out of the corner of his mouth.

Shi Yan was honestly obedient in front of the Demonic Sound Clan because they could confine and control his soul. However, the Wings Race was nothing to Shi Yan although they had a sturdy body and a strong protection against the soul attack, as well as being the enemy of the Demonic Sound Clan.

With the same Earth Realm cultivation base, without using the power of the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame, Shi Yan was confident to be able to defeat those five guys.

"I hate humankind!" The man of the Wings Race forced a cold smile and then asked, "Answer me, how did you come here? How many of your fellows are there? If you don't tell me, I will let you know that venturing into the Wings Race's territory is a fearful thing."

"When did this place become the Wings Race's territory?" Yi Cu Bi coldly shouted.

"Hahaha, even the Ancient City of the Demonic Sound Clan belongs to the Wings Race's territory. Obviously, this place is not an exception." The guy looked arrogant.

"Are you Cu Bi? You wait and see. The Wings Race will conquer

the Demonic Sound Clan soon. Up to this time, you will become my slave. I will favor you. I know the Demonic Sound Clan's body cannot bear such a strong sexual penetration. Don't worry, I will be very gentle with you and will not let you die."

Yi Cu Bi's body slightly shivered. She was lividly angry, looking at that guy with full of hatred.

"Birdman, your mouth stinks!" Shi Yan coldly shouted.

"Damn humankind, what did you call me?"

"Birdman!"

Chapter 244: Wiped out

The face of the Wings Race's man was malignant; his eyes shot out a cold ray of light. A flow of murderous aura slowly spread out from his gray wings all of a sudden. Gently flapping his wings, the man of the Wings Race deliberately moved towards Shi Yan. Sharp wind swords condensed and emitted dazzling splendid light on his way approaching Shi Yan. The wind power hidden inside those swords was very terrifying.

"Stupid humankind, I will make you wish that you would be better dead than alive. The one who insults Han Long doesn't dream to have an easy death."

When the Wings Race's man flapped his wings, each of the sharp wind swords shrieked and flew out, creating many glowing lights in the air flaring up and immediately disappearing.

The other two men of the Wings Race with cold, gloomy eyes were behind him, one on the left and one on the right. They were protecting the man in the middle.

The cultivation base of the three Wings Race's men was at the Earth Realm. The man on the lead named Han Long probably had the cultivation base which was one level higher than the other two, perhaps at the Second Sky of the Earth Realm. His body was very sturdy; his muscles contained vigorous power as if he would immediately turn into a javelin darting toward Shi Yan.

"Good. Come here." Under the attack of those sharp wind swords, Shi Yan beamed out a faint smile; his face didn't show any fear. He screamed out loud before slightly moving his body. His body easily avoided those wind swords as quickly as lightning.

"That's all you have?" Shi Yan didn't even urge the rampage nor the negative powers yet. "If you only have this, you are done."

"Han Long!" Yi Cu Bi's face slightly changed; her eyes were full of

astonishment. "You are Han Long, the son of the Gray Wings Clan's leader?"

"Stupid humankind, you are dead." The man of the Wings Race did not care about Yi Cu Bi; he slowly took a deep breath, seeming to restrain his anger. "I will arrest you, bring you to the Gray Wings Clan and let you suffer the molesting hands of the Lewd Laughing Ape." The other two guys beside him burst into laughter with malicious faces after hearing that.

"You have a special taste I assume. Do you often do it with Lewd Ape?" Shi Yan with a strange face looked like he had just woken up from a long time of consciousness. He clapped his hands and laughed out loud. "You are right. Birdmen are also a hybrid delivered by animals. It is understandable if you do it with the Lewd Ape. I am just too surprised."

"Boom."

An explosion came out from behind the Wings Race's man called Han Long. The flapping speed was getting faster. Like an arrow shot out of a bow, Han Long flew straight towards Shi Yan with a cold face and a hateful look in his eyes.

In the howling wind, the two silver secret treasures on his hand emitted dazzling silver light which contained tremendous, unbreakable ferocious aura. At the same time, muscles on the body of the Wings Race's man expanded, and the mighty profound Qi inside his body also moved faster. Concurrently, Han Long had been irritated completely, determinedly launching one strike to kill Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's eyes slightly squinted. The flows of white-gray smoke slowly flew out from the pores of his entire body. In that mist of smoke, different negative feelings of despair, bloodshed, violence gathered behind him altogether.

A flow of cold, strange, viperous and resentful aura suddenly became denser and more intense. The white-gray smoke quickly

converged and condensed into a terrible furious phantom.

The negative feelings condensed into an entity. Shi Yan had discovered this skillful attacking technique. He made use of the negative feelings floating around in the air, condensing into a phantom which was the mix of reality and illusion. As this phantom contained a lot of negative emotions, it was similar to giving it life.

After the phantom was created, not only did it bring out terrifyingly horrendous forces but it also contained various negative feelings to slaughter enemies, stirring up the enemies' mind and breaking their defensive forces so that the negative feelings could easily absorb into their mind.

"What is it?" As soon as seeing the phantom, the three guys of the Wings Race all screamed out at the same time.

Yi Cu Bi's face slightly changed. She silently moved backward, keeping a distance from the phantom.

The Demonic Sound Clan's soul was unique; Yi Cu Bi's soul competency was profound, and her power sense was thorough. At the moment that the phantom had appeared, she had immediately recognized a weird thing about this phantom. Although many malicious forces gathered inside its body, it also had a lot of emotional movements. This unusual creature with ferocious life was full of bloody murderous desire.

"Break." Shi Yan shouted out loud while lifting his two arms up in the air launching the dazzling Life and Death Seal.

Han Long's silver secret treasure like a giant claw also emitted the sharp silver light dashing towards Dan Yan like real sharp weapons.

However, as soon as Shi Yan launched the Life and Death Seal, the silver lights darting towards him broke into many silver points of light and vanished quickly.

The Life and Death Seal crushed that silver lights like cutting dry plant stems, and it then continued lunging straight towards Han Long's chest. Han Long's face changed dramatically; his sturdy body ceased in the air and quickly flew away. The tremendous, profound Qi gathered inside his body. He flapped his wings very fast; howling winds burst and formed a visible flow of whirlwind.

The Life and Death Seal kept dashing and piercing that whirlwind impetuously. Boisterous explosive sounds continually reverberated; that whirlwind went off completely and quickly disappeared.

"Kill him!" Han Long's eyes were like a poisonous snake, staring at Shi Yan. As soon as the whirlwind vanished, Han Long quickly stepped backward. The other two men of the Wings Race rapidly approached Shi Yan, one on the left, and one on the right. After having moved back to avoid the aftershocks of the Life and Death Seal's explosion, Han Long continued to dart toward Shi Yan, emitting a ferocious murderous aura.

"Shi Yan, he is the son of the Gray Wings Clan's leader. You, you..." Yi Cu Bi couldn't help but scream out loud trying to stop Shi Yan from fighting with him.

"Go!" Shi Yan didn't even bother to throw her a glance. He stretched his hand pointing to Han Long. The giant phantom hovering about behind him suddenly flew out, extending its giant claws, showing its fangs, approaching Han Long and sinking its fangs into him.

"Boom."

Many flows of glowing burning fires suddenly inflamed in his palms, wrapping around his fingers like a worm twisting.

"Let burn your feather first." Shi Yan swung his hand. A flame flew out from his hand, rolling toward the two men of the Wings Race who were heading to him.

"He is the son of the Gray Wings Clan's leader. Shi Yan, there is no use in killing him. Forget it. We should leave now." Di Cu Bi shouted.

"You moron, you cannot live!"

Under the phantom's attack, Han Long was still idiotic; he grinned and said, "Who insults me will have to wish to be dead than alive."

"Birdman is Birdman, limited intelligence." Shi Yan shook his head; his eyes were cold. When he flickered his consciousness, the phantom threw itself on Han Long and spread out its violent negative forces covering Han Long's body in a blink.

"Hiss hiss hiss."

A heart-rending scream rose up. The Heaven Flame had touched the two men of the Wings Race, the burning fires burned up the gray wings on their back. Both of them dreadingly shouted in panic; all of the forces on their bodies gradually disappeared.

"No trouble in the future if you all die!"

The intense burning fires like masses of clouds suddenly changed direction, flying towards the three men of the Wings Race. When Yi Cu Bi screamed out in fear, the Heaven Flame had already wrapped them up.

The phantom quietly returned next to Shi Yan and gradually vanished.

Being burned by the burning fires, the three men of the Wings Race didn't have a chance to scream. In just a few seconds, their bodies were burnt to ashes, dispersing with the wind. None of their spiritual auras remained.

Shi Yan was surprised. He closed his eyes to sense for a while before shaking his head regretfully, thinking that he should just use only a small part of the Heaven Flame to fight next time; otherwise, there would be nothing left for him to take.

Ashes of those men dispersed and vanished. Just like that, the three men of the Wings Race disappeared from Shi Yan's sight.

Yi Cu Bi's infatuating eyes were still full of panic. She horribly looked at the ashes scattering everywhere and suddenly felt chilled.

"Roar roar."

Inside the Sound Beast Mountain ahead, the Sound Beasts instantly howled altogether as soon as they saw the Heaven Flame. Many Sound Beasts had gone out of the Sound Beast Mountain before the Heaven Flame's appearance. However, When the roars and howls reverberated, they all trembled and quickly ran back into the Sound Beast Mountain.

The high-level Sound Beasts could feel the destructive power of the Heaven flame. They roared and howled to call their descendants to avoid Shi Yan's Heaven Flame.

In a short time, all of the Sounds Beast had already retrieved.

On the Sound Beasts' Mountain flank, the Sound Beasts with firm bodies displayed panic and horror looks, staring at Dan Yan from a distance. Apparently, those Sound Beasts were frightened as they knew the danger of the Heaven Flame.

"You, you killed Han Long. Why did you kill Han Long?" Yi Cu Bi mumbled with a confused face. She said in shock, "Han Long was the son of the Gray Wings Clan's leader. The Gray Wings Clan is one of the three branches of the Wings Race. The head of gray Wings Clan has been very combative and always covered his men's weaknesses. When he finds out that Han Long has died, he definitely will get crazily mad."

"All three of them died, who will be the bearer of the bad news? No one."

Shi Yan smiled.

"That guy had wanted to kill me. Of course, I could not just let

them kill me without doing anything. Their death was not too messy. Hmm, if I stay here, the Sound Beasts on the Sound Beast Mountain will not come out for this moment. Maybe we should move away and wait for the Sound Beasts to come down. We will then continue to kill them?"

"Hope so." Yi Cu Bi wasn't sure.

"The Wings Race have a pour soul cultivation. He will find out that Han Long has been dead, but he cannot know who has killed him. I hope he will not know the cause of Han Long's death. Otherwise, not only will you get trouble but also will our tribe have to suffer his anger."

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

The sound of flapping wings suddenly came up from a distance from behind the Sound Beast Mountain. This time, there were many flapping sounds in the air, which meant that many people of the Wings Race were coming.

"Go, quick!" Yi Cu Bi's face changed. She held Shi Yan and flew away, heading towards the Giant Stone Ancient City.

Chapter 245: Give me a reason.

Many Gray Wings Clan's people quickly appeared where Shi Yan and Yi Cu Bi had just left. After arriving, a group of them looked around from east to west, seeming to search for something.

One of them took out a dark green crystal pearl and extracted a drop of blood onto that ball. The crystal pearl slowly emitted a green ray of light. Many beams of Han Long's spirit aura gathered from the scattering ashes in the air and went into the pearl.

The face of the guy from the Gray Wings Clan changed dramatically and said, "Han Long is dead."

All of Gray Wings Clan's people there crazily roared altogether and quickly scattered to search for the murderer.

Behind the Sound Beast Mountain, in the Gray Wings Clan's territory.

There were many strange wooden huts on ancient tree trunks. The Gray Wings Clan's people were cultivating inside those huts.

Behind a big ancient tree trunk was a ravine overwhelmed with howling winds. Inside that ravine, an elderly man of the Gray Wings Clan whose appearance similar to Han Long's was silently watching an appealing figure who was sitting in the middle of the shrieking winds. His cold eyes sparked lustful look.

The figure with the sexy body was full of dense wind aura, and she was wearing a red fire armor. She was sitting in the middle of the ravine. A lot of the wind forces were quickly gathering, becoming the restorative medicine for her Martial Spirit inside of her body. It elated her mind and enlightened her glowing face.

"Miss He, you have cultivated very well. The wind forces of the Heaven Wind Valley are adamant. Normally, only I can cultivate it. Now I give it to you." The elderly man of the Gray Wings Clan fixed his torch-lighting eyes on that beautiful body for a long while

and mumbled, "You are the gift from Heaven. The Wind Martial Spirit in your body is the best thing for me to cultivate the wind forces successfully. Wait until you gather enough the wind forces, I will take it to improve my cultivation Realm, exceeding the other two guys..."

Inside the ravine, the wind forces were wrapping He Qing Man's body. Her beautiful eyes slowly opened, glancing at the elderly man over there, and then closing again right away. Her face displayed a dreary look.

"Tinkling tinkling."

A strange sound suddenly resounded from the chest of the elderly man. He winced and hauled a dark green crystal pearl from his chest, and then annoyedly asked, "What happened?"

"Young Master, young Master is dead." The crystal pearl transmitted a hasty anxious voice.

"What?" The elderly man's face suddenly changed with green veins prominently bulging. He looked very furious. He irritatingly shouted, "Say it again?"

"Young master is dead; his soul has scattered. Please spare my life, Master. We did not know why it happened." The voice from the crystal pearl was anxiously worried.

The elderly man of the Gray Wings Clan could not bear it anymore, he raised his head up to the sky, deliriously shouting. Wailing wind and furious energy gathered all together, going into the crystal pearl.

The crystal pearl projected dazzling green rays of light all of a sudden. The green light continually condensed, forming an image.

Numerous green fibers sketched out Shi Yan's frigid face in that green image. The more energy that poured in, the clearer Shi Yan's appearance became.

"Humankind!" The elderly man shouted out loud. Sharp winds

burst strongly, pulling up all the surrounding ancient trees trunks and scattering wooden pieces in the air.

He Qing Man could sense his aggressive movements. She couldn't help but open her eyes, seeing Shi Yan's face sketched out by the green lights in the cave.

Her eyes flared up an astonished look, and she almost shouted. She quickly closed her eyes, pretending to see nothing.

"He Qing Man, do you know this humankind?" The elderly man of the Gray Wings Clan breathed heavily; his bold face turned towards He Qing Man and shouted.

Opening her eyes again, He Qing Man attentively gazed at Shi Yan's illusory image appearing in a green light screen for a while before speaking, "He is our target. We have entered the Chasm Battlefield to hunt him down. I don't know where he is now. My group has separated since we have arrived here, and no one knows of one another's location."

"I will make him wish to be dead than alive." The elderly man took a deep breath. He now looked like an irritated beast roaring terrifyingly.

"How can you survive now ?!" He Qing Man beamed out a miserable smile, slightly shaking her head, starting to worry for Shi Yan's life.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

A beautiful figure dragging a person along was quickly dashing towards the Giant Ancient Stone City.

"Cu Bi!" A great shout suddenly came up from inside of the Giant Ancient Stone City.

"Father!" Yi Cu Bi screamed out in surprise. She slowed down her speed, approaching the direction of her father. "Do you feel the strange things of the Sound Beast Mountain?"

Yi Tian Mo nodded; his ashy gray eyes flared up a strange light. "Cu Bi, has this little rascal captured any beasts?"

"He has killed three Child Devils." Yi Cu Bi said.

"What?" Yi Tian Mo's face changed but then quickly turned back to normal. He looked at Yi Cu Bi for a while before asking, "Finally, what has happened?"

"His body has the Heaven Flame. He also killed the son of the Gray Wings Clan's leader." Yi Cu Bi said with a miserable smile.

The Yi Tian Mo's skinny body slightly shivered. His terrified look was hard to cover up. He helplessly looked at Shi Yan with a shocked face. "The Heaven Flame, Heaven Flame, I can't believe it is the Heaven man..."

After mumbling for a moment, Yi Tian Mo suddenly dragged a strange half-smile out of his mouth. "Shi Yan, I can't believe you have the Heaven Flame. That's very good!"

"Father!" Yi Cu Bi shouted loudly. "Don't kill him; he has saved my life. Without him, the Child Devils could have killed me."

Yi Cu Bi understood her father very well. Yi Tian Mo hadn't said nor smiled earlier, but once he showed that strange smiley face, it meant that he wanted to kill someone.

"No need to mention that he has saved your life, even if he saved mine, he still must die." Yi Tian smiled while shaking his head. His ashy gray eyes stared at Shi Yan. "His existence put the entire Demonic Sound Clan into a deadly danger. We have been deported to this place where we don't have any icy secret treasures to defend ourselves. Once he reaches the level where he is not afraid of our soul attacks anymore, he is the genuine danger for the Demonic Sound Clan."

"You cannot kill me." Shi Yan vigorously shouted all of a sudden.

"What?" Yi Tian Mo's face had a strange cheerful look; his eyes became darkened. "Tell me, what reason do you have that stops me

from killing you? I know you are smart, you will not again mention that you have saved my daughter."

"I can help you deal with the Sound Beasts."

"This reason is not enough. Your existence is more dangerous than the Sound Beasts."

"The Sound Beast Mountain has changed, and thus many Sound Beasts might run out of the Sound Beast Mountain, including the Child Devils. They can destroy the Demonic Sound Clan." Shi Yan frowned and said.

"If we hide inside the Ancient City, the Sound Beasts can hardly do anything. They will return to the Sound Beast Mountain after a while. You cannot convince me." Yi Tian Mo continued shaking his head; the cheerful face remained unchanged.

"The formation technique on the Sound Beast Mountain has weakened. There will be a significant change. This time, the Sound Beasts on the Sound Beast Mountain will be probably more aggressive than before." Yi Cu Bi could not help but scream. "Father, let's wait for a while. Let see the commotions of the Sound Beasts. If we keep him alive, we can have solutions to deal with the Sound Beasts."

"This reason is still not enough." Yi Tian Mo continued shaking his head; the cheerful face was still there; the murderous intention wasn't gone yet.

"I can help you deal with the other leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan. I have heard that there are another two leaders like you. Think again, if you control me and keep me alive, you will have incredible support to oppress the other two leaders." Shi Yan suddenly became lucid. He immediately opened his mouth just right before Yi Tian Mo took actions.

The cheerful look on Yi Tian Mo's face disappeared. His eyes flared up many strange rays of light; he was deep in thought with

the somber face, considering the pros and cons.

Not long after that, Yi Tian Mo nodded his head and said, "I provisionally shall not kill you, but you cannot let any other people see the Heaven Flame at any cost."

"Understood." Shi Yan hastily nodded.

"Swoosh."

Not far from there, some figures were flying over, breaking the speed barrier in the air. There appeared that many people of the Demonic Sound Clan were approaching the Sound Beast Mountain's direction from the Ancient City.

"Cu Bi, you bring him back first, I'll go to the Sound Beast Mountain." Yi Tian Mo knitted his eyebrows while instructing his daughter.

Yi Cu Bi nodded, grabbing Shi Yan and quickly walking towards the Ancient City. On the way, Shi Yan quietly observed everywhere and realized that many high-level warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan were advancing towards Sound Beast Mountain. The two flows of soul movements among those warriors were too powerful that even Shi Yan had to be frightened. These two flows of soul movements flashed up and quickly disappeared from Shi Yan's soul consciousness.

"The two leaders, Ka Ba and Ya Meng, are also going there." Yi Cu Bi explained to Shi Yan. "They are like my father, the leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan. They are very dangerous. The abnormality of the Sound Beast Mountain has apparently astounded them as well."

"Are they running towards the Sound Beast Mountain? Are they not afraid of being attacked by the Sound Beasts?" asked Shi Yan, a bit surprised.

"Both Ka Ba and Ya Meng have very high-level cultivation base. Except for the high-level Child Devils, almost none of the Sound

Beasts can hurt them. If they want to run, even the Child Devils cannot catch them." Yi Cu Bi replied.

"Understood."

In the Giant Stone Ancient City.

Inside an imposing structural building, Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, Qu Yan Qing, Pan Zhe and other warriors were confined in a secret chamber. Ya Meng's guards regularly came and took a single warrior away each time. Not long afterward, a mournful voice could be heard from a chamber next door.

At this moment, Cao Zhi Lan and Pan Zhe, the new outstanding talents of the Endless Sea, were wearing gloomy faces and losing their previous proud look.

"Cao Zhi Lan, your Spirit God Martial Spirit can't deactivate the soul formation technique?" A warrior of the Penglai Divine asked Cao Zhi Lan with a hopeless face.

Cao Zhi Lan was sitting cross-legged; she slightly shook her head and reluctantly said, "The soul knowledge of this pagan tribe is much more developed than ours. If there is any change in my Spirit God Martial Spirit, they can immediately sense and respond to it. Not to mention that my soul is in confinement, even if it was not, I would not dare to use it."

"So, we just wait here to die?" This warrior mumbled.

"Currently, I do not have any solutions. However, Shi Yan has not been captured; he might have solutions. Anyway, his body has some special powers; maybe he can survive here?!"

"Him?" Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing all surprisingly screamed out with astonished faces.

Chapter 246: Five Devils Condensation Refining

In a big stone chamber with dim light.

Shi Yan held his breath and meditated. His eyes sparked a subtle electric light which looked splendidly bright in the dark stone room.

When his fingers gently fondled the Blood Vein Ring, his spirit was immersed in it. The world inside there gradually appeared within his mind.

As he spread out his mind, he felt that the Blood Vein Ring seemed endless, quiet, empty, and immense.

In this strange space, there were three particular areas; one was so cold that it could freeze one's marrow, one was sweltering and dazzling while the rest was unpredictably extraordinary.

The Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the giant Fire Crystal Sword stayed in three separate areas, being tied up by the Blood Vein Ring inside of its anomalous space. Dubious gray hazes surrounded the Ice Cold Flame, preventing it from releasing the ice powers.

Even when Shi Yan's spirit called for it, the Ice Cold Flame had no strange reaction.

Opposite to the scorching dazzling light, the miraculous soul appeared clearer. After having obtained the sun power of the Sun Refined Spirit, the Earth Flame was going through a fast transformation; its soul gradually formed and had a self-controlled consciousness.

When Shi Yan's spirit concentrated on the other area, and his consciousness went through many layers of obstacles, he realized that the Earth Flame's area was full of burning fires and flooded with light and terrifying heat. If it wasn't because of the Sun power

that had tempered his body and soul nor the scorching Sun power inside his consciousness, his soul consciousness could have been burnt to ashes already.

The burning fires burst up, radiating dazzling light and releasing great heat as if it had to burn everything down completely.

"You... you come here..." Suddenly, a fragile stream of consciousness slowly went into Shi Yan's spirit from those fires.

In the dark stone chamber, Shi Yan's eyes shot out the electric light; his body slightly shivered. The Earth Flame sent out a complete message for the first time. It meant that its form would be shaped for real in a short period. It also meant that from now, it was able to communicate conveniently with him like the Ice Cold Flame.

"You, finally you can send out a clear message. That's superb. No need to rush; continue cultivating. You and I can have a real conversation soon." Shi Yan beamed out a smile from the corner of his mouth and gently fondled the Blood Vein Ring, sending out his message.

"I... I will quickly, can quickly transform to be like it..." The Earth Flame's voice was like a baby practicing to speak. Although it was not fluent, Shi Yan still could understand it.

"Good, I am waiting for that day."

Inside the Blood Vein Ring, the Earth Flame's spirit violently vibrated in the middle of the burning fires. When Shi Yan's spirit observed inside of the Blood Vein Ring, he could see each thin stream of burning fires twisted and condensed, weaving into a mysterious magnetic field.

Burning fire fibers like human brain nerves became the life source of the Earth Flame.

After having received Shi Yan's consciousness, the life of the Earth Flame twisted and refined faster through some miraculous

ways.

Each thread of the fire stream of souls was like a lively animal, dancing inside of the magnetic field and emitting firepower that made people's souls trembled.

Shi Yan's mood was very good while he slowly retrieved his consciousness.

Although he could not communicate with the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame's transformation made him very happy. With the current transforming speed, the Earth Flame would have a complete form in no time, turning into the Heaven Flame like the Ice Cold Flame.

After finishing this step, the Earth Flame would be considered the genuine Heaven Flame. Absorbing the sun power of the Sun Refined Spirit had apparently helped its transformation.

Inside the dark stone chamber, Shi Yan was sitting cross-legged and breathing regularly. He was in deep thought. A moment later, he sent his spirit into the Blood Vein Ring again to observe the huge sword's hilt in the Blood Vein Ring.

The gigantic sword was like a brilliant fire crystal. There were many closing evil eyes on the sword. The sword hilt had lost all its former splendid power since it had entered the Blood Vein Ring. It did not release any special powers; the former attacking power that easily destroyed the others' souls also completely disappeared.

The gigantic sword hovered about in the Blood Vein Ring. It seemed to have turned to a regular big sword. Shi Yan's spirit observed for a while but still could not find anything special.

His consciousness could hardly connect with the sword. He wanted to take the gigantic sword's hilt out of the Blood Vein Ring to observe it carefully, but he realized that he could not do so.

Although he had worn the Blood Vein Ring on his finger, he still did not have a profound understanding about this ring nor

command the Blood Vein Ring until now. He realized that he was always in a passive mode with the Blood Vein Ring and let the Blood Vein Ring lead him around by the nose. He didn't like this feeling but could do nothing.

A ray of light flashed up from a corner of the Blood Vein Ring. The light was not dazzling nor as glowing as the Earth Flame's light.

Shi Yan had wanted to retrieve his spirit out of the Blood Vein Ring before detecting the existence of the light as well as layer upon layer of forces of the formation technique from that light.

While being shocked, Shi Yan suddenly remembered that after having entered the Earth Realm, he hadn't continued to break the protection wall of the Blood Vein Ring.

Inside of the Blood Vein Ring had a peculiar memory soul. Both the Rampage Martial Technique and the Life and Death Seal came from the Blood Vein Ring. Every time the forces in his body increased to a specific level, he would receive a beneficial martial technique from the Blood Vein Ring.

After contemplating for a while, Shi Yan retrieved the spirit from the Blood Vein Ring. In the stone chamber, Shi Yan quietly hauled out the Refine Pill, swallowed it, and started to restore his profound Qi.

After regulating for a long time, until he felt his energy peaked, he suddenly launched powers.

The massive profound Qi like a flood breaking dikes poured into the Blood Vein Ring aggressively and became a powerful light beam. With its highest speed, it went straight to the hard protection wall inside of the Blood Vein Ring.

"Thud."

An echoing sound from inside of the Blood Vein Ring came out; the solid protection wall shattered into pieces all of a sudden.

A wave of memory with different symbols dispersed out from behind that protection wall like a surging tide, jumping into Shi Yan's sea of consciousness and becoming a memory engraving on his brain without being removed easily.

A bunch of strange symbols in his head congregated and formed a strange Heaven Formation. This formation could gather the negative feelings which were the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind.

The sea of consciousness churned up. These strange symbols slowly flew up in there, causing some abnormal changes.

At the same time, Shi Yan's body slightly trembled. The negative feelings from the meridians of his entire body started to be uncontrollable, spreading out vigorously and assembling in the sea of consciousness.

The soul consciousness gathering in the sea of consciousness was stirred up. Strange symbols from the Blood Vein Ring started to absorb the soul consciousness' forces in the sea of consciousness and engraved on Shi Yan's spirit.

Gradually, those symbols turned to be five tiny transparent figures whose appearances were exactly identical to Shi Yan's. Each of those dwarves was immersed in the sea of consciousness, absorbing the power in the sea of consciousness. Shi Yan's living aura gradually developed inside of the transparent dwarves as if they were given some Life Seal.

Inside the dark stone chamber, Shi Yan's eyes were sparkling like twinkling stars in the sky. Different uncontrollable negative feelings spread out and then flew towards the sea of consciousness very fast. Those flows of negative emotions rolled into the five transparent dwarves.

Despair, fear, bloodshed, greed, and resentment were five different kinds of feelings. Once they poured into the sea of consciousness, they immediately dispersed. The five feelings divided into five flows which were like separated long fibers going

into each different transparent dwarf.

Shi Yan was sitting motionlessly and suffering everything passively.

After the five feelings of Despair, Fear, Bloodshed, Greed, and Resentment poured into these five transparent dwarves, the dwarves' appearances gradually transformed.

The skin of the dwarf with Despair became dark blue; his shoulders started to be covered with Pangolin' scales; two extra arms grew from underneath of his two original arms.

The dwarf absorbing Fear grew a peculiar sharp horn. His two eyes became a strange silver white.

The dwarf with Bloodshed had blazing red eyes, an angry face, and a long thin fang growing out from the two corners of his mouth.

The dwarf absorbing Greed closed his two legs while a tail grew behind him at his waist.

The eyes of the Resentment dwarf became deep blue and cold. The black veins wrapped its entire body; its nails were like sharp knives.

Different uncontrollable emotions flooded into the sea of consciousness and poured into the five dwarves. After that, the five dwarves slowly transformed, becoming more and more devilish with full of the wicked aura covering their bodies, making others' spirits frightened and panic.

Shi Yan did not know what had happened; he just could passively accept everything. He then gradually realized that although his living energy had been instilled into the five dwarves in the sea of consciousness, they became more and more different from him and almost identical with the phantom which he had condensed and refined by making use of the negative forces.

Shi Yan was frightened.

Devil of Despair, Devil of fear, Devil of bloodshed, Devil of greed, and the Devil of resentment.

The five dwarves' appearances became more and more ferocious. From each flow of his bobbing consciousness in the sea of consciousness, the ancient symbols appeared again, went into the five dwarves' bodies flaring up and then disappearing right away. It seemed to check and identify these five dwarves.

Those Devils were condensed and refined by the negative feelings.

Shi Yan's body was agitated. A stream of spirit light appeared in his head. For a moment, different kinds of profound Upanishads related to the formation technique of the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind started to respond from the five Dwarves. These Upanishads also poured into Shi Yan's head, becoming a part of his memory.

In a blink, Shi Yan seemed to master everything about these five Dwarves. He had found a way to control them and figured out exactly how to use them.

All kinds of negative feelings kept flowing out non-stop from inside the and quickly pouring into the five dwarves. After they had received the feelings of Despair, Bloodshed, Fear, Greed, and Resentment, the ferocious auras on their bodies were getting stronger and stronger that could violently intimidate others' spirits.

"Get out!" Shi Yan shouted out loud.

The five dwarves in the sea of consciousness instantly disappeared. Right after that, five illusory ten-meter-tall Devil images reappeared behind Shi Yan. These were the five Devils of Despair, Bloodshed, Fear, Greed, and Resentment in his sea of consciousness.

Chapter 247: He is very special

"Roam Roam."

Outside the Giant Stone Ancient City, grunts and growls of the Sound Beasts regularly reverberated from a thick and immense forest.

A bunch of the Demonic Sound Clan's people stayed inside of the city without daring to leave the City because they were afraid of being attacked by the beasts outside.

In the past few days, the Sound Beasts had been fleeing away from the Sound Beast Mountain because the formation technique had been weakened, messing everything up.

There were also the sixth or seventh level Child Devils among those Sound Beasts. The Child Devil was the natural enemy of the Demonic Sound Clan. The Child Devil's existence deliriously frightened the Demonic Sound Clan's pagans. Once hearing the bitter cries of a Child Devil, they instantly felt scared out of their wits.

In the Giant Stone Ancient city, the old dark gray lava rock wall was full of different Beasts drawings. Luminescent stones were encrusted into the wall, emitting sparkling light.

A powerful flow of energy engulfed the entire City. This flow of energy always existed like big surging waves that impetuously intimidated the Sound Beasts.

The Defensive Formation technique covered the Ancient City, preventing all the Sound Beasts from intruding from the outside. They could only stay outside the City howling without daring to invade the Ancient City.

On the Ancient Stone City's Wall, Yi Tian Mo was standing straight in a blue tunic; his face was somber. He, together with the other two leaders Ya Meng and Ka Ba of the Demonic Sound Clan,

were looking far away.

Yi Cu Bi and Ya Ji were behind the three leaders, also looking out toward the same direction with a serious manner.

Outside the city, the Sound Beast were flying around, their growls and shrieks reverberated nonstop. Yin aura was hovering about without dispersing. All kinds of Sound Beasts surrounded the Ancient City, seeming to wait for something.

The three leaders were standing on the City's Wall, discussing with each other in a low tone. They didn't seem optimistic.

"Cu Bi, where is the human warrior you have captured?" Ya Ji asked while holding some green orbs in his hands. There were faint vibrating souls inside those pearls. The pearls collided with one another in his hand and constantly flashed out a little of strange spirit aura.

"How is this related to you?" Yi Cu Bi slightly knitted her eyebrows as she didn't seem pleased to answer him. She turned around, glancing at another girl nearby and asking her, "Xue Fei, your father is very familiar with the Sound Beast Mountain as your people often go there. Do you know why the formation technique of the mountain has been weakening?"

Xue Fei was the sole daughter of the leader Ka Ba. She had glowing snow-white skin, picturesque eyelashes, and deep eyes. She was also an exceptionally beautiful girl of the Demonic Sound Clan.

"I don't know. The formation technique keeps getting weaker incomprehensibly. It is strange this time. Many of the Child Devils have run out of the Sound Beast Mountain, surrounding this place for many days already. They don't seem to leave here soon. What do they want to do afterward?" Xue Fei shook her head, indicating that she did not know about it.

"Cu Bi, that human warrior is dangerous. You should trade him."

The pearls in Ya Ji's hand collided continually; the weak spirit vibration circulated inside of the pearls.

"I have taken the captured human warriors' souls and used a secret technique to create and refine these Yin Pearls. They are very useful for our soul cultivation. If you me that guy, these Yin Pearls are yours."

"Ya Ji, since when did you become so generous?" Xue Fei was curious, looking at Ya Ji and asking with surprise. "You are willing to exchange these pearls just because of one human warrior. Is he very special?"

"The warriors that I have captured have been hunting that guy down. Unexpectedly, he is not scared of them; it appeared that his body has some secrets. Hmm, I think he is a little special."

Xue Fei noticed that Cu Bi still didn't want to exchange, and thus she guessed that Cu Bi might also know something special about Shi Yan. She wanted to clarify more. "Is it true, Cu Bi? As you have captured him for long, you should have realized something special about him?"

"There is nothing to discover." Yi Cu Bi coldly said.

Ya Ji smiled and apparently didn't believe her. "Let's do this. You come to my place, and I can let you choose five human warriors. I will use those five warriors to exchange for that guy. What do you think?"

"Ya Ji, you are so annoying." Yi Cu Bi's face was uncomfortable.

Ya Ji coldly snorted; his eyes beamed out a cold and displeased ray of light.

"Roam Roam."

At this moment, the angry howls of the Sound Beasts resounded from far deep inside of the forest outside the ancient city.

"Swoosh swoosh."

The Sound Beasts were besieging a Birdman with five or six-meter long gray wings. It shrieked and flapped his wings flying away in fear.

Under the violent attack of the Sound Beasts, the elderly man of the Gray Wings Clan was not scared at all. His body projected dazzling wind blades, making made the Sound Beasts ward off. He daringly stormed into the Ancient City of the Demonic Sound Clan and arrogantly walked on the walls of the City.

The defensive formation technique on Ancient City's walls of Demonic Sound Clan strangely shrank a little bit when his figure appeared, letting him freely enter the Ancient City.

"Duo Long ge, what brings you here?" Ya Meng raised his head with full of white hair laughing out loud and then clasped his hands towards the patriarch of the Gray Wings Clan from a distance. "We are discussing if we should visit the Gray Wings Clan. It is unexpected that Duo Long-ge already came here first. That is very good."

Yi Tian Mo's ashy gray eyes flashed up a stream of worry. He secretly exchanged a glanced with Yi Cu Bi.

Yi Cu Bi was talking to Ya Ji, Xue Fei. As soon as she saw her father's signal, her faces slightly changed. She secretly nodded without letting anyone notice and then spoke to Xue Fei and Ya Ji, "I have something to do, I am leaving now."

Upon her words, without waiting for Ya Ji's and Xue Fei's reaction, she instantly leaped up, and her slender body disappeared in a blink.

Duo Long, the patriarch of the Gray Wings Clan, was staring at Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo, and Ka Ba with murderous eyes. He shouted, "I've heard that you have captured some human beings?"

"That's right." Ya Meng's face looked astonished. "Some human beings have appeared in the forest near here earlier without any

known reasons. We have captured and confined them. Why do you concern about these human beings? Does your Gray Wings Clan also want to use humankind's souls to refine something?"

"Bring out all those warriors; I am looking for someone." Duo Long's eyes like ferocious poisonous snakes shot out the malignant light. "Han Long my son, has been killed by a human being. I want to crush his bones to ashes, making him suffer all sorts of painful tortures."

"What?" Ya Meng, Ka Ba, and Yi Tian Mo couldn't help but yell; their faces looked terrified.

"Ok, I know what to do." Ya Meng nodded, understanding that this matter was serious. He turned to Ya Ji and ordered, "Bring all human warriors here."

Ya Ji bent his body and left quickly.

"Yi Tian Mo, I have heard that you've also captured one human warrior. Should you also...?". Ya Meng looked at Yi Tian Mo.

"Yi Feng, you go back and bring that human here." Yi Tian Mo didn't say much; he commanded a young man who was standing not far away from him. Yi Feng also quickly left.

"Duo Long ge, is it true that many Sound Beasts were invading into the Gray Wings Clan' territory?" Ka Ba suddenly asked.

"Only your area is in danger. Not many Sound Beasts appeared in our area; it is easy to wipe them out." Duo Long's face was cold when he replied. It seemed that he didn't want to talk about anything before taking his revenge.

Ka Ba wanted to ask something, but when seeing Duo Long's cold face, he smirked and stopped asking.

Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo did not say anything more either; they all wore a strange face while waiting in silence.

Not long after that, Ya Ji and other men of the Demonic Sound

Clan used several beasts to pull the big cage imprisoning Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, and the other warriors.

Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, Pan Zhe, and Qi Yang Qing were sitting at a corner of the cage. Their faces kept changing while they were quietly observing the Demonic Sound Clan and Duo Long of the Gray Wings Clan.

In the past few days, their servants had been taken away one by one and disappeared completely.

They understood that Ya Ji's people had already killed those men who had been taken away. Although Cao Zhi Lan did not dare to use her Spirit God Martial Spirit, she still vaguely knew those men's souls had been extracted from their bodies and refined into a special cultivation medicine for the Demonic Sound Clan.

After Cao Zhi Lan had disclosed what she had detected, all of those alive were immersed in despair, starting to feel regretful, thinking that they shouldn't have entered the Chasm Battlefield to hunt Ying Mu and Shi Yan down. They should have let go of it.

Resentment flooded in Duo Long's eyes. He cast his eyes on those captured warriors over and over, shaking his head nonstop.

A dark green crystal orb suddenly emerged in Duo Long's palm. When he slightly flipped his hand, each green circle of light irradiated from the crystal orb.

In the middle of the green light, Shi Yan's appearance like an illusion upside down in the water gradually appeared.

"Shi Yan." Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing, those who were kept inside of the cage, all shouted with fear in their eyes; their spirits were agitated. They immediately knew who Duo Long was looking for; that was the one who put them into this desperate situation.

"That's him!" Ya Ji also shouted.

"Who?" Duo Long clenched his teeth.

"The guy who has been captured by Cu Bi. I used to meet him before". Facing Duo Long's cold eyes, Ya Ji did not dare to lie but quickly said, "He is a little special. Those people I have captured came to this place to hunt him down. However, they couldn't kill him although there are many of them."

"Yi Tian Mo!" Duo Long's body suddenly emitted a tremendous aura. He angrily shouted and screamed out loud. "Bring that guy to me, quick!"

Ashy gray ray of light emerged in Yi Tian Mo's ashy gray eyes. A strange flow of soul exploded in his head; the profound Qi quickly gathered in his body and rapidly ran through his veins. He was ready to take risks with Duo Long.

"I have already told Yi Feng to bring him out." Yi Tien Mo was in alerting mode; he said with a cold face, "He will bring that guy here shortly. Duo Long, you should not be too agitated."

"Ok, I hope your man can bring that guy here. Otherwise, don't blame me for not having mercy." Duo Long slowly nodded his head while glaring at Yi Tian Mo.

Chapter 248: History repeated

On the wall of the Ancient City, Duo Long emitted murderous aura; his eyes contained maximum resentment. He was waiting in silence.

The three people of Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo stayed beside him without saying anything.

Many of the Demonic Sound Clan's people did not even breathe hard nor dared to look at Duo Long. They all stood straight up.

The overall strength of the Wings Race was stronger than the Demonic Sound Clan's. When fighting with Wings Race in recent years, if it was not because of the internal conflict inside the Wings Race, the Demonic Sound Clan might have had been conquered already.

The Wings Race's build was sturdy; their profound Qi was large and powerful. Moreover, they were not afraid of the invasion from the Demonic Sound Clan's souls. That was their God-given advantage when fighting with Demonic Sound Clan.

Duo Long was the patriarch of the Gray Wings Clan. Although the Gray Wings Clan's strength was not as strong as the Black Wings Clan and the White Wings Clan, they were very combative. Duo Long's Gray Wings Clan was the main force who exhorted the Demonic Sound Clan's enslavement.

Therefore, the Demonic Sound Clan's people hated Duo Long of the Gray Wings Clan the most, but they were scared of him the most as well.

Duo Long coming here was an intimidation for the three people of Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo. For the rest of Demonic Sound Clan, Duo Long could be considered a violent murderer. They didn't know what he would bring about.

In the cage, Cao Zhi Lan's eyes were translucent, sweeping Duo

Long's body and quietly staring at the crystal ball in Duo Long's hand. She was very astonished.

She didn't know what crime Shi Yan had done to Duo Long after all. However, looking at Duo Long's face, she was afraid that Shi Yan would soon receive more bad news than good news this time. This time was not just a game.

Cao Zhi Lan secretly released a sigh. She had hoped that Shi Yan could have attacked the Demonic Sound Clan so that she had a chance to escape from the soul confinement of the Demonic Sound Clan. However, Duo Long's arrival had caused Shi Yan to become a target for everyone. Now everyone considered him a thorn in their eyes. After all, what exactly did he do?

Cao Zhi Lan could imagine that Shi Yan would be soon brought in here being tied up. Duo Long surely would make him suffer all kinds of tortures that he would rather be dead than alive. He would probably be dead even before Cao Zhi Lan's group.

Qu Yan Qing and Pan Zhe had the same thought as hers.

Suddenly, Yi Feng's figure appeared from afar.

Even before arriving here, Yi Feng already screamed out, "Great Master, that guy has escaped. We don't know when he left the city. He should be outside of the city already."

"What?!" Yi Tian Mo couldn't help but scream.

"Which direction?" Duo Long shouted stridently.

"Over there!" Yi Feng pointed towards outside of the city.

"Yi Tian Mo, hope it was not you who did it. Wait until I arrest him, I will question him." Duo Long's body hovered up furiously into the air. "If I know that is was you who did it, don't blame me for having no mercy." Upon his words, Duo Long quickly flew out.

Ya Meng, Ka Ba, Yi Tian Mo and the other high-level warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan were all astonished for a while before

flying towards Duo Long's direction to another Wall of the Ancient City.

On another wall of the ancient city.

Ya Meng, Ka Ba, Yi Tian Mo, Ya Ji and the Demonic Sound Clan's people were looking ahead in the distance.

Flocks of the Sound Beasts, one by one, were coming and assembling at a place in the forest. A sixth level Child Devil kept shrieking, seeming to call for more Sound Beasts.

Counting up, not less than a thousand of Sound Beasts gathered as crowded as a cloud of mosquitos.

Behind a large number of Sound Beasts discharging many flows of dazzling light. From afar, it was possible to see many high-level long-wing warriors of the Wings Race aggressively fighting with the Sound Beasts

A stream of dark red burning fires like a red lightning was now zooming towards the place where numerous Sound Beasts were gathering.

Closely following that stream of red burning fires, Duo Long with full of wind blades around his body churned up the air. He goggled and showed his teeth and then raised his head up to the sky laughing.

"Burning fires' power is powerful! That guy is the one whom you have captured?" Ka Ba stared at the burning fires' figure and carefully observed for a while. His face suddenly changed. "That's not right! Burning, this burning fire is not the ordinary one. It's not. It...., this is the Heaven Flame! It is the Heaven Flame! Yi Tian Mo, you did well."

Yi Tian Mo's eyes sparked a bright ray of light while his body lightly moved swayed. He then said with a sickly smile, "I did not know..."

"You didn't know?" Ya Meng's face was suspicious. "That guy's

body has your soul confinement seal. If you put the formation technique on his body, how could you not know the secrets of his body? Yi Tian Mo, are you not scared of playing with fire? It would burn you to death in the end. You are the leader, and you didn't know the dangerous the Heaven Flame could be to our tribe?"

"I didn't know this moron could have that Heaven Flame." Yi Tian Mo shook his head. "However, don't worry, Duo Long has gone there. No matter if this moron has the Heaven Flame or not, he cannot hide from Duo Long's deadly strike. Things are turning out to be like this, no need to be worried too much."

When Yi Tian Mo was talking, Cu Bi's body quietly reappeared.

"You still claim that it was not related to you?" Ka Ba's face was cold. "Perhaps you have even already known that that moron had killed Duo Long's son. If not, you would not have let Cu Bi free him. Yi Tian Mo, do you know what you are doing? After Duo Long arrests that moron, interrogates him and kills him, he still can hunt you down to take revenge. You know Duo Long's personality very well, why did you do that?"

"I don't know what you are talking about." Yi Tian Mo's face remained unchanged. "Even if Duo Long wants to find me to take revenge, it's not related to you. Why do you care so much?"

"Very good!" Ka Ba turned to Yi Tian Mo nodding his head with a cold face. He suddenly seemed to understand something and thus burst into laughter. "I understand, I got it now. Yi Tian Mo, Yi Tian Mo. It turns out that you already had some intention for us. Hahaha, the Heaven Flame is the Demonic Sound Clan's nemesis. You want to use that guy to control Ya Meng and me? Finally, I understand."

Ya Meng's face changed, slowly nodded his head as well. "So, that's it. Yi Tian Mo, Yi Tian Mo, your plan sounds very good. Regretfully, Duo Long came here and ruined it. You didn't expect that Duo Long could know who had killed his son; that's how your

plan went wrong."

"You guys surely have the gift of speculation." Yi Tian Mo shook his head with his unchanged face.

"You will regret this." Ka Ba forced out a faint smile.

Ya Meng's face got darkened; he apparently discontented with what Yi Tian Mo had done. He seemed to have some secret forethoughts to deal with Yi Tian Mo.

A flow of burning fires spread out from Shi Yan's body; he turned to be a rocket accelerating towards the place where the Sound Beasts were gathering.

After Yi Cu Bi had told Shi Yan that Duo Long had come, Shi Yan immediately ran out of the city with the speed of light.

When he had killed Han Long, he had also killed the other two warriors who accompanied him because he had wanted to prevent the superior man of their tribe from knowing it. He had thought they would have never found out what had happened as he had cleaned up everything. But he was wrong, so he could only flee away and hide.

He knew his advantage. He had the Heaven Flame, and he was not afraid of the Sound Beasts. Therefore, the place where the Sound Beasts gathered was the place for him to hide.

Inside the Sound Beast Mountain.

Shi Yan knew from Cu Bi that there was a large, strong Defensive Technique on the Sound Beast Mountain. This Defensive Technique was isolated from the Sound Beast Mountain. Even the three leaders of the Wings Race could not remove the shelter. Inside of the Sound Beast Mountain was overwhelmed with Sound Beasts, and the sky and earth icy Yin aura was very intense over there. Except for the Sound Beasts, ordinary people's power would decrease if passing through the mountain.

As long as Shi Yan could arrive in the Sound Beast Mountain, he

would not be afraid of the Sound Beasts' attacks with the Heaven Flame inside of his body. The Heaven Flame could burn everything, and thus perhaps it could even destroy the Defensive Technique inside the mountain. The Sound Beast Mountain was dangerous for the other people, but it was the only place that could save him from Duo Long's pursuit.

While the burning fires inside his body were boiling, Shi Yan urged the Electric Shift, quickly dashing towards the place where the sound beasts gathered like lightning.

Almost a thousand of Sound Beasts were assembling and besieging ten people of the Black Wings Clan and the White Wings Clan. There were some sixth or seventh level Sound Beasts among them. These Sound Beasts emitted the yin aura everywhere, creating a layer of gray clouds that could be seen from afar.

Shi Yan was like a rocket shooting towards those Sound Beasts. The yin aura like moving black clouds hit on Shi Yan's face. Shi Yan took a deep breath and instantly felt that his spirit was comfortable and his mind became extremely lucid.

Shi Yan carefully sensed his body for a while with surprised eyes. His body slightly shivered, and his face was full of joy. Three meridians on his chest created a Yin Swirl which was slowly circulating. The Yin Swirl's movement was related to the nearby yin aura. As soon as the Yin Swirl began to circulate, his body also started to absorb the aura proactively.

At the same time, another whirl quietly formed on top of his head. As soon as this whirl appeared, it immediately projected a mighty power.

The surrounding yin aura like a gray cloud, under the attraction of the whirl, quickly flew toward that whirl, becoming the supplement for it, making it bigger and bigger.

Black Formula!

This special martial technique originated from The Three Gods Sect. It could take in a lot of the sky and earth aura. If launching the Black Formula in a dense yin aura area, it would automatically form a whirlwind absorbing all the sky and earth aura of that area and turned it into the Yin Pearl inside of the Yin Swirl.

That year in the Yin Field, Shi Yan had used the Black Formula to resist the yin aura. When having unintentionally urged the Black Formula, he had also subconsciously absorbed all yin aura in the Yin Field.

That scene was still very clear now. Currently, seeing the transformation of the Yin Swirl and a whirl formed on top of the head, Shi Yan suddenly felt that it could happen again.

When his body was still floating around in the air, and the burning fires were running inside of his body, a whirl, which had been condensed and refined by the yin aura, was hovering about on top of his head. The center of the whirl emitted powerful gravity, aggressively gathering aura from everywhere.

In this area, more than one thousand of the Sound Beasts had already recognized some strange changes in the sky and earth. They all resentfully stared at Shi Yan.

From the Wall of the Ancient City far away, the three people of Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo could not believe what was happening. They looked towards Shi Yan's place with their eyes and mouths wide opened.

Chapter 249: Bad things turned out to be good

"Yin Qi Condensation Refining, Yin Condensation Formed Power. What is happening?"

"I don't know. That guy is apparently a human being, how can he have the ability to gather the yin aura for cultivation that is similar to that of the Sound Beasts? Furthermore, his yin gathering speed is even several times faster than the Sound Beasts."

"Humankind cannot have these powers. Even the Demonic Sound Clan cannot aggregate the yin power that quickly. Our bodies cannot suffer that much yin power! After all, who is that guy?"

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan were frightened with their astounded eyes wide open.

At the place where the Sound Beasts were gathering, a middle-aged man of the Black Wings Clan with black wings and a peculiar outward appearance was standing shoulder to shoulder with a beautiful mature lady of the White Wings Clan with snow-white wings. From a distance, they were watching Shi Yan's body being immersed in the intense burning fires and the yin whirl emerging on top of his head.

"Di Shan, the thing emitting from that guy's body is truly the Heaven Flame?" The beautiful lady with snow-white wings asked with a soft melodious voice.

"It is the Heaven Flame!" Di Shan, the patriarch of the Black Wings Clan, replied her; his peculiar eyes flared up a strange beam of light. "First was the defensive technique getting weakened, and now there appears a guy who possesses the Heaven Flame. Perhaps we can get out of this place this time. Yu Rou, we have to prevent that combative Duo Long. I have recognized that this human rascal has the Heaven Flame. According to Duo Long, he should be the

one who has killed Han Long."

"Yeah, we have to deter him, we cannot let anything happen with this little rascal." Yu Rou, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan slightly nodded.

Di Shan, the patriarch of the Black Wings Clan and Yu Rou, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan discussed with each other before quickly leaving.

Many high-level warriors of the Black Wings Clan and the White Wings Clan were currently dealing with the Sound Beasts' siege at the same place where Di Shan and Yu Rou had just left. However, it was not too difficult for them to defeat those beasts.

The number of high-level warriors of the Black Wings Clan and the White Wings Clan was even much more than that of the Gray Wings Clan. They were all outstanding, experienced warriors; their experience in fighting with Sound Beast was incredibly profound. They all had powerful strength.

Facing the Sound Beasts' attack as well as having no support from Yu Rou and Di Shan, they were still very composed.

Ka Ba of the Demonic Sound Clan carefully considered for a while with a somber face before saying, "We need to go over there to see. This little rascal is very special; maybe he is the key for us to get out of this damn place."

"That's right; this guy cannot be dead. If he dies, perhaps we will never be able to get out." After Shi Yan had released the Heaven Flame and implemented the Black Formula to gather the Sky and Earth yin aura, Ya Meng's attitude had marvelously changed. He started to defend Shi Yan's life.

"You aren't afraid of the danger of the Heaven Flame to our tribe now, are you?" Yi Tian Mo secretly smiled.

"This guy's cultivation is only at the Earth Realm; we can still control him. Wait until we get out of this sh*tty place, we will

handle him." Ka Ba coldly said.

"Isn't it so?" Yi Tian Mo smiled. "I know that everyone is curious about the way he gathers the yin aura. Anyway, the Demonic Sound Clan's cultivation has a great relation with the yin aura. If we can have his method of yin condensation, it is indeed a notable improvement for our tribe."

"Uh, this is a major matter of our tribe." Ka Ba said with a low tone.

"What are we waiting for then? We should go now. If Dou Long kills him, we will have nothing." Ya Meng excitedly shouted and quickly flew out. He was not even scared of the Child Devils' threat.

"Yi Feng, Cu Bi, you two stay here and do not leave the Ancient City at any cost." Yi Tian Mo instructed them before following the other two leaders.

The burning fires hovered around Shi Yan's body while the Sky and Earth yin aura revolved above his head. In just a short time, this yin whirl was dozens of times bigger than before.

At this moment, that whirl turned out to be an ordinary one. The yin aura compacted in the air like a giant gray dragon twisting and absorbing the Sky and Earth yin aura nearby at the same time.

More and more Sky and Earth yin aura gathered. The yin power also affected the Heaven Flame on Shi Yan's body. The burning fires inside his body gradually disappeared.

While the yin power had fully covered the place, the twirling thick gray yin layer was still tightly wrapping Shi Yan's body.

It seemed that the Sound Beasts intended to storm towards him because they had realized that his body was heavier and became motionless.

Shi Yan's body quietly hovered about in the air. While the whirl on top of his head pulled his body up with fast speed, it suddenly

ceased one hundred meters above the ground.

The yin whirl had formed, but he couldn't control it. At the moment, Duo Long, the patriarch of the Gray Wings Clan, was still chasing him. Shi Yan wanted to get out of his current state, but he realized that the abnormal change of the Yin Swirls inside his body had been no longer under his control.

Damn the Three Gods Sect!

Shi Yan could not help but curse. He couldn't control both of the Black Formula and the Star Martial Spirit of the Three Gods Sect.

At this critical point of time, the anomaly of the Black Formula and the Star Martial Spirit of the Three Gods Sect could put him in an everlasting perdition.

Like this time.

At this crucial moment, when Duo Long was chasing behind, he couldn't move his body because of the anomaly of the Black Formula. His body was tightly locked in the air. In a short moment when Duo Long arrived, he could easily kill him. The anomaly of Black Formula would cause his death.

Being still in the air, he helplessly tried to stop the Yin Swirls. Regardless of life or death, the Sky and Earth yin aura on top of his head were still rolling into that swirl. Sensible flows of yin power gathered in the center of the Yin Swirls first before slowly pouring into meridians. The three little Yin Pearls inside the Yin Swirls quickly formed.

The three Yin Pearls rapidly fell into meridians as soon as they formed. The icy yin power started to stir up in meridians fast, making the circulation speed of the Yin Swirls and the whirl on top of his head even more quickly.

Shi Yan did not know whether to laugh or cry. The Sky and Earth yin aura in this place were much denser than that in the Yin Exhaustion Land.

In such a short time, the three Yin Pearls had been formed inside of his meridians. If Duo Long were not chasing him, he would have felt that the current change was magnificent. He was so fortunate to be able to make the Black Formula absorb the yin aura from everywhere.

However, Duo Long's pursuit suppressed his excitement. Regardless of how much of the yin aura he gathered this time, once Duo Long arrived, the only option left for him was to die.

According to Yi Cu Bi, Duo Long was at the Supreme of the Sky Realm. It was true to say that one of his legs had stepped to the profound God Realm with the Black Profound Magical Power.

Those with that level could easily kill him. When facing the one with several Realms higher than him, gathering more or less yin aura was not really of much use at this point.

While quietly sensing Heaven and Earth yin aura, Shi Yan could not do anything but wait for Duo Long's arrival.

"Boom."

As soon as Duo Long jumped to a gray cloud layer of yin aura, the two black-white wavy circles violently struck him out.

Duo Long's body was constantly agitated. Being attacked by the two waving circles, he kept moving a hundred meters backward before standing steadily on the ground.

"Di Shan! Yu Rou!" Duo Long was livid with rage, shouting in anger. "Why did you stop me?" It was unknown when Ka Ba, Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo had also quietly appeared there, hundreds of meters behind Duo Long. They all knitted their eyebrow and looked towards Duo Long.

"And you too!" Recognizing the intention of those three people, Duo Long turned his head around looking at them and coldly said, "You want to stop me as well?"

"If you want to kill that little rascal, three of us will unite to stop

you." Ya Meng nodded and replied.

"You dare to confront me!" Duo Long raised his head up to the sky laughing frigidly. He fiercely said. "Dare to mess with Gray Wings Clan. Did you consider the consequences yet?"

"Enough, Duo Long!" Di Shan's voice suddenly rose up, and black lightning emerged immediately after that. Di Shan flapped his wings and appeared in front of Duo Long in a blink.

Yu Rou gently flew over like a feather, appearing behind Di Shan. She unhappily looked at Duo Long and said, "Duo Long, calm down, let's talk. Three of them have good intentions. They are here also because of our two tribes, don't misunderstand them."

Di Shan and Yu Rou, one on the left, one on the right, were blocking Duo Long's approaching way.

Duo Long's expression changed continually. When facing the three people of Ka Ba's group, he could howl or growl whatever he wanted to intimidate them. However, facing Di Shan and Yu Rou, he did not have the same determination. The strength of the Black Wings Clan and the White Wings Clan were stronger than the Gray Wings Clan's. Di Shan's and Yu Rou's abilities were also one level higher than his.

Di Shan was wicked; Yu Rou was insidious. Duo Long understood well their advantages. Him alone against any one of them was not a smart move, not to mention that these two people were on the same side already.

Ka Ba, Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo would obviously stick together. He had to be alert to their unity.

"Why do you protect that little rascal?" Duo Long clenched his teeth and asked. He was gradually cooling down.

"He can bring us out of here. The Heaven Flame in his body could completely burn out the Formation Technique of the Sound Beast Mountain. As you have known, there should be a way for us to get

out of this place inside the Sound Beast Mountain." Di Shan smiled and spoke to Duo Long. "That little rascal will die but not now. Wait until we find a way to get out of here, you then can freely handle that little rascal. But before that, you are not allowed to harm him."

"You all have the same thoughts?" Duo Long looked around.

Yu Rou, Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo all nodded. Everyone agreed with what Di Shan had just said.

"OK, I won't touch him, for now. I hope your judgment is correct." Duo Long said with a dark face after contemplating for a while. Under the pressure of those five people, he could do nothing but agree with them. He nodded and said, "I leave you this place. I will come back to the Gray Wings Clan. If there is any change, let me know. One more thing, you have to give me that little rascal later. I want him alive!

"Hmm, I can do it." Di Shan calmly said.

Duo Long said no more and left with an odd face, instantly disappearing out of others' sight.

"I think we can go see that little rascal now. He is a lovely human being; he brings us a bright light of hope to get out of this place." Yu Rou smiled mesmerizingly.

"Hmm, I know the danger of the Heaven Flame to your Demonic Sound Clan, but I hope you would accept the situations and should not do anything wrong. Otherwise, don't blame me for having no mercy."

The faces of Ka Ba, Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo continually changed. Under scrutinized glare of Yu Rou, they all nodded showing their obedience.

"If we all have agreed with it, let's go over there." After finishing the sentence, Di Shan immediately rushed to Shi Yan's location that was now flooded with the yin aura. The other people closely

followed Shan with full of curiosity about what Shi Yan had done to that area and how it had turned out.

Chapter 250: Casually Response.

Masses of black clouds hovered about without dispersing. The condensation of the nearby Sound Beasts' yin aura had created those clouds.

The Sound Beasts running out from the Sound Beast Mountain brought heavy yin aura along with them because the Sound Beasts' bodies contained the yin aura. The yin aura was the power resource of the Sound Beasts, the most primary source allowing them to survive.

The whirl originated from Shi Yan had a powerful gravitation. The whirl's existence made the yin aura hovering around those Sound Beasts' bodies fly out and then went back to the center of the whirl. After that, the yin aura turned into the yin power absorbing into Shi Yan's body and finally becoming the Yin Pearls on his chest.

The Black Formula was excellent. It unexpectedly had a terrifying power to take in the yin aura from the surrounding Sound Beasts.

In the middle of the black cloud layer, the big whirl was circulating on top of Shi Yan's head and getting bigger and bigger. The gravitation also increased violently.

A lot of yin aura gathering here rolled into the whirl, turning into the pure yin power pouring into the center of the Yin Swirl.

More than one thousand nearby Sound Beasts were showing their fear and insecurities. Even the Sound Beasts at the sixth level could not control the yin aura outside of their bodies, helplessly watching the yin aura flying towards Shi Yan crazily. Thus, those Sound Beasts started to be frightened.

A few of high-level Sound Beasts wanted to storm in and kill Shi Yan instantly while he was absorbing the yin aura. However, as

soon as the high-level Sound Beasts came closer to Shi Yan, they realized that there was the mighty Heaven flame inside of his body.

The Heaven Flame was the nemesis of all Sound Beasts. Although they stayed far away from him, they still could sense the scorching Heaven Flame on Shi Yan's body that was strong enough to incinerate them.

Being terrified by the Heaven Flame, the Sound Beasts that had previously wanted to jump into Shi Yan to kill him instantly moved backward without any hesitation.

The Sound Beasts' devilish growls and howls reverberated in the air; they seemed to be aroused by something. They ignored the Wings Race's pagans and did not dare to come any closer to Shi Yan. Instead, they quickly flew back to the Sound Beast Mountain.

As long as the Sound Beasts came close to Shi Yan, they immediately realized that the yin aura inside of their bodies was uncontrollably spreading out, quickly and quietly gathering at the whirl on top of Shi Yan's head. Those Sound Beasts had a feeling of insecurities. They knew that if they stayed here, their yin aura would be continually decreasing.

Therefore, almost a thousand Sound Beasts had already run away. Just right after Sound Beasts had fled, the Sky and Earth yin aura coming from those Sound Beasts segregated less and less until it stopped. The big whirl hovering around above Shi Yan's head started slowing down. Because less and less yin poured in, it gradually disappeared afterward.

The thick black clouds slowly faded and gradually vanished.

Shi Yan's body also started to descend slowly when the black clouds vanished. Without the black clouds and the Sky Realm cultivation base, he could not maintain the arrogant standing pose in the air. He fell into a thick forest eventually.

"Thud."

Shi Yan fell on the ground. The whirl above his head disappeared without leaving a trace. The yin power staying hidden inside the Yin Pearls of the three Yin Swirls on his chest also fell into the meridians.

At this moment, the meridians on his chest contained six Yin Pearls. The Yin Power inside of the Yin Pearls was terrifying, refreshing his entire body, making him feel comfortable. The Yin Power seemed to affect the Yin Swirls on his chest as well, helping the Yin Swirls be efficient and enhancing the refining speed.

The Yin Swirls had refined all the yin power before they slowly stopped afterward.

Shi Yan had also opened his eyes. As being surrounded by many people, he couldn't help but scream. After calming himself down, he asked with a low tone, "What do you want?"

A strange beam of light flared up in the eyes of the three leaders Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo who all were standing beside him. It seemed that they were overwhelmed with suspicion. On the contrary, Di Shan of the Black Wings Clan and Yu Rou of the White Wings Clan were looking at him interestingly, nodding their heads after seeing him awake.

"Little rascal, your body has the Heaven Flame, doesn't it? Do you know how to use the Heaven Flame?" Yu Rou, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan, was stunning with a smile on her face. Her moderate and melodious voice made others feel very pleasant to hear.

Di Shan squinted slightly; his squinted eyes seemed to see through Shi Yan. Shi Yan didn't feel comfortable with Di Shan's eyes fixing on his body. He could feel that there were unknown forces that inaudibly went into his body, observing everything inside of him.

Shi Yan felt frozen inside; he did not know the others' intentions. He couldn't help but glance at Yi Tian Mo.

Since he had been captured, he and Yi Tian Mo had at least involved in some exchange. He knew for sure that it was Yi Tian Mo's plan when Yi Cu Bi had informed him about Duo Long's arrival soon enough for him to run out of the City. He guessed that Yi Tian Mo didn't want him to die yet.

Therefore, he wanted to find out some useful information from Yi Tian Mo's expression.

"You would be better to answer honestly. It is regarding whether you will be alive or dead." Yi Tian Mo secretly nodded and calmly said. "This is Yu Rou, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan. This is Di Shan of the Black Wings Clan. The strength of these two clans is much more comparable to the one of the Gray Wings Clan. Thanks to their help, you were able to get away from Duo Long this time."

Shi Yan was frightened; he quietly stood up clasping his hands towards Di Shan and Yu Rou and respectfully said, "Thank you."

"No need to be grateful. Little rascal, you have not answered my question yet." Beautiful Yu Rou beamed out a faint smile.

Shi Yan calmly glared at her; fear appeared on his face. This Yu Rou lady had a charming look, a snow-white skin, and an appealing build. Also, she had remarkably snow-white wings. That amazing look could have strongly mesmerized other people. When she revealed her beautiful smile, her body radiated modesty which no men could resist.

Shi Yan was not an exception. He kept staring at Yu Rou; his eyes changed from lucid to passionate. He gradually felt so close to Yu Rou; he felt that she was very trustworthy; she was worthy enough for him to share all of his secrets inside of him; she definitely would not harm him.

The sea of consciousness churned up all of a sudden. It seemed that the five dwarves in the sea of consciousness were quietly moving, pouring the five miraculous emotions into Shi Yan's sea of

consciousness, slowly restoring his consciousness.

His eyes returned to be lucid; Shi Yan was startled out of the enchantment of Yu Rou; he sweated all over his body as if he just went through an earth-shaking battle.

Adamant!

Shi Yan was frightened and panicked. He did not dare to look at Yu Rou any longer, submissively bowing his head. Her smile could make other people unconscious; even Shi Yan who considered himself of having a strong consciousness almost disclosed everything to her. That enchantment was incredibly terrifying.

Under Yu Rou's mesmerizing interrogation, if it wasn't because the sudden strange move of the five dwarves in Shi Yan's sea of consciousness, perhaps he would have had divulged all of his secrets including the Mystery Martial Spirit.

"Da jie (Chinese way to call an older sister), you should not use this ploy, I cannot stand it." Shi Yan bowed his head with a miserable smile. "I have been cultivating a particular martial technique. Thus, if you keep on doing it several times more, I am afraid I will not be able to stand it any longer. My soul will fly away and scatter. Hmm, by that time, despite whatever you want to know from me, I will have no more energy to disclose anything of use to you."

Yu Rou's beautiful eyes rolled a few circles before she slightly grinned, slowly nodding and speaking, "Such an interesting guy. You still could wake up after it. Your consciousness is very strong; it was beyond my expectations. It is understandable that you can conquer the Heaven Flame."

"Heaven Flame and I are friends, friendship. It is not a conquest like you said. After all, what do you want from me, could you please elaborate?"

Under the five top-class warriors' stares, Shi Yan knew it was

useless to fight back, so he willingly cooperated with them.

"Very simple, go and observe the Sound Beast Mountain. Use the Heaven Flame inside of your body to remove the Formation Technique inside the Sound Beast Mountain." Di Shan of the Black Wings Clan said.

"I will do what you've said. But once I remove the Formation Technique inside the Sound Beast Mountain, is it the death sentence for me? I know Duo Long will not forgive me, and neither will you." Shi Yan fearlessly pointed towards Ya Meng and Ka Ba.

"We have to make this clear. By that time, will you kill me?"

"Little rascal, you worry too much." Ya Meng harrumphed coldly. "If you do not cooperate now, I can kill you right away."

"Ok, could you start now?" Shi Yan smiled with a shrug and then said, "If I have to die sooner or later, why would I need to help you. Hmm, you can kill me now, that'd be better for me."

"Hmm, you know how to negotiate. You are smart." Yu Rou beamed out a faint smile. She thought for a minute before speaking to Di Shan, "If this little rascal can remove the Formation Technique, let spare his life. It is worth it. Our two tribes have tried so much to get out of here; we have already sacrificed a lot. He is our only chance. If he can help us fulfill our wish, I desire to spare his life. How about you?"

Di Shan squinted and then slowly nodded after considering for a while, "Ok."

"Clap clap clap."

Yu Rou clapped her hands while glancing at Shi Yan. She burst into laughter and said, "Little rascal, you don't need to worry anymore. If you can remove the Formation Technique, Di Shan and I will spare your life."

"How about them?" Shi Yan looked towards Ya Meng and Ka Ba.

"if we said we would spare your life, you will not die!" Di Shan coldly shouted, looking at Ya Meng and Ka Ba and asked, "Is it so?"

Under pressure from Di Shan and Yu Rou, Ya Meng and Ka Ba, the two leaders of Demonic Sound Clan, reluctantly nodded without saying a word although they were outraged.

"Now go, I will bring you to the Sound Beast Mountain." Yu Rou of the White Wings Clan did not say anything further. She stretched her hand grabbing Shi Yan's shoulder, flapping her wings and flew away. They had already cross a few thousand meters like a teleport towards the Sound Beast Mountain in just a blink.

Di Shan gradually closed his eyes; his figure faded and slowly disappeared.

"What should we do?" After Di Shan and Yu Rou had left, Ka Ba's face became gloomy. He looked towards Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo. "That little rascal has the Heaven Flame. Once he reaches the higher level, he will obviously be a dangerous threat for our Demonic Sound Clan."

"Di Shan and Yu Rou are on the same side now, but the three of us can also unite with Duo Long. Wait until the Formation Technique is destroyed, it will not be difficult for us and Duo Long to kill that little rascal." Ya Meng cruelly said.

Ka Ba was startled for a while before grinning and speaking, "That's right. Together with Duo Long, we will not be afraid of Yu Rou and Di Shan."

"Let's go see if that little rascal can actually destroy the Formation Technique or not." Yi Tian Mo didn't say much; his face looked indifferent. He seemed to have another plan.

Chapter 251: Transformation of the sea of consciousness.

Sound Beast Mountain

Groups of the small Heaven Flames gathered one by one, creating many flows of torrid fireballs that were violently rolling into a big mountain cave in the Sound Beast Mountain.

The cave entrance was full of strange icy yin energies that gathered and refined continually. Once the Heaven Flame poured in, these yin energies would be incinerated, producing the sound "boom boom" and the blur yin aura all over the place.

Near the Sound Beast Mountain, the thunder and lightning struck down fiercely and violently. Lightning like the Spiritual Snake plunged down from the sky, hitting the mountain.

Shi Yan was standing not far from the cave entrance. He was condensing the Heaven Flame's forces to destroy the Formation Technique inside of the cave.

When the Sound Beasts flew out and saw Shi Yan, they were so frightened like 'a burnt child dreads the fire.' They immediately went back into the Sound Beasts Mountain without daring to venture out afterward.

Not only did Shi Yan have the ability to absorb the yin aura on their bodies but he also had the capacity to use the Heaven Flame to burn them, making them all terrified without being able to do anything.

Even the high-level Sound Beasts also recognized the nemesis aura on Shi Yan's body. They did not take risks in coming close to him as they were afraid of being burnt to death by the Heaven Flame. Moreover, the special attraction force inside Shi Yan's body could also destroy all the yin aura that they had arduously refined.

Shi Yan's existence was not only the nemesis of the Demonic

Sound Clan but also of the Sound Beasts.

Many billows of the Heaven Flames advanced outwards into the cave. Shi Yan could realize that the Formation Technique at the cave entrance was like billions of durable filaments twisting tightly together that could be partly destroyed by his projected Heaven Flame in a short time.

However, before the Formation Technique was completely broken apart, a lot of power from another cave nearby churned up and poured into the cave to fix the damages.

He also made another attempt in the other caves, but the results were all the same.

The caves in the Sound Beast Mountain were like beehives; they seemed to have a special connection. Once the Formation Technique of one cave was intruded, the power of the other caves would swarm quickly, uniting to defend the attack.

The Heaven Flame could burn everything including the different kinds of the Formation Techniques. Theoretically, the Heaven Flame could implode the Formation Technique, opening up the entrance to the caves.

However, even though he had already tried many different alternatives, Shi Yan realized that the shelters' solidity was totally beyond his imagination.

Once he used the absolute Heaven Flame power, thunder and lightning would strike down from the sky, and thus he reluctantly had to spare some of his energies to shield him from it. Therefore, he could not concentrate all of his powers to destroy the Formation Technique.

"Phewww."

Breathing lightly, gradually retrieving the burning fires, and fondling the blood vein ring, Shi Yan sent out his message to the Thousand Year Earth Flame, "Can I not thrust out more burning

fires' power?"

"Possible, but you may not be able to withstand it. One more thing, as I am at the point of critical transformation, it is not a suitable time to project the power continually. Maybe with a little more time, it will be possible. Wait until I can refine more of necessary forces, perhaps I will be able to help you more." The message coming from the Earth Flame was a little chaotic and interrupted. It was telling Shi Yan its current disposition.

"Boom."

Lightning violently struck down. Shi Yan instantly moved away and immediately stopped connecting with the Earth Flame. He hesitated for a while before trying to use the Black Formula again.

The Yin Swirls at the three meridians on his chest started revolving slowly under the influence of the Yin Pearls.

The yin aura massively flowed out from numerous caves nearby and quickly gathered into the whirlwind on top of Shi Yan's head, turning into the yin power in his body that was then absorbed and refined by those three Yin Swirls.

Meanwhile, the forces of the Formation Technique in this cave were also getting weakened a little bit after he had used the Black Formula.

While the Yin Swirls revolved, Shi Yan's sea of consciousness also rose up in strong waves, and the five devils in the sea of consciousness were also under way. Five flows of emotions gradually changed his feelings, pulling along the negative energies from the meridians throughout his whole body. Shi Yan entered the First Sky of Rampage in the blink.

Negative energies in his entire body hovered about without dispersing. The attractive force of the whirlwind on top of his head which had been created by the Black Formula increased tremendously when Shi Yan entered the Rampage status.

The Sound Beasts' frightened howls constantly resounded from numerous caves in the Sound Beast Mountain. They seemed to sense that something was horribly wrong. When the Formation Technique became unstable, the Sound Beasts started to shriek and growl in panic.

"Waa waa," "creak creak," "howl howl."

Waves of sound like a monstrous tide abruptly reverberated from a group of the mountain caves. Those waves of sound became chaotic noises causing the anomaly of the Sound Beast Mountain. Suddenly, lightning hovering around above the Sound Beast Mountain like a gigantic dragon suddenly struck down from the sky. At the same time, a few unusual howls of the Sound Beasts created a terrifying soul attack power as well as an invisible impulsive eye of the soul that went into Shi Yan's sea of consciousness instantaneously.

The five Devils in the sea of consciousness became abnormally hasty. Being attacked by the souls, the five Devils gathered all Shi Yan's negative feelings to form its counter attack.

"Boom."

A big long lightning abruptly struck down on Shi Yan's back. The lightning energy like a filament absorbed into his body, a part of which invaded into his sea of consciousness. The pain crawled throughout his entire body in an instant.

A while later, after the pain had spread out, the Yin Swirl also stopped moving, and the whirl on top of his head vanished without leaving a trace.

Shi Yan's sea of consciousness was painful. The five devils flew around in the sea of consciousness, showing their fangs and claws, diffusing all kinds of negative feelings. They seemed to obliterate Shi Yan's consciousness, driving him crazy.

Shi Yan gritted his teeth and quickly ceased in moving the

Rampage. Seeing the lightning strike down from the sky, he had to retreat rapidly, running down crossing the Sound Beast Mountain in one breath.

The sea of consciousness rose up in big waves; the five devils inside were the leaders. Being invaded by lightning and struck by the soul attack of the Sound Beasts, the five Devils became uncontrollable. Shi Yan's soul consciousness gradually lost the control over the five devils, almost falling inwards into permanent insanity.

When having cultivated this Devil Spell, Shi Yan had known that he always had to take control over the five devils. If not, once the five Devils got out of his control, he would become a crazy murderous devil and hardly awake from it.

If it happened, the five Devils in the sea of consciousness would replace his soul, and his consciousness would disappear little by little. The five Devils and the Mystery Martial Spirit absorbed a lot of negative forces and emitted plenty of negative powers which made him insane. Although being attacked by the negative energies, his consciousness would be able to recover soon after his meridians refined those energies.

Once the five Devils controlled his spirit and then replaced his soul, he would possibly end up in everlasting perdition and never awake from it again.

Repressing the sea of consciousness's anomalous condition, Shi Yan ran down to the foot of the Sound Beast Mountain in a single breath. He then saw Ka Ba, the Mountain Emperor, and Yu Rou who had already been there.

"You just need a little bit more. I can feel that if you try to force a little bit more of your forces and released more of the Heaven Flame's power, you will be able to break that Formation Technique." Di Shan's closing eyes suddenly opened. "Only a little more, why did you retreat?"

"I was counter-attacked. If I didn't withdraw, I wouldn't have had a chance to attack the Formation Technique again." Shi Yan slightly clenched his teeth and breathed heavily; his eyes shot out a fierce beam of light. He didn't seem to be scared of the pressure from the five top-class warriors. He calmly said in a low tone, "You should have a solution. Otherwise, once I am struck dead by the counter attack, I cannot help you whatsoever at all. I can assure that if you give me a little more time, I can break that Formation Technique for sure."

Yi Tian Mo's face slightly changed. He suddenly spoke up, "His soul is strange, the frequency of the soul vibration is extremely furious. Inside his sea of consciousness, it seems to be going to explode soon."

"The sea, the sea of consciousness." Di Shan and Yu Rou could not help but scream, looking at Yi Tian Mo with astonished faces.

The Wings Race's knowledge of soul was of far less than that of the Demonic Sound Clan. Di Shan and Yu Rou hadn't known that Shi Yan had already formed the sea of consciousness. Therefore, they were immediately frightened after hearing what Yi Tian Mo said.

"Ah, little rascal, we didn't know you have the sea of consciousness." Ka Ba and Ya Meng hadn't carefully observed Shi Yan's brain area earlier. After Yi Tian Mo had disclosed this information, both of them hurriedly released their soul power to check if it was true and realized that Shi Yan's sea of consciousness was at the Nirvana Realm.

"This little rascal, is he only at the Earth Realm?" Yu Rou rubbed her forehead with a confused face and asked.

"That's right. I don't know how he could possess the sea of consciousness, but it is the sea of consciousness. Currently, there are five kinds of strange souls with different attributes inside of it; moreover, they are conflicting with one another, starting to affect

his sea of consciousness. It can even implode his sea of consciousness." Yi Tian Mo said with a low tone. "He cannot die."

Di Shan's face slightly changed, he coldly said, "Little rascal, what should we do to help you avoid the counter-attack?"

"Females." Shi Yan's eyes gradually turned red, he said while gasping for air, "I need women to give vent as soon as possible. Give me the three human females that Ya Meng had captured and confined. These three ladies can help me avoid the counter attack. Once I recover, I can break the Formation Technique in a few days.

"Only females?" Di Shan got stunned. "That simple?"

"Yes." Shi Yan nodded his head.

Yu Rou's face turned red with her watery eyes. She beamed out a smile and said, "I don't know what kind of wicked technique this little rascal has cultivated. Hehe. You are also a lustful little guy. If it is about females, it's easy then. Ya Meng, let's go to your place and ask your son Ya Ji to bring this rascal the three human females. Do you have any problem with that?"

"No, not at all." Ya Meng threw a glance at Shi Yan and reluctantly agreed.

"Take him." Di Shan nodded with Yu Rou. He then flapped his black wings and gradually disappeared.

"Little rascal, if you can break the Formation Technique, don't even mention of the three human girls, even the girls of Demonic Sound Clan or the Wings Race, if you desire them, I can give them all to you. You can do whatever it is that you wish." Yu Rou smiled slightly.

"We do not lack beautiful, extraordinary girls. You can also enjoy the amorous pagan girls to the fullest extent that you are capable of."

Bringing Shi Yan, Yu Rou teleported on and off in the sky, approaching the Giant Stone Ancient City.

Shi Yan's eyes had turned totally red; his breath was getting heavier; he could smell the orchid fragrance from Yu Rou's small hand that was grabbing him. He could not help but imagine wickedly.

In the middle of the air, Shi Yan raised up his head looking at the beautiful, noble woman with snow-white skin. His eyes gradually became enchanted.

Chapter 252: What is there to be scared of?

In the thick forest, Yu Rou was gently flapping her snow-white wings flying around in the air. Her slender body flashed up and then instantly disappeared like lightning.

"Little rascal..." Yu Rou bowed her head looking at Shi Yan with strange eyes. She shook her head and sped up.

While being dragged along, Shi Yan breathed heavily while his pupils were full of blood veins like a bloodthirsty beast with a murderous look. His current look could terrify and scare people out of their wits.

Being the matriarch of the White Wings Clan, although Yu Rou didn't have a deep soul cultivation, her knowledge of the special forces was much more thorough than that of the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan. After she secretly released a stream of profound Qi to explore the nerves and vessels inside of Shi Yan's body, her pupils suddenly trembled, and her eyes sparked a splendid beam of light.

"Impossible..." Yu Rou was petrified, mumbling to herself. She again released many streams of profound Qi and gathered all of her spirits to understand the unknown condition of Shi Yan's body. Those streams like thin filaments went searching, moving in and out of Shi Yan's veins. They carefully explored his nerves, veins, bones, and intricate systems inside of Shi Yan's body. After that, they would respond to Yu Rou in detail, helping her see through everything in Shi Yan's body.

Not long after that, the eyes of the matriarch of the White Wings Clan lit up again and then stopped in the middle of the void. She bewilderedly looked at Shi Yan.

"Little rascal, are you a human warrior?" Yu Rou contemplated for a while before asking him with a serious face. Her voice like lightning sharply went into Shi Yan's head, making his ambiguous

consciousness lucid. In his sea of consciousness, the five Devils were still stirring up. Plenty of negative emotions from inside of the five Devils' bodies fled out and rolled into his sea of consciousness, making it transform and slowly influence his mind.

While his mind was getting more lucid, Shi Yan raised his head looking at the heart-touching beautiful lady of the White Wings Clan and smelled the mesmerizing fragrance from her body. He could not help but react; his breathing became heavy.

"Why do you ask me this?" Shi Yan inhaled many times to control his feelings. He knitted his eyebrows and asked.

"Humankind's body cannot be that sturdy. Your nerves and veins are firm and large; it seems that they should be trained for a very long time as there are no impurities within it. Each cell within your body is vivacious, containing a terrifying implosion. Without using any profound Qi, the power from your body is not that less of a standard Disaster Realm warrior. Are you humankind?" Yu Rou's face looked strange. She thought for a while before continuing, "As far as I know, even the sturdiness of the Demon Race's body at the same Realm could not be better than yours. At the same Earth Realm, the builds of the outstanding men of the Wings Race are not as good as yours. What did you do to attain it after all? A sturdy body, as well as the Earth Realm which was protected by the sea of consciousness, together with the profound soul competency, how did you..." Yu Rou was terrified. While exploring Shi Yan's body, she unintentionally found out this little rascal's special spiritual soul as well as his mysterious sturdy body. Once this peculiarly talented man got mature, no one could imagine the possible levels that he would be able to reach. She started to feel regretful in promising to spare his life after this newfound knowledge.

"Suffering such tough cultivations and weaving in and out through life and death can make you become like this." Shi Yan repressed the messing feelings in his sea of consciousness. He

slightly gritted his teeth gasping for breath and urged, "Do not waste more of the others' time. Quickly bring me to the Giant Stone Ancient City over there. I am afraid that I cannot withstand it any longer."

"Damn you little rascal, what a low-class guy." Yu Rou burst out laughing, shook her head and reluctantly said, "Leave it aside then. Wait until we solve the counter attack problem, I will interrogate you later."

Upon her words, Yu Rou promptly urged the power from her body, bringing Shi Yan to the Giant Ancient Stone City of the Demonic Sound Clan.

However, at this moment, a strong flow of soul vibrations dispelled out from Shi Yan's body. This flow was ferocious; it spread out all over his body in a blink and immediately attacked Yu Rou.

The five emotions of despair, fear, bloodshed, greed, and resentment turned into many flows of vibrating souls, instantly covering the matriarch of the White Wings Clan. The Five Devils in the Sea of Mind was a strange martial technique from the Blood Vein Ring. It was created by the combination of the negative emotions that dispersed outwards from Shi Yan's meridians and his Spiritual Seal in the sea of consciousness. Not only did it have a part of his consciousness but it also possessed a tremendous soul power. While Shi Yan was talking to Yu Rou, a crazy thought of killing Yu Rou sprang to his mind uncontrollably.

This idea came up in the sea of consciousness, causing the reckless action of the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind. The five Devils in the sea of consciousness had already been restless and now suddenly became disorderly, considering Yu Rou as a target and attacking her.

"Soul Attack..." Yu Rou beamed out a smile and slightly shook her head. "To our Wings Race, the Soul Attack is the stupidest move

that one could make."

The five emotions of despair, fear, bloodshed, greed, and resentment turned into a subtle beam of the soul, quickly twisting towards Yu Rou, wanting to influence Yu Rou's mind and put her under the control of these emotions to become a puppet of the five Devils.

"Still very bad..." While the five emotions were absorbing into her head, Yu Rou suddenly whistled when her body was still motionless. Melodious whistle hovered around in the forest; it was like a sharp sword that cut through the soul filaments, wiping out the soul vibrations emitted by the five Devils. Quickly, the whistle thoroughly obliterated the Soul Attack released by the five Devils without any traces remaining.

Shi Yan's eyes was a little more lucid. He suddenly said, "Let go of me!"

"Why?" Ru You sickly smiled, "Now, you are not in a hurry to find girls anymore?"

"Let me go, let me stabilize first. By cutting those emotion souls, you have helped me escape from the counter attack of the sea of consciousness. Give me a little more time, I can recover soon."

"As you wish." Yu Rou slightly smiled and let go of him.

Shi Yan's body rolled over in the air. He quickly urged the profound Qi while his eyes scanned around looking for any branches that he could land on.

At the distance of hundreds of meters from the ground, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan had freely let go of him as he had wished without worrying whether if Shi Yan would die from his fall or not.

"You dared to implement the soul attack upon me. You are brave..." Flapping her snow-white wings, Yu Rou hovered about in the air. A frigid beam of light in her eyes flashed up and instantly

disappeared.

"Crackle crackle! Rustle rustle!"

Constantly breaking more than ten branches which were as big as a man's arm, Shi Yan's painful body gradually stabilized. Lying down in the midst of the ancient tree's leaves and raising his head looking at the beautiful mesmerizing lady in the sky, he angrily shouted, "Did you want me to fall to my death?"

"No." Her snow-white wings slightly swayed; her mesmerizing straight legs shot a few kicks before she slowly descended from the sky. She laughed out loud and said, "Aren't you alright?" A strange, hard-to-see light flared up from her eyes while her wings were flapping.

"Crackle crackle."

The branch of the three on which Shi Yan was lying down broke again. It had been hard to stabilize himself, but now, he continued to fall again. His entire body was agitated in extreme pain.

"Oh, why did you fall again?" Yu Rou gently landed and smiled encouragingly. "That's not bad. You fell from up high above and did not die. Little rascal, your body is sturdy. It is not bad, not bad. I like men with vigorous bodies."

"So, do you want to give it a try? I am good at everything and can guarantee that you will be most definitely satisfied." Shi Yan said while he gritted his teeth.

Yu Rou's watery eyes flashed up a cold light; she said with calm, "I want to see as well if you could do so. Do you dare come?"

As being the matriarch of the White Wings Clan, it was not because of Yu Rou's beauty that her rigidity would be less. Until now, there had been no one who had dared to tease and play with her like this. She became angry, but a strange feeling of excitement also appeared at the same time.

"What's not to dare?" Shi Yan's face was emotionless; he stood up

while rubbing his ass. After warming up a little bit, he walked straight toward Yu Rou's place.

Yu Rou's snow-white wings on her back quietly retracted. At this moment, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan was a little nervous. Her eyes shot out a strange beam of light, staring at Shi Yan who was coming step by step. Her entire body radiated solemnity and power which could have been only found from the top-class warriors. Her body had mighty power which was enough to backlash and killed Shi Yan. This power slowly dispersed and covered her.

Previously, when Yu Rou intentionally expressed her solemnity and impetuosity, all of the male warriors would flinch and felt shameful in front of her. They did not even dare to look at her, let alone expressing their lusts towards her. Even lustful Duo Long had to be humble towards her. He had never dared to disclose his lust in front of her. Yu Rou had assumed that Shi Yan was not an exception.

Coming step by step, Shi Yan displayed the innocent look on his face as if he didn't know what was about to happen. He kept walking through her strong waves of power without any hesitation.

Yu Rou was still leisurely lolling, but the anxiety lit up in her eyes. She coldly looked at the big, strong man coming towards her and felt weirdly startled.

At this moment, a satiric smile appeared at the corner of Shi Yan's mouth. He stopped ten meters away from Yu Rou, looking at her attentively, and then said, "Are you scared?"

"Am I scared?" Yu Rou felt disgraced. She burst into laughter and puffed out her big breasts and then said, "I am here. If you dare, come and touch me."

A strong flow of vibrating power like a whirlwind emerged behind her. This mighty power emitted terrifying vibrations non-

stop. It was as brutal as demons' desire to devour beings. It meant that she was scared of Shi Yan.

"I don't even know what I should be scared of." Shi Yan burst into maniacal laughter and urged the Electric Shift to advance towards the matriarch of the White Wings Clan in just a blink. Big hands stretched out and placed themselves on those big firm breasts of hers without any fear of death. After strongly groping and rubbing her breasts for a good while, he shouted out loud even before enjoying the wonderful feeling, "If you kill me, your tribe will never be able to leave this place. Only I can help you and your tribe get out of here."

He knew that the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan urgently wanted to get out of this place and had no regret in leaving this place. Therefore, he believed that regardless of how angry the matriarch of the White Wings Clan was, as long as he mentioned this, she would always forgive him.

Thus, his hands deliberately pressed and massaged her breasts. He then he shouted, stopped daring to enjoy the feelings that were aroused from fondling her big, voluptuous breasts.

Chapter 253: Arrogant Bluster

Deep in a forest.

Shi Yan's big hand laid on the stunningly round and firm breasts of the matriarch of the White Wings Clan. After the terrible hair-raising scream, he waited for the rage of the hurricane and thunderstorm to come. Unexpectedly, the brutal attack of Yu Rou did not rise yet.

To protect himself against a deadly strike which could dreadfully kill him, not only did Shi Yan implement the Petrification Martial Spirit but he also used the Dark Shield. Also, he circulated the profound Qi in his body and accumulated all the forces into his body for the defense.

However, after ten seconds of anxiously waiting for the violent repercussion attack that was supposed to happen after he had fondled her white, silky breasts, the attack, finally, did not come as expected.

Shi Yan was bewildered looking at the matriarch of the White Wings Clan. He surprisingly realized that her skin had turned red, her eyes were dreamily infatuated, her breathing was rushed. She was standing there motionlessly. Even her snow-white wings were tremblingly retracted and then stretched out again.

There was a warm, elastic feeling where he laid his hands. On top of the beautiful bosom perked a grape sized bead that was gradually getting bigger. Oh...

"Boom."

Furious lust like a volcano exploded. The calmness in Shi Yan's eyes suddenly became a burning flame, and the lusty fire in his body rose up nonstop.

In just a moment, Shi Yan lost his mind again and was dominated by lust. The other hand of his also stretched out and laid upon the

round bottom of the noble lady. He rubbed it unceremoniously for a cool while before suddenly dashing forward biting her pinky red lips.

Fragrance came up through to his nose. The mesmerizing feeling was running through his big body like an electric current, making Shi Yan's body slightly tremble and feel extremely pleasurable.

Shi Yan was nibbling on the beautiful cherry blossom lips of the matriarch of the White Wing Clan. His two hands were not free; they kept caressing her body, freely disgracing this hebetate lady.

"Um..." Yu Rou gasped for breath when being compelled to kiss Shi Yan; she couldn't help but moan.

The matriarch of the White Wings Clan had never been violated by any man before. After letting out a moan, her mind quickly recovered and got out from a deep valley of temptation.

Her beautiful dreamy eyes flashed up a cold, threatening beam of light. Right after that, a flow of horrendous power gushed out from her delicate body.

"Boom."

That terrifying flow of power like a huge mountain pounded on Shi Yan. His body like a kite with its broken string was blown far away by the wind. He spat out a mouthful of blood while his body was still in the air. The Dark Shield on his body was broken into pieces; his skin and flesh were torn apart. After falling, the forces of his entire body were agitated and in a total mess.

"You dare! You dare..." The face of the matriarch of the White Wings Clan was cold and grim. The murderous look in her eyes was like real sharp swords shooting outwards.

Shi Yan's entire body didn't have any energy left. All kinds of forces were stirring up and about. He wanted to move, but he couldn't use even a single beam of power except for helplessly staring at the dazzling sunbeam that was advancing toward him.

His body got seriously injured just in a blink. The five Devils in the sea of consciousness, on the contrary, were more restful; they no longer dared to revolt at this particularly critical moment.

"I can help the Wings Race get out of here!" Shi Yan said through his clenched teeth. "If I am dead, you will have to stay here forever."

The beautiful eyes of the matriarch of the White Wings Clan flared up a strange white ray of light; her gruff feeling started cooling down little by little.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

White beams of light advancing towards Shi Yan abruptly diverted and zoomed over the two sides of Shi Yan's ears, intensively plunging deep into the ground.

Shi Yan silently released a sigh and took out his hands wiping away the blood at the corners of his mouth. He still fearlessly said, "You are too mesmerizing. Don't blame me. Any man in front of you will not be able to control himself. Hmm, it is unbelievable that you have never experienced any relations between a man and a woman. Actually, I have earned a good bargain." Not only did Shi Yan not even try to be pitiable given the current situation but he also dared to say perverse words. Such a formidable lust indeed.

The sharp backfire from Yu Rou's body instantly struck out Shi Yan away. The strange beam of light uncontrollably flew straight out from her eyes. If it weren't for Shi Yan's timely scream, even if he could avoid it for one time, he would not be able to avoid it for the second time. Although his body was intensively firm, he wouldn't have been able to bear it.

"You deserve to die." Yu Rou breathed hastily. Her eyes were sparkling with many cold beams of light; her body was full of sharp, murderous looks. She gritted her teeth fiercely, glaring at Shi Yan. She was so angry that her delicate body shivered.

Shi Yan slowly sat up. His skin and flesh were torn down; fresh blood ran freely all over his body. However, under Yu Rou's angry look, he bloomed a bright smile and said, "Hahaha, death is worth it! You are too mesmerizing. Even if I have to die to kiss you, I would still be happy to do it. Hahaha."

Yu Rou's snow-white wings slightly wavered; her graceful body moved forward to Shi Yan. A white sword made by the profound Qi slowly emerged from her palm and was placed on his throat. Looking at Shi Yan with her dull eyes, she said with an icy voice, "You are not scared of being dead?"

"I am." Shi Yan laughed out loud and calmly nodded. "Of course, I am scared of being dead. But I know you will not kill me. Hahaha. I am the first man who ever kissed you, aren't I?"

"You still dare to say..." Yu Rou was convulsive and so agitated that she burst into laughter. "You think I won't dare to kill you? Even if I don't kill you now, wait until you break the Formation Technique, not only will I kill you but I will also make you die miserably because of what you have done today. By that time, you will know that falling into my hands will be worse than Duo Long's."

"I believe it." Shi Yan nodded and deliberately said. "I know that your cultivation Realm is higher than Duo Long's. If you want to kill me, I absolutely cannot die easily."

Yu Rou's beautiful eyes were in a daze in a short time. The more she looked at the boastful guy in front of her, the angrier she got. This detestable little rascal was lusty and did not care about life or death when disgracing her. He freely did offensive things to her flawless, virgin body. She regretted not to be able to cut Shi Yan into thousands of pieces, but she knew that this was not the right time to kill him.

For the Wings Race to get the hell out of this damn place, she had to be patient.

"You are incredibly mesmerizing..." Shi Yan softly said, quietly observing and slowly moving his neck out of the attacking area of the dazzling light sword in Yu Rou's hand. When he was in the safe zone, he stood up.

Yu Rou's arm with the sword in her hand stretched straight out. She looked at him and revealed a cold smile. After a while, the light sword slowly retracted and disappeared into her palm.

After Shi Yan silently let out a sigh of relief, his eyes flared up. He suddenly took one step forward, determinedly held the white, jade-like hand of this charming noble lady, and gutsily said, "Things between us have already happened, so will you be my woman then?"

"You!" The matriarch of the White Wings Clan suddenly vigorously waved her arms and furiously glared at him. "You, crazy little rascal, you want me to be your girl?! I have never met any insanely dreamy man like you. What do you have? What can you give me? Based on what reasons do you dream to have me? Only because that you've kissed me?" Yu Rou sickly smiled; her eyes were very cold. She continually calmed herself down, pulling herself together and restraining herself from killing him right now.

"Your cultivation base should be the First Sky of the Spirit Realm." Shi Yan leisurely smiled and said. "This is the terrifying Realm. I only have the Earth Realm cultivation base. The gap between you and me are the Nirvana Realm and the Sky Realm. It should take an ordinary man hundreds of years to break through these two Realms. Most people cannot reach these two Realms in their entire life."

Yu Rou was stunned, looking at Shi Yan with astonishment. "You are not stupid. You know the difference between us two, but you still dare to speak rubbish. Based on what?"

"In fifty years maximum, I can surely reach the Spirit Ream." Shi

Yan suddenly shouted. "In sixty years at most, I will surpass you."

"Hahaha." Yu Rou abruptly burst into laughter till she cried. She pointed to Shi Yan with a mocking face. "Fifty years to reach the Spirit Realm, sixty years to surpass me! Hahaha, that is so funny. I have never seen any dreamy, arrogant man like you. Nowadays, are the guys in the outside world all short-sighted like you?"

"No, it's not like that." Shi Yan shook his head. "Ordinary men do not even dare to come close to you, not to mention having guts to disgrace you regardless of being alive or dead."

The mocking face of Yu Rou loosened. "Very good, you are more daring than the others indeed. But this doesn't mean anything."

"I think an ordinary warrior at the Earth Realm would implode to dead when receiving one of your powerful strikes. Even a Nirvana Realm warrior hardly survive if being hit by that shot. However, I am still standing in front of you now."

Yu Rou's beautiful eyes suddenly brightened. She had been convulsive by Shi Yan's weird behaviors and thus hadn't noticed that. However, when Shi Yan reminded her of that now, she realized that the fact that Shi Yan was still alive was a miraculous magic itself.

She could completely believe in her strength and knew how tremendous the power of her ruthless strike was. Exactly as what Shi Yan had said, not to mention a warrior at the Earth Realm, even a Nirvana Realm warrior would be surely dead under her strike.

Shi Yan, on the contrary, was still standing in front of her and boasting.

"You are genuinely competent." Yu Rou had to admit it. "However, your crazy aspirations do not match with your current capabilities. If you were at the Spirit Realm now, I would have considered your proposal. Hmm!"

Shi Yan had a little headache.

He knew that in this devilish place, neither the Demonic Sound Clan nor the Wings Race had any good intentions for him. He did not believe in the previous promises that Di Shan and Yu Rou had made. He knew that right after he broke the Formation Technique, death surely awaited him.

The reason that he had taken risks in disgracing and disturbing Yu Rou was his hope in leaving a special feeling in Yu Rou's heart. If Yu Rou had a little crush on him, his chances of survival would be a bit better. After having realized this experience with the beautiful lady who had never tasted such sexual affections, he was more confident in carrying on his plan. However, when having started his plan for real, he had realized that it was much difficult than he had thought. Regardless of how much he tried to convince her, she was still steady.

"It is too difficult..."

"Oh, you, your body..." Yu Rou suddenly covered her mouth and screamed out astonishingly. Her beautiful eyes beamed out a strange light as if she was witnessing a magical thing.

Shi Yan bowed his head to see and realized the Immortal Martial Spirit was starting its efficiency. The healing speed of his wounds was fantastically remarkable.

"Immortal God King! You are the descendant of the three God Kings from the Ancient time." The matriarch of the White Wings Clan was bewildered for a while before shouting out loud. Her eyes flickered, her beautiful face was in fear, and her lithe body slightly trembled.

Chapter 254: God's Will

Shi Yan stood still in front of her. Even though he was motionless, the wounds on his body were healing with remarkable speed.

After a moment, all the open wounds on his body had completely closed. Only a few blood scars left on his chest, and they were also gradually fading.

After the Immortal Martial Spirit had entered the third phase, the recovering speed of his body was much faster than of before. While fighting with other people, his wounds could immediately heal, keeping him to be immortal.

The matriarch of the White Wings Clan surprisingly looked at him and mumbled to herself with a dazzling look, "Immortal God King, is it the will of God?"

Shi Yan squinted with a big question mark in his mind. He did not know why the matriarch of the White Wings Clan had such a harsh reaction. Did the God blood of the Three God Kings in the Ancient time had anything related to the Wings Race?

With that thought in his mind, he hesitated for a while before speaking, "I have the Immortal Martial Spirit. The God blood running inside of my body is indeed similar to the God blood of the Three God Kings. Is this somehow also related to you?"

Yu Rou's eyes gradually regained its normal state. She was reluctant a little bit and then nodded, "The Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race had great gratitude for the Three God Kings in the Ancient time. Without their help, our two tribes would have been exterminated instead of being deported here."

Shi Yan was agitated.

Yu Rou raised her head looking at him. After thinking for a while, she said with a confused face, "This information has been

mentioned in our ancestors' ancient book. In that year, the two tribes were deported here and could not get out of this place until now. The ancestors of the two tribes used to swear that if the Three God Kings or their descendants could help the two tribes escape from here, the two tribes would crown him and obey him forever."

"What?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened, he suddenly revealed a smile. "As you said, according to your ancestor's guidance, if I can help the two tribes get out of this damn place, you will have to serve me as a master? Am I misunderstanding it?"

Yu Rou miserably smiled and nodded. "According to ancestor's guidance, if you can accomplish this feat, we will serve you as our master indeed. However, it has been a very long time, many things have changed, our ancestors have been long gone. That time was much too long ago. I am not sure if everyone still follows the ancestor's guidance."

Shi Yan was surprised. After contemplating for a while, he looked at Yu Rou with blazing eyes and asked, "First, disregard the other people, how about you? Will you follow the ancestor's guidance?"

"I..., I don't know" The matriarch of the White Wings Clan slightly shook her head, murmuring to herself. "Is it the will of God? Is it because the ancestors have broken the space limit to transmit their oath to the Three God King that leads to the current situation? If not, why does that little rascal have the Heaven Flame, and how come he has the blood of the descendants of the God Kings in the Ancient time. Is it destiny? Is it that some things have been defined already?!"

The matriarch of the White Wings Clan mumbled with a panicked face. She felt as if she was deeply immersed in a huge maze, struggling inside of her mind.

"The Three God Kings in the Ancient time, besides the Immortal

God King, who were the other two?" Shi Yan suddenly asked.

Although the Ice Cold Flame had mentioned about the God blood before, it was still very ambiguous. This matter was a very long time ago, and thus it was not easy to find a person who had the information about the ancient times. He did not want to let this chance slip by easily.

"Besides the Immortal God King, the other Gods were the True Dragon God King and the Heaven Poison God King. They had the True Dragon God Constitution and the Heaven Poison God Constitution. The True Dragon God King could take the form of the God Dragon and possessed the strength of the God Dragon who was exceedingly mighty. The blood of the Heaven Poison God King could poison any living creatures; a drop of his God blood could poison the entire sea, eroding all creatures inside of it." When the matriarch of the White Wings Clan talked about the Three God Kings' hidden information, she looked severe; her voice was deliberately earnest, her face was full of respect. "The Three God Kings were the supreme existence in the Ancient time. Without their defenses, our two tribes should have perished. Therefore, even though the two tribes have been deported here, we were still very thankful. Our gratitude towards them has been carried on throughout every generation to forever engrave their merits."

"That's good." Shi Yan smiled. "If Di Shan, Duo Long, and Ka Ba follow their ancestor's guidance, all of you will serve me as your master after I help you get out of this damn place. Hahaha, that is perfect."

"SShhh, such a dream." Yu Rou shook her head. "Those people have wicked intentions; they will not be content with it. As they all occupy a lofty position, they absolutely will not lay any eyes on you except if your Realm and strength are higher than theirs. Only that may they reluctantly follow the ancestor's guidance. However, you are only at the Earth Realm; you are apparently a stupid dreamer to want them to submit to you."

Yu Rou stopped a bit and then continued, "You better not show the Immortal God King's features; otherwise you will bring the death upon yourself much faster. Ah, I will first ask Di Shan to see his attitude regarding the ancestor's guidance. If Di Shan is willing to follow it, perhaps you may still have hope. But if Di Shan does not want to abide by the ancestor's guidance, you should not have any further thoughts."

After her words, Yu Rou again grabbed Shi Yan and flew up, advancing towards the Giant Stone Ancient City of the Demonic Sound Clan without saying anything further.

On the Wall of the Ancient Castle.

The outstanding geniuses of the new generation of the Endless Sea including Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, Pan Zhe, and Qu Yan Qing were all confined in a cage. Their faces were gloomy, and their eyes were dull.

In the Endless Sea, these people were ranked on the top of the combat list. Their families had a very high position with many servants for everything.

However, they were just ordinary prisoners in this place. They could always be killed at any single given moment by their jailers. The feelings of hopelessness had taken their previous inherited arrogance away from them. A group of people with bowed heads and retracted necks all retreated to a single corner with more fear than ever.

Ya Ji rubbed his chin; his dull eyes kept sweeping over Cao Zhi Lan's and Gu Ling Long's alluring bodies, considering a good time to take these two girls. Both Cao Zhi Lan and Gu Ling Long had Martial Spirit on their bodies as well as powerful souls that were very useful for his cultivation.

Although Qu Yan Qing's appearance was normal, the energy in her body was very peculiar. Ya Ji felt that there should be some hidden secrets in her body, and he planned to unclothe her to see if

there was something hidden underneath her clothes.

The two girls, Xue Fei and Cu Bi were on the other side talking to each other in a low tone. They sometimes glanced at the people confined in the cage.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

Many figures were descending on the Wall of the Ancient City from the sky. Besides Ka Ba, Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo, there was also Di Shan of the Black Wings Clan. Di Shan's arrival startled Ya Ji, Yi Cu Bi, and Xue Fei very much; they all kowtowed respectfully in a hurry.

Being the patriarch of Black Wings Clan, not only did Di Shan have great power but he also had an unimaginably high cultivation base. Whenever the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race had a conflict, Di Shan's decision was always the most important one. His utterance of a single sentence could turn the entire Demonic Sound Clan into a sea of blood. That was why the people of the Demonic Sound Clan were terribly scared of him.

After Di Shan had arrived, he threw a glance at Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing, and then frigidly asked, "Are these the three female prisoners?"

"Yes, these three female prisoners." Ya Meng nodded his head.

"Wait until that little rascal arrives, let him take these three female prisoners." Di Shan slightly nodded and coldly said. "That little rascal has a good taste apparently. These three human women are beautiful. They are indeed the exceptional beauties among the human women."

Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful face slightly changed. She sat straight up in silence, glancing at Qu Yan Qing while attentively listening to the conversation of those pagans.

Qu Yan Qing's and Gu Ling Long's eyes also slightly changed; their faces looked a little frightened. They also turned around,

listening to the conversations.

Since they had been captured and confined, although they had encountered the bad things, they still had each other, going through hardships altogether. However, this time was different. They were obviously the target of the Wings Race's people. Therefore, these three women started to be worried and had the feeling of insecurity. They did not know how their lives would turn out after all.

"Father, this thing?" Ya Ji hesitated for a while; a little discontent beamed out from his eyes. "I have captured these three women. You see..."

"Stop talking nonsense." Ya Meng coldly shouted. "You will not dream of these three human women any longer. Everything is done."

"Father!" Ya Ji shouted.

"Your son is not satisfied?" Di Shan smirked and threw a sharp glance at Ya Meng. "You even cannot handle your son?"

Ya Meng's face turned pale; he outragedly looked at Ya Ji.

Ya Ji's body was convulsive; he suddenly calmed down. He then enduringly nodded and said, "Father, I understand. I will listen to your direct order."

"We..." Cao Zhi Lan hesitated a little before looking straight at Di Shan fearlessly. "What have you arranged for us?"

Di Shan was a little astonished, gazing at her with a strange look, and said, "You are brave. No worries, we will not kill you, we only need your bodies."

The three women Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing suddenly changed their facial expressions. Their gentle bodies trembled; their eyes were full of anger and disgrace.

"Compare to being killed, losing your virginity is extremely

lucky." Di Shan's face was heartless. "It is not the Wings Race's or the Demonic Sound Clan's men who will do the deed. That little rascal is also of the same race as you all. It is your luck."

"Same, same race?" Gu Ling Long was astonished and abruptly asked, "Who?"

"You will know soon." Di Shan smirked; his face was very strange. He did not mention anything about Shi Yan.

The three women exchanged their bewildered looks. They were now flooded with the feeling of insecurity. They seemed to figure out who it was to be but did not dare to continue thinking.

"Zoom Zoom Zoom."

The sound of flapping wings came up to the people's ears. Not long after that, a white lightning zoomed overhead. Right after that, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan gently descended from the sky with her hand grabbing Shi Yan. His face was apathetic.

Throwing Shi Yan onto the floor without regarding his pain, Yu Rou revealed a faint smile, glancing at the three women. She burst into laughter and said, "His taste is not bad. Each of the three women here is all beautiful. The girl with the mask is also charming. This little rascal is a lusty devil indeed."

"It, it is you?" Ya Ji's body was agitated again; his eyes were full of resentment.

The three women of Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing couldn't help but tremble, bewilderedly looking at Shi Yan who had just fallen to the ground. All of them goggled at him at the same time without knowing what to do with the target that they had initially chased.

Chapter 255: Desire wealth in danger.

After falling on the ground, Shi Yan warmed up his arms and legs a little bit before turning towards Di Shan and others and revealing a faint smile. He then gave a look at Cao Zhi Lan's group who were held in the cage.

Right at the moment Shi Yan appeared, Cao Zhi Lan, Qu Yan Qing, and Gu Ling Long felt as if their world just collapsed.

Before having entered the Chasm Battlefield, they had gone through a long pursuing way from the Sky Sea to here. In the combat with the Yang family, they had suffered many losses to step into the Chasm Battlefield. Inside that crumbled palace, they again had suffered severe losses because of Shi Yan's sudden outbreak.

Thinking carefully over and over, Cao Zhi Lan realized that since their initial confrontations with Shi Yan, their luck had kept decreasing, they could never have obtained anything from Shi Yan's body.

Currently, they were being detained in this damn place. Shi Yan, on the contrary, became the distinguished guest of these pagan races. Not only could he comfortably laugh and talk with the pagan leader Di Shan but he also received many rewards including the people of Cao Zhi Lan's group. What happened?

They were all human beings, why was there such a big difference between them and Shi Yan?

Not only Cao Zhi Lan and the others were so angry that they wanted to vomit blood, but Ya Ji was outraged as well. He wanted to ask something, but Ya Meng just shut him up. Thus, Ya Ji couldn't do anything except for restraining his resentment.

"Shi, Shi Yan...". Yi Cu Bi was in a daze. Her beautiful face turned red. "Hey, these three women are for you?"

The faces of Cao Zhi Lan and the others slightly changed while each of them resentfully gritted their teeth.

Shi Yan coldly looked at Cao Zhi Lan and smilingly nodded, "You didn't expect this could ever happen, did you?"

"You will not have an easy death sooner or later." Gu Ling Lung's graceful body shivered a little. The angriness and panic glinted in her eyes. "If you dare to disgrace us, even being a ghost, I will never forgive you."

"Being a ghost?" Shi Yan burst into laughter. "I am afraid that you will not even have a chance to be a ghost. If I wanted to kill you, I definitely would have made both your soul and spirit perish and never transmigrate. Thus, even being a ghost, you cannot and will not take revenge on me."

When those words came out, Shi Yan's expression glowed with joy as if crushing people to ashes and perishing people's souls and spirits were just his natural pleasures.

Di Shan raised his eyebrows and nodded his head, "Little rascal, you are very cruel. No wonder why you have so many pursuers but are still alive."

"That is obvious. If not, he wouldn't have the Heaven Flame."

The patriarch of the Black Wings Clan slowly stepped towards the cage where Cao Zhi Lan and the others were held. He then swung his arm, and different streams of silver light like a chain of clouds went into the cage and then alternately crept into the bodies of Cao Zhi Lan, Qu Yan Qing, and Gu Ling Long. The three of them were terrified.

"Boom."

The cage cracked open leaving a hole. Cao Zhi Lan and the other two felt as if they were being grabbed by an invisible hand, floated out of the cage towards Shi Yan, and slowly descended in front of him.

The three women stood up. Their charming bodies slightly trembled; the brightness in their eyes faded gradually. Their entire body's energies were also sealed.

"Currently, these three women have no more powers to use and are no more than ordinary people, and thus they cannot harm you." Yu Rou smiled, gently looked at Shi Yan. "From now on, you can freely violate them as you wish. Hahaha, for the future of our two races, sacrificing these three women was still a very good bargain."

Ya Meng's expression was stern. A God light flashed up from the point between his eyebrows. Three strange soul flows flew out and then seeped into the point between the eyebrows of the three women.

Cao Zhi Lan's and the other two girls' faces showed pain. They couldn't help but hold their heads and groan.

"I have put the Death Binding Thought into their heads. If they have suicidal intentions, that seal will spread out, and their bodies will be unable to move." Ya Meng spoke to Shi Yan with a wicked smile. "You can be comfortable in using their bodies freely without having to worry about them committing suicide."

Shi Yan was surprised and then nodded with a smile, "Thank you!"

"Rotter!" Cao Zhi Lan and other two girls simultaneously shouted. Their eyes were flooded with hatred; they resented Shi Yan to the bone. If they could have gotten out of the constraint, they would perhaps have risked their lives in killing Shi Yan.

"No need. You just need to do your job well for our two races. Not to mention these three women, even the Demonic Sound Clan's girls can also be yours as easily as flipping your hand." Ya Meng harrumphed coldly. "But if you cannot help our two races, hahaha, I will make you feel it is better to die than to live!"

"Don't waste more time." Di Shan frowned showing his impatience. "This little rascal's cultivation progress is related closely to the future of our two races. I will stay here to watch for his progress temporarily."

The matriarch of the White Wings Clan beamed out a gentle smile. "I think everyone should try a little harder. I remember that our two races have some useful things in improving the Realm of human warriors. For everyone's benefit, I think we should be more generous."

Shi Yan slightly laughed out loud with an excited face. Di Shan, Ka Ba, and the others looked at one another; everyone had a freakish face while their eyes kept moving.

"The White Wings Clan owns the White Jade Spirit Fruit which has a big effect on stabilizing one's mind. The White Jade Spirit Fruit have been refined for more than a thousand years and produced only three fruits at a single time. I have commanded my people to bring one here. For the welfare of our two races, we've already given our fortune." Yu Rou smiled and said.

Upon her words, the faces of Di Shan and the others drastically changed.

"White Jade Spirit Fruit!" Ya Ji, Di Cu Bi, Xue Fei, and the new generation's youths of the Demonic Sound Clan could not stand but scream. Ya Ji's eyes showed a trace of conspicuous greed.

The White Jade Spirit Fruit was the pagan treasure of the White Wings Clan. It could only be produced in the abandoned area where there were no three gods of the Sun, Moon, and Star. Each of the White Jade Spirit Fruit was extremely precious. It was highly useful for stabilizing and nourishing the soul. Even though the Wings Race had difficulty in soul cultivation, using one of the White Jade Spirit Fruit could make a significant breakthrough in one's soul mind.

For the people of the Demonic Sound Clan, the White Jade Spirit

Fruit was even more precious. They were true experts in soul cultivation; thus, after using one White Jade Spirit Fruit, their soul accomplishment would grow tremendously.

After a baby of the Demonic Sound Clan was born and took one White Jade Spirit Fruit, that child's soul would be remodeled and directly reached the strength of a Disaster Realm warrior. It was a miraculous treasure which could make a soul mutate.

In this abandoned land, the White Jade Spirit Fruit of the White Wings Clan was an extremely precious treasure which had a great attraction to either the Wings Race or the Demonic Sound Clan.

Yu Rou had gone insane?

She dared to give out one White Jade Spirit Fruit just because of one human guy?! Was she public-spirited and selfless like this? She devoted a fortune for the future of the two races.

Ya Ji gasped for breaths. His face turned purple with rage. He threw an abnormally furious glance at Shi Yan, regretting that he could not put Shi Yan in his mouth and devoured him.

Such a waste of a heavenly gift. Such a disgrace to a divine gift. What qualifications does that little human rascal have? How come he can have a White Jade Spirit Fruit? What is it that the matriarch of the White Wings Clan wants to do? Can it be that she has a crush on this little rascal? Hasn't it been said that the matriarch of the White Wings Clan should always be pure, that she could not be married her entire life?

With many thoughts flashing across his mind, Ya Ji angrily gritted his teeth and said to himself that if he had a White Jade Spirit Fruit, he would efficiently make the most use of this fruit to increase his power to become one level higher.

What a pity!

"Matriarch Yu Rou, you are not kidding?" Ka Ba's face was odd with goggling eyes. "This little human brat is worth enough for

you to use one of the White Wings Clan's treasures?"

Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan were also in a daze looking at Yu Rou.

At first, Shi Yan hadn't known about the wonder of this White Jade Spirit Fruit. However, after carefully observing Ya Ji, Ka Ba, and the others, he understood that the White Jade Spirit Fruit was a fabulous treasure. Otherwise, these people would not have been that surprised with such freakish faces.

What did Yu Rou want to do?

"Is it true that she already has a big crush on me even though I have played with her just a little bit? Do I have such a big lustful attraction like that?" Shi Yan thought to himself but kept back all his astonished feelings with a stony face, pretending not to know anything about the White Jade Spirit Fruit.

"Didn't you see the unusual change of the Sound Beast Mountain?" Yu Rou's eyes got stern; she spoke with a dark face. "The formation technique outside the Sound Beast Mountain has been bigger and bigger. The Formation Technique inside of it has also been getting stronger and stronger. Do you not think of anything? Shouldn't the ancestors of the two races have already shared the same thoughts about this anomaly?"

Di Shan, Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo, and Ka Ba were shocked, seeming to realize something all of a sudden. Their eyes were now full of fear.

"You are saying...?" Di Shan wanted to say something but then stopped, glancing at the others nearby. He eventually didn't say anything further.

"I think this should be it." Yu Rou forced a miserable smile. "This is our only chance but maybe also a route towards our utter destruction. What to do specifically, I think everyone already had your plans."

"I will go back to the Black Wings Clan. In five days max, I will come back with a Black Head Lotus. I hope he will not disappoint me." Di Shan displayed a trace of uncertainty on his face while staring at Shi Yan. He then swung his arm and left. The huge black wings had flapped a couple of times before his shadow disappeared out of sight.

"Black, black Head Lotus." Ya Ji felt cotton mouth and swallowed consistently. His eyes sparked peculiar beams of light; his facial expression was half smiling and half crying.

On the Wall of the Ancient City, the youths of the Demonic Sound Clan including Xue Fei and Yi Cu Bi were in shock; they dazedly looked at Shi Yan. Their faces looked fierce as if they wanted to devour him.

"Di Shan, stop by Duo Long and convince him to offer a bottle of the Heaven Fountain Concentrated Water." Yu Rou looked towards Di Shan's leaving direction and hastily spoke to him.

Di Shan had disappeared out of sight, but his voice came up from afar. "OK."

"What?" Ya Ji, Xue Fei, and Yi Cu Bi could not stand anymore; they boisterously screamed out as if they saw ghosts in the daytime. When they looked towards Shi Yan, their faces could not be any weirder.

"This, this is really..." The youths of the Demonic Sound Clan mumbled in a daze and seemed to be terribly convulsive.

"Khoff khoff, we..." Yi Tian Mo expressed a little bit of shame. He awkwardly turned towards Yu Rou and said, "As you have known, all of the good areas in this abandoned land have all been conquered by the Wings Race. The three of us have nothing to offer. It is not that we don't want to participate, but only, only..."

Ya Meng and Ka Ba were also slightly embarrassed, constantly smiled miserably, showing their indigent gesture.

"I know, I know. You are a little poor indeed. All the good things here accurately do not belong to you, but..."

Ya Meng and the other two were silent, listening to Yu Rou's words with a humble manner.

"The Demonic Sound Clan's knowledge of soul is much better than that of the Wings Race." Yu Rou smiled and deliberately said. "Regarding soul cultivation, the Demonic Sound Clan has many supreme Comprehensions. To the Wings Race, they are useless, but to this little rascal, they are very useful. What I mean is that the three of you should open up the Secret Scripture sources for this little rascal to study. You have already known that the Realm progress cannot lack the soul comprehension, haven't you?"

The three leaders' faces changed. They all uttered at the same time, "This..., how can it be?"

"The Soul Comprehension of Demonic Sound Clan is our tribe's essence, how could we let a human being learn about it?"

Ya Meng was in shock for a while before suddenly jumping up. "If he studies the secrets of the Demonic Sound Clan and once he progresses, doesn't it mean that he will become our tribe's danger?"

Yi Cu Bi and Xue Fei were also confused and frightened. These two girls knew the Demonic Sound Clan's advantage. Although the Demonic Sound Clan was in an unfavorable position, thanks to the soul competency, they were still a deadly threat to humankind who naturally had feeble souls. Their soul secrets could easily deprive the ability to resist of human warriors at the same level.

The Heaven Flame on Shi Yan's body was genuinely the nemesis of the Demonic Sound Clan. Once he knew about the secrets of the Demonic Sound Clan, it would become tough for them if and when they wanted to use those soul secrets to control and kill him. If one day Shi Yan could reach the Sky Realm, there would not be any masters of the Demonic Sound Clan who was able to defeat him.

If that day came, Shi Yan could rely on his ability to enslave the entire Demonic Sound Clan. This was a terrifying thing.

"If he doesn't quickly progress, death will come even faster to the Demonic Sound Clan. It is not necessary to wait for him to reach the Realm that you are scared of, the Demonic Sound Clan should have perished before that."

Yu Rou coldly snorted; her eyes suddenly became furious. "Stupid little rascal, when we are talking, you better shut up!"

Ya Ji was terrified, quickly shut up, and bowed his head without daring to look at Yu Rou.

"What did you say?" The matriarch of White Wings Clan was cheerful again, looked at Yi Tian Mo and said, "You can understand the situation, don't you?"

"Ok, I will open my soul secret source for him." Yi Tian Mo hesitated a little before being the first one to agree.

Ya Meng and Ka Ba were not willing to do it; however, thinking about the unusual change of the Sound Beast Mountain gave them a bone-chilling feeling. They eventually followed Yi Tian Mo's decision, reluctantly agreeing to sacrifice their secret scriptures.

The expression of Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing were stunned. These consecutive upheavals made them feel as lost as the mists around them.

They did not know what Shi Yan had done for these two races that made them voluntarily sacrifice their belongings. They not only fulfilled whatever he wanted but also offered him their most valuable treasures.

In these pagan tribes' eyes, Shi Yan was even more attached to them than their biological fathers. On the contrary, the three women became their prisoners although they were also from the outside world. They had not been killed yet, but they were to be offered to Shi Yan and became tools for him to give vent sexually

and to do whatever he pleased to his heart's content.

Comparing between the two different conditions, Cao Zhi Lan felt so distressed that she wanted to vomit blood several times and silently cursed that God was unfair.

"That's it; this matter can be easily solved." Yu Rou was deliberate. "Let it be like that. The three of you arrange a house for this little rascal to stay. I will choose and pick up the secret scriptures from your scripture sources. Of course, I will not peep at your secret scriptures; you will be with me when I select them. Is it ok?"

Ya Meng, Ka Ba, and Yi Tian Mo did not want it at all, a thousand times over, but they could not do anything else but to agree.

"There is a house at the center of the area where the three of us are staying. It is not far from our places. We will arrange for him to stay there." Yi Tian Mo thought for a while before talking to Yi Cu Bi. "You bring Matriarch Yu Rou and Shi Yan to that house. Let's arrange for him first; then we will see what to do next."

"Yes, Father." Yi Cu Bi nodded her head with a confused face.

No matter how she could imagine, she would have never expected that not only had Shi Yan not been killed by Duo Long but he had also been escorted back by Yu Rou and Di Shan. Furthermore, the behavior of the patriarch and matriarch of the Wings Race, Di Shan, and Yu Rou, towards Shi Yan was unusual. They did not even regret the treasures that they gave to Shi Yan.

What was it all about?

Cu Bi felt her head get heavy. She thought about the time when Shi Yan had timorously looked around in the forest without enabling to do anything as he had been under the control of her soul secret skill. However, when looking at all the treats for him now, she did not know what was the best to say instantly.

"Little girl, you lead the way." The matriarch of the White Wings

Clan pressed her lips and faintly smiled. When she raised her hand pointing to Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing, a long colored ribbon flew out of her sleeve and tied up those three women.

Yu Rou pulled the ribbon on one hand as if she was walking her pets and brought these three women flying up to the sky; her other hand grabbed Shi Yan's arm. It seemed that she even comfortably joked with Shi Yan in a low tone when they were gliding in the sky.

"Little rascal, it is not that I am helping you, I am helping our two races. If you don't put effort, don't blame Di Shan and us for tearing your skin apart."

"Aida, whatever, I have to thank you. Hahaha, it was so unexpected of you that you could have earned such a big benefit. Hahaha, don't worry, I will be nice to you."

"Be nice to me? Little rascal, you don't care about life or death. If you are not useful anymore now, I will instantly make you wish to die than to live."

"Don't be so serious. I know you treat me well. Hahaha, don't worry, because of you, I will try to break through soon to have stronger forces to control the Heaven Flame, and thus help you break the Formation Technique of the Sound Beast Mountain."

"I hope you have that kind of power. If not, no one can protect you."

Not long after that, a mighty fifty-meter-high stone castle appeared in front of Shi Yan.

Yi Cu Bi was leading the way. After descending the castle, she waved towards Yu Rou.

Yu Rou followed Yi Cu Bi's signal and landed on the highest story of the castle, dragging Shi Yan and the three women along. Yi Cu Bi was standing in the middle of a big stone hall which had the size

of a basketball court, pointing to each of the tightly closed stone doors nearby, introducing to Yu Rou and Shi Yan, "There are nine rooms here, there are places for bathrooms, for..."

"It's alright." Yu Rou swung her arm stopping Cu Bi and threw the three women down without caring about them falling dizzily on the ground. "You, go back to your father. I need to arrange here a little bit, and then I will see your father to check on the submission of the soul secrets. Now go and tell your father in advance."

"Yes." Yi Cu Bi did not dare to say more. She nodded while confusingly looked at Shi Yan. She then slightly sighed and quickly left.

"Oh. Little rascal, you are good. That girl seems to pay special attention to you. Have you also done something to Yi Tian Mo's daughter already?"

"Who?" Shi Yan pretended innocently.

"Hihihi." Yu Rou chuckled. She swayed her white jade-like hand, the colored ribbons that were wrapping around the three women sneaked back into her sleeve like a snake. While flipping up the sleeve, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan indifferently said, "I know your sea of consciousness is temporarily not unusual, it is just indeed special. The five strange flows of souls were always restless and possibly caused any upheavals. I leave these three women to you. If they are not enough, I will have a solution to find more. I will also go to get the secret soul-scriptures of the Demonic Sound Clan for you. I will get you everything that you need; you will not be short of anything. I just hope that your Realm can progress as soon as possible. We can't wait for so long."

"Is it possible that the Sound Beast Mountain will have a major incident?" Shi Yan asked.

Yu Rou nodded and said, "I will not hide from you. Currently, the Sound Beast Mountain is very special indeed. It is highly possible

to have a major change there. Once that change occurs, our two races can perish. Hmm, to be exact, once the Sound Beast Mountain has an upheaval, this abandoned land will not exist anymore. It means that you will hardly avoid the death as well."

Shi Yan was surprised and paused for a while. After inhaling a deep breath, he said, "Finally, I know why Di Shan and the others were so generous."

"Uh, I want you to know that your Realm progress is related not only to the safety of the two races but also your safety. Therefore, because of your life, you should put more effort in doing it; otherwise, even if we want you to be alive, we do not have the ability to do so." Yu Rou seriously said.

"I know." Shi Yan nodded his head.

"Ok, I won't talk more. These three women don't have any more strength to resist. While cultivating, if there is anything unusual, you can give vent to them at any time. Hmm, you can even do it until they die, as long as you are ok with it. And if they do die, I can find other girls for you. You only need to break through quickly." Yu Rou looked straight to the three Cao Zhi Lan and the other two. Her words were very cold-hearted. In her eyes, those three women were merely tools.

The three future leaders of the Endless Sea all had glum faces after hearing of Yu Rou's words. Their charming bodies slightly trembled, but there were not any reactions.

"You ought to take care of yourself." Yu Rou flapped her wings, her body gently swayed and slowly flew away.

"This place is very quiet and also very safe. You don't need to be worried at all, just focus on your cultivation..." Yu Rou's voice slowly came out while her figure had already been gone.

In the vast stone hall, Shi Yan was standing inside the huge stone hall. He seemed to be deep in thoughts with a somber face.

At the distance of five meters away, the three women of Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing were anxious with a feeling of insecurity. While sitting on a stone surface, they could see the fear in each other's eyes.

Time passed.

Shi Yan still did not talk. Cao Zhi Lan's toneless eyes quietly looked at Shi Yan. After waiting for quite a long time, she impatiently cleared her throat as Shi Yan still did not show any intentions in talking.

Being awake from the meditation, Shi Yan frowned, coldly looked at the three women, and then said, "Your luck sucks."

"I know that you just luckily stepped in some dog shit." Gu Ling Long clenched her teeth and resentfully looked at him. "I can't believe you are such a rotter. Not only did you cooperate with the pagan tribes but you also want to help those crazy pagan people get out of here. Do you know what you are doing?"

"Making me angry is not a wise thing to do." Shi Yan revealed a wicked smile. His figure zoomed over and landed in front of Gu Ling Long. He stretched his hand rubbing Gu Ling Long's soft white chin with a lusty look and said, "You know, I can always disgrace you here. No one here can say a word."

Gu Ling Long's face slightly changed. She suddenly threw a punch towards Shi Yan but forgot that her energy had been lost. As soon as her small punch dashed out, she felt very painful.

"Uh, very unruly. I hope that when I play with you, you are also crazy like this." Shi Yan coldly smiled while boldly squeezing Gu Ling Long's soft breasts for a while. "Uh, small but very resilient. It indeed matches your name, Ling Long."

"Ah!" Gu Ling Long could not stand the pain and moved backward. Tears flooded in her eyes; she stared at Shi Yan resentfully. "I will kill you; I will kill you."

"Maybe your family can still have a chance, but you don't." Shi Yan's expression was cold-hearted. His figure quickly leaped up and appeared right behind Gu Ling Long's back. His big hand slapped one of her round butt cheeks and coolly said. "Butts are big. Not bad. I will take good care of you."

"Enough! Bully a girl who cannot even tie up a chicken, what kind of man are you?" Qu Yan Qing's eyes were full of anger; she couldn't help but shout.

"Oh?" Shi Yan burst into laughing. "At the beginning, nearly one hundred guys have pursued us. Hasn't it been courageous? Is it Qu Yan Qing? Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Divine Land. Do you remember how you treated Xin Yan and me in the Menluo Island? At that time, in your eyes, we were nothing, like an ant that could easily be crushed to death?"

Qu Yan Qing's eyes slightly changed. She obviously remembered what had happened in the Menluo Island.

In the beginning, she had not known about the status of Shi Yan and Xia XinYan. To get the secret of the Ice Cold Flame, she had put Shi Yan and Xia XinYan to death. She eventually let Shi Yan fall into a deep icy abyss which had irritated the Yang family. The Heaven Lake Divine Land then had to suffer a great loss because of it.

Because of her wrong anticipation which had led to this major loss of the Heaven Lake Divine Land, many elders of the Heaven Lake Divine Land had been very disappointed with her and had almost abolished her status of Holy Maiden. She resented Shi Yan to the bone for it.

This time, when the Yang family was on edge, she was the first one who had volunteered to join the battle in the Sky Sea to take revenge on Shi Yan.

Just as life was unpredictable, many of the top-class warriors had entered the Chasm Battlefield, but not only could they not kill Shi

Yan but also had the same consequence as they were having right now.

"So, you cannot say?" Shi Yan coldly smiled. He then leaped and quickly appeared in front of Qu Yan Qing. Her scream resounded when Shi Yan boldly stretched his arm to fondle her face several times, and then pulled her fine mask like a thin wing of a mite off her face.

Her eyebrows were high like a mountain; her face was a delicate picture with no makeup but incredibly charming. She was indeed an exquisitely beautiful girl, not inferior to Cao Zhi Lan.

It seemed that it was also the first time that Cao Zhi Lan and Gu Ling Long saw Qu Yan Qing's real face. The moment that her face was revealed, her graceful body slightly trembled, and she could not help but start screaming.

Women always tended to compare their appearances to each other no matter what. Even in the constraining situation like this, Gu Ling Long and Cao Zhi Lan still secretly compared themselves to her.

After Cao Zhi Lan compared for a moment, she slightly smiled and realized that in all aspects, Qu Yan Qing was not inferior to her. She was quite surprised.

Gu Ling Long seemed to be sad and fretful; her facial expression was not good. She knew she was inferior one level to Qu Yan Qing and could not be happy.

Shi Yan was startled a little, stared at Qu Yan Qing for a while, and suddenly burst into laughter, "It is quite obvious. The Heaven Lake Divine Land could not select an ugly girl to be Holy Maiden. Hahaha, such a beautiful body, that's even better. When I play with you, it will be less boring."

Qu Yan Ying knew even if she resisted, it was useless. Under the lusty observance of Shi Yan's eyes, she coldly looked at him with

furious eyes and said, "Although the Yang family people are perverse and ambitious, they have no kind of hero who bullies feeble girls. It looks like you are an exception."

"That's right." Shi Yan laughed loudly, flirtingly soothed Qu Yan Qing's chin. "I think in the Endless Sea, no one was able to see you or to soothe you like this. I can't believe I have such a good luck here. In this damn place, my luckiness in love keeps coming; I can deliberately enjoy it."

"Shi Yan, can we discuss this together?" Cao Zhi Lan was always in a deep thought from the beginning, and now she suddenly spoke up. She was much calmer than Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing. She was still composed with a smile and said, "In the current situation, although you are respected, you are still not treated differently from any of us."

Shi Yan harrumphed coldly, momentarily left Qu Yan Qing, and frigidly looked at the woman who was boasting. He beamed out a disdain smile and mocked her. "Not differently? Why didn't I realize it? I know these pagan tribes. To win my heart, they voluntarily devote the races' treasures to me. I know that these pagan people brought you here for me to enjoy! And you, what do you have? You are just a tool, a tool for me to give vent. Besides that, I don't know what other values that you have."

"Shi Yan, you should practice a little charity, ok?" Qu Yan Qing coldly shouted; her face displayed unbearable tiredness. If she still had some strength, she would have been the first one to tear Shi Yan's mouth apart. Gu Ling Long's charming body slightly shivered, she also gritted her teeth in rage. However, she had just suffered his misbehaviors, so she did not dare to provoke him again. Shi Yan was impudent and perverse, and she had experienced it already. When two sensitive places on her body had been violated, Gu Ling Long's arrogance was torn down. She understood her situation. In this damn place, when the body's strength was imprisoned, risking to provoke Shi Yan was just

burning her fingers.

"Practice charity?" Shi Yan's expression was weird. "You also practice charity? You are just a courtesan. Please stop pretending to be a Goddess."

The beautiful face of Qu Yan Qing suddenly turned white like paper; her delicate body trembled. She tightly clenched her teeth, seeming to restrain herself from risking her life with Shi Yan.

Cao Zhi Lan forced a miserable smile and said, "We are all nails in those pagan tribes' eyes. I know that you, Shi Yan are a little different from us, so what? Currently, you are still useful. But when your advantages are no more, your outcome will perhaps be even worse than ours. By that time, the way that the pagan tribes treat you will obviously be more brutal than the way they treat us."

Shrugging his shoulders, Shi Yan indifferently said, "Have you finished?"

Cao Zhi Lan helplessly nodded.

"Regardless how my future is, at least I do not get any harm right now and also leisurely enjoy everything of the pagan tribes, and you are one of them." Shi Yan coldly smiled. "Cao Zhi Lan, I know what you want to say. You want you and me to conjoin to save you guys and deal with these pagan tribes together. Is it right?"

Cao Zhi Lan nodded.

"With you guys?" Shi Yan didn't give a damn for it. "Even if I saved you, you think you could help me? Only one pagan of the Demonic Sound Clan alone could easily capture you all and confine your souls. So, how can you fight with them? For Ka Ba and Ya Meng, although those people have weak bodies, their soul competencies have reached the Spirit Realm. They just need to trigger their consciousness, and your souls will instantly explode. You are so stupid to think that you can be of a benefit to me?"

The expressions of Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing were like

ashes.

On the contrary, Cao Zhi Lan had no reaction. She hesitated a little bit and then said, "You said it right. We don't have a solution in resisting these pagan tribes. But if you can recover our strengths and give me one night to prepare, I can contact the Cao family. I just need to send out the information, and I think our families will have a solution."

"Contact with the outsiders?" Shi Yan was a little bit agitated.

"That's right. I just need to have enough time to prepare so that I can make contact with the Cao family." Cao Zhi Lan assured and said, "Once I send out the information, with the intelligence of our top-class warriors in the Endless Sea, we can quickly know these pagan tribes' origin and find a way to deal with them."

"Oh!" Shi Yan nodded, rubbed his chin, and carelessly said, "Your ways are not bad. But so sorry, I don't accept it. Not only that, but I will also watch you carefully to prevent you from contacting with the outsiders."

After those words had come out, the beautiful faces of Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing changed. They both resentfully looked at Shi Yan.

"Shi Yan!" Cao Zhi Lan insisted. "I am begging you to think about it. The Demonic Sound Clan have the God-given advantage to deal with us. Their particular souls can help them destroy us easily. There are also the other three leaders of the Wings Race; each of them has wicked intentions as well as extraordinary powers. Once they enter the Endless Sea, it will be a nightmare for all the warriors of the Endless Sea. Many ordinary people will die. Even though you don't like us, you should see the big picture."

"The issues regarding your life and death does not matter to me." Shi Yan's expression was indifferent.

"I know all of you will not forgive the Yang family and surely will

not forgive me. I am not that great man. Damn you, don't manipulate me."

"You!" Gu Ling Long could not stand it anymore. "Do you still have a good sense or not? You know how much loss when these two races entering the Endless Sea will cause? How many people will die because of your decisions?"

"What?" Shi Yan coldly smiled. "You cooperated with the people of the Fourth Demon Area, was it a good sense? Because of you, the Fourth Demon Area and the Underworld could massively invade into the Endless Sea. Perhaps, people in the Endless Sea have already been in misery. Adding these two pagan tribes will be nothing, or these two pagan tribes can probably control the Fourth Demon Area and the Underworld."

"What?" Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing simultaneously shouted with astonished faces.

"The Fourth Demon Area and the Underworld have possibly conjoined. The Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers have united with each other. First, they killed all of the Yang family, destroyed the defenses where the Heaven Gate linked with the Demon Area. Not long after that, the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers will enter the Endless Sea together. As of now, the Endless Sea perhaps has belonged to the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers already. Even if you send out information, it is f*cking useless." Shi Yan revealed a cold smile and said.

The three girls were stunned with confused eyes. They felt cold and hopeless within their hearts for the first time.

Chapter 256: Unexpected cake from Heaven

In the large stone hall.

Shi Yan was composedly sitting in the middle of the stone hall with a serious face. His bright eyes stared at the jade bottle and the two jade boxes in front of him without blinking. Seven antiquated dark-yellow scripture books laid in a line behind the jade boxes.

Yu Rou and Di Shan kept silent, standing in front of Shi Yan, one on his left while the other one on his right.

Ya Meng, Ka Ba, and Yi Tian Mo miserably glared at the seven dark-yellow scripture books. It seemed that they wanted to say something but couldn't. They apparently regretted this decision and did not want to hand over these Demonic Sound Clan's books. However, they had no other choices.

In a big chamber inside the stone hall, Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qu Yan Qing were overwhelmed with the feeling of worry and insecurity. They were observing the scene happening in the stone hall with dark faces.

"You can directly take the White Jade Spirit Fruit. After consuming it, meditate instantly and attentively absorbed the soul refining power of the Spirit Fruit. This method is very simple. You just need to carry the internal powers to the brain. The energy inside of the Spirit Fruit will unblock the nerves and veins in your brain, making your soul extremely sensitive as well as helping you meditate well. If you can absorb all of the powers of a White Jade Spirit Fruit into your brain, it will be very useful for your cultivation as well as the reinforcement of your mental state and soul purification. It makes the powers of your soul very sensitive and increases the coverage range and intensity of your mental state." Yu Rou's expression was somber. With her gentle voice, she slowly explained Shi Yan the consumption method and the efficacy of the White Jade Spirit Fruit.

"The Black Head Lotus is even simpler. A slice of the Black Head Lotus can be compressed into plenty of juice. You just need to apply that juice all over your body and let your pores absorb the juice of the Black Head Lotus. It will get into your body and gradually form a lotus tattoo on your chest. This lotus tattoo can enhance the refining speed of the Sky and Earth aura five times during five years. Once you cultivate, as long as the Black Lotus Tattoo doesn't disappear, the Sky and Earth aura will gather within five-times faster and flowed in that Black Lotus Tattoo. Through this Black Lotus Tattoo, you can refine, transform, and then slowly pour your profound Qi in to help increase your cultivation speed." Di Shan squinted while his black wings retracted. He clenched his lips, seeming to be a little heart-rending.

"Heaven Fountain Concentrated Water is the treasure of the Gray Wings Clan. The usage is also simple. Hmm, if you are injured, or your profound Qi has a significant loss, you just need to drink one drop of the Heaven Fountain Concentrated Water. It will instantly supplement your Profound Qi for you and also cure your wounds very fast. You temporarily do not need it now. Wait until you break the Formation Technique, if your energy is consumed too much, you can use the Heaven Fountain Concentrated Water to recover it. It will increase your powers." Yu Rou smiled and continued. "Di Shan has put a lot of effort to convince Duo Long to give you one bottle of the Heaven Fountain Concentrated Water. He almost fought with Duo Long. Thus, do not disappoint us."

Shi Yan sat still as a stone. His expression was calm and severe. "Don't worry. If I have these three things from you and yet could not break the Formation Technique, you can do anything with me as you wish."

Di Shan nodded. He then looked at Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Ti Tian Mo and neglectfully asked, "How about you?"

Ka Ba was stunned, pointing at the scripture books on the ground said miserably, "We have placed all of the scriptures over there."

"You think he can understand them? Those are antiquated books. If you don't give him any guidance, do you think that he can still understand them?"

"Argh." Ka Ba scratched his head without knowing how to answer. He replied eventually, "Ok, I will show him."

"No." Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo spoke up simultaneously.

All of the seven scripture books did not belong to Ka Ba alone; Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo preserved five of them. These five books could not be spread out to the others. If Ka Ba knew the contents of these five books, he possibly could capture the other two leaders' secret soul techniques in his hand.

Shi Yan revealed a wicked smile. Although he was under a tight watch of the top-class warriors of the two tribes, he still deliberately walked to the scripture books and picked one of them up. He glanced at it and said, "No need to bother you. I can understand these ancient scriptures."

The five leaders' expressions slightly changed. Astonishment exposed on their faces.

"Shi Yan, what did you say?" Yu Rou shook her head with doubt and said, "Don't bluster. It is not the time to boast. These scriptures were from our ancestors. It should be tens of thousands of years ago, how could you know about them?"

"Seven Manipulation Gods." Shi Yan pointed at the scripture book in his hand, looking towards Ka Ba and asked, "Am I pronouncing the title correctly?"

Ka Ba's eyes lit up; his face was very odd, but he still gently nodded his head, "That's correct. These are the three words 'Seven Manipulation Gods'. I didn't expect that you know it."

The eyes of five leaders of the pagan tribes expressed an astonishment and suspicions at the same time. They did not know how he could read these ancient scriptures.

"Alright. You have brought everything here. I can now start my cultivation." Shi Yan leisurely stretched his hands touching the treasures and ancient scripture books in front of him. The Blood Vein Ring in his finger flared up several times; those things then disappeared one by one into the ring.

"Ah, if there is nothing important, please don't disturb me." Shi Yan raised his head looking at the five leaders.

"Ok, ok. You focus on your cultivation. I will be around to watch out. Call me if you need anything." The matriarch of White Wings Clan revealed a beautiful smile. After thinking a while, she threw a glance at the three women of Cao Zhi Lan's group in the distance and said, "If those three women are not enough, I will arrange more for you. You can set your mind to rest about this fact. Duo Long has captured a human woman named He Qing Man. I have bargained with Duo Long. He will bring that girl here in a moment."

An idea suddenly popped up in Di Shan's mind. He said, "That woman is quite beautiful too. She will also be handed to you to stabilize your emotions. So, you don't need to worry about girls."

"He Qing Man?" Shi Yan's face slightly changed. His eyes kept moving before speaking, "The girl that I need should be a virgin. Virgins have the most efficiency. If not, the results will be a lot less."

"What?" Di Shan was startled for a while before talking to Yu Rou, "We perhaps have to put more pressure on Duo Long."

"I think Duo Long will also sacrifice that small thing for the bigger thing." Yu Rou looked at Shi Yan while revealing a faint smile. After mumbling to herself, she reluctantly nodded and said, "So, we will go to discuss much more with Duo Long."

"Hmm, sorry for having to bother you this time." Shi Yan said with an excited face. "Only human women are suitable for me. I am not sure if the women of your two tribes can be suitable or not."

That's why I hope the woman whose name is He Qing Man will be sent here unharmed. With four girls at hand, I think that I will not have any problems."

"Damn you little rascal." Yu Rou shook her head and said helplessly, "Alright, because of our two tribes, we will bring that girl here intact as you wish."

"Korf, korf. That's good." Shi Yan's face remained unchanged. He hurriedly said with an impatient expression, "Now, I need carry on my cultivation. If there is nothing else to say, please..."

"Let's go." Di Shan leaped up, the pair of black wings on his back flapped gently. His figure gradually faded and disappeared completely out of sight.

Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo stared at Shi Yan before leaving without saying anything further.

Yu Rou was the last one to leave. She waited until the four of them had disappeared to speak to Shi Yan, "Little rascal, you now take care of this matter by your own. If you cannot help our two tribes break the Formation Technique, no one can save you."

"Thank you." Shi Yan sincerely said while looking straight into Yu Rou's eyes.

"No need to say thank you. I only think for the welfare of the two tribes." Her beautiful eyes blinked; her mouth revealed a secret smile. Yu Rou paused for a while before she slowly turned around and flew away.

Eventually, only Shi Yan alone was sitting straight and motionlessly in the stone hall. He knitted his eyebrows and contemplated.

After the three women of Cao Zhi Lan's group had been watching him in silence for a while, they quietly walked out of the stone chamber but still kept a safe distance with Shi Yan. They looked at him with a confused expression; it seemed that they wanted to say

something but couldn't find any topics to talk about.

"The three of you should be obedient. This place is not the outside world. You were something in the outside world, but you are nothing here." Shi Yan turned around and said in a low tone. "Do not disturb me. Be obedient over there. Female slaves should behave as female slaves."

"Female slaves?" Gu Ling Long's complexion suddenly changed. Her look was chilled-to-the-bone; she fiercely stared at Shi Yan's back. Her big breasts heaved nonstop. "What did you say?" Gu Ling Lung secretly gritted her teeth; she now looked like a little tigress showing her fangs and claws. She resented not to be able to jump over to Shi Yan to tear him apart.

"As I have said, the three of you are slaves. I can play with you whenever I want." Shi Yan turned his head around, coldly glancing at the three of them with a mocking face. "If you are not well behaved, I would not mind teaching you a bit about your manners."

"You," Gu Ling Long's and Qu Yan Qing's beautiful faces instantly turned pale. They were so angry that their bodies trembled, they looked like they were ready to risk their lives to kill Shi Yan.

Only Cao Zhi Lan was not mad, but she felt a little dreary within her own heart. She released a long sigh and then walked towards Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing to comfort them. She helplessly said, "We cannot do anything when facing this emotionless rascal. Don't hurt yourselves."

Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing clenched their teeth but did not dare to storm in and fight with him. They knew that it was not good to irritate Shi Yan at this moment.

In the past few days, whenever Shi Yan had gotten irritated by them, he had violated all the sensitive places on their bodies.

When Shi Yan was waiting for the two pagan tribes to bring their

treasures, he closed his eyes meditating; it was like he was reviewing all the secrets in his cultivation. The three women could not do anything except insulting him with their words and curses, and the results were always woeful. It always ended up with their bodies being disgraced.

Except for Cao Zhi Lan who hadn't been violated as she was obedient since the beginning, Shi Yan had already manipulated all the sensitive places on Gu Ling Long's and Qu Yan Qing's bodies.

The two girls were very embarrassed. However, whenever they thought about committing suicide, they got a terrible splitting headache and did not have any abilities to do it.

Having been violated for many, many times, the two women were gradually getting more obedient. They did not dare to irritate Shi Yan too much; they immediately stopped if they saw Shi Yan start to get angry.

"I am almost done cultivating. Lower your voices. Do not disturb me." Shi Yan stood up glancing at the three frightened women. After that, he entered a vast stone chamber on the right side of the stone hall. After closing the door, he closed his eyes and began meditating.

Chapter 257: Soul perception.

Shi Yan's eyes were tightly closed; his breath was regular. Many flows of negative aura spread out from his body.

In the secret chamber, Shi Yan was meditating and devotedly cultivating, gradually entering a marvelous Realm and even almost forgetting himself.

From his appearance, his body did not have any special transformations yet. However, if there was a person who had a mighty sea of consciousness here, he would recognize that the spirit fluctuation inside of Shi Yan's mind was extremely chaotic and confusing.

Five different flows of soul aura clustered inside his sea of consciousness. These flows were full of emotions of despair, fear, bloodshed, greed, and resentment accordingly. They were condensing little by little, seeming to be constantly absorbing the negative feelings inside his body.

As many negative feelings gathered, the five Devils in his sea of consciousness, which had been created by the gathering of the five negative emotions, had a fierce look. It seemed like they wanted to get out of the sea of consciousness, intruded into Shi Yan's brain and plundered his spirit.

When conducting the negative feelings, Shi Yan didn't dare to relax his mind, he still kept his spirit stabilizing to take control.

The Five Devils in the Sea of Mind cultivation technique originated from the Blood Vein Ring. It was like a miraculous spell which had been customized for his body, and it also perfectly combined with his Mystery Martial Spirit.

Like the Third Sky of Rampage, the cultivating method of the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind also required the Mystery Martial Spirit. This cultivation happened through the gathering of the

negative feelings inside of his meridians. These negative feelings could normally push him into a critical situation where he could not control the five Devils. Even when they were still under the control of the Sea of Consciousness, they had already scared Shi Yan out of his wit. Once the five Devils could be free from the control of the Sea of Consciousness, they would then dominate Shi Yan's consciousness completely.

Shi Yan had already known about this when he had been cultivating the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind.

Before he successfully finished cultivating this marvelous martial technique, the Devils' backfire could happen at any given time. This was actually the Devils' experiment for Shi Yan. If he could not break the Devils' mind, he would probably get a bad consequence for himself once the Devils were formed.

He understood that cultivating the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind was much more dangerous than breaking through the Third Sky of Rampage. However, once he successfully cultivated this, he would obviously have a tremendous intimidation like the Third Sky of Rampage. Therefore, even though he knew that cultivating this martial technique was very dangerous, he had never hesitated. Once he had got the method of cultivating the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind down, he immediately began the cultivation.

He was interested in the challenges from the hard-to-cultivate Martial Techniques.

All types of the negative feelings gathering in the sea of consciousness had turned into nutritious sources for the five Devils. Shi Yan used his soul consciousness to penetrate into the five Devils' bodies in order to affect them and then build a harmonious relationship with them.

However, after those five Devils had received a lot of negative feelings, they gradually attained consciousness. Because the Devils had Shi Yan's soul imprint, they could be also considered as having

his intelligence. They seemed to know of his intentions; thus, once his consciousness came close to them, they promptly boycotted it.

After many attempts, Shi Yan could only control a little bit of his Mind's area, and thus, his mind wasn't affected so much when the negative feelings filled his sea of consciousness. However, he had failed to penetrate the five Devils with his soul consciousness to create a connection with them to be able to control them genuinely.

Very long time later.

Shi Yan gradually opened his eyes and contemplated for a while before taking the seven soul scripture books of the Demonic Sound Clan and starting to read them one by one.

The seven ancient soul scripture books did not mention the cultivating methods of the martial techniques in detail. Instead, they were about the research of all the miraculous soul transformations, mentioning the features and different methods of soul cultivations in a very detailed and clear way.

Only after reading them for a short time did Shi Yan's eyes brightened up; his face revealed an excitement.

These seven ancient soul scripture books contained all kinds of profound comprehensions about the soul's marvelousness. The soul comprehension's level of the Demonic Sound Clan had indeed far surpassed that of the other tribes. It seemed that Yu Rou actually knew which ancient scriptures would be the most useful for him now. These seven ancient scripture books, with no exception, all mentioned Upanishads that were related to the soul.

It was as if Shi Yan had just gotten a treasure. He did not hurry to control the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind anymore. Instead, he spent all of his time in reading the seven ancient scripture books of the Demonic Sound Clan.

He did not know that the seven ancient soul scripture books were

the Soul Upanishads' essence of the Demonic Sound Clan.

These seven ancient scripture books were the foundation for all of the Demonic Sound Clan's soul secret skills. Understanding them would allow him to master of all kinds of the Demonic Sound Clan's soul secret skills.

Shi Yan conducted his host soul into deep inside the spirit and the sea of consciousness, and then used the sea of consciousness to nourish the host soul, gradually formed the God Soul. Once the God Soul was formed, it would break the tie of the spirit and obtain terrific power.

An ancient scripture book related to Upanishads of the host soul attracted Shi Yan's attention. He researched it so deeply that he even forgot the time and the binding in the cultivation. He now simply used his mind to perceive everything that was related to the host soul.

According to this ancient scripture, everyone had a host soul. The host soul was the core of soul.

An ordinary person could not sense the existence of a host soul nor had no way to control it or take its forces.

For warriors who cultivated martial arts, if they purified themselves and refined their blood to break through their minds, their souls would slowly intensify. One day, they would finally be able to sense the host soul of the core of soul.

Once a warrior broke through the Nirvana Realm to form the sea of consciousness, if they could conduct the host soul into the sea of consciousness, the sea of consciousness and the host soul would support each other and develop together.

When the host soul entered the sea of consciousness, it would be nourished by the sea of consciousness and gradually had transformations once the Nirvana Realm improved.

One day, if the warriors had entered the God Realm, their host

souls would then evolve to a higher level, transforming to the God Soul in the Sea of Consciousness.

Once the God Soul was formed, it meant that the warriors officially became a Supreme God Realm master. The God Soul and the sea of consciousness supporting one another could then develop unimaginable soul forces.

Shi Yan worked hard to understand and carefully remembered all the ancient scripture books. He gradually gained a special perception of the Demonic Sound Clan's soul comprehension.

If the host soul was conducted into the sea of consciousness and nourished by the sea of consciousness, could the host soul then control the five Devils?

In a moment, an idea popped up in Shi Yan's mind. He suddenly felt that it could be done. After this thought appeared in his mind, he could not restrain himself and was impatient in finding the host soul that was hiding deep inside his soul to conduct the host soul into the sea of consciousness.

White Jade Spirit Fruit!

Shi Yan's expression completely changed; he suddenly revealed a smile.

According to Yu Rou, this White Jade Spirit Fruit could feed the spirit up, and thus the host soul would be also able to benefit from this peculiar fruit. Once taking the White Jade Spirit Fruit, the strange powers of the fruit would scatter and pour into the spirit, so that both the spirit and the host soul would receive more power.

If it happened that way, after taking the White Jade Spirit Fruit and meditating to sense the White Jade Spirit Fruit's power running inside, was it then easy to find the host soul? Shi Yan's eyes lit up.

After Shi Yan slightly fondled the Blood Vein Ring, a ray of light glinted, and the jade box immediately appeared.

As soon as the jade box was opened, a passionate fragrance rose up.

The White Jade Spirit Fruit inside of the box was fulgent. At the first glance, it looked like a marvelous crunch of jade with sparkling lights inside. It seemed to have some strange powers hidden inside of the White Jade Spirit Fruit.

Shi Yan squinted and took a good look at the White Jade Spirit Fruit. He noticed that there were numerous silk lines that twisted together like the nerve system of the brain. It was extremely miraculous.

Smelling the fragrance from the White Jade Spirit Fruit had already agitated Shi Yan's spirit. He felt as if his spirit had been shot out from the mundaneness and been purified by some exotic thing.

Shi Yan was stunned for a moment. He did not dare to think too much and hastily put the White Jade Spirit Fruit into his mouth and swallowed it. Then, he quickly urged the profound Qi to digest the White Jade Spirit Fruit.

"Boom"

Inside of his body suddenly appeared a flame which came from the heart within his chest. As soon as the White Jade Spirit Fruit ran down to his stomach, that flame instantly enclosed the White Jade Spirit Fruit.

The fulgent White Jade Spirit Fruit like a chunk of jade inside of Shi Yan's belly suddenly inflamed. Wisps of power rose up and hovered around like a mist of smog. They gradually gathered and rolled toward Shi Yan's brain.

Shi Yan immediately had strange feelings which were similar to what he had felt when he had absorbed the power of the Soul Gathering Pearl, only did the feelings this time be stronger. When he had taken in the soul of the Soul Gathering Pearl, plenty of soul

forces chaotically scattering toward all directions. As soon as the soul power poured into his brain, it abruptly flushed over every corner of his brain.

However, the strange power of the White Jade Spirit Fruit was quite unique. This unusual force seemed to have its own target. They gradually approached Shi Yan's brain but only gathered into a special corner of his brain. His forehead.

A dazzling marvelous ivory-white beam of light suddenly shot out from between of his eyebrows.

It looked like an extra strange flashing eye just appeared in between of Shi Yan's eyebrows. Inside of that dazzling beam of light formed a vortex of intense soul forces that seemed to be stirring up strong winds and big storms inside his brain.

Shi Yan's sturdy body vibrated tremendously. A radiating a glowing ray of light shot out from the middle of his eyebrows and gradually covered his entire brain which then started to emit many bright halos one after one. He now looked like a saint, very mysterious and anomalous.

Found it.

Shi Yan was overjoyed. His spirit was constantly taking in the peculiar forces of the White Jade Spirit Fruit which then converged in a mysterious area in the middle of his forehead.

In that mysterious area, he could see 'another him' and witnessed a glittering scene.

In the mysterious area, his 'another him' was sitting cross-legged with tightly closed eyes. God light flared up from between of his eyebrows. It was exactly like himself.

In that area with the seven-colored halos, an elf was sitting cross-legged; the corners of his mouth revealed a beam of excitement. There was a white God light on top of his head. A blinding light flared up in between the eyebrows again.

When Shi Yan's spirit came here, that elf seemed to feel something and suddenly opened his eyes.

Those eyes were like a bottomless lake which reflected the images of Shi Yan's life imprint.

All milestones in Shi Yan's life emerged in those eyes. When his spirit arrived here, it seemed to be attracted and immediately went inside those eyes, turning into a period of his soul imprint.

"Bang."

Shi Yan's head seemed to implode. His soul consciousness was horribly shaken; his sea of consciousness became extremely chaotic. The elf gradually got out of that mysterious area, following the soul light to enter the sea of consciousness.

Everything became quiet again.

Chapter 258: Raving waves.

As soon as the host soul entered the sea of consciousness, the Five Devils in the Sea of Consciousness suddenly became restful and did not dare to be rebellious.

The Host Soul and the Sea of Consciousness contacted with each other. Each fiber of the soul consciousness in the Sea of Consciousness tightly twisted with the host soul.

At this moment, the host soul and Shi Yan's soul consciousness formed a marvelous connection. Soul consciousness turned into beams of miraculous light which were not easy to be seen by naked eyes. They then abruptly went into Shi Yan's eyes.

His eyes seemed to receive a streak of lightning as soon as he opened them. Thin and delicate rays of lightning quickly moved inside his eyes.

After walking out of the stone chamber to the big stone hall, Shi Yan looked out in the distance and suddenly realized that his vision range had been tens of times greater than before.

Everything within the range of more than ten miles became apparent in his eyes. He could even see the wrinkles on the faces of Demonic Sound Clan people with minute detail.

His soul consciousness covered the entire area and could detect every single life fluctuation in the area. Even a worm under the ground could not avoid his soul consciousness.

At this time, Shi Yan had an incredible feeling as if he had turned into a God.

Small things nor weak little lives in the adjacent areas could not escape from his eyes and his soul consciousness. Everything seemed to be under his control.

The host soul entering the Sea of Consciousness had unexpectedly brought him such a marvelous feeling. This kind of

feelings made him crazily overjoyed; his heart was even moved.

In the Sea of Consciousness, the host soul and the soul consciousness were bound to each other. The host soul seemed to turn into another brain while the soul consciousness fibers connecting with the host soul appeared to turn into nerves, bringing him new comprehensions.

With the host soul staying in the Sea of Consciousness, the Five Devils also calmed down.

After perceiving carefully for a while, Shi Yan discovered that the soul consciousness connecting with the host soul also wrapped around the Five Devils. After entering the Sea of Consciousness, the host soul continuously emitted and transmitted the life fluctuations to the Five Devils through the soul consciousness. Under the effect of those life fluctuations, the Five Devils suddenly became restful. They seemed to know that they were not able to dominate the host soul, and thus they stopped acting recklessly.

When he triggered his mind, the host soul delivered his thoughts to the Five Devils. The Five Devils immediately immersed themselves in the Sea of Consciousness. The soul imprint inside of the Five Devils which belonged to him seemed to have been effective. It had started to slowly tie up the Five Devils, preventing them from emitting negative feelings.

The streak of lightning in Shi Yan's eyes faded; his face regained the previous somber expressions. He stood in the middle of the stone hall, seeming to think about something.

After a long while, he finally sat down in the middle of the stone hall. Without worrying about being disturbed, he soothed the Blood Vein Ring and took the Black Head Lotus out.

As he opened the jade box, a huge big black halo suddenly scattered from the petals of the Black Head Lotus. These petals were of an inky black color with black halos flaring up from the inside which gave a miraculous and anomalous feeling to others.

Without hesitation, he stretched out his hand grabbing the petals and then put it right on his chest. The Profound Qi from his fingers concentrated and then radiated a beam of light into the petals.

The shining black liquid abruptly flew out from the petals, absorbing into his body through the pores of the skin on his chest.

A warm and pleasant feeling spread all over his body.

It seemed that there were thousands of worms that were gnawing on his chest. In a short moment, Shi Yan felt itchy, painful, and uncomfortable. The liquid of the Black Head Lotus diffused and quietly amended his flesh, causing the transformations of every single molecular cell within his body.

A black drawing which was as big as a fist gradually become visible on his chest while he was still enjoying this marvelous feeling of comprehension.

Shi Yan was astonished and dazedly watched the transformations on his chest. He wondered if the liquid of the Black Head Lotus was that miraculous or not.

The formerly faint black drawing gradually became clearer. Not long afterward, each of the petals appeared on his chest. Shining black petals blossomed little by little until a Black Lotus was formed. It looked highly exotic at first glance. After the black lotus had been formed, a fresh surge of energy immediately ran out from the middle of the lotus bloom.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan sat straight up, closed his eyes, and meditated.

The Profound Qi in his body slowly moved, carrying out the circulation in his vessels. Right at the time that the refining process had just started, the surrounding Sky and Earth aura was unusually lively all of a sudden. The gathering speed was many times faster, and the Profound Qi was massively pouring into the black lotus on his chest.

It was miraculous indeed.

Shi Yan was overjoyed; he quickly closed his eyes, concentratedly putting all his efforts in gathering the Sky and Earth aura. He used his spirit energy to refine as much of the profound Qi as possible and enhanced the intensity of the Profound Qi within his body.

Time had quickly passed. It had been ten days just in a blink.

"Squeak."

The door of the next stone chamber was pushed open. Three stealthy and delicate figures quietly walked out of the stone chamber and then stood ten meters away from Shi Yan, watching him cultivating in the middle of the stone hall in silence.

"Lan jie" Gu Ling Long frowned and looked at Cao Zhi Lan. A cold light flashed across her eyes.

Qu Yan Qing's beautiful face was icy cold. Her eyes kept moving as if she had wanted to do something but still hesitated.

Cao Zhi Lan knitted her eyebrows. While Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing were staring at her, she shook her head implicating that they should not do anything rash.

In the stone hall, Shi Yan was meditating with his eyes closed. His half-naked body was gathering a big amount of the Sky and Earth aura. A malignant black lotus emitted a black halo which was like a bloody big mouth biting and swallowing the Sky and Earth aura before transferring them to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was motionless and completely oblivious of himself. It seemed like he didn't know that the three women were staring at him from not that far away.

It was unknown how much time had passed. Shi Yan's body quietly projected faint silver light. The light was very gloomy at the beginning but then became brighter due to more and more of the Sky and Earth aura pouring in.

The Sky and Earth aura were as dense as a cloud of smoke hovering beside Shi Yan without dispersing.

The silver light from inside Shi Yan's body gradually dispersed out and seemed to lead to the mutation of the Sky and Earth aura. This mutation made the Sky and Earth aura become chaotic and continuously revolve around him forming small streaks of electricity. These streaks of electricity were closely approaching to his body as if they wanted to seep into his body.

"Lan jie, this, this is ..."

"He is about to enter the Second Sky of the Earth Realm."

"What? How come is it so fast? When he entered the Chasm Battlefield, he was only in the Disaster Realm."

"The leaders of the two tribes have given him their treasures. As he has absorbed the energy of these treasures, together with his outstanding innate abilities, being able to break through this fast is within reason."

"Lam jie, this is the most crucial moment. I think he surely doesn't have any protection. If we can ...?"

"No, we should not do anything rash. Even if we do manage to kill him, what is next? This place is full of Demonic Sound Clan people. Even if we can get out of here, the results might be even more tragic."

"But, but we may never know, one day, his animal-like characteristics might break out, he would possibly then violate us savagely. What will we do then?"

"Oh, at least we will still survive. Being violated by the same kind is better than being disgraced by the pagans. Didn't you see Ya Ji's intentions? If we had fallen into Ya Ji's hands or the Wings Race's hands, the outcome should have been much worse than now."

"..." (Everyone contemplated for a while)

After a short discussion, the three women were quiet again and stayed at the side watching Shi Yan without any actions.

Far ahead outside the stone castle, on the top of a very high arch, Yu Rou, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan was leisurely lying down on a bamboo swing, swaying her long thin legs. However, her mesmerizing eyes was still fixing on the stone castle in the distance, paying attention to any commotions inside of the stone castle.

Besides Yu Rou, Di Shan, the patriarch of Black Wings Clan, was like a dominating stone statue with his cold yet attractive appearance. He stood motionlessly without saying a word.

Behind Di Shan's back, He Qing Man was looking towards the stone castle in the distance with her wide-open eyes and a confused face. She could vaguely saw Shi Yan's figure in there.

"In the last half month, although he has had help from the White Jade Spirit Fruit and the Black Head Lotus, this little rascal's innate ability is not bad at all as he can enter the Second Sky from the First Sky of the Earth Realm."

A long while later, Di Shan suddenly exclaimed, "It is regretful that he is humankind. If he were our Wings Race's youth, we would have fostered and trained him."

Di Shan swung his arm while speaking. A black cage appeared and enclosed He Qing Man in the blink, preventing her from listening or seeing anything.

"Di Shan, I have promised that little rascal that after he finishes the job, we will spare his life." The swing of Yu Rou gradually stopped swaying. She frowned while looking at Di Shan and then coldly said, "Being the patriarch and the matriarch of our tribes, we need to keep our words. What do you think?"

"I will try my best to protect him." Di Shan contemplated for a while before speaking. "But if the Demonic Sound Clan and Duo

Long unite to kill him, I will not risk my life for him."

Yu Rou's expression slightly changed. She shouted, "They dare do it?"

Di Shan forced a miserable smile and slowly nodded his head, "This little rascal is outstanding. That's why the Demonic Sound Clan wants him dead. However, to help him improve faster, you have asked the other three guys to give him their ancient scriptures. As he now can understand the Upanishads, if he does not die, his soul accomplishment will be extremely tremendous. That should be a catastrophe for the Demonic Sound Clan. If I were a person of the Demonic Sound Clan, I would also have not let him live. I would have killed him at all costs."

Yu Rou was bewildered and then slowly nodded. She said with a confused face, "So, my way has pushed him to the everlasting perdition."

"Anyway, he is just a little human brat. No need to be that worried. We have sacrificed that much to break the Formation Technique. Don't care too much about his life or death." Di Shan coldly said.

"Di Shan." Yu Rou suddenly called out to him loudly. After hesitating for a while, she raised her head looking at the patriarch of Black Wings Clan and said, "If that little rascal was the descendant of the three God Kings, will you follow our ancestors' guidance and spare his life?"

"What?" Di Shan's face suddenly changed.

"The blood of the Immortal God King is running in his body. It is destiny. Moreover, he came here with the Heaven Flame. Everything is needed as conditions in helping us get out of this abandoned place. Tell me, is it because that the ancestors have sworn of the breaking of the Formation Technique which has been transmitted to the God King that we are now encountering this current situation?" Yu Rou's eyes glinted with God light. She

looked straight at Di Shan with a serious face.

"Immortal God King?" Di Shan took a deep breath; he was obviously in shock. After a while, he said in a low tone, "Haven't you been mistaken?"

"I have checked carefully. He is absolutely the descendant of the Immortal God King." Yu Rou nodded her head. "I know that Duo Long does not respect the ancestors' guidance. These things are meaningless to him. I want to hear it from you directly."

"If we follow the ancestors' guidance, we have to serve him as our Master. This thing ..." Di Shan beamed out a faint smile and hesitated for a while before continuing, "We will see. If this little rascal shows some potential which can make me admire him, I will reconsider. But if he cannot, I will not have any mercy. Ahem, Di Shan has to serve him as a Master, I would rather go against the ancestors' guidance than do it."

Chapter 259: The younger generation who surpassed the older

Shi Yan wide opened his eye. Sparkling light glinted in his eyes. The shiny silver light around his body gradually retracted until it left no trace.

"Congratulations!" Cao Zhi Lan moved forward one step with an honest face. "Although you have some help from the anomalous treasures, being able to break through the Second Sky of the Earth Realm is exceptional. If you go back to the Endless Sea, you can definitely rank on the top five of the Power Rankings."

The beautiful faces of Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing slightly changed, showing suspicion. "The top five of the Power Rankings?"

Shi Yan guffawed shaking his head and said, "I don't care about those rankings. I am not interested in it. Only top-level warriors with wicked intentions like you care about the rank on Power Rankings."

"You, you look down on us?" Gu Ling Long angrily said.

"That's right." Shi Yan did not refuse it, nodding his head. "When I was still in the Disaster Realm without any help from the beasts, I could already sustain one full-power strike of yours. You also rank on the top of the Power Rankings but still cannot defeat even one Disaster Realm warrior. So, you tell me, are the Power Rankings meaningful?"

Gu Ling Long got irritated while glaring at Shi Yan. She said with anger, "You think everyone is a monster like you?"

"Shi Yan, you are no an ordinary warrior. You could enhance your strength several times more in just a blink. Even the top-level warriors in the Power Rankings can never possess this kind of power. We shouldn't compare you to ordinary warriors." Cao Zhi Lan laughed comfortably as if she and Shi Yan were friends.

Cao Zhi Lan had always wanted to cool down the relationship with Shi Yan. During this time, regardless of what she said or did, she should just simply follow and comply with Shi Yan. Her purpose was simple. She hoped that Shi Yan would have some sympathy for them and did not see them as his enemies.

"I don't need you to remind me." Shi Yan frowned, gradually stood up, and stared at Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing. He suddenly said, "If you still have bad intentions, don't blame me for disgracing you even before my cultivation encounter any troubles. Ahem, you dared to have the intentions of killing me while I was cultivating. You are such stupid women. Learn more from Cao Zhi Lan. You should better understand your current situation."

The expressions of Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing slightly changed, but they did not dare to say anything further. They only felt strange how Shi Yan could have still overheard their conversations while he had been in the critical point of his breakthrough.

They apparently did not know that after Shi Yan's host soul had entered the sea of consciousness, the sense power of his soul consciousness had reached an unimaginable level. Even in the devoted cultivation, any commotions around could not escape from his sense power.

At that time, he had not entered the stone chamber for his cultivation; instead, he had chosen to cultivate in the middle of the stone hall to be on the alert against unexpected incidents.

"Swoosh swoosh."

The flapping sound of wings came up from a distance. Not long after that, Yu Rou and Di Shan simultaneously landed. Yu Rou was holding He Qing Man who was cheerfully surprised.

"Thud."

After throwing He Qing Man on the floor, without glancing at

Cao Zhi Lan and the other two women, Yu Rou turned her head around to look at Shi Yan and said, "This woman's body is still pure. I brought her here specifically for you to do as you please with her. How much more time will it take? We don't have much time left. We should go to the Sound Beast Mountain soon."

"Give me some more time. I need to reinforce the Realm." Shi Yan was jubilant; he nodded his head while looking at He Qing Man and then said, "I am sure that I will be able to break through the Formation Technique in one month max. Believe me; I will help you deal with the Sound Beast Mountain after one month."

"One month ..." After raising her head looking up to the sky, Yu Rou looked at Di Shan and asked, "Do we still have enough time?"

"No worries." Di Shan calmly nodded his head, looking at Shi Yan. "I give you one and a half months. Don't disappoint me. If you do, you will live to regret it."

Upon his words, Di Shan turned around and left. He disappeared without a trace in just a blink.

Yu Rou said with a faint smile, "To take that girl here, he had to fight with Duo Long, making Duo Long suffer much harm himself. Eventually, Duo Long could not say no to him. Although Di Shan is cold-hearted, he will keep his words."

"So, I should be grateful to you." Shi Yan stonily said and nodded, looking at Di Shan's back shadow leaving.

"Remember, one and a half months. After that, I hope you can bring us a big surprise. Otherwise, we will make your soul fly and scatter in this place. You will never get out of here."

Yu Rou released a long sigh in her heart, stretched her hand patting He Qing Man's shoulders, and then spoke to Shi Yan, "I leave her here for you. You know what to do."

Yu Rou also followed Di Shan.

"He Qing Man, you ..." Cao Zhi Lan was astonished, staring at He

Qing Man for a while before speaking, "You, you have almost reached the Third Sky of the Earth Realm. What is this about?"

Shi Yan was also curious.

Although the power in He Qing Man's body had been constrained, continuous sounds of the wind kept howling inside her delicate body, the profound Qi was intensifying, and her mind was stable. It seemed that a significant transformation had happened.

Entering this damn place together, Cao Zhi Lan and her companies didn't have any improvements. As soon as they had just gotten in, they had been immediately captured.

Because the leaders of the two pagan tribes had not regretted in giving him their precious treasures, Shi Yan had been able to break through that fast. However, He Qing Man apparently didn't have that privilege, but what she had gained was not bad. It surprised Cao Zhi Lan a little bit.

"I did not expect to see you this time." A streak of misery gleamed on He Qing Man's beautiful face. "I had thought that my soul would have flown and scattered in another short amount of time. Hmm, in fact, in another ten more days, I will be ... killed by Duo Long who will absorb all of the powers of my body. If Di Shan and Yu Rou did not come to take me, I would definitely have not been able to survive."

"What happened?" Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows and asked.

"After entering this place, I have fallen into the Gray Wings Clan's area. Because my body has the Wind Martial Soul, Duo Long had confined me in a place where the wind energy was intense. He has used my body as a container to store the wind energy, and then he would absorb that energy from me ..." He Qing Man's face was still miserable when she told them her story. "If Shi Yan did not ask for me, I am sure that I would not be able to have escaped from Duo Long's brutal blow. I knew about his wicked intentions, but I

didn't have enough strength to resist him."

"You are thanking him?" Gu Ling Long laughed coldly. "Currently, I am not sure if you have actually escaped the brutal blow. Haven't you heard about his intentions of asking for you?"

"I have heard that he needs girls to give vent to." He Qing Man's face suddenly pinkened. She looked at Shi Yan without any fear and said, "Have you asked Di Shan and Yu Rou to bring me here so that you could do it with me? Shi Yan, why ..."

"Khoff khak khak ..." Shi Yan dry coughed and then said, "You have thought too much. You ... you are not the same as the other three women. I will not do anything to you. That thing... I do not consider you my enemy, so I will not do anything to you."

"Indeed." Cao Zhi Lan slightly burst into laughter. "I know He Qing Man will be okay. She has originally not considered the Yang family as her enemy. She will not have bad luck like us."

The expressions of Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing was unsightly.

"Shi Yan, will you treat them that way?" He Qing Man was little surprised. "Although these women have chased you for a long time, will you feel guilty with XinYan if you do that?"

Shi Yan's face suddenly changed. He harrumphed and said with a cold voice, "I know what I am doing."

He Qing Man frowned but said no more. She let out a long sigh and shook her head.

"Find a room by yourself. It is very safe here. If I am still alive, nothing will happen to us." Shi Yan's face was stony. He turned around walking to the secret chamber without saying anything more to He Qing Man.

If the Five Devils in his Sea of Consciousness hadn't had any abnormalities, killing Cao Zhi Lan and the two others would have been the best way to take revenge.

However, cultivating with the Five Devils was very dangerous. Even after the host soul had entered the Sea of Consciousness, he knew that if he did not finish cultivating the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind, he might encounter danger later. It was with a reluctance to keep those three women with him to prevent unforeseen occurrences.

Regarding the feature of the cultivation of the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind, it was not convenient for him to have explained it to He Qing Man. Therefore, even if He Qing Man had thought that he was a lustful man, he still had to accept it.

In the secret chamber, Shi Yan sat cross-legged with his back straight up. He held his breath, calmed his mind, and once again entered the Sea of Consciousness. He observed every commotion of the Sea of Consciousness to understand the transformation speed as well as the consciousness conveying process of the host soul. He also sensed the waves of the Sea of Consciousness on after one and perceived the marvelousness of the soul.

His soul gradually approached the intangible Realm.

The host soul in the Sea of Consciousness quietly released the spirit consciousness which emerged with the soul consciousness in the Sea of Consciousness. The spirit consciousness borrowed the strength of the Sea of Consciousness to improve and nourish the host soul and gradually enhanced the host soul's forces. His spirit was immersed in the host soul and continuously moved inside the host soul. It eventually reached an empty area of the spirit consciousness.

A black spore in that spirit area released a cloud of black smoke. As soon as the black smoke flowed out, it immediately diffused and quietly spread all over that area.

Found it! Shi Yan's heart was shaken. He gathered the soul consciousness in the Sea of Consciousness and the burning fire power inside his body to transform them into many wisps of soul

consciousness light. He then dashed these wisps of light towards the black spore inside of the host soul.

"Crackling."

The scorching light of the soul consciousness burned the black spore in a fire. Under the attack, the black spore fumed more and more black smoke. However, the light of the soul consciousness promptly enclosed and torch it up, destroying it little by little. Not long after that, the black spore inside the host soul had been incinerated completely.

... ..

In a large gloomy hall, many of Demonic Sound Clan pagans were kneeling on the floor to listen to Yi Tian Mo lecturing about the knowledge of the soul.

Yi Cu Bi and Yi Feng were also in the hall, focusing on the lecture.

On the chairman's seat above, Yi Tian Mo suddenly trembled tremendously. Faint black smoke emitted from his eyes.

"Father, what happens to you?" Yi Cu Bi hastily screamed out loud.

Yi Tian Mo's face got serious. The black smoke from his eyes gradually dispersed. After a while, his eyes returned to normal; his body also stopped trembling.

"The younger generation who surpass the older ..." Yi Tian Mom muttered with a low voice and a confused face. A strange light flashed across his eyes.

Chapter 260: Hunting

Half of a month had passed as fast as a blink.

Shi Yan had been staying in the secret chamber for half of a month without caring about eating or sleeping. He had been concentrating on studying the ancient soul-scriptures of the Demonic Sound Clan.

After a half month, Shi Yan quietly walked out of the secret chamber without letting the people of Cao Zhi Lan's group know and the others. He got out of the ancient castle alone.

After he had just walked a few steps onto the streets of the Ancient City, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan, Yu Rou, suddenly appeared beside him, laughing out loud and then said, "Shi Yan, why did you suddenly want to leave?"

"I just wanted to take a walk and check on the Sound Beasts outside the city. By the way, I will practice some of the Heaven Flame Control techniques. Of course, You can, of course, follow me." Shi Yan said with a smile.

"I will go with you. In case you encounter any danger, I can help you out right away. You are now our two tribes' sole hope. The matter of your safety is very crucial to us. I don't want any bad things happening to you." Yu Rou spoke with a thoughtful and sincere voice.

"Not a problem."

Shi Yan quickly went out of the ancient city's gate together with Yu Rou.

Ka Ba's group from the Demonic Sound Clan were also astonished as well as puzzled after they had been informed that Shi Yan had left the city. However, knowing that Yu Rou had gone with him, they did not prevent him nor say anything.

Di Shan was in the city and was also the first one who had been

informed about Shi Yan leaving the city, yet he had not stopped him.

After going out of the city, Shi Yan accompanied by Yu Rou went straight to the Sound Beast Mountain.

The Sound Beasts on the Sound Beast Mountain had begun to rebel again after more than a month in silence. They massively flew out of the Sound Beast Mountain, plunging into all different directions on this abandoned land.

Shi Yan spread out his soul consciousness and quickly located the place where the Sound Beasts had gathered.

There were approximately ten Sound Beasts besides a swamp, some of which were playing. They did not know that danger was coming close.

"Sound Beasts live in the Sound Beast Mountain all year round, absorbing the Sky and Earth yin aura from the mountain to cultivate. Either some fish swimming in the water or some stones on the bottom of the swamp are useful for the cultivation of a few of the Sound Beasts. Therefore, the Sound Beasts cannot live relying only on the Sound Beast Mountain's yin aura." Yu Rou explained with a gentle voice.

Shi Yan nodded. His figure suddenly flashed up like lightning, darting towards the swamp.

He slightly triggered his mind. Radiant flames suddenly emitted from his palms like a rainbow flying directly towards those beasts.

The oppressively hot Heaven Flame could burn everything up. All the creatures were very sensitive to scorching fires, let alone the Heaven Flame which was the Sound Beasts' nemesis. As soon as glints of the blazing fire soared to the sky, the Sound Beasts immediately got frightened, hastily heading back towards the Sound Beast Mountain.

Shi Yan's expression was cold and heartless. The corner of his

mouth had curled up into a gloomy smirk. He slowly closed his eyes.

The host soul in the Sea of Consciousness had transformed considerably. Each stream of his thoughts gradually poured into the soul consciousness. Then, wisps of soul consciousness massively scattered clinging to the Heaven Flame's lights.

The Heaven Flame was hovering about in the air as if it had its life. Its orbit was very flexible, marvelous, and spectacularly miraculous.

Not long after that, each beam of light condensed by the Heaven Flame weaved together to create a dazzling arc of light, rushing down from the sky and covering the entire herd of the Sound Beasts.

"Sputter sputter sputter."

As soon as the Heaven Flame touched the Sound Beasts, their bodies were immediately incinerated, fuming colorful clouds of smoke and then quickly dissolved.

Shi Yan was motionless while sending the soul consciousness into each stream of light of the Heaven Flame and steadily increasing the Heaven Flame's calefaction.

Since the host soul had entered the Sea of Consciousness, his sensing abilities had surprisingly been enhanced several times, being more competent in controlling the Heaven Flame than before. With the soul consciousness dominating, every move of the Sky and Earth had been deeply engraved in his mind, allowing him to be able to see everything now.

The strength of the soul consciousness had helped him significantly improve his abilities to control the Heaven Flame. Under the effects of the host soul, his soul consciousness was like tentacles, flexibly and precisely wrapping up all the Sound Beasts.

Not long after that, the bodies of the ten Sound Beasts that were

incinerated by the burning fire of the nemesis Heaven Flame completely vaporized and dispersed.

Colorful Demons Crystal Pearls, under Shi Yan's strength, were floating on the swamp which looked like several special stars.

Shi Yan finally opened his eyes, beamed a smile and then calmly stretched out his hand grabbing the Demons Crystal Pearls.

When he reached his hand out towards those floating Demon Crystal Pearls, it seemed that some unknown force pulled those pearls into his palms; and then they quickly disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring on his finger.

"Twelve Demons Crystal Pearls, hmm, it is not a bad harvest. But it is still not enough." After mumbling to himself, he continued to emit his soul consciousness to cover the further range.

Shi Yan's eyes suddenly brightened a few minutes later. He triggered the Electric Shift and quickly left.

The matriarch of White Wings Clan's eyes lit up with astonishment, staring at the direction that Shi Yan had just left. It seemed that she was thinking of something.

With her profound cultivation base, she had been quietly watching Shi Yan's behaviors for several days. She had understood Shi Yan's body and the improvement of his realm. As he had effortlessly killed many of the Sound Beasts this time, she knew that regardless of his Realm or the ability to control his forces, Shi Yan had broken through and entered a higher level.

This time, it was not a waste for Shi Yan to project the Heaven Flame. He did not lose much of the Heaven Flame's energy when it glided over the air. At the point when the Heaven Flame had formed a fire net, the Heaven Flame's forces seemed to shape a miraculous formation which had upgraded itself several times in just a flash.

Such progress had helped Yu Rou understand that Shi Yan's

devoted cultivation was not useless. In only more than a month, Shi Yan's knowledge of the forces in his body had apparently reached the new realm.

"Not bad, but it's not enough. I hope you can expose stronger powers soon. Otherwise, you can't convince that stubborn Di Shan ..." The matriarch of the White Wings Clan mumbled and then slightly smiled. She gently flapped her wings and quickly followed Shi Yan.

Shi Yan had been wandering through the adjacent areas of the Sound Beast Mountain to search for more Sound Beasts during the entire day.

Every time that he detected a flock of the Sound Beasts, he immediately emitted the Heaven Flame and then skillfully used the Heaven Flame's force to tie up the Sound Beasts and burn them into ashes before taking their Demons Crystal Pearls.

At this moment, there were nearly one hundred Demon Crystal Pearls of different levels of the Sound Beasts in his Blood Vein Ring. The lowest among them was the third level pearls and that the best were the sixth level pearls. The harvest was quite big.

"That should be enough."

Raising his head looking at the immeasurably high Sound Beast Mountain that pierced up into the sky, Shi Yan mumbled with a low voice before speaking to Yu Rou. "Let's call it a day. Let's go back."

"Shi Yan, can you try to sense the Sound Beast Mountain again to see if there are any changes?" Yu Rou hesitated a little bit before asking. "You have absorbed the Sky and Earth yin aura of the Sound Beast Mountain, so you should be very sensitive with the Sky and Earth yin aura. You should check to see if the Sky and Earth yin aura in the Sound Beast Mountain are more intense or more diluted."

"Ok." Shi Yan did not know what Yu Rou's plan was exactly, but he still pleasantly satisfied her requirements. After sitting down and resting a little bit, he released his soul consciousness, urging the yin energy inside of the Yin Pearl at the meridian within his chest to combine with his soul consciousness and gradually diffused towards the Sound Beast Mountain.

Not long after that, Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows, stood up, and then mildly said, "Thunderbolts outside of the Sound Beast Mountain seems to get weaker and weaker. However, the Sky and Earth's yin aura in the Sound Beast Mountain is getting more intense. I can feel that something strange is happening in the Sound Beast Mountain."

"Uh, what you feel is not wrong. Look at the sky above the Sound Beast Mountain." Yu Rou pointed at the mountain peak, which pierced up straight through the clouds and said with a somber face. "Did you find anything?"

Shi Yan raised his head looking up to the sky. His eyes glinted with a stream of light. It seemed that wisps of light consistently converged in his eyes.

The Sound Beast Mountain's peak was ten thousand Zhang tall (1 Zhang is equivalent to 3.33 meters), reaching the sky where gray clouds were gathering. Thunderbolts intertwined as if they wanted to cut the sky into pieces. Zooming through the sky with full of cuts, dazzling leaks of light were visible through those slits.

"The space over there, it seems ... became more unstable." After watching for a while, Shi Yan said in a low tone.

"You have been observing very carefully." Yu Rou nodded and replied with an odd smile. "Lightning seems to be able to tear the sky apart. It means that the time and space here is getting weaker. Perhaps, only one attacking strike of that terrifying energy could destroy this space. Once this space crumbles, the whole space will turn into ashes just in a blink. No creatures will be lucky enough to

be able to escape."

Shi Yan' face changed dramatically.

Yu Rou continued, "In recent days, changes in the Sound Beast Mountain have directly affected the space at the peak of the Sound Beast Mountain and weakened it. In another two months, if we do not have any solutions for getting out of this place, our two tribes' souls will vanish as soon as this space collapses." Yu Rou miserably smiled.

"You and Di Shan both have God Realm cultivation base; can't the both of you escape?" Shi Yan was astonished while asking.

After helplessly releasing a long sigh, Yu Rou said, "You don't know that this abandoned land was used to restrain our two tribes. We have lived here for millions of years, and some of us have reached the True God Realm. However, whenever someone enters the True God Realm, a horrendously destructive god light appears in the sky above the Sound Beast Mountain's peak. When a wisp of the god light struck down, the soul of the person who has reached the True God Realm completely perishes."

"What?" Shi Yan was terrified.

"Entering the True God Realm means having the forces to control the time and space. Once warriors at the True God Realm reinforce their realm steadily, they will have a chance to get out of this space safely. The sky above the Sound Beast Mountain's peak is of the god power which binds and controls us. It will not let any of our fellow pagans escape from it. Anyone entering the True God Realm will have their souls vanish if they encounter that God power."

Yu Rou's eyes were gloomy. She continued, "So many years have passed, and many of the top-class warriors of the two tribes have known that they would have immediately perished as soon as they've entered the True God Realm. However, they've still put forth their efforts because they believed that if the warriors at the True God Realm were able to endure the one strike of the god light,

they could then rely on the forces of the True God Realm to bring the two tribes out of this devilish place. Regretfully, those predecessors have all failed."

Shi Yan's face was confused. This was the first time he felt pity for these two tribes.

"Our ancestors have imparted their last instructions to us. One day, if a mutation happens in the Sound Beast Mountain like today, the chance of our two tribes in escaping has finally come. If we cannot catch this chance, the two tribes will truly vanish from the world's history."

Yu Rou stared at Shi Yan and spoke in a serious voice. "Shi Yan, you are our chance. I honestly hope that you can help our two tribes get out of this land. I don't know what the others may think, but I can assure you that if you can complete this successfully, I will put all of my efforts to protect you."

Shi Yan looked stern as he responded with a low voice, "I will try my best."

Chapter 261: Mercy

Giant Stone Ancient City.

Shi Yan and Yu Rou came back together. After that conversation, their relationship had remarkably been changed.

This change was not easy to describe. However, Shi Yan was confident that their relationship was no longer just a mere exploitation.

After returning to the Ancient City, Shi Yan walked directly towards the stone building where Yi Tian Mo stayed to find Yi Cu Bi. He wanted to talk to her.

In the dark hall, Yi Tian Mo was instructing Yi Cu Bi about something. After knowing about Shi Yan's request, Yi Tian Mo was a little surprised. He hesitated for a while before speaking to Yi Cu Bi, "You go out there and see what he wants. That little rascal is the hope of our two tribes. We will do our best to meet any of his requirements to facilitate his cultivation."

"Yes, father." Yi Cu Bi nodded.

Yi Cu Bi quickly walked out of the hall. She stood in front of Shi Yan, asking him with a careless face, "What do you want?"

Since Shi Yan had asked the Demonic Sound Clan for the three females of Cao Zhi Lan's group to be the objects for his sexual satisfaction, he became a lustful jerk towards all of the clan. Even Yi Cu Bi, who had a feeling for him in the beginning, did not want to see him anymore.

Shi Yan neither cared about how the others thought about him nor blamed Yi Cu Bi for changing her attitude.

"Here, I have 93 Demon Crystal Pearls of the Sound Beasts."

Shi Yan calmly hauled a gray bag from the Blood Vein Ring. He threw it to Yi Cu Bi from a distance and said with a smile, "These

beasts' levels are not bad. I know that they will be very useful for the cultivation of the Demonic Sound Clan. They are a valuable source of support for your advancements."

Yi Cu Bi was bewildered with an amazed expression. She asked, "Why do you give me this many of the Sound Beasts' Demons Crystal Pearls?"

"It is to ask for your help."

"About what?"

"These Demon Crystal Pearls will be exchanged for the human warriors who still survive in YaJi's hands. They are useful to me."

"Warriors?" Yi Cu Bi's pretty face expressed a weird look. Her cold eyes attentively looked at Shi Yan's face, then said, "Are you interested in males as well?"

The delicate body of Yu Rou, the matriarch of the While Wings Clan, slightly shivered. Her eyes gazed at Shi Yan with an incredible look.

She came here with Shi Yan without having known about his intentions. She hadn't expected that Shi Yan had killed so many of the Sound Beasts to harvest the Demons Crystal Pearls in exchange for the other human male warriors' lives.

Thinking about the fact that Shi Yan had asked for Cao Zhi Lan's group before, Yu Rou's false thoughts were inevitable. She lowered her voice with a strange face, "Shi Yan, do you have those preferences for real?"

"Ouch ..." Shi Yan was dumbstruck for a while before he could understand what was happening. He quickly explained, "Women's thoughts are complicated. I need those male warriors only for my cultivation, but it is not what you have imagined ..."

"When you had asked for those females, you had also said that it was for your cultivation ..." Yi Cu Bi coldly said, "I didn't expect that your tastes would have been so fickle. You don't mind either

cold or hot, right or wrong. I have underestimated you."

"Shi Yan, you ..." Yu Rou's eyes displayed a disgusting look; she proactively moved several meters away from Shi Yan. It seemed she had wanted to say something but kept silent at the end.

"Damn it. It is not as what you think." Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "I need those male warriors for a different purpose. Can you please have some pure thoughts?"

"Why don't you go find YaJi by yourself?" Yi Cu Bi frowned, temporarily believing Shi Yan's explanations. She continued, "With these Demon Crystal Pearls, he will certainly be happy to do some business with you."

"That little rascal has a deep hatred for me. I am afraid he won't listen to any of my reasonings." Shi Yan revealed a faint smile and spoke to Yi Cu Bi. "That's why I have to bother you."

After those words had come out, he did not say anything further. He turned around walking towards the stone building which was temporarily his accommodation.

Yi Cu Bi was stunned. She held the bag of the Demons Crystal Pearls and went into the hall with doubts.

After just a few steps, Yi Tian Mo suddenly appeared in front of her and asked, "Cu Bi, what did that little rascal want to see you for?"

After Yi Cu Bi had briefed him the story that had just happened, Yi Tian Mo became pensive. Not long after that, Yi Tian Mo's eyes brightened; he mumbled to himself, "Could it ..."

"What happened?" Yi Cu Bi surprisingly asked. "Father, do you know what he wants?"

"No, nothing. You should visit YaJi and do the exchange. I will find out what he wants later." Yi Tian Mao frowned. He felt a bit surprised within his heart and somehow had figured something out. Impossible! Could that little rascal have actually perceived the

soul Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan in just a short time? Does he know how to use the Spirit Seed?

Outside the hall, Yu Rou was asking Shi Yan with a puzzled face, "Why do you need those warriors? Do you want to fight with them to improve your experience? It's not necessary. We only need you to break the Formation Technique. We do not ask you to fight with the others. What do you want to do after all?"

"Almost the same as what you've just said." Shi Yan forces a smile without explaining anything furthermore. As he almost entered the building, he waved his hand to her and said, "You should mind your own business. I need to think about some more things."

Yu Rou's picturesque eyebrows slightly knitted. Although she was still full of suspicion, she didn't ask any further. After thinking for a while, she shifted and quickly landed on top of another distant building. Di Shan was sitting motionlessly like a stone there.

Di Shan slowly opened his eyes when Yu Rou came and asked her with a light, surprising look, "Has that little rascal left the city?"

"Yes, he's gone out of the city to kill several Sound Beasts. He's harvested nearly one hundred Demon Crystal Pearls and used them in exchange for the warriors who are now in YaJi's hands." Yu Rou added, "I don't even know what he wants. His actions are strange; he seems to have some ulterior plans."

"Regardless of what he wants to do, it's okay as long as he knows his mission." Di Shan did not move, he contemplated for a while before continuing, "When you have followed him to kill the Sound Beasts, have you notice if his power has had a significant improvement?"

"Significantly." Yu Rou replied with a serious face. "His perception of power and realm has been upgraded to another level just in a half of a month. I believe he will be able to break the shelter in a very short time. His potentials are indeed hard to

imagine. If he has enough time to develop, he will become an outstanding warrior of the humankind's new generation."

Di Shan was astonished and bewildered for a long moment. After that, he said with a strange face, "Yu Rou, is that little rascal as good as you have said?"

"You go see for it yourself. I am certain that you will have different thoughts about him by that time. Perhaps he would become our two tribes' only hope in the near future." Yu Rou gently said. After being pensive for a while, she continued, "I don't know why I always have a feeling that this little rascal is still hiding something. I don't think he is that plain and simple, maybe ..."

"Maybe what?" Di Shan slightly raised his voice.

Yu Rou softly replied, "Maybe inside of his body, besides the Immortal Blood, there is somewhat another miraculous thing."

"What?" Di Shan suddenly stood up with an astounded face. "What makes you say that?"

Yu Rou inhaled a deep breath before speaking again, "I still vaguely feel that an unknown force seems to control his Immortal Blood. It appears that there is a flow of power which is even stronger than the Immortal Blood in his vessels, but it stays hidden extremely well within him. My feeling about it is sometimes on, sometimes off. That wisp of power can somehow fool us."

Di Shan was in a daze with his eyes and mouth wide open.

After a while, he mumbled with a low voice, "Is his coming here because of the God's will? If he has transmitted strength from the Immortal God King, I don't think we need to hesitate any longer. Let's see; we will have the answer soon."

"Yeah, I feel that his appearance in this place might be the beginning of our two tribes' rise to glory."

... ..

In the middle of the spacious stone hall.

Shi Yan had just come back. The four girls of Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, Qi Yan Qing, and He Qing Man walked out from the next stone chamber. Four pairs of mesmerizing eyes simultaneously stared at Shi Yan, giving him a scary feeling of being loved too much.

"Shi Yan, where have you been?" Gu Ling Long immediately asked.

"How is it related to you?" Shi Yan coldly smiled and sat down in the middle of the stone hall with a casual gesture.

Gu Ling Long was angry, but she didn't know how to trouble him or irritate him. She could only stand at the side, showing her rage by pouting.

"Shi Yan, are you sure about what you are doing after all?" He Qing Man seemed to be concerned, asking him with a sullen face. "If you cannot handle the Formation Technique, I don't think that anyone will be able to get out of here alive."

"I've only said that I would try my best."

Shi Yan slowly closed his eyes. After that, regardless of whatever that those girls had asked, he was just unconcerned.

The four girls couldn't do anything but glare at him.

Half of a day later.

Yi Cu Bi and Yi Feng were leading many warriors who were under Yi Tian Mo's command. They were pushing a huge cage forward.

There were Pan Zhe and the other thirty-five warriors from the Endless Sea in the cage.

Pan Zhe dolefully bowed his head; his spirit was exhausted. He was only skin and bone. It seemed that his life had recently been extremely tragic.

The other warriors also looked skinny and sickly as if they had not eaten anything lately. Together with their constrained powers, they were in a dreadful condition.

As soon as Pan Zhe saw Shi Yan, his dull eyes were lit up. However, in no time, he shook his head and released a long sigh.

"Shi Yan, I bring you these people as you wished. There are thirty-five survivors. It is lucky that you have asked for them soon. Otherwise, in a few days, I am afraid that there would have been no one left out of these thirty-five people."

Yi Cu Bi looked towards the Demonic Sound Clan's warriors and nodded, signaling them to push the cage with Pan Zhe and the others inside into the stone hall. After that, she explained, "YaJi has been outraged. It seems that he had wanted to kill all of them at once for his cultivations. He's started doing that. If it weren't for the extreme value of those Demon Crystal Pearls which were certainly much higher than that of these warriors, those warriors should have indeed died already."

The eyes of Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and He Qing Man suddenly lit up.

"Shi Yan, have you asked for them?" Qi Yan Qing was astounded for a moment and then gently spoke, "You seem not to be a totally heartless jerk. I did not expect it for you to have been merciful as well."

After hearing what Yi Cu Bi had said, those warriors inside the cage could not help but look at Shi Yan in gratitude.

On the contrary, Shi Yan was still motionless. Even though his appearance was cold-hearted, he kept laughing in his mind. He thought to himself that if those guys knew the real reason why he had asked for them, he couldn't imagine what they would have thought.

Chapter 262: Didn't consider them humans

In the stone hall, all of the luckily survived imprisoned warriors from the Endless Sea displayed a trace of elation on their faces. They looked towards Shi Yan with grateful eyes.

After Gu Ling Long and Qu Yan Qing had known Shi Yan had saved those warriors from YaJi's hands, their thoughts about Shi Yan also changed a little bit.

However, Shi Yan's eyes remained emotionless. After telling Yi Cu Bi to bring more food the next time, he turned around and talked to the warriors in the cage, "I have saved your lives. You will just be a little bit less miserable in my hands, but the consequences will be the same."

As soon as these words came out, the faces of those warriors in the cage dramatically changed.

"What do you want?" Gu Ling Long quietly clenched her teeth. "They are all in danger like us. Do you want to kill them?"

"My cultivation requires some living people. They are just objects for me to cultivate. In my eyes, they are already dead." Shi Yan coldly laughed and did not say anything further. He deliberately sat down, ignoring the others' vengeful eyes.

His soul consciousness slightly flicked. Shi Yan suddenly stared at one of the skinny warriors from the Gu family in the cage.

Being scrutinized, that warrior's body trembled and suddenly grabbed his head, screaming painfully. "What have you done to me?"

Shi Yan was motionless and continued enhancing his soul consciousness' force. The soul consciousness had intruded that warrior's brain and moved inside to search for YaJi's soul Formation Technique that had been placed inside that warrior.

"Shi Yan, what are you doing after all?" He Qing Man could not

stand but shout. She continued, "Everyone boards the same boat, facing the pagan tribes' threats. We should unite to deal with them. Don't you remember the old resentments?"

Qu Yan Qing and Gu Ling Long both sharply criticized him.

However, it seemed that Shi Yan did not hear them. He focused on using his soul consciousness to encroach on the warrior's brain, shifting around to search for his host soul's location and features, trying to find out where YaJi had initially put his Formation technique.

During this period, thanks to the Demonic Sound Clan's Seven Secret Scriptures, Shi Yan had a thorough understanding about the spiritual Upanishads which help him have completely removed the Spirit Seed that Yi Tian Mo had planted in his host soul and thus have escaped from Yi Tian Mo's soul oppression.

After Shi Yan had killed Duo Long and returned to the Ancient City, Yi Tian Mo had discreetly affected his soul. Yi Tian Mo's soul accomplishment was extremely exceptional. He had secretly planted a Spirit Seed in Shi Yan's host soul without Shi Yan's awareness.

Yi Tian Mo had spared his life because he believed he could have had controlled Shi Yan at any given time through that Spirit Seed.

In fact, Shi Yan had vaguely speculated that Yi Tian Mo had done something to him, but he hadn't been sure.

However, as he had recently received the Seven Secret Soul Scriptures of the Demonic Sound Clan, he had gained the profound understanding about different kinds of the magical, spiritual Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan after studying them day and night. Until then, he had realized he could have had been killed by Yi Tian Mo earlier.

To prevent himself from being the others' puppet during the critical moments, he still kept studying the essence of the Secret

Soul Scriptures of the Demonic Sound Clan.

Eventually, after he had sent his host soul to the Sea of Consciousness and completely relied on his new soul perception, he had found the black Spirit Seed. He then used the force created by the unity of the soul consciousness and the fire power of the Heaven Flame to burn the Spirit Seed down.

After escaping from the latent danger of Yi Tian Mo's spirit seed, Shi Yan suddenly felt that different magical souls of the Demonic Sound Clan were peculiar and terrifying. To prevent a similar incident from occurring, he needed to perceive the spiritual Upanishads more profoundly. That was why he had the intentions to study it deeper.

If he wanted to have a significant improvement on the spiritual Upanishads, relying only on his own was obviously not enough. Anyway, his knowledge about the spiritual Upanishads was still ambiguous. There were many things that he did not understand thoroughly; and if he had used himself in conducting the experiments, he would perhaps have vanished his soul negligently.

Using others' souls for the experiment could help avoid some unforeseen occurrences of his soul. That was why he had asked for those warriors and Pan Zhe to study further with.

As his soul consciousness got into that warrior's head, Shi Yan slightly triggered his mind. His soul consciousness was now divided into ten of millions of flows that quickly moved inside of that guy's head to understand his brain's complicated structure first.

After an unknown amount of time, Shi Yan's soul consciousness in that guy's head gradually got weakened. When his soul consciousness almost reached that warrior's host soul, the warrior's host soul suddenly emitted a spiral wave and exploded.

"Boom!"

Shi Yan could sense the powerful explosive sound coming out from that warrior.

As soon as the explosive sound echoed, Shi Yan hurriedly retreated his soul consciousness in fear.

"Gu Ke!" Gu Ling Long roared an ear-piercing sound.

Shi Yan stared at that gaunt warrior with his eye wide open. He could see that guy's eyes and nose were bleeding. His face's expression was heart-rending, his pupils were enlarged. He was dead.

"Shi Yan, you have done another good deed." Gu Ling Long was like a little tigress showing her fangs and claws, jumping towards Shi Yan. "You have to pay soul for soul. The bastard like you is worthy of having thousands of slashes. You will not have a decent death."

"Get the hell out of my way." Shi Yan angrily raised his arm releasing one strike.

Gu Ling Long's petite body was pushed back by an invisible force. She kept rolling on the ground until hitting the corner of the wall of the next stone hall. As she stood up, her face was full of dust with a blowzy appearance. She completely lost her usual noble dignity.

"Shi Yan, what you've done is very cruel." Cao Zhi Lan let out a long sigh, shook her head, and said, "You could have just killed them directly. Why did you need to torture them, use them as objects for your cultivation? This is really, really ..."

"I didn't kill him." Shi Yan laughed coldly, "The Demonic Sound Clan has put a Formation Technique in his soul. My soul consciousness has entered his head but hasn't approached his soul yet. Then, the Formation Technique exploded crushing his soul. The one who killed him is the Demonic Sound Clan who had activated that Formation Technique.

Cao Zhi Lan was dumbstruck; she hesitated for a while before saying, "If you didn't send your soul consciousness into his head, the Formation Technique would not have been scattered, and he would not have died."

"The consequences are the same. If the Formation Technique exists and the opponent wants him to die, he won't be able to resist. I've used him as an object for my studies of the spiritual Upanishads. I would perhaps find a way to break the Formation Technique. Although some people probably have to die, I believe as long as I have a thorough understanding of the Upanishads, I will be able to break those Formation Techniques." Shi Yan harrumphed and then continued, "They will die sooner or later anyway. Dying sooner probably still has a little value; it is a lucky thing. I haven't considered them as human beings. If you can also think the same way, you will not be so broken-hearted anymore."

After talking, Shi Yan continued his studies without caring about Cao Zhi Lan anymore.

The four warriors of the Gu family had become Shi Yan's objects for his soul cultivation within two days. Their souls had exploded to dead one by one.

Gu Ling Long still wanted to risk her life with Shi Yan, but Cao Zhi Lan had advised her not to do so.

Gu Ling Long's pretty face was ferocious. She kept screaming and cursing Shi Yan not to have a decent death. She threatened that once she went back to the Endless Sea, she would use all sorts of different brutal ways to torture him. Every time that Shi Yan was irritated because of her words, he angrily tore apart a piece of her clothes to teach her a lesson.

Until her snow-white skin was gradually exposed including her big breasts, Gu Ling Long was finally frightened enough, but she was still outraged. She temporarily kept silent and stayed at the side looking at Shi Yan with the intense resentment. She looked

like she wanted to devour him whole.

Shi Yan continued his study on understanding the souls.

His soul consciousness once again intruded the brain of another one of the Gu family warriors. This time, he divided his soul consciousness into three flows and also added his soul imprint into them. The three currents of the soul consciousness formed a small soul formation of the Hidden God Soul, secretly running towards the warrior's host soul within his brain.

The Hidden God Soul was a particular spirit skill of the Demonic Sound Clan which used the condensed flows of the soul consciousness to create a miraculous spirit Formation. This spirit Formation could then hide his spiritual aura, preventing others' souls from detecting it.

It was a new method that had taken Shi Yan half of a day to figure out. Taking advantage of the Demonic Sound Clan's special spirit skills, the three flows of his soul consciousness quietly approached that warrior's soul.

Nothing abnormal happened.

Previously, whenever Shi Yan's soul consciousness had come here, the Formation Technique in those warriors' souls would have promptly scattered and made their souls explode.

However, this time, the soul forces in that Formation Technique apparently did not detect Shi Yan's soul consciousness. It still stayed hidden deeply inside of that warrior's soul without any commotions.

Shi Yan continued using his spirit to control the three flows of the soul consciousness to get into that warrior's soul. A triangle-shaped soul Formation Technique hidden deeply inside gradually emerged.

This soul Formation Technique had a triangle shape; its surface was full of dense soul strings like thin silken fibers. Those tangled

soul strings then formed a miraculous Soul Formation, consecutively emitting soul fluctuations to observe the every move of this warrior's soul.

Shi Yan did not feel strange with the Demonic Sound Clan's spirit skills. He knew that a person who had placed this Soul Formation Technique could also easily activate it to either make one's soul explode or control one's soul in a short amount of time.

Three flows of the soul consciousness suddenly spread in and violently wrapped that Formation Technique. The scorching fire power inside these flows also erupted violently.

"Sputter."

Shi Yan's forces completely burned down the Soul Formation Technique that Ya Ji had placed inside that warrior.

Not long after that, Shi Yan suddenly stared at the warriors of the Gu family in the cage and stolidly said, "The Formation Techniques in your souls have been dissolved."

Everyone in the stone hall was very surprised at first; their faces glinted with extreme joy.

"Only using souls of alive people can improve one's knowledge indeed." Shi Yan mumbled in a low voice.

While the other people were overjoyed, he indifferently said, "Actually, I have dissolved that warrior's Formation Technique to replace it with my Formation Technique in his head. Right now, I control his life."

"You, bastard." Gu Ling Long scolded irritatingly.

Shi Yan's expression remained unchanged. He cold-heartedly said, "Now, I have to lift all of their Formation Techniques, and then I will replace them with my Soul Formation Techniques. After all of these are done, I can be assured to use them as objects for my soul study freely. If they are not dead after being used for my soul cultivation, I will perhaps spare those lucky people's

lives."

Upon his words, the warrior's eyes which had just parked with full of hope instantly expressed disappointment.

"You are the devil!"

Gu Ling Long, Qu Yan Qing, and even Cao Zhi Lan could not stand but angrily shout out loud. Their delicate bodies were trembling with extreme resentment.

Chapter 263: Ruthless

"What has that little rascal done recently?" On top of a sky-high ancient fortress, Duo Long of the Gray Wings Clan coldly asked with an unhappy countenance.

Yu Rou and Di Shan were also at the same place with Duo Long. Both of them frowned and swept their eyes at Duo Long from a distance but did not reply to him.

Not long after that, Ya Meng, Ka Ba, and Yi Tian Mo, the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan also flew towards that fortress. They all descended with strange faces.

Three of them had an exceptional cultivating Realm. Their soul power was ecstatic and miraculous. They could sense any commotions on the Sound Beast Mountain while they still stayed inside of the Giant Stone Ancient City.

At this moment, six of the top-class pagan warriors were standing on top of the ancient fortress, looking towards the Sound Beast Mountain from a distance and shuddering terrifyingly.

The sky over there looked like it was being torn into pieces. Each of the cracked rifts could have devoured and swallowed all of the creatures. All kinds of dazzling light interlaced at one point.

Deep inside the sky, thunder and lightning were just raging on and became chaotic, being tremendous enough to wreck the Sky and Earth.

Those six pagans had a feeling that a powerful explosion could happen any time at the Sound Beast Mountain's peak.

Once it exploded, this whole land would instantly turn into a void. All the creatures living on this land would be wiped out.

The six of them understood that a major incident was coming close.

Time was tight now. Even the Sound Beasts inside of the Sound Beast Mountain seemed to sense the changes and started to get into a flurry. They began to act disorderly, trying to get out and survive.

"We are running out of time..." Yi Tian Mo's eyes were solemn, "In another month, if we still cannot find the way out, I don't think any of us will be able to escape from this catastrophe alive."

All six of them looked extremely grave.

"Di Shan, Yu Rou, to help that little rascal improve faster, I've given you guys the Heaven Fountain Concentrated Water as well as the female human beings. How is it going after all?" Duo Long asked with a cold-blooded voice. "Because of our two tribes, I've restrained my anger and agreed to let everything go. However, if that little rascal isn't worth it, hmm, before I die, I will peel his tendons, skin him alive, and let him suffer all kinds of tortures."

Di Shan harrumphed but did not say anything.

"He still has half of a month. After that, we will all take him to the Sound Beast Mountain." The matriarch of the White Wings Clan seemed to be the calmest.

"Don't worry; Shi Yan has entered the Second Sky of the Earth Realm. His knowledge and ability to control the Heaven Flame have also reached a higher level. After half a month, his cultivation will be probably stable. At that time, his ability to use the powers will be extremely skillful and profound. That is the right time for us to enter the Sound Beast Mountain."

Yi Tian Mo looked towards Shi Yan, quietly activating his soul sense.

Yi Tian Mo's gray-white eyes suddenly flashed up a surprising light after a short moment. It seemed he'd just found out about something.

Regarding soul aspect, Di Shan, Duo Long, and Yu Rou, the three

leaders of the Wings Race could not be compared to the Demonic Sound Clan; thus, they did not recognize Yi Tian Mo's sneaky act. However, when Yi Tian Mo retreated his soul sense, the other two leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, Ya Meng and KaBa, had noticed something.

"Yi ge, did you discover something?" KaBa felt that something was a bit odd. He looked at Yi Tian Mo while asking.

Yi Tian Mo slowly nodded when his countenance resumed to normal. He said, "That little rascal has not been idle during this time. I have to say that this guy is indeed extraordinary. After just scanning the ancient scriptures of the Demonic Sound Clan, he could have already broken through all the Formation Techniques that YaJi had placed in those human warriors' souls. Then, he planted his own Spirit Seed inside their souls. That genius can genuinely shock me."

"What?" Ya Meng's face changed, he screamed out in shock, "Without our instructions, only relying on those ancient scriptures, how could he have known of the ways in using the Spirit Seed? How could he have disarmed the Soul Formation Technique of my son? How could he?"

Di Shan's eyes brightened up.

"You can check it yourselves." Yi Tian Mo coldly smiled.

Ya Meng and Ka Ba were astonished for a while. They did not hesitate to send out their soul senses to check if Yi Tian Mo was right or not.

After ten minutes, Ya Meng and Ka Ba both showed a surprised face; they chuckled his tongue and nodded towards Di Shan and Yu Rou.

"What does it mean?" Duo Long asked with a puzzled face, "Let's say he could understand the essence of the spiritual Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan, what can it prove? How useful can it be

towards breaking the Formation Technique if he can explain the spiritual Upanishads? If it doesn't help in breaking the Formation Technique, his understanding is useless, just a waste of time."

Yi Tian Mo glanced at Duo Long with a contemptuous look and frigidly said, "When a soul perception has reached a new level, its ability to control the surrounding circumstances are much more thorough, power handling will be more skillful, and the mental state will also develop. The Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race are not similar. Progress regarding the soul will bring us many good things that we can hardly imagine."

"He is not lazy. The stronger that his soul is, the easier it can be for him to break the Formation Technique." Yu Rou said with a faint smile, "There are still two weeks to go. I long for his performance after that amount of time. I believe that this guy can help us get out of this damn place, returning to the Grace Mainland."

"Why do you trust him that much?" Duo Long was very surprised. He had initially looked down on Shi Yan. He also thought that if he were at the Earth Realm and possessed the Heaven Flame like Shi Yan, it wouldn't have been easy for him to control the Heaven Flame skillfully.

"I think that God will not let our two tribes perish." Yu Rou's eyebrows tightly knitted while saying, "No matter what, we have to trust him. If we don't trust him, it means that we don't believe that we could survive. When the Sound Beast Mountain has had a major change, a little rascal who can use the Heaven Flame suddenly appears out of nowhere. I have a feeling that our destiny had been settled when he showed up here. Perhaps our ancestors have heard our pleas ..."

"Destiny has been settled ..." Yi Tian Mo mumbled again with a small voice. His eyes became eccentric. After a while, his face suddenly changed. He said, "This little rascal's existence is the result of our ancestors invoking the God King?"

Ka Ba, YaJi, and Duo Long trembled while their faces changed dramatically.

Only Yu Rou and Di Shan remained calm. Yu Rou even chuckled and gently said, "Who knows, if he is an 'autograph' of a God King, I think that I will follow the ancestor's guidance. Our ancestors used to say that if a descendant of the God Kings could bring us out of this devilish place, we would have to serve him as our Master."

As soon as Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Duo Long heard what Yu Rou had just said, they were all dazed with confused faces while their eyes kept moving. No one said anything.

... ..

"Ptui."

Inside the cage, Pan Zhe of the Penglai Divine land suddenly gushed out a mouthful of blood, staring at Shi Yan resentfully.

In the stone room, Shi Yan was neglectfully motionless and slowly closed his eyes. There seemed to be a vague moving nimbus on his body.

Under the attraction of the strange tattoo on his chest, the Sky and Earth aura quickly converged to his chest, continuously seeped into the black tattoo, and then turned into a purified force spreading all over his body.

When condensing and refining the aura, the meridians in his entire body quietly transported and purified the aura which Shi Yan had just absorbed from some freshly-dead warriors. He then turned it into a mysterious force and poured it right into the middle of his abdomen.

Half of a day later, Shi Yan slowly opened his eyes, casually shifted his look towards Pan Zhe, and calmly said, "You're lucky that you're not dead yet. Ease your mind. If you can survive more than two weeks, I will spare your life."

Currently, there were only twelve warriors of the Endless left.

The rest had been dead as Shi Yan had carelessly experimented them for his studies on the spiritual Upanishads.

The Demonic Sound Clan had different kinds of magical Spiritual Upanishads which were extremely mysterious and marvelous. When he practically experimented with it, mistakes were hard to be avoided.

When he made mistakes, he had to pay a big price, which was someone's life.

These warriors taken from YaJi became the best specimens for his cultivation. By having risked their lives, Shi Yan had progressed incredibly in understanding the spiritual soul as well as the different kinds of Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan.

For those who were his experimental objects, once their souls had been destroyed, the refined aura in their body would spread out and went into Shi Yan's body, turning into a mysterious and purified force inside of his body.

With the significant progress on the soul, profound Qi in his body also had been enhanced steadily. He felt that he would soon have upgraded to a new level, entering the Third Sky of the Earth Realm.

"Shi Yan, you will not have a decent death." Pan Zhe clenched his teeth and angrily said, "You'd better kill me soon. Otherwise, I will make you pay a big price for this!"

Pan Zhe had formerly controlled his emotions very well. However, during the time his soul had been tortured, he collapsed.

When Shi Yan's soul consciousness actively stirred in Pan Zhe's head, Pan Zhe could still feel something because Shi Yan's skill was still immature.

Every time Shi Yan had triggered his soul consciousness, Pan Zhe had a feeling of hundreds of little worms gnawing his brain. This feeling had made a steadfast person like Pan Zhe fearfully scream

out.

Pan Zhe was just better off dead as Shi Yan treated him badly time after time. An image of a hero in the past had no remnants left. Resentment was burning violently inside Pan Zhe's heart. He was angry that he could not tear Shi Yan's body apart.

"Hmm, if you can survive, I will be waiting for your revenge in the future." Shi Yan revealed a faint smile. He thought, "Even if you can survive, I will place many formation techniques in your soul. In the future, if you return to the Endless Sea, you will be my eye in the Penglai Divine land and also possibly help me collect the latest information there."

Ignoring Pan Zhe's screams, Shi Yan deliberately stood up, knitted his eyebrows looking at the stone door closing tightly nearby with suspicion.

During this time, it was either because of their inability to resist Shi Yan or having other purposes that Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long, and Qi Yan Qing persistently stayed inside of the stone chamber. After contemplating a little bit, when Shi Yan was about to find He Qing Man to ask about it, he suddenly noticed that the Blood Vein Ring had just flared up a stream of light.

"Oh!?"

After flickering his mind, Shi Yan immersed himself into the Blood Vein Ring. He immediately realized that the Earth Flame was slowly condensing and refining the Heaven Flame; its living form was getting more and more flawless, seeming to have a little of aura similar to the one of the Ice Cold Flame.

"Has the evolution already been completed?" Shi Yan was astounded. He instantly sent out his soul consciousness.

"Already done. I feel like ... like I have a new life. I am really, really different." The Earth Flame sent back its message.

Chapter 264: Intimidating Heavenly Prestigious Power

Half of a month later.

Three headsmen of the Wings Race including Di Shan, Duo Long, and Yu Rou, together with the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, entered the stone hall where Shi Yan was temporarily staying.

Shi Yan was as calm as water, sitting motionlessly inside of the stone hall. Pan Zhe and the other six warriors of the Endless Sea were standing in front of him with sullen faces, disappointing eyes, and a dopey look.

The four girls of Cao Zhi Lan's group were hiding in the stone chamber for a long time without stepping out once.

Shi Yan opened his eyes, welcomed them with a stony face and a cold smile, "There you are."

Yu Rou nodded and smiled, "How is it going? It's time. I think we should depart at once. How about you? Are you ready?"

Di Shan squinted; his eyes scanned over Shi Yan's body for a while with applaud.

After two weeks, Shi Yan was only one step away from the Third Sky of the Earth Realm. His mind was stable; refined forces in his body were enormous and powerful. Mature composure and confidence radiated from his attitude. It seemed that he was not bothered even though he was undergoing a dangerous situation.

From what Di Shan had observed, Shi Yan, for sure, was very special. Not only did he have the Immortal Blood, but his body was also unimaginably sturdy. Together with Shi Yan's heartless and cold-blooded behaviors, Di Shan believed that Shi Yan was the sort of a man who would achieve greatness in the future.

During this time, he had been quietly watching Shi Yan. He had witnessed the warriors from the Endless Sea become specimens for Shi Yan to experiment his soul studies. Shi Yan's countenance had remained unchanged when his specimens' souls had been exploded to death, one by one.

Shi Yan's cruel deeds were a good trait in Di Shan's eyes.

"Everything is ready."

Shi Yan slowly stood up, raised his head looking up towards the sky and said, "The Sky and Earth on the Sound Beast Mountain are constantly changing. We should hurry."

After pausing for a little bit, he continued, "Are you ready?"

"We?" Ya Meng surprisingly said, "What should we be ready for? Isn't it only you who will go there?"

Ka Ba's and Duo Long's expressions were also confused.

Duo Long, Yu Rou, and Yi Tian Mo slightly knitted their eyebrow as they seemed to have figured out what Shi Yan meant.

"Once the Formation Technique at the Sound Beast Mountain is destroyed, the six of you will immediately go in there." Shi Yan contemplated for a moment before speaking seriously, "Certainly, there are some anomalies inside the Sound Beast Mountain. Maybe the gate leading to the outside world is in there. Once this gate appears, perhaps this land will also have earth-shaking transformations and quickly collapse. It is easy for you to leave, but how about your people? Won't you need to bring any of your properties that you have been saving during the past years?"

Ka Ba's and Ya Meng's complexion had suddenly changed.

"You should prepare; otherwise, don't blame me for not telling you." Shi Yan neglectfully said, "You'd better bring your people to the foot of the Sound Beast Mountain. When things tragically change, you all should leave at once. If this space collapses and you still don't leave yet, you've already known what the consequences

will be."

Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Duo Long did not say anything further, immediately turned around and left hastily with a little panic.

"You ..." Shi Yan looked at Di Shan, Yu Rou, and Yi Tian Mo with surprise because three of them still stayed back.

"Don't need you to be worried. I have already prepared, as soon as you leave the city, my people will catch up." Yi Tian Mo said.

"Di Shan and I have planned everything. Once we send out our message, the people of the two tribes will depart at the same time with us. Our Wings Race is quite close to the Sound Beast Mountain. When we arrive there, perhaps our people might already be there." Yu Rou said with a smile and didn't seem to be worried, "Shi Yan, I did not expect that you were that provident. You've known that the termination day of the Sound Beast Mountain is also the day that we have to leave."

"It's obvious." Shi Yan said with a smiley face, looking ahead and continued, "It seems like we have to delay one or two days for Ka Ba and the others to prepare. Whenever they are ready, we can depart right away."

"We can go now." Di Shan seemed a little impatient.

"No need to worry about the other guys. Breaking the Formation Technique also needs some time. Perhaps when you are done with it, they should already be there."

"So, ..." Shi Yan thought for a moment, then said, "That's good."

Shi Yan spoke to Yi Tian Mo while looking at Pan Zhe, the other warriors, and the four frightened girls who were just walking out of the stone chamber, "You help me take them along. They are still useful to me."

Yi Tian Mo raised his eyebrows and coldly said, "Didn't you need to use these four virgins to prevent the backfire?"

Shi Yan nodded, "My fortune is still good. I have not encountered any anomalies while cultivating. However, after breaking the Formation Technique, I don't know if it will occur or not. That's why I have asked you to help me bring them along. In short, those girls are my possessions. Do you have any problem with that?"

Di Shan and Yu Rou both looked at Yi Tian Mo with a questioning look.

Yi Tian Mo slightly harrumphed then replied with a cold face, "I will have them come along. Do you have any other requests?"

"None other."

Shi Yan glanced at the four girls then turned to Di Shan, Yu Rou, and said, "We can go now."

"Let's go."

Yu Rou walked over to Shi Yan and placed her white hand on Shi Yan's shoulder. Her snow-white wings flapped slightly; she gently leaped up at the same time and quickly disappeared out of others' sight.

"I'll let you handle these people." Di Shan said to Yi Tian Mo before leaving.

Yi Tian Mo raked over Cao Zhi Lan, Pan Zhe and the others with a somber countenance. His white-gray pupils flared up a strange beam of light. Many flows of Yi Tian Mo's soul consciousness flew out from his eyes one by one and quietly sneaked into their heads.

The way that Yi Tian Mo used his spiritual forces were much more skillful than Shi Yan's. When his soul consciousness penetrated into their souls, even Cao Zhi Lan did not realize nor felt it at all.

His soul sense did not leave any clear traces like Shi Yan's, but it made the others feel as if there were hundreds of worms creeping in, bringing them lots of fear.

Cao Zhi Lan, He Qing Man and the others were having a feeling of insecurity. They did not dare to look at Yi Tian Mo, and thus they did not know what he wanted to do to them.

A long time later.

Yi Tian Mo deliberately retreated his soul consciousness, coldly harrumphed, and said, "You guys follow me."

After having investigated for a while, he discovered that Shi Yan had removed the Soul Formation Techniques planted in them. Even inside the four girls' heads, there were no Formation Techniques that bounded their powers.

However, many new mysterious Formation Techniques appeared in the other male warriors' heads. Shi Yan had placed those Formation Techniques so deep inside their souls that the ordinary people could hardly feel them. The three girls that included Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Long and Qi Yan Qing could not avoid it either.

Shi Yan had also planted the Spirit Seeds in the three women's souls. Those three Spirit Seeds were going to germinate, which meant that in the future, once they left Shi Yan, Shi Yan's soul consciousness could still be able to sense every single move of theirs.

Only He Qing Man's soul had not been touched.

Yi Tian Mo could certainly remove those spirit seeds before they rooted if he wanted. However, he didn't dare to do so as he was worried that Shi Yan would not easily let it go and would trouble him.

While secretly cursing how cruel Shi Yan was, he leaped up and flew away.

Not long after that, Yi Tian Mo sent out a message to Yi Feng's group. Following Yi Tian Mo's order, they brought Pan Zhe and the others along, flying up to the sky towards the Sound Beast Mountain.

Inside the Ancient City.

All the Demonic Sound Clan's people started the preparations after receiving their leaders' direct orders. Yi Tian Mo's flock were already departing in line out of the city.

Meanwhile, Ka Ba's and Ya Meng's people were very anxious. Under the pressure of their leaders' shouts and urges, they hurriedly packed their stuff, cleaned up their properties in panic. Everything became a mess.

Even though many of the Demonic Sound Clan's people were nervous, confused and busy, all of their faces displayed a trace of joy and didn't know the danger ahead. The only thing in their minds was that they finally could return to their ancestral land.

The three leaders kept putting a lot of good things about their ancestral land into their people's minds. Therefore, every single of them had imagined that the ancestral land to be a holy place where they could have everything; they felt that all of the good things there belonged to them.

... ..

On the Sound Beast Mountain where its peak pierced straight up to the sky.

Numerous Sound Beasts had spread out at every corner. Hundreds, thousands of them were gathering and having a feeling insecurities. They all got out of their caves, seeming to feel the imminent danger.

Deep in the sky, lightning was striking, and the wild wind was growling. Dazzling lightning flashed on and off quickly in the sky. Deep inside of the lightning, many brilliant, colorful lights segregated; they were the actually rifts of the time and space continuum, containing the tremendous heavenly power that could eradicate all life.

Any pagans of the Demonic Sound Clan or the Wings Race knew

that the sky above the Sound Beast Mountains' peak concealed the Heavenly power which was capable of destroying any warriors of the True God Realm. They all knew that the Heavenly power's existence was the warriors' nemesis, preventing the pagans of the two tribes from ever getting out of this place.

The phenomenal scene in the sky scared the Sound Beasts out of their wits and panicked the two tribes' pagans who were having feelings that a brutal accident could come at any time.

"Boom."

A wisp of dazzling Heavenly light suddenly projected from the sky. The Heavenly light was like a giant sickle, striking down straight into the Sound Beast Mountain's peak. As soon as the Heavenly light visibly appeared, a block of hundreds-meter-long ancient stone had been cut off from the Sound Beast Mountain's peak and violently rolled down.

Right when the Heavenly light swept over and hit a growling giant Sound Beast, the beast turned into a mist of blood just in a blink, leaving nothing behind. It was a severely catastrophic death.

Many of the Sound Beasts terrifyingly growled and howled, instinctively retreated into the Sound Beast Mountain. They didn't dare to stick their heads out.

While the Heaven was showing its intimidation and mightiness, Shi Yan, who was brought here by Yu Rou, arrived at the foot of the Sound Beast Mountain with a somber face.

Chapter 265: Watch me!

A flash of Heavenly light struck down, instantly turning the giant and aggressive Sound Beasts into ashes. It had even cut off a huge block of stone from the Sound Beast Mountain's peak.

That was the Heaven's solemn.

Deep inside the sky where the thunders were exploding, the Heavenly light glinted dazzlingly.

This Heaven's solemn strike shocked every single warrior of the Wings Race and scared all the Sound Beasts on the Sound Beast Mountain.

Di Shan, Yu Rou, Yi Tian Mo, and even Shi Yan all had the extremely grave countenance. They looked up to the major changes happening in the sky and did not know what else to say.

"That is the Punishment Force. Every ten thousand years, whenever the two tribes had warriors entering the True God Realm, this Heavenly light from the sky would strike and burn the warriors into ashes; their souls and spirits both perished." Yu Rou looked up to the sky with resentful eyes, "This bloody Heavenly light has confined the two tribes for ten thousands of years."

Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo contemplated with serious faces.

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows looking at the sky above the Sound Beast Mountain with a distressed feeling. He could feel the severely horrendous power there which likely destroyed both the Sky and Earth. He even did not dare to release his soul consciousness to observe around.

He felt that once he released his soul consciousness, it would be struck into ashes before it could even reach that deep place in the sky.

Inside of that place existed the destructive powers that could crush the warriors at the True God Realm. Being at the Earth

Realm, if he riskily went for a confrontation, death was undoubtedly the only consequence for him.

"Are you confident?" Di Shan contemplated for a while. His two eyes squinted creating a straight line on his face. There seemed to be a spike of electricity that flashed up inside of his eyes.

"No matter what, you have to break the Formation Technique at the entrance of Sound Beast Mountain. Otherwise, when this space is destroyed, even if we don't attack you, you are unable to escape from this catastrophe anyway."

"No worries. If I were not sure, I could not have been calm like this." Shi Yan revealed a faint smile and nodded to Yu Rou, "Bring me to the cave entrance on the Sound Beast Mountain. Then, you guys watch me."

"Are you sure?"

"Sure!"

The matriarch of the White Wings Clan nodded. Her snow-white hands grabbed Shi Yan and instantly flew up to the sky. A white light emerged when Yu Rou's figure appeared right at the foot of Sound Beast Mountain.

"Thud thud thud."

Explosive thunder sounds reverberated from the gloomy sky. Each flash of the lightning from the nine tiers of the sky was as big as a flying and twisting dragon, striking straight at Yu Rou.

Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo were already floating in the air. As they saw the striking lightning, their faces dramatically changed; they immediately prepared to deal with it.

"Bang."

Thunder and lightning struck down at the flank of the mountain, smashing rocks into pieces. When the lightning struck some of the Sound Beasts who had not prepared yet, they instantly got

incinerated.

Yu Rou reacted superfast. She had quickly teleported to another cave right before lightning struck down and then quickly unhanded Shi Yan.

"Boom boom boom."

Up there, the thunderclap exploded massively; lightning flashed up tearing down the sky. More and more lightning appeared as if it had to burn everything on earth.

"Yu Rou, those flashes of lightning were aiming for you. You should leave." Yi Tian Mo lifted his head looking up and quietly observing for a while. He suddenly shouted, "You have not reached the True God Realm, so there is no Heavenly light striking down at you yet. However, don't underestimate its power. You should not come close to Shi Yan because even if you could avoid it, he would not." Being reminded by Yi Tian Mo, Yu Rou finally understood. She did not dare to stay with Shi Yan; instead, she teleported back outside the mountain.

Soon after that, her delicate and appealing body appeared beside Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo.

The thunder and thunderbolt seemed to have instincts. While Yu Rou was leaving, they kept chasing after her, turning into an electric dragon storming towards her.

When the three people of Di Shan, Yi Tian Mo, and Yu Rou saw that electric dragon terrifyingly dash forward, they were all ready to confront it.

Colorful lights were congealed and refined in the void; transpicuous flows of light emerged from their hands, collided with the twisting electric dragon and broke it into pieces. It turned into tiny streaks of lightning retreating deep into the sky.

"The Formation Technique over there has been aiming at our two tribes indeed."

Di Shan squinted, raised his head looking up to the sky and then said with a low voice, "Every time we approach closer to the Sound Beast Mountain, the Formation Technique outside will be immediately activated and regularly attack us without letting us off. On the contrary, Shi Yan is still unharmed."

Yu Rou and Yi Tian Mo released their consciousness to observe around. They realized that lightning hadn't attacked Shi Yan. There weren't any changes in the area where he was standing. The flash which had previously aimed at Yu Rou also disappeared without leaving any trace.

"As he is human, he doesn't seem to be struck by lightning ..."

Yi Tian Mo nodded and said, "However, it seems that those Sound Beasts are also afraid of the lightning's attack. Our two tribes are not the only target, so are those Sound Beasts."

"Hmm, don't know why those Sound Beasts have suddenly become that strange."

Di Shan nodded and guessed, "A major change has undoubtedly been occurring inside of the Sound Beast Mountain. Otherwise, the Sound Beasts shouldn't have such strange behaviors. Those Sound Beasts that have been struck to death by the Heavenly light were already at the seventh level, the strongest ones of all the Sound Beasts; but, the Formation Technique had still attacked them out of expectation. It is very peculiar indeed..."

"Don't mess with them. Wait until Shi Yan breaks the Formation Technique, we will then enter the Sound Beast Mountain and see why the Sound Beasts have behaved that strange." Yu Rou said with a smile.

Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo slowly nodded. Their eyes were full of hope, looking towards Shi Yan's direction.

... ..

On the flank of the mountain, Shi Yan held his breath and

meditated with a serious face. He slowly gathered forces and released his spirit to make contact with the Earth Flame inside of the Blood Vein Ring.

"Right now, I need your powers to break this damn Formation Technique."

"Okay, I have finished my evolution. My forces now are much stronger than before. I can break that Formation Technique. If it's not because my soul is still feeble because it has just formed, only do I need to go out of this ring, I can already burn that Formation Technique down."

"Your soul is not stable now, plus there are many warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan who have the profound understanding about the souls. As soon as you go out of the Blood Vein Ring, they will attack your soul. They are only afraid of your fire power. But now, your soul has not fused with the burning fires; it's not sure whether you will be able to withstand their soul attack. You should not be reckless. Before your soul and the burning fires can fuse together, don't get out of the Blood Vein Ring."

"Got it."

After discussing with the Earth flame, Shi Yan slowly stretched out his hands towards the cave entrance.

"Sizzling."

Small flames flickered from his fingertips as if there was a spiritual snake curling up out on his palms, igniting the burning fires hovering around his hands with the extreme heat.

The host soul inside the Sea of Consciousness quietly budged. Many wisps of soul consciousness spread out from the Sea of Consciousness, observing small transformations of the burning fires on his hands.

The Blood Vein Ring glinted with red light; each of the fire snakes crawled out of the ring.

As soon as fire snakes had got out, Shi Yan sent his soul consciousness into them. When the fire snakes wrapped around the backs of his hands and his palms, profound Qi massively also rolled out and assembled with these fire snakes.

The scorching fire from his hands burned up the Formation Technique of the cave, fuming layers upon layers of gray smoke. The dense yin aura also spread out inaudibly.

Many of the Sound Beasts retracted their heads, staying inside of the cave and frighteningly watched the Heavenly Flame flared up from Shi Yan's hands. They didn't dare to come any closer.

Time had passed. Both of Shi Yan's hands were wiggling with the Formation Technique for a long while.

Powerful burning fires of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame in the Blood Vein Ring kept radiating and then converged with his soul consciousness. His profound Qi turned into the raging Heavenly Flame which could wipe out everything. It was now wildly incinerating that Formation Technique.

The invisible Formation Technique which was violently burned by the vigorous burning fires seemed to be broken little by little.

The other forces from other surrounding caves appeared to support and enhance the Formation Technique's strength. However, they could not resist the burning power of the Heavenly Flame. The Formation Technique which Shi Yan's hands were placed on was getting weaker. The defending forces hidden inside were being consumed bit by bit and about to be completely broken.

Ka Ba, Duo Long, and Ya Meng had also arrived at the Sound Beast Mountain. They were standing together with the other three leaders including Di Shan, Yu Rou, and Yi Tian Mo. They all attentively stared at Shi Yan without a second of negligence.

Wings Race's pagans and the youth of the Demonic Sound Clan under Ka Ba's and ya Meng's commands were all assembling at this

place. The Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan people were flooding towards the Sound Beast Mountain from all directions.

After realizing that the two pagan tribes were bringing all of their people here, many Sound Beasts running out of the mountain went back into the Sound Beast Mountain in fear immediately. They didn't dare to confront these two tribes.

Numerous Sound Beasts hopelessly hid inside of the Sound Beast Mountain after seeing the Heavenly light from the sky have struck their leaders into ashes.

Hiding inside of the cave, the Sound Beasts were extremely nervous. They wanted to go out but were scared of being ambushed by the people of the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan. They were indeed in a dilemma.

Anyone of these two pagan tribes could somehow figure out that the major occurrence inside the Sound Beasts Mountain had frightened the Sound Beasts that much. Otherwise, those Sound Beasts wouldn't have been so terrified and urgently ran out of the caves.

Knowing that things were changing abnormally inside the Sound Beast Mountain, those pagans still hoped that Shi Yan could break the Formation Technique soon.

After their six leaders had explained to them, these pagans understood that the perdition was coming. If they could not get out of this land, they would completely disappear from the world's history.

Everybody was frightened.

"Cao jie, do you think we can go back to the Endless Sea?" Inside the rattan cage, Gu Ling Long's eyes brightened with a hopeful look.

"I don't know. Let's see what he can do." Cao Zhi Lan forced a miserably smile and pointed to Shi Yan.

"If I can return to the Endless Sea and recover my powers, I will torture him to death." Gu Ling Long clenched her teeth with full of resentment.

"Without our family's support, none of us is strong enough to be his opponent." Cao Zhi Lan slightly whined and groaned, "Yang Tian Emperor is such a genius. He has found that rascal from nowhere. That rascal is such a monster. Even if the Yang family perishes, unless that guy is dead, they still can rebel again. Hmm ..."

After Pan Zhe, Qu Yang Qin, and Gu Ling Long had listened to Cao Zhi Lan, the look on their faces all changed into those of fear.

They obviously admitted what Cao Zhi Lan had said was true. All of them had to accept Shi Yan's intimidating strength.

Chapter 266: Breaking the Formation Technique

Scorching flames flew out from Shi Yan's hands one after one, rolling into the cave in front of him.

After pulling one another about, the Formation Technique at the cave entrance which had been blazingly burned by the Heaven flame didn't seem to be able to resist any longer, finally exposing a small burnt hole.

Everybody's faces were excited.

Shi Yan's eyes also brightened up as if he could see a ray of glory through that small hole. He put all his efforts to continuously pour the Heaven Flame's blistering power into that hole.

After all the flames of the Heaven Flame had entered that hole, they eroded the cave entrance little by little, quickly enlarging the hole. Di Shan, Yu Rou and other leaders of two pagan tribes showed an extreme joy.

It was evident that with that blazing speed, the cave would be soon broken, and the hole would be broadened enough for everyone to get in.

Lightning flashed across Di Shan's eyes. He contemplated for a while before quietly coming closer to Shi Yan.

Duo Long and the other people also followed behind without much hesitation. They all gathered thirty meters away from Shi Yan and kept staring at every single move from him.

If they didn't enter the Sound Beast Mountain, the lightning from the sky above the peak wouldn't strike them.

The miraculous Formation Technique in the sky seemed to have its own consciousness. It had a duty to make sure that no top-class warriors of the two tribes were able to penetrate into the Sound

Beast Mountain. As soon as they moved one step in, this Formation Technique would be instantly activated, striking down tremendous lightning.

"Let's wait for a while. Once the cave entrance is enlarged enough, we will enter right away." Di Shan turned around, glancing at the other five leaders and then said with a somber face, "Everyone should watch out. There is certainly the anomaly in there. It may be a deadly danger; you should not be imprudent."

Five of them nodded, implicating they had already understood.

From a distance of thirty meters away, those six supreme leaders of the two tribes were gazing at every move of Shi Yan with stony eyes. They were ready to enter at any time.

Sweat beaded on Shi Yan's forehead; the fabric on his back was also wet. It was the result of consuming too much power.

His body had been trained by the Heaven Flame for a long time; thus, his vessels and blood were adapting more with the Heaven Flame's heat. However, burning fires spreading out from the Blood Vein Ring this time were much hotter than any previous times. The scorching heat of the Earth Flame had successfully transformed, being several times stronger than before. Until now, Shi Yan got to know that the Earth Flame previously had not been considered as the Heaven Flame. At best, it had been only deemed to be mutated Earth Flame that hadn't reached the Heaven Flame's temperature just yet.

Nevertheless, the current Earth flame had a massive transformation after having absorbed the Sun Refined Spirit. Not only had it had a complete soul and a perfect living form but its burning fire power had also been enhanced to another new level.

The Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame somehow had transformed to make a balance with the Icy Cold Flame which owned a miraculous earth-shaking power.

As the Earth Flame had evolved, its burning power was also much stronger than before. Shi Yan almost could not stand it. When he poured the profound Qi into each flame, a lot of his power had drained including his soul consciousness.

The Heaven Flame evaporated his sweat quickly as soon as it continued pouring out again.

Even though Shi Yan's entire body was not comfortable, he still tried to restrain it, focused his mind, and kept releasing his soul consciousness. He let his profound Qi massively roll into his palms to fuse with the flames of the Heaven Flame, creating the Heaven Flame's power with a tremendous attack strength.

"Sizzling."

The Heaven Flame was furiously inflaming, enlarging the hole in front of him. Gradually, it became as big as a human's head.

Shi Yan's face was joyful, but he did not dare to relax now. He kept urging the profound Qi inside his body to pour into the conflagrate burning fires on his hands. The burning fires then flew straight into the hole.

Torrential Heaven Flame was blazing on his hands. There was as if a fire snake wrapping around each of his fingers, twisting and sticking its tongue out. Miraculously, inside of those vivid-red flames appeared a faint purple color. That was a strange color resulted by the fusion of the Heaven Flame, his soul consciousness, and the profound Qi.

Shi Yan stretched out his hands through the hole, sending powerful burning fires of the Heaven Flame to his two hands and then forcefully tore the hole apart.

More and more Heaven Flame's burning fires flew up from the backs of his hands and his palms. The Thousand Year Earth Flame had sensed his urge, emitting stronger burning fires to support Shi Yan tearing the hole.

"Swoosh."

A crispy sound suddenly came up from that hole. Shi Yan's hands had violently pulled and tore that hole which had been originally as big as a human head size. Now the hole was big enough for an adult to get through.

"Go!" Di Shan shouted while his black wings flapped hastily. He flashed up like a black lightning and disappeared instantly.

Shi Yan was bewildered for a while. Before he could realize what was happening, Di Shan had already gone through the Formation Technique, getting inside of the Sound Beast Mountain.

Not far from that, after seeing Di Shan's action, Yu Rou and Yi Tian Mo also turned into flows of light without hesitation, going inside of the Sound Beast Mountain with blinding speed.

At the foot of the Sound Beast Mountain, people of the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan began to cheer and applaud. All of them were overjoyed. They soon congratulated each other. Some of them even started drinking to celebrate. A few of the high-class warriors leaped up and flew towards Shi Yan's direction. At this moment, cheerful sounds and noises echoed crazily.

After being dazed, Shi Yan saw the ten warriors of two tribes approaching closely. They were about to jump into the cave entrance.

"Boom boom boom."

An earth-shaking thunder sound suddenly came up from deep inside the sky. Horrendous streaks of lightning covered the entire Sound Beast Mountain all in a sudden just like a heavy shower.

Simultaneously, the Sound Beast Mountain was immersed in a dense net of lightning. With a quick glance, that net of lightning looked like a curtain being pulled down.

The scream like ghost's wail and wolves' howl also followed the lightning, piercing into people's ears.

Being continually struck by those streaks of lightning, the bodies of those Wings Race's and Demonic Sound Clan's top-class warriors were immediately incinerated and then fell not long after having wiggled fiercely in the air. Their bodies exploded before they could have reached the ground. Flesh and blood scattered everywhere.

The ten warriors of the two tribes were dead without leaving any bones in just a short moment.

All the pagans, who were standing everywhere around the Sound Beast Mountain, changed their countenances dramatically after seeing the terrifying scene. The cheering noises had also died out.

No one could have ever imagined that the ten Sky Realm warriors could have been struck to death that fast. There was not a single sign nor a minute spared for preparations. Those ten warriors were dead just like that.

Those pagans dazedly watched flesh and bones falling like a heavy blood shower. Everybody ceased suddenly.

Some of the other warriors were still lingering in the air with the initial intention of entering the cave. However, after what had happened, they hurriedly stopped and didn't dare to come any closer to the Sound Beast Mountain.

Shi Yan's complexion had also changed tragically. Soon after that, he realized that while he was in a daze, the hole which had been torn apart was slowly shrinking.

After raising his eyebrows with a little hesitation, he then suddenly jumped through the Formation Technique, entering inside of the Sound Beast Mountain.

"Shriek Shriek Shriek."

Ear-piercing growls of the Sound Beasts resounded as soon as he got into the Sound Beast Mountain.

Echoing growls of the Sound Beasts were not less loud than the ones of thunderbolts outside. While earth-shaking sounds kept

coming up, six figures of Di Shan and the other five leaders were getting further and further, dashing towards the center of the mountain.

Yu Rou was the last one of the line.

Waiting for the other five figures to disappear, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan with an alluring figure looked at Shi Yan from a distance then gently said, "Let's go in there together."

Shi Yan was startled. He hesitated a little before saying, "Don't you need me to keep this Formation Technique open?"

Yu Rou revealed a faint smile and gently shook her head, "If you have been able to break it, you can also do the same from the inside. Wait until we solve the problem inside the mountain, and then you will break this Formation Technique again. With the thunder and lightning outside that close the cliff, no one else can go in. You only uselessly waste your powers if you stay here. We don't know how long it would take in there. Until we can solve the problem inside, if your powers have already drained by that time, it would have been such a waste."

Shi Yan nodded and stopped holding the Formation Technique open. He zoomed towards Yu Rou.

"Shi Yan ..." Yu Rou suddenly lowered her voice when he arrived next to her.

"What happened?" Shi Yan asked with a low voice; a suspicious look showed up on his face.

"Be careful."

Yu Rou gently spoke up after hesitating, "You should not keep yourself too far away from me to avoid any unexpected events. You also need to be aware of Duo Long and the other three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan. Perhaps you will be their target there..."

Shi Yan frowned and said, "Don't they need me to break the Formation Technique?"

"It's hard to say ..." Yu Rou's face got serious, "You've probably realized that when thunder and lightning cover the outside of the mountain, the Formation Technique inside of the Sound Beast Mountain starts to weaken. If we can enter here, it means the Formation Technique is not effective anymore. After we solve the problems inside of the mountain, the oppressive forces of the Formation Technique may no longer exist. Until then, you don't have any value to them ..."

Shi Yan's face suddenly changed. He nodded firmly after thinking for a while, "I understand."

"As I have promised, as long as you break the Formation Technique, I will try my best to protect you. I will keep my words."

Yu Rou was inside a dark, dull cave, her eyes, on the contrary, were very bright.

"I will try my best. However, if it does not happen as I wanted, don't blame me ..."

Shi Yan still felt warm although he was inside a cold dark cave. He bravely placed his hands on Yu Rou's wings and honestly said, "I will still be grateful to you."

Suddenly, the body of the matriarch of the White Wings Clan reddened while her charming face also blushed. Her beautiful eyes got mused while her body was slightly shivering.

"Oh?!" Shi Yan asked with surprise, "Are you ok?"

"Little pervert!" Yu Rou angrily stared at him. However, she had no power to resist. She was even more exquisitely dainty and ravishingly beautiful that all men would have undoubtedly committed a crime.

Clenching her teeth tightly, Yu Rou scolded, "Don't you know that the wings of the Wings Race's women are even more sensitive than our breasts and preserved area? We are not allowed to let any of the opposite genders touch them."

"I didn't know" Shi Yan looked shocked, innocently shaking his head.

Chapter 267: The Nine Serenities Soul

Devouring Flame

In the murky stone cave, looking at Shi Yan's innocent appearance, the matriarch of the White Wings Clan felt so angry that she just wanted to smash him down. However, thinking about the unknown problems inside the mountain, she had to restrain her irritations. She stared at him with her fiery eyes, forcefully pulled his hands, and flew into the center of the mountain.

With the flame of anger inside, Yu Rou's movements were not gentle at all. Her small hands were like a pair of metal pincers, secretly squeezing Shi Yan's hands.

"Oh!?"

Although Yu Rou continuously put more strength to the squeeze, she realized that Shi Yan did not utter a word as if he did not feel the pain. With her astonishment, she kept tensioning her clamp.

Yu Rou was surprised. The strength that she was using was enough to break the Nirvana Realm warriors' bones. Nevertheless, even though Shi Yan was just ranked Second Sky of the Earth Realm, he was still all right, only slightly knitted his eyebrows.

"Do you think it is enough?" As Yu Rou kept squeezing harder and harder, Shi Yan had to reluctantly say, "If you keep doing that, I can't help but scream. You have already discharged your anger, don't continue torturing me."

"You little rascal, you are no ordinary indeed. Your meridians seem to transform and contract continuously. Each of them is very peculiar as if some strange energy keeps condensing and refining in it ..."

Yu Rou still clamped his hands tightly. She did not have any intentions to reduce the strength of her fingers. She continued to speak with a gentle voice and a very strange look. "Shi Yan, your

body is not the same as ordinary people's. I have a vague feeling that the meridians in your entire body seem to have great differences compared to the regular ones. What did you do after all?"

She still wanted to explore all secrets inside Shi Yan's body. Last time when she had returned to the Ancient City, she had found out that there were peculiar forces in Shi Yan's blood and vessels which repressed his Immortal Blood. She had some understanding about the antiquity time's secrets, so she couldn't imagine if any forces could dominate the Immortal Blood in the Immortal God King's descendant.

She guessed that Shi Yan was still hiding an earth-shaking secret. She somehow realized that there were mysterious forces whose strength were as strong as the one of the Immortal Blood inside his body; otherwise, the Immortal Blood could not be easily dominated like this.

"Nothing ..." Shi Yan shook his head.

He had to keep anything related to the Mystery Martial Spirit on the down low. He would not disclose anything to anyone. Not to mention it was Yu Rou, even if Xia Xinyan asked him, he would still shut his mouth.

"Shi Yan, maybe you don't know yet, but I have told Di Shan about your situation." Yu Rou suddenly spoke up after contemplating for a while. "Di Shan is an arrogant person who has a high-level cultivation and brutal means. In the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race, Di Shan can be considered the number one of all the top-class warriors. Even I could hardly be his rival. If you can have Di Shan's support, once he decides to follow the ancestor's guidance, he will accept you to be his master. Moreover, he will also protect your life, so you don't need to worry about your safety. After leaving this abandoned land, you will have tremendously powerful backup forces. With the unity of Di Shan and me, as well as your Heaven Flame, which is the nemesis of the

Demonic Sound Clan, perhaps you will be able to subdue the Demonic Sound Clan. Don't you understand what this means?"

"What?" Shi Yan looked shocked; his eyes brightened up. Apparently, he had been touched.

"However, Di Shan is extremely arrogant. Even though you are the Immortal God King's descendant, you are just an Earth Realm warrior. Obviously, it's not easy to make him obey you." Yu Rou continued, "Therefore, if you want to get Di Shan's agreement, you have to show more of your capabilities, you shouldn't keep hiding them. Otherwise, unless Di Shan sees your real competencies, he will not respect you nor treat you like a future top-class warrior." Yu Rou gently explained to him the situation.

Shi Yan listened attentively. After Yu Rou had finished talking, he nodded slowly and said, "I understood."

As Shi Yan looked like he had grasped the seriousness of the situation, Yu Rou said no more and slightly smiled. She suddenly accelerated, turned into a white halo and dashed towards the center of the mountain.

... ..

"Roam Roam."

"Shriek Shriek."

Deep inside the mountain, the Sound Beasts' growls resounded constantly. The earth was violently shaken by those ear-splitting sounds together with the thunders outside the mountain.

Yu Rou, with Shi Yan being grabbed along, flew straight inside of the mountain. The initially gloomy cave turned to be as black as ink as it was impossible to see the surroundings.

However, as Yu Rou knew every single path inside the mountain, she could still follow the directions of Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo. She was rapidly chasing after them.

It was uncertain of how much time had passed, Shi Yan suddenly heard, besides the Sound Beasts' growls, a big explosion that was caused by some attacking forces.

At the same time, Yu Rou's figure slowed down. A faint silver light was approaching them, lighting up the dark cave.

"Di Shan!" Yu Rou shouted in shock. She let go of Shi Yan and stormed forwards.

"Boom Boom Boom."

Incredibly horrendous powers collided and consecutively exploded in the cave. Huge blocks of lava rock instantly turned into ashes, dispersing everywhere in the cave after being hit by those forces.

Shi Yan stood on a solid lava rock. He wanted to have a clear view of the scene in front of him, but thick gray dust blocked his vision. A lot of dust had flown into his eyes, causing the irritating itchiness.

Right after he had released his soul consciousness, it detected that a kind of soul's magnetic field was revolving inside of the cave.

That soul's magnetic field instantly crushed down his soul consciousness. The consciousness attached with the Soul Consciousness also left no trace behind.

He immediately got himself together in fear. He did not dare to send out his soul consciousness again. Instead, he just circulated the profound Qi to his eyes, covering his pupils with a layer of the profound Qi shield.

Even when he could not see what was happening inside the cave nor released his soul consciousness, it didn't mean that he could not sense anything.

Furious forces were striking and destroying many blocks of rock of the Sound Beast Mountain. Rock fragments scattered, and dust was everywhere. Through the surging tremor, he was certain that

top-class warriors were fighting somewhere in the cave.

Yu Rou had terrifyingly shouted when she had seen Di Shan's enemy. Therefore, she urgently let go of Shi Yan and dashed towards Di Shan.

Even though Di Shan was the best of the top-class warrior of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race, with the given brutal situation, his opponent was either the Sound Beasts' supreme leader or the most bloodthirsty monster of the world. Regardless of who it was, Di Shan's enemy was not the one whom he had the ability to defeat.

Therefore, Shi Yan stood right at his place motionlessly, calming himself and waiting.

... ..

A faint red light appeared in the dark cave. It flickered then scattered around. Dust and ashes blocking his vision were blown away by invisible forces. So were the dust and ashes around Shi Yan.

"Oh!?" Shi Yan was astonished, surprisingly looked at the Blood Vein Ring on his finger. He saw the red light flying out from the Blood Vein Ring.

Wherever the red light swept over, Shi Yan's vision was not blocked anymore. Everything around him became clearer.

This was a huge cave. The red light kept diffusing further, clearing all the dust and ashes. Shi Yan was watching the cave expanding endlessly.

A brown jade was hanging at thirty meters above his head. Its surface was full of holes which were as big as fingertips. Dense Sky and Earth yin aura hovered around it.

This place was certainly the core of the Sound Beast Mountain.

His eyes followed the red light which was expanding further.

Until the red light could cover an area that as large as five football fields combined, he suddenly saw many pairs of eyes flashing up different colored lights. While the red light continued diffusing, figures of those who possessed those eccentric eyes gradually appeared.

Sound Beasts were everywhere, hundreds or thousands of them. From a distance, each of them was staring at him with full of hatred.

Shi Yan obviously was not frightened; he only revealed a faint smile. A red halo of burning fires suddenly emerged from his palms, and the Heaven Flame's power emitted from his body. The Sound Beasts were apparently scared, moving backward little by little.

"Where is this place?"

The icy aura of the Ice Cold Flame flew out from the Blood Vein Ring all in a sudden. The Ice Cold Flame sent out its message. "The Sky and Earth Yin aura here is very dense. Inside of it contains the icy yin aura that could destroy souls. This is, this is ..."

"Has the Blood Vein Ring removed the restraint on you already?" Shi Yan promptly replied in joy.

"The Blood Vein Ring has realized that the danger is coming. Moreover, because the current living form of the Earth Flame has completely formed already, it no longer controls me." The Ice Cold Flame quickly answered him. Then, it suddenly urged Shi Yan, "Leave this place. It's extremely dangerous here. The yin aura here could destroy the souls of any beings. It is ..."

"What?"

"It is the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, one of the Heaven Flames, the most parlous one. Its burning fires cannot inflame real entities, but it can destroy all souls of any creatures. Any subject that has a life can hardly resist its Devouring Fire. As

soon as the Devouring Fire touches your body, it will immediately burn your soul to ashes."

"Have you said that it's there?"

"It is right there. I can feel it. You'd better leave right away."

"Boom Boom Boom."

Aggressively fighting sounds, along with Yu Rou's screams, came up from the earth-shaking growls and howls.

Shi Yan's face changed dramatically. He immediately looked towards that direction.

The Blood Vein Ring's red light spread out, blowing away dust and ashes around Shi Yan. His vision became gradually clearer.

With a careful look, he realized that some figures were fighting with several Sound Beasts where the explosion had occurred. This flock of Sound Beasts was extremely aggressive with no fear of death. Their giant bodies were covered with scales, which looked terrifying and ferocious.

Those beasts were emitting heavy yin aura. Their eyes' color was all silver, those eyes were attached to the body that was greatly vigorous as if they were made of cast iron. These Sound Beasts were not the same as the ordinary ones. Although they were very mighty, there was no streak of vitality in them as if their souls had been completely withdrawn. Their entire bodies were full of deadly aura.

These Sound Beasts were giving the pagan leaders, Di Shan, Yu Rou, Duo Long, a very hard time in fighting with them.

"That is The Nine Serenities Spirit Beasts. The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame have used the Nine Serenities Yin Qi to condensed and refined those Sound Beasts. As they don't have souls, they won't feel painful or being wary of death. Their powers are even stronger when they are dead. It is very hard to deal with these Zombie Spirit Beasts. Except turning them into ashes,

otherwise, even with only a bone remaining, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame could still control them to attack other people." The Ice Cold Flame explained.

A beam of fear flashed across Shi Yan's eyes.

Chapter 268: Peculiar Treasure appeared

The Seven Dead Spirit Beasts looked as if they were made of cast iron with furious powers and full of benevolent energy.

None of them had the aura of a living thing. However, they had lightning speed and tremendous strength. When they leaped up, they could pull the Sky and Earth yin aura along with them, causing the increase of their bodies' energies and the terrible destructive powers.

The Seven Dead Spirit Beasts seemed to be protecting something. Behind them was a dark and sinister area where extremely dense fluctuating yin aura spread out. It was like many flows of soul oppressive forces were floating and dispersing, subduing the others' minds and bodies, giving them a strong feeling of insecurities.

Among the six leaders of the two pagan tribes, Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng all had the soul cultivations at the Spirit Realm. Although their bodies were feeble, their soul powers were enough to deal with most of the creatures there fearlessly.

However, when confronting those soulless Dead Spirit Beasts, the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan with tremendous soul power became inefficient. The only thing they could do now was to besiege those seven Spirit Beasts with their weak bodies.

The consequences could be easily imagined.

Losing the biggest advantage, together with their weak bodies, the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan were having a tough time fighting with those beasts. Once those beasts attacked them, they couldn't do anything but dodge and didn't dare to confront them directly.

As a result, the pressure of fighting against the seven Dead Spirit Beasts obviously fell on the other three leaders of the Wings Race.

Although the three of them, Di Shan, Yu Rou, and Duo Long were much better than the other three, they still could not gain the initiative in the combat.

The Dead Spirit Beasts originally had no souls but had a sturdy build. Moreover, these seven beasts used the bodies of the seventh-level Sound Beasts that had cultivated for thousands of years. Thanks to this fact, their strong bodies' advantages were amplified several times; they were not scared of any weapons or different kinds of energy attacks.

Among the three leaders of the Wings Race, Duo Long was at the Third Sky of the Sky Realm, half a step away from the Spirit Realm. With his sturdy build and furious strength, he was a first-class warrior outside the mountain.

The other two, Di Shan and Yu Rou were stronger than Duo Long. They were both at the reputable First Sky of the Spirit Realm warriors.

However, they were strenuously struggling with those beasts despite their unity.

Their attacking forces unlikely crushed those Spirit Beasts into pieces. If those beasts were not smashed into ashes, they would not get injured. With the support of the Sky and Earth yin aura from behind, they would continue receiving energy from endless sources.

As long as the Sky and Earth yin aura was everlasting, and the Spirit Beasts' bodies were not destroyed, their energy would never have been depleted, and their attacks would have kept going on.

The seven Spirit Beasts' movements were as fast as the lightning. Their speed was even more quickly than that of the Wings Race's leaders. Their energies were extremely ferocious.

Shi Yan meditated and used his sense to observe the situation carefully. He realized that the seven Dead Spirit Beasts could go

through the mountain effortlessly; their movements were lightning-like. Every time that they moved forward, their giant bodies had unexpectedly traveled dozens of meters deep through the lava rock mountain wall. It was like a huge drill which could easily pierce through the hard and robust mountain wall.

At this moment, he understood that because the Dead Spirit Beasts' attacking strength were so tremendous that they were able to break through everything, like perforating the mountain wall.

The seven Dead Spirit Beasts aggressively surrounded and pursued to kill the six leaders in the cave. Under the attack of the beasts, it was as if they were encountering their archenemies; their faces were extremely grave while they were trying to use all kinds of forces to kill the beasts.

Di Shan's and Yu Rou's strikes on the beasts were as if they had collided with a three-hundred-thousand-kilogram mountain wall. Those beasts were shot out more than a hundred meters away; their bodies were devastated into pieces but unable to be destroyed.

As their soul attacks were not efficient, the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan were in a strenuous situation. Their feeble bodies were not able to resist the Dead Spirit Beasts' attacks. If they were not very flexible and agile in dodging, they should have been out of breath and dead in no time.

"Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh."

Suddenly, the dense Sky and Earth yin aura emitted from the seven Dead Spirit Beasts. Space was immediately filled with strange dead spirit aura.

Some of the Sound Beasts, which were hiding from a distance, all scattered away as soon as they saw the dispersing Sky and Earth yin aura.

More than ten of the Sound Beasts weren't able to avoid it and

were completely enveloped by this peculiar yin.

With their miserable growls, their fluctuating souls became very strange. Their living aura was disappearing and replaced with the intensified dead spirit aura little by little.

Not long after that, more than ten of the Sound Beasts under cover of the strange yin aura started to get crazy. They seemed to have transformed into the Dead Spirit Beasts and began to attack the six leaders. These Dead Spirit Beasts, into which the Sound Beasts had just turned, apparently couldn't be compared to the other seven ones. Their bodies were not as sturdy, and their strength was far less than the others'. That was why when the six leaders attacked these new-formed beasts, these beasts were soon completely smashed until their blood scattered everywhere.

However, very soon after that, those seven Dead Spirit Beasts leaped up quickly. More and more of the Sky and Earth yin aura spread out surrounding them.

Hundreds of the Sound Beasts ran away outwards from the cave in fear. However, they quickly got covered by the Sky and Earth yin aura before being able to get away.

All the Sound Beasts inside the mountain had been turned into Dead Spirit Beasts after a short while. They started to attack the six leaders aggressively without fear of death.

The burning fires of the Heaven Flame suddenly shot out from Shi Yan's body. His face was grievous.

He had figured out that the Sound Beasts had to run away out of the mountain because they were scared of the Dead Spirit Beasts inside of the mountain. To be more exact, they were frightened of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame that those Dead Spirit Beasts were protecting.

It was because the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame could destroy their souls and turned them into the soulless Dead Spirit

Beasts.

These Sound Beasts obviously knew the power of that Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. After the Formation Technique inside the mountain had weakened, they felt something wrong and realized that the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was getting developed. Therefore, they ran out of the mountain to avoid being turned into the Dead Spirit Beasts by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

If the Demonic Sound Clan's and the Wings Race' people hadn't invaded it, the Sound Beasts certainly would not have stayed inside the mountain. Currently, inside the mountain, hundreds of the Sound Beasts who had stayed close to the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame couldn't have avoided its attack. Their souls were destroyed, and they turned into the Dead Spirit Beasts.

In such a short time, the Spirit Beasts were packed inside the cave. After the Sound Beasts' souls had been destroyed, they were no longer fearful. They were not even scared of the Heaven Flame's power on Shi Yan's body; they all stormed towards him.

"Let's go!" The Ice Cold Flame sent out its message.

"Let me help you." The Ten Thousand Earth Flame also communicated with him from the Blood Vein Ring.

"Boom."

Oppressively hot burning fires expanded everywhere with Shi Yan as the center.

The Ten Thousand Earth Flame flew out from the Blood Vein Ring all of a sudden, emitting its inflammable power when it saw more than ten of the Spirit Beasts approaching.

The temperature of the mountain instantly plummeted several times with burning fires everywhere.

Every time the Dead Spirit Beasts advanced, they were completely swallowed by the Ten Thousand Earth Flame in just a

blink. Once these beasts fell into the sea of fire, they had no more strength to resist and turned to the scattered shower of blood. All of them were dead.

The burning fires of the Heaven Flame continued spreading out.

The Heaven Flame devoured more and more Dead Spirit Beasts. Once being burned by the Thousand Earth Flame, none of the Dead Spirit Beasts could withstand it.

Everywhere that the Heaven Flame had passed by, the Spirit Beasts were incinerated into ashes with nothing remaining.

Even the Seven Dead Spirit Beasts which had been tempered by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame could not prevent the horrendous burning fires of the Ten Thousand Earth Flame. Three of them had been wrapped up in flames. They were wriggling and being dissolved little by little into the dark red masses; then, the heating power would evaporate them into a mist of smoke.

As the other four Dead Spirit Beasts seemed to sense the danger, even before the burning fires of the Thousand Earth Flame came close, they had already hidden deep inside of the dark without lingering.

"Stop!" From deep inside of Shi Yan's soul, a strong vibration surged up. Shi Yan's mind was violently agitated; his head was in extreme pain.

At the same time, he saw two strange flows of souls approaching towards the Ten Thousand Earth Flame. The Earth Flame's soul immediately returned to the Blood Vein Ring as soon as it realized the danger was coming.

The burning fires also withdrew into the Blood Vein Ring after the Ten Thousand Earth Flame's Soul went back into it.

Those two flows of souls belonged to Ka Ba and Ya Meng. After hovering around the Blood Vein Ring and realizing it was not easy to have penetrated it, the two flows were retrieved.

Shi Yan harrumphed, coldly looked at Yi Tian Mo who was standing one hundred meters away from him.

"The Heaven Flame's power is indeed terrifying. Even though it can be used to deal with those strange dead spirit creatures here, the three of us cannot endure it either. If you let it expand, the three of us will be burned into ashes." Yi Tian Mo said.

Shi Yan's eyes remained stony.

"Little rascal, don't you want to kill us all? If your Heaven Flame doesn't have the ability to dominate these strange creatures, I would have savaged your soul already." Ya Meng wiped his sweat off. He was the one who was standing closest to Shi Yan. When the Heaven Flame diffused towards his direction, he got terrified. His powers had drained off more than half even though the Heaven Flame hadn't come close to him yet. That was why he got angry with Shi Yan the most.

"Hiss Hiss Hiss Hiss."

Four Dead Spirit Beasts that were hiding in the dark released bizarre whistles.

A Flying Shuttle flashed up a sparkling light which was on and off in the darkness. It seemingly wanted to get out but was detained by some unknown forces. It kept struggling to try to escape.

A flow of ferocious soul came out from the dark where the four Dead Spirit Beasts were hiding.

"It's the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame! That thing seems to be sealed. Right now, its forces are increasing; the sealing power will get weakened soon. Leave now. Once it wakes up, no one can resist him." The Ice Cold Flame hurriedly communicated with Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was still motionless as if he did not hear what the Ice Cold Flame had said. He kept looking forward, seeming to be

thinking of something.

His eyes lit up, looking at the Flying Shuttle which was hovering around in the dark. He seemed to consider something.

Five seconds later, Shi Yan was crazily overjoyed; his entire body was shaking. He couldn't help but shout, "Sky-breaking Shuttle!"

Chapter 269: I can help you

Sky-breaking Shuttle was an extraordinary treasure in the legends. It could tear off the sky or break any Formation Techniques.

It kept flying around in the darkness and consecutively emitted sharp lights. Each stream of the light seemed to be able to destroy everything. They were dispelling the darkness and shattering the wall of the cave into pieces. Eventually, it hollowed out the Sound Beast Mountain, creating an enormous bottomless hole.

As the darkness had been dispersed, the scene inside there was gradually revealed.

The first thing that struck Shi Yan's eyes was the three sparkling small silver strings which were wrapping around the end of the shuttle, pulling it so firmly that it could not fly away.

The other end of the three silver strings hid inside the darkness so they could not be seen as of now.

Being wrapped around by the three silver strings, the Sky-breaking Shuttle no longer promoted its real attributes as it had lost its owner; instead, it could only fly disorderly in the air and wasn't able to escape from the three silver strings.

Those six leaders were standing one hundred meters away from the Sky-breaking Shuttle. They all had a somber countenance and were motionlessly concentrating at that area.

Yu Rou had heard his shout from a distance, so she turned around and asked, "Shi Yan, do you know it?"

She Yan nodded and replied honestly, "That is the Sky-breaking Shuttle. I have entered the Chasm Battlefield because of it. It is said that this thing can tear every partition of space apart and break all kinds of Formation Techniques. Because it has lost its owner, otherwise, it would not have been restrained by anything.

The six leaders' faces brightened up in joy.

"The ancestor's guidance was not fake indeed. At the time the Sound Beast Mountain vanishes, we can find a way to go back." Duo Long laughed out loud while pointing to the shuttle which was wriggling nonstop, "That thing has apparently been prepared for us. As long as we can get it, we will be able to get out of this damn place for real."

"There is Heaven Flame over there, but it is the most brutal and ferocious one of the Heaven Flames." Shi Yan warned them after contemplating for a while.

"What?" Yi Tian Mo's expression changed dramatically. He could not help but move backward a few steps. It looked obvious that he was extremely scared of something that was hiding in the darkness over there, "You've just said that another kind of Heaven Flame exists inside there?"

"How could you know?" Di Shan asked.

The other people were also suspicious, looking at Shi Yan and waiting for his explanation.

"Heaven Flames could sense each other; thus, they know about each other's existence." Shi Yan walked forward slowly. He alertly looked at Yi Tian Mo, Di Shan, and Yu Rou and explained, "The Heaven Flame there should be the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. In legends, it has existed since the beginning of the Sky and Earth. It cannot burn substances, but it can burn any creatures' souls."

"The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame!"

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan screamed out simultaneously with a traumatic change on their faces. They all moved backward to Shi Yan's direction.

"Not good ..." Di Shan's eyes sparked out an intense light. A light blue crystal chunk suddenly flew out from his hand. As soon as it

came out, it exploded, emitting a faint blue color which then quickly dispersed, enclosing him and Yu Rou.

When Duo Long saw Di Shan taking out the blue crystal, he was a little astonished. He seemed to remember something and then walked over to Di Shan's place.

Without waiting for Duo Long to come closer, Di Shan harrumphed and looked towards him with unpleased eyes.

Duo Long felt ashamed, embarrassingly changed his direction and did not continue approaching that blue aureole.

"Blue Star Crystal!" The Ice Cold Flame sent out a message. "It is one of the extraordinary treasures which can resist the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. The Blue Star Crystal is said to be the most mysterious crystal of the Blue Planet in the Galaxy. It projects Blue Star Heaven Light which can prevent the penetration of all kinds of souls' forces. Even if it is the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, it cannot immediately break the Blue Star Heaven Light. If you can get inside of its protection, you are certainly able to sustain the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame for a while."

"I've prepared this crystal to deal with your Demonic Sound Clan. I didn't expect that I have to use it now." Di Shan caressed the precious crystal, pouring more of his powerful forces into it to stimulate the miraculous halo inside it. He said with a regretful tone, "The Blue Star Crystal is the consuming object. Its power is limited. The longer it is used, the more power it consumes. I am not sure how long this Blue Star Crystal can last ..."

"We can use this Blue Star Light to enter that place over there. Even the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame cannot instantly destroy our souls. As long as we can prevent it long enough to get the shuttle out, we will go back immediately. What do you think?" Yu Rou suggested.

Di Shan nodded after considering for a while. He said nothing

more and stepped towards the shuttle which was flying deep inside the darkness.

Duo Long and the other three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan all showed their surprise. They wanted to advance with Di Shan and Yu Rou, but they were still scared. They finally stayed at their location with confused faces.

"You can go as well. If you hide inside the Blue Star Light's protection, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame cannot harm you. Who knows, perhaps you would be able to tame it?" The Ice Cold Flame communicated with Shi Yan.

"What?" Shi Yan's face changed slightly. "Is it possible to tame the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame? How could it be?"

"I don't know, but your devilish ring does." The Ice Cold Flame continued, "Earth Flame and I are both Heaven Flame and are in confinement of this ring. If it's not because the ring's spirit has loosened, none of my forces can be released. If this ring can constrain both of us, it must be strong enough to deal with the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. As long as your soul is not destroyed immediately, you have a chance."

"Sounds right." Shi Yan felt excited. He suddenly walked faster towards Di Shan and Yu Rou.

Di Shan, who was leading, stopped abruptly. He turned his head looking at Shi Yan and shouted with a cold face, "What did you come here for?"

"I can help you."

"What?"

"The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame is extremely dangerous. Even though you have the Blue Star Crystal, you are still scared of its soul devouring ability. Hmm, I think I have a way to deal with it. If you let me in, if the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame appears and behaves perversely, I can probably

detain it!"

"Do you have the ability to detain it?"

"I can't guarantee one hundred percent, but I am still very certain about it. We need to try to see if it's possible or not." Shi Yan was extremely honest when explaining, "Currently, I have two kinds of Heaven Flames at hand. Because I can keep these two Flames with me, I surely have the experience to deal with that kind of Flame there. You should trust me ..."

"What?" The six pagan leaders all screamed out at the same time. They looked at Shi Yan as if he was a monster.

Yu Rou covered her mouth; her beautiful eyes were petrified. She said with suspicion, "Did you just say that you have two kinds of the Heaven Flame? Aren't you kidding?"

Di Shan's breath was heavy; his eyes rolled up like a buffalo's eyes.

Shi Yan nodded and replied calmly, "That's right. Besides the Earth Flame, the other one is the Ice Cold Flame. Watch it."

In a moment, the Icy aura of the Ice Cold Flame spread out over Shi Yan's body. His body was quickly frozen, turning into a big transparent ice chunk which was sparking out glorious and splendid lights.

Six pagan leaders goggled their eyes with their mouth wide opened.

Di Shan finally reacted after a long while, he waved at Shi Yan and said, "You, you can come here ..."

While saying, Di Shan urged more forces to pour into the Blue Star Crystal. More of the blue light beamed from inside of the Blue Star Crystal. These blue lights seemed to be gradually controlled, condensing into a chunk of lights and forming a human body shape.

"Thank you."

Shi Yan was very determined. He retrieved the icy power and quickly returned to normal. He instantly got inside of the chunk of blue lights and leaned closely against Yu Rou.

When standing inside the blue lights, Shi Yan felt as if he was soaking in an ocean. It was comfortable.

"Let's go." Di Shan waited for Shi Yan to get in completely before advancing forwards. He did not want to waste any more powers of the Blue Star Crystal.

The other four people, Dua Long, Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba could only stare at the other three getting into the mysterious darkness. Their eyes beamed out a greedy light. They were also interested in the thing called "Sky-breaking Shuttle." However, because they knew how dangerous the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was, they could only watch it from a distance.

Until the three people of Di Shan disappeared into the darkness, the four of them gathered and quietly discussed with each other.

The three of them, Di Shan, Yu Rou, Shi Yan, kept walking further in the dark. The distance between them and the shuttle got shortened. Some beams of light ahead became visible. When the three of them could plainly see the shuttle, a dazzling halo suddenly radiated in the dark. It was unknown where this halo had come from.

A huge block of stone appeared in front of their eyes.

The stone platform had an octagonal shape and looked like it was made from some strange inky-black lava. The block was as huge as half of a basketball field. A sparkling white chunk of the crystal was as big as a washbasin lay in the center of the stone platform. Inside this crystal chunk, there was a stirring silver burning flame.

Miraculous heavenly light struck down to the acute angle of the octagon-shaped platform which connected to the sky above the

Sound Beast Mountain. The heavenly light covered the stone and created forces that sealed the crystal chunk as well as the silver flame inside it.

Dense Sky and Earth yin aura from everywhere inside the Sound Beast Mountain was like they just found a way out; they urgently stormed towards the stone platform, joining the burning fires inside the crystal chunk, making the silver burning flame lively. More and more of the forces were gathering.

The four Dead Spirit Beasts that had escaped from the sea of fire created by the Thousand Earth Flame were quietly hiding behind that huge stone platform. Their murderous eyes stared at the invaders who daringly intruded here.

The shuttle which was as long as an arm was circling the huge stone. The three radiant silver strings that were wrapping it connected to the crystal chunk. Despite how much the shuttle was struggling, the three silver strings still got it tied so tightly that it couldn't get out of the huge stone.

"That's good. Your souls would help us get out of this place." A peculiar ambiguous spirit suddenly came out from inside the stone. The silver flames inside the crystal chunk condensed into a blurry human face. After receiving more Sky and Earth yin aura, that face was exposed clearer little by little.

"

Chapter 270: The Great Destruction

Many flows of silver light blindingly flashed out from the white crystal chunk in the center of the stone. Those silver lights pierced through the seal forces outside the stone and darted towards Shi Yan, Di Shan, and Yu Rou like a shower of arrows.

Di Shan and Yu Rou were terrified.

Without thinking too much, the two leaders of the Wings Race instantly stretched out their black and white wings. Black and white waves rippled out from their wings one by one and fused with the faint blue lights of the Blue Star Crystal.

After all the silver lights hit the cover of blue light, numerous dazzling colorful beams of light instantly radiated all of a sudden. The colorful light scattered everywhere. Wherever that light had zoomed over, the Sound Beasts ceased frighteningly, and the cave's wall exploded.

An earth-shaking explosion reverberated inside the cave. The ten-thousand-meter tall mountain couldn't help but shake violently. Abnormal vibrations appeared on the ground; the massive mountain was shaking as if it was about to collapse.

The Demonic Sound Clan's and the Wings Race's people who were standing outside the Sound Beast Mountain showed some signs of horror while looking at the mighty mountain.

Beneath the sky where the mountain dominated the skyline, an impetuous explosive sound reverberated together with countless scattering giant rocks and flashing light.

"Boom boom boom."

The ear-piercing crash kept coming up. The enormous mountain seemed as if it was about to collapse. The mountain flanks were shaking while hundred-meter-long blocks of rock were rolling down to the mountain foot. People of the two tribes were scared

out of their wits.

Some of the people who were a little bit slow got hit by the giant rocks. They were crushed into a mashing pulp of flesh on the spot.

Inside the mountain, Duo Long, Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng were all having grave faces. They wanted to move forward to understand what was happening thoroughly; but, at the same time, they were scared of the destructive power of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. They did not dare to act recklessly except for passively waiting there.

However, a long time had passed, and the upheaval of the Sound Beast Mountain didn't stop; it even became more brutal.

In the sky, the dense interlocking thunder net was slowly contracting.

The mountain collapsed, and numerous giant rocks were rolling down. Peculiar streams of light in the gray clouds flashed up and disappeared. The whole world encountered a great change while the Sound Beast Mountain was crumbling. It was as if the sky was falling.

Clouds of thick ashes fully engulfed the earth and sky. The entire abandoned gloomy dark land was like it was completely swallowed by the bright light.

From a very far distance, many seismic upheavals consecutively happened. The ground turned to be an irritating ocean that was roaring and surging violently nonstop.

People of the two tribes at the foot of the Sound Beast Mountain felt as if the apocalypse was coming. Warriors with high cultivation base were floating in the air, looking far ahead, and detecting that the layer of gray clouds adjoining the ground already.

With the severe tremor, at the place where the ground had been wrecked, there appeared a bottomless abyss from which the

destructive aura emitted continuously.

Space crumbled.

Some high-class warriors with a little knowledge promptly knew what was about to happen. Their faces exposed a disappointing look while looking up to the Sound Beast Mountain which was now sealed with thunders.

"Blue Star Crystal!" Inside the mountain, the face in the crystal chunk appeared with fine eyebrows and sharp eyes; its pupils beamed out a devilish silver light. That face opened its mouth and uttered a sharp human voice, "Even the Blue Star Crystal cannot resist for long."

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

More and more silver light radiated from the white crystal chunk and struck on the blue aureole that was projected by the Blue Star Crystal.

The blue halo was twisting because its power was draining faster when they got hit by the silver light.

Although the Blue Star Crystal in Di Shan's hand was still emitting dazzling aureole, its power was being quickly consumed. The Blue Star Crystal had shrunk one-fifth in such a short of time and continued shrinking rapidly.

Di Shan's eyes expressed coldness and cruelty. While he kept looking ahead, a smirk appeared on his face. He suddenly said, "Shi Yan, you told me you could help me. Now it's time."

Shi Yan got stunned with embarrassment, "What?"

Di Shan's face got furious. He stared at Shi Yan and shouted, "So, did you just want to fool me?"

Yu Rou looked anxious. While urging more power from her wings to pour into the blue halo, she looked towards Shi Yan anxiously. "Time is very tight now. If you actually can oppress that

Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, bring it on. As you see, even though it is still under the control of the seal forces, it is already that dangerous. If it can be free entirely, no one can stop it. Don't waste any more time, do it now."

"It's too far. I am not sure if it works or not." Shi Yan forces a miserable smile. "I thought I could have touched it; but with this far distance, I have no way ..."

"Don't waste time." Di Shan shouted with an annoyed face. "The Blue Star Crystal's power is getting drained every single second. Once it dries out, Yu Rou's and my souls cannot prevent the Soul Devouring Flame. We cannot do anything except for running. If it's impossible to deal with it right now, we will die here together!"

"I know." Shi Yan nodded; his face seemed somber.

"Little rascal, you've not even reached the Sky Realm, and you still dare to confront me? Such a dream!" The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame inside the white crystal chunk burst into wicked laughter. "Not to mention you, even the Third Sky of the Spirit Realm warriors are unable to prevent my Soul Destructive Burning Fires. In this space, there is no True God Realm warrior; so, no one can resist my soul destructive power. Don't waste your energy."

"Do you have any other solutions?" Shi Yan did not care about the mocking words of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. He took a deep breath to calm himself down and communicated with the Blood Vein Ring.

"My living form has just formed, so I am still far less than that dangerous thing. Its soul is incredibly powerful; its forces are also very terrifying. My burning fires can only prevent the Sky and Earth yin aura surrounding it but can't destroy its life seal..." The Ten Thousand Earth Flame sent out its first reluctant message.

"The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame is one of the Heaven Flames; its rank is much higher than mine. Among the nine Heaven Flames, it is ranked the third while I am ranked the eighth.

Its living form and life have been evolved more perfectly than mine. Also, my forces have recently drained too much. Even if this ring didn't constrain me, I could only protect myself when confronting that Flame. I am not its match for sure; now it's even worse ..." The Ice Cold Flame sent out a dilemmatic message after a little hesitation. "Among the nine Heaven Flames, it is the most difficult to cope with. I've never heard of anyone that could ever have conquered it. Its forces keep increasing. It doesn't seem like it has been tempered by anyone. I am not a match for it ..."

The answers of the Ten Thousand Earth Flame and the Ice Cold Flame stiffened Si Yan's face. Now, he knew the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was even stronger than the Ice Cold Flame. He was afraid that he could not rely on the Ten Thousand Earth Flame and the Ice Cold Flame this time. He could only count on himself.

"Try to use the ring to deal with it. Except for that, I don't know what else you can do to handle it." The Ice Cold Flame sent out another message. "But, it is too far now while you cannot control this ring. If you throw the ring out recklessly, I don't know what will happen ..."

"That's the only way!" Shi Yan's pupils shrunk while he reminded them, "You two should be careful. I don't know how dangerous it is after all. I hope this solution wouldn't harm you two."

After talking, Shi Yan took the Blood Vein Ring from his finger. After hesitating for a while, he threw it over to the crystal chunk on the stone platform.

Live or die! Wait and see!

Shi Yan silently sent his spiritual sense to the Blood Vein Ring.

The red light suddenly beamed out from the Blood Vein Ring. As soon as the Blood Vein Ring had gotten away from Shi Yan, it turned into a sparkling ray of light striking straight into the stone platform.

"Boom."

When the Blood Vein Ring struck on the shield around the platform, it got prevented by the Heavenly Light and could not get through the shield to come to the stone platform.

Shi Yan's face changed dramatically.

"Cling Cling."

The Blood Vein Ring fell on the ground. Aggressive blood-color light was shot out, and the delicate pattern on the Blood Vein Ring's surface started to move. A flow of solemn ancient aura slowly rose up.

"That ... is that your solution?" Di Shan's face turned severely grave and furious. He looked at Shi Yan and disappointedly shook his head. "We should leave."

Yu Rou's beautiful eyes darkened. She bowed her head, let out a sigh, and then said, "God wants us to perish ..."

"Leave here?" Di Shan revealed a mocking smirk. "To where? Space outside has started to break into pieces. In one day at most, this abandoned land will no longer exist. After leaving here, we will be crushed into ashes by those forces that are tearing the sky apart right now. Without the True God Realm capacity, our bodies could not withstand those forces. We will die no matter what. Even in this abandoned land, God does not even spare us a way to live ..."

The two leaders of the Wings Race were extremely hopeless at this moment. They had completely lost their fighting will.

However, they did not notice that after Shi Yan had thrown the ring out, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame inside the white crystal chunk had lost its mocking intimidation. The handsome face gradually exposed an insecure look.

The devilish silver pupils stared at the Blood Vein Ring without blinking. It seemed to sense that something was unusual.

"It has some changes. There are some changes inside it. Very strange. We have hope; we have hope!" The Ice Cold Flame transmitted a feeble sense from the Blood Vein Ring. The Ice Cold Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring was terrified and seemed to have figured out a major earth-shaking change.

"My God, it is ... it is building a new barrier inside the platform based on the shape of the stone. It is ..."

"What?" Shi Yan was stunned. A blinding stream of light shot out from his eyes.

A condensed blood aureole like fresh blood slowly spread out from the Blood Vein Ring. The Blood Vein Ring quietly fell on the outside of the stone. The pattern on the Blood Vein Ring's surface gradually transformed, forming a mysterious formation ...

Slowly, that formation turned into a Bagua figure (describes eight trigrams used in Taoist cosmology to represent the fundamental principles of reality). A flow of red light flashed up in the middle of the formation and then instantly disappeared.

Right after that, the hilt of the mysterious giant blazing red sword hidden deep inside the Blood Vein Ring flew out all of a sudden.

The mysterious giant sword dragged the hundred-meter blood halo along, traumatically shot out destructive aura, and then slashed down the barrier of the huge stone block.

"Swoosh."

The giant sword could easily tear down the barrier which was refined by the heavenly light, just like it was made from thin paper. The barrier immediately shattered into pieces.

Chapter 271: Confine it!

As soon as the giant sword swung up, the barrier was torn off in a blink.

In the center of the stone platform, the handsome face of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame inside the crystal chunk changed dramatically.

Di Shan and Yu Rou had originally been hopeless and hadn't believed in Shi Yan anymore. However, after seeing what happened when the giant sword had slashed down, they regained their hope.

The two of them were in shock while excitedly looking at the mysterious giant sword. They were waiting for more remarkable changes that the giant sword could make.

Shi Yan pressed his lips and joyfully smiled. His face showed an exciting look as he felt that the Blood Vein Ring was miraculously getting more unpredictable.

Only one slash of the giant sword could tear the barrier apart. After it flew up dragging a bloody one-hundred-meter-long halo, it struck down another slash.

This slash was like the creation of the world. The aggressiveness and the toughness could be seen in it. The body of the sword had emitted the massive murderous aura, which seemed to be able to crush everything into ashes.

"Ripping."

The splendid white crystal chunk was splashed into many small pieces just like soft tofu, releasing the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

"Boom boom boom."

An explosive sound like thunderbolts came out from deep inside

the Sound Beast Mountain. The explosion was extremely devastating.

Even though the Sound Beast Mountain was so enormous, after that earth-shaking explosion, it violently shook and rapidly collapsed. Many huge hundred-meter-long rocks rolled down massively.

Many high-class warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race, who had intentionally come closer to the mountain, were threatened to death and ran out away from the mountain as fast as they could.

Some other high-class warriors were hovering in the air and looking over ahead. They saw the world be immersed in scattering dust and ashes and the Sound Beast Mountain collapsing. The world was disappearing and soon returned to the chaos as it used to be at the beginning of the universe. They started to feel hopeless, nervous, and terrified.

Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Lung, Qu Yan Qing, He Qing Man, and the other warriors from the Endless Sea were still confined in the cage. They could also feel strong vibrations and changes of the earth. They had a feeling of insecurities and some signs of shock on their faces.

Shi Yan had freed the Soul imprint that had been planted inside Cao Zhi Lan. In this critical moment, she could not wait any longer and immediately used the Spirit God Martial Spirit to check everywhere outside. Her sense reached out towards the Sound Beast Mountain's direction.

"Not good. An extreme ferocious creature has appeared inside the Sound Beast Mountain." After checking for a while, Cao Zhi Lan's expression suddenly changed while talking to the other three women. "Inside the mountain, its living form is unique. I've never seen anything like this before."

Everyone was all frightened.

"They are being screwed there..." Cao Zhi Lan mumbled to herself. An intention of escape suddenly sprang into her mind while she looked at the warriors of the Cao family next to her.

"The Sound Beast Mountain has started to collapse."

"There is certainly a major change over there."

"Let's go there to see?"

Duo Long, Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yi Tian Mo were at a corner inside the mountain, discussing together with serious faces. They could understand each other's thoughts through their eyes.

"Once the Sound Beast Mountain collapses, according to the ancestors' guidance, this space will also be destroyed soon. When this place returns to nihilism, we cannot change our fate even if we hide inside here." Yi Tian Mo said with cold eyes. "If it is like this, we should go to see what has happened after all. Perhaps we can find a way to survive."

"That's right. If there are any ways to get out of here, it will be where the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame is. We might have a chance to get out of here there. Staying here cannot do anything good for us anyway, it is like waiting for death." Duo Long agreed. He was the first one who rushed towards the other three people of Shi Yan's group without hesitation.

The other three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan also instantly followed him after just a little bit of hesitation.

"Stupid humankind, you've just helped me to get out of the seal."

After the splendid white crystal chunk had been broken, the silver Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame appeared in the center of the stone platform.

The devilish faces condensed by the burning fires made others feel ambiguous and unreal. However, its destructive soul aura was extremely tremendous. Anyone who had soul consciousness could feel that its murderous aura could make people's souls tremble in

fear.

The mysterious giant sword had whipped out two slashes in total. One had broken the barrier which sealed the stone; the other had broken the white crystal chunk which confined the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, facilitating it to escape from the seal.

After the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had flown out, the giant sword made no moves as though it knew even if it could attack again, it would be useless. The giant sword with brutal aura hovered around in the air and slowly moved towards the Blood Vein Ring.

"Woo woo."

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame did not notice this sword. As soon as it got out, it immediately dashed towards Shi Yan, Di Shan, and Yu Rou as fast as lightning.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

The faint blue halo was hit by a bundle of burning fires, sprinkling embers everywhere. The Blue Star Crystal in Di Shan's hand contracted quickly.

Di Shan's face changed dramatically. He shouted to Shi Yan while looking at him with a stern face, "I can't hold it any longer. You'd better find a solution."

Just in a short time, the Blue Star Crystal in Di Shan's hand shrank to a child-sized fist. With this reducing speed, the Blue Star Crystal would only last for a few minutes more, and then its power would completely drain.

The Blue Star Crystal projected the powerful halo which could prevent the burning fires of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. Di Shan had decided to come inside here because of this Blue Star Crystal. Once the Blue Star Crystal consumed all of its power, there was no more protection from the blue halo. By that

time, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flames burning fires would instantly incinerate their souls to ashes.

Especially Shi Yan, as he was only in the Earth Realm, even if he had the Sea of Consciousness, he wouldn't be able to prevent one strike from the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. He would be burned to death in a blink.

"Don't rush." While Di Shan and Yu Rou was nervous, Shi Yan was still calm. He slowly said with a faint smile, "Wait and see. It will be unable to attack for long."

Di Shan and Yu Rou was dumbstruck. With suspicion, they wondered where Shi Yan's confidence came from.

"Di Shan, you, what are you guys doing?"

Right at this moment, a voice came up from a distance. Duo Long's figure suddenly ceased and then moved backward immediately.

As soon as he saw the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, he could feel the destructive soul power from it, especially when he saw it leaving Di Shan's place and was now approaching towards him.

Duo Long shouted in fear, turned around, and ran away from that place while beginning to regret his decision to come here.

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan were lagging behind Duo Long because of their particular feeble bodies. When they were on the way coming in, seeing Duo Long fleeing fast, they instantly turned around without thinking and ran away even more quickly than Duo Long.

Duo Long screamed out frighteningly and nervously, hoping that Di Shan would help him out of this deadly situation.

Di Shan ignored him.

Yu Rou's beautiful eyes lit up a cold light. She said with a smirk

on her face, "He probably wanted to have a part of the treasure. Regretfully, he came here at the wrong time. It's good if he dies anyway. If he dies, we will be more peaceful. Without Duo Long, the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan can do nothing. Is that right Di Shan?"

Di Shan replied with cold eyes, "He unites with the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan to kill Shi Yan. It means he has taken a stand against us. It looks like he will not complete his wish."

Shi Yan was astonished.

"No worries. If Duo Long dies, at least I can assure that there will be no more danger for you." Yu Rou smiled and gently said. "The other three leaders are not the match for Di Shan and me. Now you can feel at ease."

While Di Shan and Yu Rou were talking, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was attacking towards Duo Long. The devilish handsome face quickly went into Duo Long's body and head.

Duo Long suddenly held his head and screamed out miserably. The scream was exceedingly sorrowful which meant that he was suffering severe pain and bitterness.

"Duo Long's doomed ..." Di Shan shook his head. He suddenly looked at Shi Yan and said, "Don't you need to hurry up? This Blue Star Crystal will die soon."

Shi Yan raised his eyebrows, bowed his head, and threw a glance at the Blue Star Crystal in Di Shan's hand which was now as big as a soap bar.

"Uh, I know it's time to bring it on." Shi Yan said emotionlessly, but actually, he felt miserable inside while looking at the Blood Vein Ring on the ground. After hesitating for a moment, he walked to the Blood Vein Ring.

"Woo."

When he just started his first step, the Blood Vein Ring instantly

flew up and turned into a flow of bloody pink light advancing straight to him.

Shi Yan dazedly lifted his hand to catch the Blood Vein Ring. However, as soon as his five fingers opened, he realized that the Blood Vein Ring had already been on one of his fingers.

At the same time, the giant sword, which was floating in the air, also shrank and plunged towards the ring, dragging the devastating aura along.

Di Shan's and Yu Rou's pupils shrank instantly, showing a feeling of insecurities

These two God Realm warriors could feel an earth-shaking power from the giant sword. That surging power was extremely outrageous which also scared them a little. They were certain that there were many mysterious secrets hidden inside this sword which could intimidate them.

Eventually, the sword disappeared into the ring on Shi Yan's finger without leaving any trace.

Di Shan and Yu Rou slightly let out a sigh. Two of them gave each other a quick glance, implying that they had discovered more of Shi Yan's secrets.

Shi Yan did not notice the changed expression on their faces. After getting the Blood Vein Ring back on his finger, Shi Yan immediately released his soul consciousness to check on the situation inside the Blood Vein Ring.

Inside the Blood Vein Ring, besides the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame and the area of the mysterious giant sword, there was a newly created area.

In the ambiguous white blank, there were an enormous octagonal-shaped stone block, a splendid white crystal chunk, a hollow mountain ...

After looking at the scenery carefully and sensing the time inside

the Blood Vein Ring, Shi Yan's face was bizarre; his eyes kept sparking while his eyebrows were slamming together tightly.

The fourth space inside the Blood Vein Ring was totally the same to where he was standing right now.

Everything in his current place, lava rock mountain flanks, the stone block, the crystal chunk, even the sealing forces on the stone were set up exactly the same inside the Blood Vein Ring. He did not notice any tiny differences between the scene inside and outside of the ring.

The Blood Vein Ring had prepared everything to seal the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

"Confine it!" Shi Yan shouted while he lifted the Blood Vein Ring with the ring's surface towards the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, which had penetrated Duo Long's body, suddenly screamed out loud, "What is it? I can't believe, can't believe it can drag me out!"

Chapter 272: Make you my Master.

The ear-piercing scream of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was even louder than the sounds of the Sound Beast Mountain's collapse. It was staying inside Duo Long's head with extreme fear.

Duo Long's eyes were gradually losing its vital signs. Deep inside of his pupils had a dull bold silver color. It was obvious that the soul of the patriarch of the Gray Wings Clan had been burned, and he had lost his life in just a short time.

Both Di Shan and Yu Rou showed their panic when they saw Duo Long's death.

However, the ear-piercing cry of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame gave the two of them hope. They focused more on Shi Yan and considered their ancestors' guidance more seriously.

Had the fates already been soon arranged!?

That thought couldn't help but come across their minds. Thinking about making that unweaned rascal their Master, the two of them did not even know whether they should cry or smile.

However, they could not smile.

Di Shan knew that if Shi Yan didn't come here, the Sound Beast Mountain might not have collapsed this fast and the land here would not have been in chaos in such a short time like this. However, they still wouldn't escape from the chain of their fates and would certainly be confined in this place forever.

Moreover, the two of them had reached the Spirit Realm. If they had more time, they could hopefully enter the True God Realm.

If they stayed in this devilish space, once they reached the True God Realm, what awaited them would not be applauses but the Punishment of God from deep inside the sky.

The other three leaders including Ka Ba, Yi Tian Mo, and Ya Meng had hidden away leaving no traces as soon as they saw that the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had gotten out.

The Sound Beast Mountain continued falling. The earth-shaking thunder kept roaring.

Those people inside the mountain knew better than anyone else that space here was going to become a void, possibly in the next second. Time was extremely tight.

"Capture it!" Shi Yan coldly shouted while raising his finger with the Blood Vein Ring on, pointing the ring's surface towards Duo Long from a distance.

The Blood Vein Ring suddenly emitted the dazzling pink lights. Many flows of the pink light like torrential waves of the sea impetuously stormed towards Duo Long and quickly covered his dead body in just a blink.

"No!" The handsome peculiar face hidden inside Duo Long's head was forcefully pulled out.

After it had been drawn out of Duo Long's head, it uncontrollably flew towards Shi Yan.

Di Shan's and Yu Rou's visage had greatly changed. They instinctively moved backward. They immediately felt thrilled. After being stunned for a second, they hastily stopped receding. There were no other ways to retreat.

Only staying inside the blue halo could help them avoid that soul attack. No matter wherever that they ran away, if they got outside of the blue halo's protection, it was impossible to prevent their souls from being incinerated.

Di Shan and Yu Rou reacted promptly. They immediately stopped.

"No! No!" The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame frighteningly screamed while constantly struggling to escape from

the Blood Vein Ring's attraction.

However, despite how much it tried, it became weak and powerless when the pink light hit it.

Under the attentive look of Shi Yan, Di Shan, and Yu Rou, the miraculous Heaven Flame, which had been sealed inside the Sound Beast Mountain for a very long time, had no more powers to fight against being drawn into the Blood Vein Ring little by little.

Shi Yan's finger poked out of the blue halo and pointed towards that Flame from a distance.

Eventually, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame turned into a flow of silver light, flashed up and disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring on Shi Yan's finger.

Sky and Earth yin aura suddenly stirred up disorderly and could not condense itself anymore.

"Boom Boom Boom."

The Sound Beast Mountain looked like it had just lost its last essential meaning of existence. It was collapsing with the speed that was even several times faster than before.

Di Shan and Yu Rou were still in a panic, looking at Shi Yan with unbelievable eyes. It was hard to believe what had just happened.

After the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had been attracted into the Blood Vein Ring, Shi Yan did not even bother to release his spirit to check the inside of the ring. Instead, he immediately approached the huge stone platform, picked up the Sky-breaking Shuttle on the stone and put it into the Blood Vein Ring right away.

"Let's go." Shi Yan looked at Di Shan and Yu Rou and said with a faint smile, "We should be safe now."

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

The sky radiated a blinding halo which diffused a surging flow of

mighty power.

The thunder and thunderbolts were roaming and booming. Rocky stairs suddenly appeared one by one from nowhere, linking up the huge stone platform with the sky. The rocky stairs led to the halos converging in the sky; it was like Heaven Stairway connecting with the ether.

"The Heaven Stairway appears ... The ancestors' guidance. I can't believe, can't believe it is true ..." Di Shan raised his head up to the sky, mumbling to himself with an astonished face. He seemed to be deeply immersed in some old memories that he looked dazed for a while.

Yu Rou was also amazed. Her beautiful eyes brightened. After a moment, she suddenly burst into laughter, guffawed, and laughed until her stomach hurt. She no longer kept her usual delicate manners.

Shi Yan looked at the two people with suspicion. He wondered what had made the two of them go insane at this sensitive point of time.

"It is you indeed!" Yu Rou laughed until tears almost rolled out. She held her belly, pointing to Shi Yan while talking to Di Shan without stopping laughing, "What else do you have to say?"

Di Shan's sturdy body was shocked. His countenance was extremely complicated.

After contemplating for a while and without bothering about the collapsing mountain or scattering rubble, Di Shan suddenly got down on his knees in front of Shi Yan. He bowed his head and said with a low voice, "Di Shan, the patriarch of the Black Wings Clan, from now on, I swear to make you my Master. It will never change until death."

"Yu Rou, the matriarch in power of the White Wings Clan, swear to make you my Master. It will never change until death." Yu Rou

smiled gently, respectfully kneeled down with a serious face and swore.

Shi Yan was shocked with his eyes and mouth wide open.

"Boom boom boom."

The Sound Beast Mountain was about to collapse completely. The mountain looked as if it was cut and slashed by hammers and sabers, resulting in many giant rocks and stones rolling down.

It was unknown when the compact thunderbolt net had disappeared without a trace.

The sky was getting calmer. In the dark sky, there gradually appeared a bright blue area.

"This, this thing?"

Shi Yan was in a daze on the spot. He did not know what Di Shan and Yu Rou wanted to do after all, or if they were honest about it. At this time, he was so confused; he didn't know what else he could say.

The two of them did not wait for Shi Yan's reaction either. After having kneeled down, Di Shan and Yu Rou stood up at the same time, raised their heads looking at the Heaven Stairway piercing up straight to the sky. Yu Rou said with a smile, "Master, let's take the Heaven Stairway. We can finally get out of this devilish place."

Master ...

Shi Yan thought carefully about this heavy word with his tightly knitted eyebrows.

"Are you sincere?"

"From now on, you are the Master of our two tribes. So, even without Duo Long, we will make the other pagans earnestly follow the ancestors' guidance." Di Shan's eyes flared up a strange light. "Master, you now have three kinds of Heaven Flame. Your existence is the biggest fear of the Demonic Sound Clan. Moreover,

with Yu Rou's and my pressure, I think the Demonic Sound Clan shouldn't be unlikely to be subdued."

"This thing ..."

"Master, the fact that you have come here is the God's will. We only follow the predestined fate of God." Yu Rou revealed a smile, looking at Shi Yan. "I've explained to you Master. Because you have helped our two tribes to get out of this abandoned land, and also, you have the blood of the Immortal God King, you will become the Master of the two tribes. We have to follow the ancestors' guidance."

"This place is going to collapse. Master, let's take the Heaven Stairway first." Di Shan lightly shouted.

Shi Yan was still not sure what the two of them wanted, but he did not feel their wickedness anyway. He immediately stepped up and stood on the Heaven Stairway after a little bit of hesitation.

Di Shan and Yu Rou also stepped on the stairway only after Shi Yan had already stood there. They were standing two steps lower than his.

The Sound Beast Mountain tremendously exploded as expected. The explosive sound reverberated; the mountain, which had lasted for so many years, was collapsing little by little. From the Heaven Stairs where they were standing on, the mountain was tumbling down and scattered everywhere.

While Shi Yan was standing on the Heaven Stairway, he realized that even though the Sound Beast Mountain was crashing into pieces, it did not affect him at all.

To be exact, the collapse of the Sound Beast Mountain seemed to be tied up by an invisible force so that no rocks could touch the Heaven Stairway. The area surrounding the stairway was safe from all the scattering rocks and debris.

Despite the fact that that thing was abnormal and just somehow

had naturally happened, it brought Shi Yan a feeling that it was originally supposed to be like this.

In no time after the explosion, the Sound Beast Mountain no longer existed.

The massive, mighty mountain collapsed in a very short period. Giant rocks strewn everywhere. Under the blue sky, the place where the Sound Beasts had used to live remained only a stairway running up to the sky. Three people were standing on it.

Outside the Sound Beast Mountain, the top-class warriors had soon fled away very far to avoid the mountain's collapse which could harm them.

After the brutal breakdown, they now could surprisingly see the Heaven Stairway piercing up to the sky as well as three people standing at the bottom end of the stairway.

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng were shocked with the incredible look in their eyes, dazedly looking at those three people on the staircase.

Di Shan frowned while glancing at those three people from a distance then shouted, "Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, Ya Meng, come here. I have something to tell you."

The three of them were dumbstruck for a while before obediently rushing towards Di Shan.

Tens of millions of pagans surrounding raised their heads up to the sky, looking at the Heaven Stairway, wondering what had happened after all.

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan had arrived by Di Shan's side just in a blink. They all spoke up simultaneously, "That Nine Serenities ..."

"He has been subdued it." Di Shan lifted his hand. A miraculous circle of waves diffused and temporarily blockaded the surrounding area, not letting any sound out.

The expression of the three leaders changed dramatically.

"Let me introduce again to you." Yu Rou suddenly stiffened her face, pointing at Shi Yan and said, "This is our Master who has three kinds of Heaven Flame. The blood of the Immortal God King is running in his veins. I think you all know about the ancestors' guidance. As being the leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, do you know how to behave in front of him?"

"What?" Ya Meng shouted in fear.

"Did I not make myself clear?" Yu Rou frowned and said with a cold voice, "As he can bring our two tribes out of this place, together with that bloodline, we have to make him our Master. The three of you, do you want to ignore the ancestors' guidance? Do you understand what it means?"

Yi Tian Mo's face was shivering. He couldn't help but ask, "Where is Duo Long?"

"He's dead." Di Shan frigidly looked at the three leaders, "He was incinerated to ashes by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame which is now in our Master's hand. Hmm, although the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame cannot be used at present, the other two Heaven Flames are still enough to destroy your Demonic Sound Clan entirely."

Yi Tian Mo's complexion changed dramatically. He suddenly bowed towards Shi Yan with respect after hesitating for a while and then said, "I am one of the leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, Yi Tian Mo, now take the vow to make you my Master."

Ka Ba's and Ya Meng's pupils shrank. They let out a sigh, bowed their heads dolefully, bent down towards Shi Yan, "We vow to make you our Master."

Chapter 273: The path to return (the way home)

Make you my Master!

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan bowed their heads in front of Shi Yan. Although they were not very pleased, they still did it.

From this moment, the destiny of the Demonic Sound Clan was in Shi Yan's hands.

Di Shan and Yu Rou gave them a despised glance with a smirk on their faces as if they had already known in advance that these three people of the Demonic Sound Clan could not avoid Shi Yan's intimidation.

Shi Yan was like he had gotten lost in the misty cloud, dazedly looking at the three leaders of Demonic Sound Clan as if he was in a dream.

Is it that simple?

No resistance, no bargain, no discontent. Those three leaders just simply submit like that?!

Revealing a big grin, Shi Yan said to the three leaders with a happy face, "Are you serious?"

The three of them Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng nodded reluctantly, accepting Shi Yan's status.

"Very good. I think we've all come to an agreement." Di Shan frowned and said. "Only we know about this. Wait until the right time to tell the others. I think our people will not understand our decision and persistence for now. Only when our Master becomes truly more powerful, they will then accept him as their Master."

Di Shan looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan also understood it. He nodded with a smile and said, "I will not talk about it to anyone."

"Everything will be carried out as usual. Only from now on, everyone needs to follow the rules."

Yu Rou smiled, thought for a while before speaking seriously, "I think the most important thing to do first is to figure out how to get out of this place."

"The Heaven Stairway has appeared. Our way out is just right in front of us." Di Shan raised his head and confidently said. "We can arrange to bring people out of here. We don't need to stay here any longer. But time is tight; we should hurry."

"Master, we'll go and arrange it now." The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan respectfully asked for permission, looking at Shi Yan and waiting for his approval.

Shi Yan was bewildered. He still couldn't adapt to the sudden changes of those three people. After musing for a while, he reluctantly flipped his hand and said contently, "You should go check and prepare. I don't thoroughly understand the situation right now. Moreover, to be honest, my competencies are still limited, and my experience is not as much as yours. You do whatever you think is right and reasonable. Later on, you don't need to ask for my opinions."

After his words, the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan and the two leaders of the Wings Race all got astounded, looking at Shi Yan strangely.

They had assumed that as Shi Yan just took his accession, as well as being young, ambitious and aggressive, he would have his thoughts and viewpoints.

He was a young man anyway. The youth always wanted to show off and usually had many opinions. Of course, he would have to pay for it, but wasn't it the way that all of the influential leaders

will grow up and get stronger?

The five of them had been well prepared to listen to Shi Yan's opinions before they gave out their viewpoints and showed him the right direction.

However, they did not expect that Shi Yan was that determined, so determined that it seemed he was not excited about becoming their two tribes' Master.

If this guy were neither so stupid nor confident, after going through too many dangerous incidents, he would have rested peacefully without caring about fame and fortune.

After all, what kind of person was Shi Yan?

"I don't know anything about this place, so I am not able to bluster." Under the scrutinize gazes of those five people, Shi Yan shrugged and revealed a faint smile, "I just want to get out of this place quickly. If you can arrange and finish this soon, I am already appreciated. Anyway, I don't think we have much time left."

As he looked toward a further distance, the vast ground was gradually turning into the void.

It was unknown what changes this space had gone through. However, at this moment, this space seemed to base on some previous orbit and was vanishing little by little. It had started to collapse completely.

The five leaders got frightened after hearing what Shi Yan had said. They subconsciously looked around without saying anything further. They then nodded to Shi Yan, gently leaped up and left.

"Line up. Climb on the Heaven Stairway. Keep going up no matter what you see or hear!"

"This Heaven Stairway is the way leading to the outside world. Hurry up. We can't be late anymore."

"All of the Black Wings Race's people, listen ..."

After the five of them left and flew up to the sky, they descended on the place of their clans and started to either shout or command their people.

Not long after that, the pagans of the two tribes started to be convulsive. Everyone lined up as commanded.

"That, that is ..." Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful face displayed an insecurity while she looked towards Shi Yan who was standing alone on the Heaven Stairway far from her. She began to worry if she was to be left behind or not.

Although she could have used the Spirit God Martial Spirit, she still didn't dare to do it recklessly as there were so many Demonic Sound Clan's high-class warriors around.

However, she was good at observation. Through the conversation among Di Shan, Yi Tian Mo, and Shi Yan, she somehow figured out something.

Those pagan leaders seemed to respect him very much. Was this possible?

"Father." Yi Cu Bi suddenly shouted, rushing towards Yi Tian Mo.

"What?" Yi Tian Mo annoyedly frowned as he was busy arranging his people. "What happened?"

"How about them?" Yi Cu Bi pointed towards Cao Zhi Lan and the other warriors of the Endless Sea in the cage.

"Should we bring them along, or we don't need to care whether they live or die?"

Yi Cu Bi did not like those women of Cao Zhi Lan's group. As she had extraordinary soul competency, she could easily realize any of the movements inside their souls. She knew that those women always considered and planned something ominous.

Since Yi Cu Bi was little, she had been taught that the outsiders were very treacherous, dishonorable, unreasonable, and resentful

towards her people. The outsiders were her people's enemy.

Yi Tian Mo's teachings made her have no sympathy for the humankind. That was why when she had found Shi Yan, she immediately captured him without any hesitations.

"They ..." Yi Tian Mo could not decide even after considering for a while. He finally had to raise his head towards Shi Yan, who was still on the Heaven Stairway, and sent out a soul message to ask for his opinion.

Shi Yan was using his soul consciousness to observe everywhere and suddenly received Yi Tian Mo's soul fluctuation. At first, Shi Yan astonishingly thought that Yi Tian Mo had wanted to harm him discretely, so he urged all his power to defend. However, he then realized that his soul sense was neither wicked nor dangerous.

After sensing that soul sense carefully, he knitted his eyebrow and instantly loosened himself. He turned to Yi Tian Mo from a far distance and nodded.

Yi Tian Mo understood his thoughts and slightly bent towards Shi Yan. He then immediately spoke to Yi Cu Bi, "Bring them along. They alive will still be useful. You are in charge of arranging for them to go on the Heaven Stairway."

Yi Cu Bi felt incomprehensive as she did not expect that her father and Shi Yan had been close like this.

Although having some doubts, she still followed her father's instruction. She called Yi Feng and his group to assign them the mission.

No one noticed that Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful eyes had suddenly brightened up. A violent tremor surged up deep inside her pupils.

The special point of her Spirit God Martial Spirit was that even though she did not put all of her efforts to observe around, she could still realize that Yi Tian Mo's body had transmitted out a

feeble soul stream within this short distance. And, its direction was, unbelievably, towards Shi Yan.

She plainly saw Shi Yan nod his head towards Yi Tian Mo from the distance of thousands of meters. After that, Yi Tian Mo had agreed to spare their lives afterward.

What was it about?

No matter what Cao Zhi Lan had imagined, she couldn't believe the truth that she had just seen with her own eyes.

The leader of the Demonic Sound Clan asked for his opinions?

Is this for reals?

What has happened to them after all?

Cao Zhi Lan's heart was like it was sinking to the bottom of an abyss.

Shi Yan did not see Cao Zhi Lan's expression. He was still standing on the Heaven Stairway which ran up to the cloud, wondering what mighty existence could have imposed such a powerful Formation Technique in this abandoned land.

The Chasm Battlefield, the abandoned land, who has created all of these things?

If the fact that I come here is the predestination, so who is it, who could foresee everything?

With many doubts in his mind that were not easy to be removed, Shi Yan wanted to find a clue but couldn't think of anything.

Anyway, he didn't initially belong to this place.

"We are almost done." Yu Rou flapped her white wings and smiled. She delicately came next to Shi Yan and said gently, "It starts to fall outside the mountain. I think we should climb. I am longing, longing to see our ancestral land where there is the sun, the moon, and the stars. I've dreamt about many wonderful things there ..."

Yu Rou said those words with full of passion and desire. As she was born in this abandoned land, her knowledge since she was little was all about this land, but the desires were always inflaming inside of her.

Every member of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race had a desire of coming home.

"Ok." Shi Yan revealed a smile. Although Yu Rou didn't explain anything, he knew that the Heaven Stairway had connected straight to the cloud in the sky, creating the way out of this place.

When thinking about this, he let out a sigh of relief. Although he had got the Sky-breaking Shuttle, he still didn't know how to use it.

If he had to use this Sky-breaking Shuttle to bring the two tribes out of this sorrowful land, he didn't know how long it would have taken.

However, he knew that if he wanted to discover the secrets of the Sky-breaking Shuttle, he needed time and a lot of spirit strength. But right now, he obviously did not have much time.

Shi Yan climbed to the end of the stairway while thinking. He was the first one who stepped on the cloud of the sky.

Yu Rou, the matriarch of White Wings Clan followed him with a light smile and also climbed to the sky. She stepped up on each of the rocky steps without using any of her flying powers, advancing to the sky.

Shi Yan was in the front; Yu Rou was behind him on the stairway in front of the attentive eyes of thousands of the Demonic Sound Clan's and the Wings Race's pagans. Shi Yan and Yu Rou slowly stepped onto the steps towards the sky. Their figure gradually vanished inside the bright halo, disappearing from this abandoned land.

Chapter 274: Snow Dragon Island

The moon shone like a shining silver tray, and the stars twinkled in the sky.

Human heads emerged from the calm sea surface one by one like watermelons floating on the sea, scattering everywhere.

The chilled waves were lapping. There were no islands around, only huge reefs like enormous horns jutted out from the water in the middle of the sea.

Shi Yan stood on one reef, looking up to the sky. He curled his lips revealing a silent smile.

They had finally returned.

The presence of the stars and the moon in the sky meant that this place was not that abandoned gloomy unlighted land. No matter where this was, being able to see the stars in the sky and feel the energies that radiated from those stars was so welcoming to him.

Energies of numerous stars from the sky quietly poured in and gathered into the Star Martial Spirit in his heart. He did not know how to make the most use of this martial spirit yet, but he was aware that the Star Martial Spirit was extraordinary. Especially after he had absorbed the Sun Refined Spirit, he somehow felt that the Star Martial Spirit had a significant transformation.

He could not describe that transformation, but he knew it was marvelous. It seemed that the transformed Star Martial Spirit had something more compared to the beginning.

His spirit was gradually immersed in the Blood Vein Ring. The Ice Cold Flame and the Thousand Earth Flame promptly sent out their messages to ask for his opinions.

"It's ok." Shi Yan replied. While he was investigating in silence, he realized that space where the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was being confined was exactly similar to the setup of the

seal inside the Sound Beast Mountain. The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, neither its aura nor its surge soul, was still impounded inside the huge crystal chunk.

Shi Yan could see it but couldn't sense its living aura except for his strange feelings about the flame.

When the Blood Vein Ring confined the Cold Flame, Shi Yan could still sense and communicate with it. Although he could not use its forces, he could still feel its aura and icy energies.

However, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was different.

It seemed that the Blood Vein Ring was very careful with it, hiding all of its aura and soul. When Shi Yan's spirit entered the Blood Vein Ring, he could only see it but was impossible to have any interactions with it.

After slowly retrieving his spirit, Shi Yan stood on the reef, observing around with his knitted eyebrows.

On the sea, the pagans of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race slowly rose above the water. They all found something to cling onto and stand up.

Reefs were everywhere nearby. They easily found a place to rest upon.

Those pagans from the abandoned land were insanely happy after they firmly stood on the reefs. They cheerfully looked up toward the starry sky and kept praising.

The sparkling stars and the shining moon were something they had never seen before.

Those pagans had been placed in confinement for countless years. When they raised their heads looking up towards the sky, they instinctively felt emotional as if they were now alive again. Many eyes were filled with tears.

Even the pagan leaders Di Shan, Yu Rou, and Yi Tian Mo couldn't help but sob as well. When they looked up to the starry sky, their bodies trembled, they impossibly restrained their emotions.

Very long after that, the five leaders quietly held back their feelings and flew over beside Shi Yan.

"We are eventually here ..." Yu Rou's voice was full of sensation. "Having been confined for so many years, we've always known that this world is very beautiful. That starry sky still brings us so many emotions. Master, we are grateful to you."

Slightly knitting the eyebrows, Shi Yan contemplated for a while before saying, "I don't know about your ancestors' guidance, but I am not familiar with the way you are addressing me."

"What?" Yu Rou was a bit startled and then said with a smile, "According to the ancestors' guidance, you are our two tribes' Master. From now on, your commands are the truth. Isn't this respectful address right?"

"Just call me by my name." Shi Yan shook his head. "Besides, I don't have the intention of constraining your two tribes too much. You can freely do whatever it is that you want. I don't care about your ancestors' guidance, and I don't think I am qualified enough to lead the two tribes to acquire some earth-shaking achievements."

The five leaders looked at him with surprise.

Any warrior who had the wicked intentions of subduing the two tribes would never give up this chance. Why did he say something like that? Did he not care about these forces?

"As we've made a vow, regardless of what you think, you are still our Master." Yi Shan was the one who had had the biggest resistance before, but he now seriously said with a low voice out of expectation, "The ancestors' guidance is something we have to follow. As long as you are still alive, we will have to obey your

commands."

"Master, although your cultivations are not too strong, we do believe you will become a top-class warrior of this continent just in a short time. With your innate abilities, you will enter the True God Realm sooner or later and even possibly reach the King God Realm." Yu Rou's eyes glinted with a strange beam of light. "Therefore, we believe our Master will lead us to a bright future as our two tribes have wished for."

"Master, you have three kinds of Heaven Flame, the bloodline of the Immortal God King, the tremendous innate abilities, as well as the knowledge of using the Demonic Sound Clan's spiritual Upanishads. Also, you seem to have a terrifying giant sword which emits a horrifying aura that can even frighten me. No matter what, Master's future will be very glorious. Our longevity is very long; we can wait until the day when you become the most magnificent warrior." Di Shan slightly said.

The faces of the other three Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng were also stern.

Shi Yan was dazed for a while. He then shook his head and forced a miserable smile, "I don't know what you are thinking. But right now, I will give you one more chance."

After taking a deep breath, Shi Yan looked towards the Demonic Sound Clan's pagans and said, "I will make myself clear. I don't have the intentions of ruling over your two tribes. I've cooperated with you just to find the way to come back here, nothing else. As of now, our cooperation is done. You are free to leave, and you don't need to care about me. I will not bind you. You can consider it by yourselves. I've never wanted to constrain anyone."

The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan hadn't been volunteered before and had been forced by Di Shan and Yu Rou to make the vow. Shi Yan understood these three arrogant people as well as the murderous impact of their strong souls on the human

society. Keeping these kinds of people close to oneself would have been like a ticking time bomb. If it was not used well, it would explode and kill oneself. Shi Yan understood himself very well. Although he had knowledge about the spiritual Upanishads, it was still far less than that of those three people. Before thoroughly understanding their intentions, he shouldn't be too close to them.

Yi Tian Mo displayed some strange signs as if he was carefully considering something. Di Shan and Yu Rou looked at him with grave faces without saying anything.

Ka Ba and Ya Meng were a little hesitant. They knew that Yi Tian Mo was the most insidious one, his eyes were also very vicious. Thus, they were all waiting for his opinion in silence.

"I've made my vow, so I would not change." Yi Tian Mo spoke up after a long while. "Master, don't worry. From now on, I sincerely consider you my Master without any disloyal intentions because I also have the same belief with Di Shan's and Yu Rou's. Master, you will certainly be a famous and great hero. We will not have to suffer disadvantages if we follow you."

As soon as those words were being spoken, Ka Ba and Ya Meng were in shock. After contemplating for a while, the two of them determinedly nodded.

"If you insist like that, I have nothing else to say." Shi Yan slightly nodded after thinking a little bit. "Although I don't have any intention to rule your two tribes, I would not say anything more if you keep insisting on putting yourselves in my hands."

"Splash splash splash."

From far away, some more people were rising out of the sea. It was the last group.

While talking to Ka Ba and Ya Meng, Shi Yan suddenly glanced at the far distance. His eyebrows knitted tightly.

Those people were of Cao Zhi Lan's group from the Endless Sea.

They were the last ones after the pagans of the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan climbing on the Heaven Stairways. Thus, they had appeared last.

The end of the Heaven Stairway, which was the dazzling point of lights where everyone had just gotten in, was this rocky area.

Until now, Shi Yan still did not know what area of the Endless Sea that this place belonged to. But as to what he felt, this place was surely a part of the Endless Sea.

"Master, those people are your enemies. How should we handle them?" A cruel light beamed out from his eyes. "Do you want to ...?" said Yi Tian Mo.

"Just watch them for now. Keep them as they are still useful." Shi Yan shook his head. After thinking for a while, he suddenly pointed to Cao Zhi Lan and gently ordered, "Bring her to me."

Yu Rou revealed a smile and flew away. After just a blink, she was already beside Cao Zhi Lan. She grabbed the folds of Cao Zhi Lan's clothes and brought her to Shi Yan.

"Do you know where this is?" Shi Yan frowned and asked with a low voice.

He knew that Cao Zhi Lan was not the same as the others. She had a lot of treasures and was also very familiar with the Endless Sea. That was why he had asked her.

Cao Zhi Lan indeed didn't disappoint him. Under his attentive look, Cao Zhi Lan took out a deep blue crystal ball. Knitting her eyebrows, she stared at that crystal with her beautiful sparkling eyes, carefully checked before shouting astonishingly, "The Hengluo Sea!"

"The Hengluo Sea!" Shi Yan's face changed slightly. He said while still being startled, "How come this is the Hengluo Sea. The entrance of the Chasm Battlefield in the Sky Sea is very far from here. It's weird. How come we have arrived in the sea area of the

Three Gods Sect?!"

Cao Zhi Lan also felt strange, shaking her head implicating that she did not know either. She paused for a while before saying, "This is weird. I don't know how or why... perhaps it should be related to the Snow Dragon Island nearby. There are also some eccentric places surrounding that island.

"Snow Dragon Island." Shi Yan's face was emotional. He suddenly remembered a girl letting loose her bottom-length hair. That year, after he had escaped from the ice of the Ice Cold Flame, on the way to the Kyara Sea, he used to sit on a small boat of the Three Gods Sect where he had met a girl.

Her family was in this Snow Dragon Island.

Chapter 275: Spirit Gear inside the Flying Shuttle

On the reef, Shi Yan was quietly listening to Cao Zhi Lan's explanations. "The Snow Dragon Island is just an island of the Hengluo Sea. There are plenty of reefs around this island. In the legend, those reefs seem to be an ancient formation of Nature. The Cao family had a formation master who used to go there. He looked down at the reefs underneath from the sky and said that those reefs are somehow like an ancient Portal Formation.

"However, this is just a speculation. Although he had been studied it for a long time, he couldn't find out any clue. But in the legend, hundreds of years ago, some boats of warriors sailed across this reef area and went missing incomprehensively, totally disappeared later on. Reefs around that island keep some mysterious secrets indeed."

Cao Zhi Lan said gently, explaining Shi Yan the situation of the Snow Dragon Island's surrounding area. She seemed to be very familiar with the Endless Sea's secrets. Even a bizarre area of that small island could not escape from her dharma eyes.

After listening, Shi Yan slightly nodded but did not have any further thought.

It was obvious that the speculation of the Cao family's formation master was correct. This area did have an ancient formation; otherwise, they wouldn't have been able to come here directly from the abandoned land in the Chasm Battlefield.

"I know."

Shi Yan thought for a while and nodded to Yu Rou. Yu Rou revealed a faint smile, grabbed Cao Zhi Lan and brought her away.

Not long after that, Yu Rou stood next to Shi Yan again. "Master, are we heading to the Snow Dragon Island?"

“Yeah.” Shi Yan nodded and then talked to Yu Rou and Di Shan with a light smile, “Your Clans will bring the Demonic Sound Clan’s Pagans who cannot fly. We’ll go to the Snow Dragon Island to find a place to rest. Wait until I understand more the situation of the Endless Sea, then I’ll consider what to do next.”

“Yes.” Di Shan and Yu Rou spoke up at the same time. After that, they started discussing with Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba.

Yu Rou quickly walked to Shi Yan, grabbed him and said, “Everything is settled. The destination is clear too. We can go now. Let me bring you with me.”

“Yeah.”

Yu Rou stepped forward with a smile, stretched her flawless white arm grabbing Shi Yan’s arm, extended her wings widely and soared up.

Many of the Wings Race’s pagans were a little involuntary when they were commanded to bring the Demonic Sound Clan’s people along. All the Wings Race’s pagans had wings and the flying ability that they did not need to use any boats. Thousands of Demonic Sound Clan’s and Wings Race’s pagans started to fly towards the Snow Dragon Island.

“How about the Gray Wings Clan?” Shi Yan frowned and said. “Duo Long is dead, Han Long was dead in my hand as well. Maybe many people of the Gray Wings Clan have already known I’ve killed Han Long. Right now, the Gray Wings Clan has no leader. Will something bad happen?”

Yu Rou slightly laughed and said, “No worry. Although Duo Long is dead, Di Shan and I have found a new leader for the Gray Wings Clan. His name is Duo Mou, Duo Long’s young cousin. He also had the Second Sky of the Sky Realm cultivation base. Duo Long and Duo Mou always had conflicts. In the Gray Wings Clan, Duo Long always tyrannized Duo Mou. As Duo Long is dead now, plus, Di Shan and I have made some arrangements, Duo Lou has easily

become the patriarch of the Gray Wings Clan. Regarding matters about you, we will find the right time to tell him. There will be no problem.”

“Thank you.” Shi Yan slightly smiled. “I know without your great help, Di Shan would not be that obedient, and other three people would not sincerely yield. Without you, when we were on the mountain, I could have been killed by Yi Tian Mo’s group.”

“Hahaha.” The matriarch of the White Wings Clan gently laughed. “Helping you is helping our two tribes, for the future of two tribes. Reality has proven that my speculation is right. If it was not because of you, our two tribes definitely couldn’t have got out of that abandoned land alive nor seen this gorgeous starry sky.”

You Rou raised her head looking up at the starry sky. Her beautiful face was full of desires, “This starry sky only appeared in our dreams before. I’ve thought that I would have never seen this for my whole life ...”

“Why did you put your great efforts to help me?” Shi Yan stretched his hand, quietly held Yu Rou’s white, soft hand and gently rubbed a circle on it. He slightly lifted a corner of his mouth and said to her with a smile, “Did you fall in love with me?”

Yu Rou’s beautiful face reddened, her watery eyes glanced at Shi Yan. She mildly smiled and said, “You didn’t even do anything with those women yet. So, now you are trying to do something with me?”

Shi Yan got amazed, immediately forced a smile and said, “As chance hasn’t come yet, so I keep them for now. I will not take them if it’s not the right time. Wait until a suitable time; I will swallow all of them at the same time. But you are different ...”

Yu Rou burst out laughing; she then said gently, “Although I’ve made you my Master, you are still not truly strong enough. So, I hardly contented myself with yielding. Want me to submit to you completely, hahaha; you are still far away ...”

“I am trying.”

Shi Yan's mood was very good. He felt cheerful and comfortable talking to this beautiful and delicate woman.

In the early morning.

Thousands of pagans quietly landed inside a forest in the south of the Snow Dragon Island where human footprints were hardly seen. Before arriving, Yi Tian Mo had released his soul consciousness to explore around. He realized that there was no humankind in this place except for some low-class beasts.

After having arrived, these pagans did not hurry to leave. Instead, they were waiting for their leaders' instructions.

In a place deep inside the forest, under an ancient ten-meter-high tree, Shi Yan took the Sky-breaking Shuttle out of the Blood Vein Ring, fondled it and quietly sent his investigating forces into it.

Profound Qi rolled in massively, but it was like stones sank into the bottom of the sea as there was not a single reaction arising. The Shuttle didn't have any transformation.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck before continuing to release his soul consciousness to check again. This time, his soul consciousness rushing into the Shuttle was like it was being trapped in a swamp. There was still no information or anything abnormal.

In the legend, the Sky-breaking Shuttle had the power that could break all kinds of Formation Techniques. However, if it was impossible to find out how to use it, it was not more than a useless object.

As the Profound Qi and his soul consciousness didn't work, Shi Yan was helpless. He called the five leaders, gave the shuttle to Di Shan and said, “You come and take a look to see if there is anything special.”

Di Shan frowned and took the Sky-breaking Shuttle. He also released his sensing forces for a while before shaking his head and

said, “Our Wings Race doesn’t have an innate ability with spirit treasures. I haven’t seen anything special nor known how to use it.”

After saying, Di Shan threw Yi Tian Mo the shuttle. “You take a look. I’ve heard you’ve studied some stuff related to this. Perhaps you can find out something.”

Yi Tian Mo caught the Sky-breaking Shuttle, gradually closed his eyes, and slowly sent his powerful soul into the shuttle.

Yi Tian Mo’s expression was getting more and more serious. He seemed to find out something. He poured more of his soul power into it.

Shi Yan’s eyes brightened with hope.

After a while, Yi Tian Mo slowly retrieved his soul power, slightly let out a deep breath and said to Shi Yan, “Master, it carries Spirit Gear. It hides very deep inside and doesn’t want to communicate with me. Even though I can preclude the Spirit Gear, once the Spirit Gear is destroyed, this spirit treasure will immediately become useless.”

Shi Yan was surprised, took back the Sky-breaking Shuttle with a forced smile, and murmured. “That’s not good. I don’t know how to use it. Not good ...”

“Master.” Di Shan suddenly shouted with a light tone; his eyes lit up a little bit as if he just remembered something.

“What?” Shi Yan raised his head.

“Immortal Blood of the Immortal God King’s descendants should have special influences with some objects. The owner of this treasure was dead, so it has become ownerless. If you drop your blood on it, perhaps you can find out something. Anyway, your blood is far different from that of an ordinary human.” Di Shan said with a low voice.

Shi Yan was stunned, but then his eyes gradually brightened up.

He had heard about this from the Ice Cold Flame. Immortal Blood had some peculiar effectiveness, and restoring treasures was one of them. Although he couldn't refine his blood and turn it into the Immortal Blood, his blood was still quite special. Perhaps he could make this Sky-breaking shuttle transformed.

"I'll try it."

Shi Yan contemplated a little bit and then laughed grimly. He bit his fingertips until it bled. Each drop of his blood dripped on the Sky-breaking Shuttle.

Unexpectedly, each drop of his fresh blood dripping down on the Sky-breaking Shuttle was completely absorbed like they were falling on a sponge.

After having absorbed all of Shi Yan's blood, the Shuttle gradually glowed, radiating a faint yellow halo as if it was reviving little by little.

Shi Yan's face was shaken. He bit his fingertips again before the wounds on them could heal. More and more drops of blood dripped down.

While the Sky-breaking Shuttle greedily absorbed Shi Yan's blood, it was getting more luminous. After ten drops of blood had disappeared inside it, Shi Yan retracted his arm and looked at the wounds on his fingers which were healing gradually. After that, he stretched his hand out again, touched the Sky-breaking Shuttle, and poured the profound Qi into it.

The Sky-breaking Shuttle suddenly burst out a dazzling yellow light. Inside of this blinding light emitted a flow of powerful forces that twisted the space around.

Shi Yan hastily retrieved profound Qi in fear and surprise. He took a deep breath and sent his soul consciousness into the shuttle.

"Your cultivation base is too low, so you can't use me now. Wait until you reach the Nirvana Realm, you then can come and talk to

me.” A flow of feeble consciousness came out from the Sky-breaking Shuttle all of a sudden. “My soul is also feeble. It needs time to recover. I have to sleep now. When you reach the Nirvana Realm, come and wake me up. Goodbye.”

The communication ended.

Shi Yan was amazed. His soul consciousness flew a few more rounds but couldn't get anything else.

After a long while, he could do nothing but retrieve his soul consciousness. He beamed a forced smile, shook his head and said, “Such a weird Spirit Gear ...”

“What happened?” Yu Rou asked gently.

“The Spirit Gear said that my cultivation base is too low, and that don't wake it up unless I reach the Nirvana Realm.”

“Ah, this proves one thing. At least this Spirit Gear has accepted your status. When you reach the Nirvana Realm and have stronger forces, you will be able to use this peculiar treasure. It is very normal. It's obvious that inadequate cultivation base could not use anomalous treasures.” Yu Rou said with a smile.

“Nirvana Realm ...” Shi Yan mumbled to himself with a low tone, “Not too far to reach anyway. Now, just leave it aside.”

Chapter 276: The Kele Clan

When the sun just rose up, Yi Tian Mo brought Shi Yan along and quickly flew towards the center of the Snow Dragon Island.

The winds slatted while they were flying. Yi Tian Mo released his soul consciousness covering the entire Snow Dragon Island. He glaringly knew how many top-class warriors were there on the island, where the people gathered, which family had more warriors, etc.

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness was still always working. The Five Devils in the Sea of Consciousness were well-prepared. The host soul was also very cautious.

Shi Yan's spirit was immersed in the Blood Vein Ring. He had communicated with the Ten Thousand Earth Flame earlier. Once any unusual things happened, it would immediately release the Heaven Flame's forces.

He was taking precautions with Yi Tian Mo.

Although Yi Tian Mo had sworn his allegiance, Shi Yan was still not very sure if he was truly sincere or had other wicked intentions.

To further enter the Snow Dragon Island, either Di Shan or Yu Rou was not a suitable choice because they both had wings on their backs, which apparently exposed the features of their pagan tribe. Thus, their appearances would lead to some unnecessary troubles.

He didn't know how long he had left the Endless Sea or how the current situation was. Unless he thoroughly knew the situation here, he would not dare to act recklessly.

The target of this trip was Lin Da's family. He wanted to learn the current situation of the Endless Sea through Lin Da; he wanted to ask her if the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers were invading every corner right now.

As he could not bring anyone of the Wings Race, and because he also wanted to go fast, he could only choose one of the Demonic Sound Clan's people.

He knew that choosing Yi Tian Mo was a little risky. But with his long-time study of the spiritual Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan, Shi Yan could more or less rely on it. Plus, he was sure that Yi Tian Mo could not harm him in just that short of a moment.

Unless Yi Tian Mo could instantly killed him, the Heaven Flame inside of his body would be able to resist.

As always being at his best defense as well as sensing the changes in the sea of consciousness, Shi Yan was a little tense.

Suddenly, Yi Tian Mo stopped in the middle of the mountains and forests.

Shi Yan was amazed. He was careful and quietly sensed every single tiny move on Yi Tian Mo's body. All of Shi Yan's attentions were now focusing on him.

"Master, there is a group of very low-level warriors. The strongest one is only in the Earth Realm, not enough to threaten us." Yi Tian Mo's face was indifferent; his white-gray pupil looked at Shi Yan for a while. He then suddenly said, "Master, are you keeping an eye on me?"

Shi Yan was a little embarrassed but still nodded his head frankly, "I don't know whether you will take action or not. Your soul achievement is very powerful. If you want to kill me, it's not easy to prevent it. Therefore, I always have to be cautious and carefully be on the defense."

Yi Tian Mo was startled, but he could not say anything at this moment.

"I'm sorry. It's not that I don't believe you, but the gap between you and me is too big. And right now, I am going alone with you. I don't know if you have any other intentions, so, I can be only

cautious.” Shi Yan explained with a forced smile.

“I understand.” Yi Tian Mo nodded. “If I were you, Master, I wouldn’t have stayed alone with this dangerous person like me. As you have dared to venture alone with me, I’ve already been very surprised. I know Di Shan and Yu Rou are also very worried. They had actually warned me before we left. If anything happens to their Master, my subordinators will have to suffer from their bloody murderous revenge.”

Shi Yan was bewildered, “I didn’t know about this.”

As soon as Yi Tian Mo had told him about that fact, he somehow had a grateful feeling towards Di Shan and Yu Rou. They seemed to have good intentions indeed, and thus they should not be a problem anymore. With Di Shan and Yu Rou at the backend to dominate the Demonic Sound Clan, even if Yi Tian Mo had any wicked plans, he would not dare to do it.

“Master, you don’t need to be worried.” Yi Tian Mo spoke up. “Previously, you used to say that you didn’t have any wicked intentions towards our two tribes. At that time, I was very carefully considering, and in fact, I’ve had a thought of leaving you. However, I still have decided to stay as Di Shan and Yu Rou did. Do you know why?”

Shi Yan shook his head, “I don’t know.”

“Exactly as what Di Shan and Yu Rou have said, you have big potentials.” Yi Tian Mo’s eyes brightened up gradually. “Master, although you are still young, your perception is very high, your cultivation base is profound, and there are still some secrets hidden inside your body. Furthermore, you are the descendant who was mentioned in our ancestors’ guidance. With all these things combined, I know that you, Master, are the hope of our two tribes. Although you are still weak now, I firmly believe in your future.”

Shi Yan was astonished.

“Therefore, I honestly hope that you would soon develop and get stronger.” Yi Tian Mo said seriously.

Shi Yan was silent, contemplated for a while before slowly nodding his head and said, “Understood.”

Yi Tian Mo’s face loosened. He pointed forward and said, “There is a group of warriors over there. You should have something to ask them. Let’s go over there?!”

“Ok.”

This time, Yi Tian Mo didn’t bring Shi Yan along with him; instead, they walked over to that place shoulder by shoulder. Not long after that, they saw a group of about ten warriors holding weapons in their hands and riding the flame horses towards the center of the Snow Dragon Island.

Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo walked out of the thick forest where the third or the fourth level beasts usually frequented. For those warriors, the things on the beasts were precious. By looking at the way they dressed, Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo guessed that those warriors should be the mercenaries who came to this area to explore.

“Sorry to bother you guys.” Shi Yan suddenly walked out from a tree, stood in front of those people and said with a smile, “May I ask which direction leads to the Kele Clan?”

LinDa’s family was the Keles. When Shi Yan had parted from her, she had asked him to remember it carefully.

Shi Yan’s appearance frightened those people so much that they all jumped up in shock. The expression of around ten warriors dramatically changed. They stopped their flame horses and unwillingly looked at Shi Yan. A skinny elderly man among them coldly harrumphed and said, “Little rascal, where are you from? In the Snow Dragon Island, just a few people don’t know of the Kele Clan. You should be an outsider for sure.”

Shi Yan nodded with a smile while glancing at that elderly man. He realized that the old man was a warrior ranked the First Sky of the Earth Realm, who also was the strongest one among them.

“That’s right. I am from the other island. I want to find the Kele Clan. Would you mind showing me?”

“I can’t just merely tell you about it.” The old man coldly laughed and arrogantly said, “Do you have something to exchange for the information?”

“Not a problem.” Shi Yan threw him a crystal chunk. The crystal chunk turned to be a current of light flying towards that old man. His countenance was still frosty at first. However, as soon as he caught the crystal chunk, he looked at it carefully before getting insanely joyful and shouting out loud, “High-grade star crystal!”

“Now, can you tell me where the Kele Clan is?” Shi Yan knew the high-grade crystal was very precious with these kinds of warriors. He smilingly said, “I am in a hurry. Can you please tell me quickly?”

“Elder Tie, is it a star crystal for real?” A handsome youth on a flame horse asked with excitement.

The old man, who was called Elder Tie, constantly nodded while touching the crystal chunk excitedly. Although he was extremely happy with this crystal, his greed was getting bigger. After having a light dry cough, he said, “One crystal chunk is not enough. Little rascal, give me another three more.”

After hearing Elder Tie’s words, the other warriors immediately got what he meant. They instantly surrounded Shi Yan, laughing greedily.

Shi Yan frowned, his eyes became frigid. He suddenly took action without waiting for them to speak any further.

His figure quickly dashed towards that old man like lightning. Shi Yan’s arm was like a sharp sword lunging straight to the

greedy old man's belly.

“Plorkk.”

A bloody fist-sized hole appeared in the middle of the old man's belly. Shi Yan's body slightly moved, suddenly spread out and slaughtered the other surrounding warriors.

One minute later.

Ten warriors were crumpled in blood. Shi Yan then absorbed all of their Qi. He had also known the exact Kele Clan's location from a warrior before he had died.

Yi Tian Mo hadn't taken action. He just stood aside observing quietly. He witnessed the scene where Shi Yan had slaughtered satisfactorily, killing ten strange warriors, leaving no one alive.

For bystanders, Shi Yan's deed was very cruel. However, Yi Tian Mo was quietly contented with it. His eyes were full of compliments for Shi Yan while he realized Di Shan's and Yu Rou's words were very true.

When Shi Yan had been in the abandoned land, he had always been sincere and obedient. Although he had shown his innate abilities, he had never exposed his other outstanding aspects.

Yi Tian Mo was always worried that Shi Yan only had the innate abilities but lacked other necessarily suitable personalities. However, currently, as he had witnessed Shi Yan's cruel action, he finally felt more assured.

Until this moment, he heartfully accepted Shi Yan as his young Master with low cultivation base.

Completely wiping the blood stains away on his arm, Shi Yan walked to the side of Yi Tian Mo with a cold face and said, “Let's go. If there is no one around, we should leave hurriedly.”

“Yes.” Yi Tian Mi replied. There seemed to have more honest respect in his voice. He brought Shi Yan along and flew up.

Many villages and cities situated at the foot of the imposing Snow Mountain Chain. Plenty of warriors, who had cultivated the martial arts, frequented this area very often.

The Snow Dragon Mountain was the essential area of the Snow Dragon Island. As there were many special medical herbs and hovering spirit aura on the mountain, this was a perfect place for the warriors to cultivate.

Therefore, the warriors on the Snow Dragon Mountain Chain all gathered at the foot of the mountain.

Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo had crossed some villages and cities, advancing towards the beautiful architectural complex situated at the foot of the Snow Dragon Mountain.

The Kele Clan, one of the three clans on the Snow Dragon Island, habited at the foot of the mountain all year-round. They were the faithful believers of the Three Gods Sect and were also considered the Three Gods Sect's external forces.

Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo arrived at the gate of the Kele Clan. Shi Yan revealed a smile and said that he came to see LinDa.

As soon as Shi Yan said he wanted to see their lady, the two guards scanned him from top to toe as if they wanted to see through him. After a while, one of them spoke up casually, "Little rascal, who are you? Our Lady is busy with a lot of matters. Don't say something of nonsense if you don't want to lose your face."

"You, please go and tell your Lady that my name is Shi Yan."

"Come back tomorrow. Right now, our lady might be in the main Hall discussing important issues with the other two clansmen. She surely doesn't have time to talk to you today." That guard knitted his eyebrows and replied to Shi Yan. "You come here tomorrow morning. I will report to her. Now is impossible."

Yi Tian Mo frowned, asking for Shi Yan's opinion with a low voice, "Do we have to ...?"

Shi Yan nodded.

The two guards suddenly were bewildered; their eyes became bleary. They stood motionlessly on the spot.

Shi Yan went straight inside.

Chapter 277: Who are you after all?

Shi Yan walked ahead while Yi Tian Mo was right behind him. This big Kele Clan didn't have just a few guards. However, these cautious warriors in the Snow Dragon Island seemed to be blind; no one had seen Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo walking all the way in towards the main hall.

The advantage of the soul capacity of the Demonic Sound Clan had been fully launched.

Yi Tian Mo followed Shi Yan without saying a word. Even Shi Yan hadn't realized what he had done, but all the warriors had dazed faces like they were complete idiots.

Yi Tian Mo honestly considered Shi Yan to be his Master. Once he had determinedly decided to put in all of his efforts towards helping Shi Yan, the demonstration of his abilities had amazingly surprised Shi Yan.

"Master, you don't need to be worried. My soul consciousness can cover the entire Snow Dragon Island. If I trigger my consciousness, lives and deaths of all the warriors on this island will be in your words no matter how far the distance is." As Yi Tian Mo seemed to realize Shi Yan's doubts, he gently explained Shi Yan what he was capable of doing in assisting Shi Yan while still following him.

Shi Yan was frightened.

"That abandoned land was created so that it could restrain us there. There has always existed an invisible force. Therefore, regardless of either me, Ka Ba, Ya Meng, Di Shan or Yu Rou, none of us could use our real powers because they were limited in that abandoned land.

However, when we arrived here, no such forces can restrain us any further. This feeling is incredibly wonderful. I have just somehow seen that our forces are increasing and it's just not by a

little." Yi Tian Mo didn't look like he was kidding. He said with a serious face. "After having arrived here, we have now become real warriors with our true abilities. Our previous forces should have been repressed one Realm lower than now."

With a slightly changed countenance, Shi Yan tried to restrain his feelings of being in a daze and said with a low voice, "You said, in that abandoned land, your God Realm could only launch forces which were equivalent to those of the Sky Realm warriors? "

Yi Tian Mo nodded quietly.

Shi Yan's eyes flared up a strange light. He nodded, forced a smile and said after a while, "Not having become your enemy is a good thing indeed. It has also been wondering from before. It didn't seem, back in the abyss, that you were as strong as the God Realm warriors that were told in legends, and thus I wasn't terrified of you. Even when we've just arrived here, facing the real God Realm warriors, I still haven't felt intimidated. I didn't know I was to be so wrong."

Yi Tian Mo revealed a faint smile, "Master, you don't need to bother. We could vaguely feel the repressive forces, but we were not sure about it. However, after having gotten out of the sea, we've gradually realized that everything is transforming. All of our forces have been quietly enhancing. Since then, we were more confident about the reasons for changes."

They were both talking and walking towards the main hall of the Kele Clan.

At the main hall's door, dozens of muscular warriors, who were initially extremely cautious, immediately became bewildered with dull eyes as if their souls had been tightly controlled without moving.

An enormous argument was happening in the main hall. Some solemn words kept deafeningly pouring out.

Yi Tian Mo knitted his eyebrows and then respectfully said, "The highest realm warriors in there were only at the Nirvana Realm. Nothing to be worried about. If you feel annoyed, I can shut them up."

Shi Yan shook his head while smiling, "No need. We are not clear about the situation here yet. No need to be rash. Ah, they can be considered the subordinated forces of the Three Gods Sect. The Three Gods Sect ... they have never been against me; I also have deep relations with this force. We should not act recklessly."

"Understood."

Shriek

The closed stone door gradually opened. Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo walked inside slowly and cautiously.

More than ten warriors were sitting straight on the spot with gloomy faces. They didn't seem to be having a good discussion with each other. LinDa was standing behind a chubby Nirvana Realm warrior, gently bowing her head. Her eyes were full of indignation; her delicate body slightly trembled, her waist-length hair was tied up.

As soon as Shi Yan entered the hall, his eyes swept around the hall and stopped at the girl whom he hadn't seen for a long time. A strange feeling suddenly seethed within his heart.

Although they were dramatically noisily disputing with one another, they all heard the noise of the opened stone door.

In a short moment, everyone in the hall raked their eyes towards Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo. They all looked unwilling and annoyed with their knitted eyebrows.

"Ah!" LinDa surprisingly covered her mouth. She unbelievably looked at Shi Yan with full of unrestrained happiness. After just a little hesitation, she suddenly dashed forward and joyfully said, "Ge, why are you here?"

Shi Yan beamed a smile, "You've said that I should visit you here whenever I had the free time to do so. Hahaha, en passant, I have stopped by to see you. So? You are not welcoming me?"

LinDa curled her lips, her charming body slightly shivered, her eyes lit up a strange light. She was indescribably overjoyed.

"Yi En, who is he?" An elder who was around fifty-years-old with gray-haired temples and wearing a black, purple tunic, annoyed shouted. He then glared at the chubby Nirvana Realm warrior and said, "Your Kele Clan is not steady indeed. While we are having a discussion, how come such a strange little rascal can freely barge in like this?"

Yi En was the patriarch of the Kele Clan, who was also LinDa's father. After hearing those annoying words, his face slightly changed, looking at Shi Yan strangely and asked LinDa, "LinDa, who is he? Your friend? Why does he suddenly break in here?"

"Yes, he is my friend." Linda was a little panicked, hastily turned around and explained to other warriors, "This is my friend whom I haven't seen for a long time. I am very sorry, Uncle. I will take him away now."

Right after saying that, Linda instantly winked at Shi Yan, implicating that he should quickly leave with her.

"Wait." The warrior, who had just said some annoying words, waved his hand to stop them with a somber face. He irritatingly looked at Shi Yan and asked, "Little rascal, did you hear what we discussed just a minute before? Moreover, who are you? Why are you here?"

After having asked Shi Yan, he moved his eyes looking at Yi En, harrumphed coldly and arrogantly said, "Even when we are discussing, your Kele people still let someone unknown storm in. We are doubtful whether your Kele Clan is capable of doing something good after all?! Yi En, don't you think you owe us an explanation?"

Yi En's face was altered. He stared at LinDa with a blameful look and asked, "LinDa, who is he? Why does he appear in front of our clan? What did you bring him here for? Why haven't I seen him before?"

LinDa couldn't utter even a single word.

"This is one of the most sensitive times that our council is going through and yet, a little rascal from nowhere barged in. Hmm, he probably doesn't have good intentions. We should arrest him and further investigate!" The gray-temple man shouted coldly.

LinDa was too frightened. She hurriedly explained, "This is my friend. He might have acted recklessly, but I am sure he doesn't have any wicked intentions. Uncle Wu Ke, please don't be too strict with him. I assure you that he will not make this mistake again. I beg of you, Uncle!"

"Hmm!" Wu Ke's face displayed great discomfort. He just looked at Yi En and said, "You know what to do?"

Yi En reluctantly beamed a smile and said after a while, "We should now clarify the situation first, then decide what to do."

After saying it, Yi En raised his voice calling the guards.

Not long after, a guard of the Kele Clan hastily rushed in from outside the main hall and respectfully said, "Master, you have something to instruct us?"

"How could they come in? Why did you allow the two of them to have entered here?" Yi En asked, pointing to Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo.

That guard was dumbstruck. He strangely looked at Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo, shook his head and then said with uncertainty, "We didn't let anyone in. Wouldn't it seem that they have been inside here before?"

Some of the high-class men's faces frighteningly changed. They all stood up gloomily looking at Shi Yan.

"Who are you after all?" Wu Ke suddenly shouted out loud. He then arrogantly commanded, "Arrest him!"

LinDa's beautiful face altered dramatically. She was worried and seemingly wanted to say something.

Many guards from outside the hall stormed in and besieged Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo. They all looked at Yi En, waiting for his command.

"LinDa, don't get involved in this." Yi En shook his head helplessly and then ordered, "Arrest him first, we will question him later!"

"Master ..." Yi Tian Mo was standing behind Shi Yan, quietly asking for his order.

Shi Yan nodded indifferently.

A bunch of guards, who was moving towards Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo, seemed to have been struck by something. They all stopped in the middle of their steps with their dreary eyes.

All of the high-class men inside the hall were in shock, unbelievably looking at Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo. They now, simply, didn't know what to say.

Wu Ke reacted first. He shouted and suddenly twisted his body like a snake while his bones made weird sounds 'crack crack'. He then rapidly crept towards Shi Yan.

Yi Tian Mo's eyes were startled. His gray-white pupils glinted with strange lights. A flow of surging soul, which only Wu Ke could feel, instantly dispersed outwards.

Wu Ke suddenly held his head and couldn't help but scream out loud. His nose bled while his body still produced the sound 'crack crack.' Now, it felt as if he was being nailed to the ground and was incapable of moving anymore.

Yi En and the other men in the hall simultaneously stood up as

they also felt a dreadfully vibrating power covering the entire hall. Their sea of consciousness had changed relentlessly, and their bodies' forces had also started to be restless.

Soul oppression!

Only warriors with the realm of at least one level higher as well as the outstanding soul capacity, who didn't need to use any of their profound Qi, could exhaust their inferior opponents' power just by relying on their powerful souls.

Yi Tian Mo was obviously from these kinds of people. Using the Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan to make the Nirvana Realm warriors obedient was like using the knife that was used to kill a buffalo to butcher a chicken.

If it wasn't because Shi Yan didn't want to slaughter everyone rashly, Yi Tian Mo could have harmed everyone in the hall with his Insanity Soul Skill.

Yi Tian Mo's body might not be as strong as the true God Realm warriors, but his soul capacity was absolutely not inferior to that of any top-class God Realm warriors of the Endless Sea.

All the warriors in the hall stood up. Their countenance tragically changed after having felt the horrendous powers of that Realm. They then did not dare to act recklessly and looked at Shi Yan in fear.

"LinDa, who is he after all?" Yi En had started to feel terrified.

"I, I don't know either ..." LinDa hesitated a little bit before raising her head looking at Shi Yan, and honestly asked, "Shi Yan, who are you after all?"

Chapter 278: The big picture

The Snow Dragon Island, the Kele Clan.

In the main hall, roughly about ten leaders of the Snow Dragon Island were sincerely obedient. No one dared to do anything reckless under Yi Tian Mo's scrutinized, gloomy gaze. They were afraid that if they irritated Yi Tian Mo, something bad would happen.

After Yi En and Wu Ke had felt Yi Tian Mo's terrifying soul power, they both looked at LinDa, using their facial demeanors to ask if she knew Shi Yan's real identity. Either Yi En or Wu Ken, they were both very experienced, and thus they could realize that Yi Tian Mo always followed Shi Yan's orders. That fact frightened them a lot. They instinctively guessed that Shi Yan's identity wasn't just an ordinary one.

Even though LinDa and Shi Yan had earlier known each other for a period, she didn't know about Shi Yan's origin. At this moment, as she saw how the powerful Yi Tian Mo unhesitatingly followed Shi Yan's every command and moves, she then knew that Shi Yan was not just an ordinary person. She couldn't help but ask him.

Shi Yan was standing in the middle of the hall. Waiting until Yi Tian Mo got total control of the situation, he then gently spoke to LinDa with a smile, "Just consider me as a member of the Yang family."

"The Yang family!" Everyone's faces changed dramatically.

LinDa's pupils shrank. She nodded sadly. "I should have known it before. Since after we've parted, I should have figured it out when I saw you and the Asura King Muo DuanHun leave while riding the Blue Blood Devilish Bat. I just was not very sure about it. Now, it is certain."

After Shi Yan had spoken of his origin, both Yi En and Wu Ke

looked very worried with strange countenances.

The Yang family of the Endless Sea were famous for their defiant demeanors. The Kyara Sea and the Henglue Sea were not far from each other. Previously, the Three Gods Sect and the Yang family had often fought with each other. They were archenemies. The Snow Dragon Island was the outer force of the Three God's Sect. The clans on this island would not be unfamiliar with the Yangs; they surely knew how great the Yang family's forces were.

"You, what do you come to Snow Dragon Island for?" Yi En sat on a chair, pretended to be calm, lifted a cup of water, took a sip and then worriedly said, "Two years ago, many forces came to occupy the Kyara Sea and fought with the Yang family. However, the Three Gods Sect didn't want to involve in those matters. Even if you wanted to take revenge, you still shouldn't find us."

Right after Yi En had finished his words, other people in the hall crazily responded and hastily pled for themselves. They said that both the Three God Sect and the Yang family didn't have any conflicts recently, or that they were only the Three Gods Sect's outer force, that they didn't know of the situation between the two Sect's.

After all, they just wanted to prove their innocence and hoped that Shi Yan would just give them a slap on the wrist.

"Shi Yan ge [chinese way to call an older brother], you have now arrived at the Snow Dragan Island, does it possibly mean that you probably want to ...?" LinDa tightly clenched her fists, gritted her teeth and angrily looked at Shi Yan.

"If you want to deal with us, I will bear hatreds towards you for my entire life."

Shi Yan then burst into laughter. He shook his head and said with an eccentric complexion, "What are you thinking? As I was on my way, en passant, I just then decided to stop by to visit you without other intentions and then will simply be on my way. Any

other worries that you might have should all be unfounded."

The other people in the hall all released a sigh of relief.

"Not to mention that the Three Gods Sect didn't have any past conflicts with the Yang family. Even if the Sect did so, as having regards for you, I would not fight with the Kele Clan."

To prevent LinDa from thinking too much, Shi Yan continued with a smile, "I come here to ... to visit you, to see if you are doing well."

LinDa's face was full of emotions. She seemed to be touched.

Yi En surprisingly looked at Shi Yan and then quietly raked his eyes towards LinDa. He seemed to see something strange here. His eyes then gradually brightened up.

Actually, during this time, the Kele Clan were encountering some difficult unsolved problems that had recently been plaguing them. Yi En was feeling utterly miserable and full of anxiety as he couldn't find any solutions yet. Right now, he just suddenly found out that his daughter seemed to have a good relationship with Shi Yan, and thus, he couldn't help but have a thought that...

Yi En contemplated consciously for a while and suddenly burst into laughter. His chubby body then shambled out of his chair, lifted a glass of wine in his hand and said with a pink face, "Shi Yan, my boy, if you don't have any further bothers, please take a seat and have a glass of wine. How does this sound?"

Shi Yan was bewildered. He wanted to refuse him, but Shi Yan just saw LinDa's expecting eyes looking towards him as though she was begging him to accept the invitation.

After being a little startled, Shi Yan slightly nodded to Yi En with a faint smile, "Alright!"

"Sit down, sit down please." Yi En hurriedly moved forward to welcome Shi Yan. He personally arranged Shi Yan's seat by himself. His behavior was so servile that it looked as if he was

flattering Shi Yan.

As LinDa saw her father's eager and servile behavior, she instinctively knew what was in his mind. She originally wanted to remind him of not doing it; but as she thought about the complicated problems that they were facing today, she quietly let out a sigh and cast away that intention. She just felt a little embarrassing, looking at Shi Yan as if she wanted to say that he shouldn't blame her for that. Shi Yan lightly nodded to her as well, implicating that he didn't mind. After sitting down together with Yi Tian Mo, Shi Yan picked a Green Snake Fruit and didn't say anything. He then took a homely bite, chewing and mumbled to himself, "It doesn't taste bad."

"Hahaha." Yi En kept laughing aimlessly and didn't hurry to talk. He waved at LinDa, signaling her to sit down next to Shi Yan. He waited until LinDa had sat down on Shi Yan's left side and then pretended to ask unintentionally, "I don't know where you are from? The thing is, the Kyara Sea's situation is now very complicated. Do you know what's going on?"

This was what Shi Yan was concerned about the most.

Shi Yan shook his head while his face became serious. He said, "To be honest, I am not from the Kyara Sea. I left there for a while and have just come back now. Can I ask how the situation over there is?"

As Yi En had soon known that Shi Yan was not from the Kyara Sea, he didn't feel strange after hearing of it. He just whined with a miserable voice, "The Kyara Sea has fallen ..."

Shi Yan's eyes were slightly half closed.

"Two years ago, not long after the Yang family had disappeared, the Demon Dwellers of the Fourth Demon Area came to the Kyara Sea. In just one year, they already occupied the entire Kyara Sea. As of now, the Kyara Sea belongs to the Demon Dwellers of the Fourth Demon Area."

Yi En shook his head with a miserable gesture as if the Demon Dwellers had devastated, dominated, and obliterated his entire family.

"I've known that this would happen." Shi Yan said with a cold smile. "At first, forces from everywhere in the Endless Sea had united. After knowing that the two Demon Kings were confining the head of the Yang family, they have allied with the Demon Dwellers to deal with the Yang family, which left them no other choice but to retreat to other places. As a result, the Gate of Heaven that was linked to the Fourth Demon Area had no defensive forces. Moreover, they even had a ridiculous thought which was the free trade with the Demon Dwellers. Right now, the Demons Dwellers are invading on a bigger scale. They will then swallow the entire Endless Sea piece by piece. Those people have reaped as they had sowed. That serves them right."

Yi En's hands were trembling with shame. He then embarrassingly wiped his sweat away, forced a smile and said, "Our Hengluo Sea is just next to the Kyara Sea. The Snow Dragon Island is not very far from the Kyara Sea either. Recently, I've heard that the Demon Dwellers of the Fourth Demon Area is considering to attack the Hengluo Sea. This is ..."

Shi Yan glanced at him, feeling a bit weird. "As you belong to the Three Gods Sect so that the Three Gods Sect will have the solutions itself. Perhaps the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land have started to negotiate with the Three Gods Sect? Anyway, they haven't attacked here yet. Why do you need to be in such a rush?"

"It's just that they haven't attacked yet. But once they are here, it will be already too late." Wu Ke forced a smile, shaking his head. He wasn't arrogant anymore.

LinDa sat next to Shi Yan, bowed her head without saying anything. She just quietly listened while her hands were tightly clenched. She seemed to feel a little tense.

"Let me tell you the truth, my good boy. I have been informed that in another month, the Demon Dwellers will likely start to intrude into the Hengluo Sea from the Kyara Sea. And in two months max, the Demon Dwellers will come to the Snow Dragon Island." Yi En was contemplating for a while before continuing with a grimaced face, "That means that our Snow Dragon Island only have about two months left ..."

Shi Yan was astonished and said straight away. "So, you should relocate somewhere else soon. Would you want to defend the Snow Dragon Island to death? What did the Three Gods Sect say? You are considered the outer forces of the Three Gods Sect, won't they just abandon you?"

"It's like this ..." Yi En was a little bit ashamed. He softly murmured the crux that they were facing.

After having recently known that the Demon Dwellers at the Kyara Sea had the intentions of invading the Hengluo Sea, Yi En and Wu Ke had immediately asked for the Three Gods Sect's opinion. The Three Gods Sect suggested that the outer forces should temporarily leave their islands and go to the adjacent islands of the Three Gods Sect's headquarter and prepared all of the forces to fight with the Demon Dwellers of the Fourth Demon Area.

Some forces of the other Seas would send their high-class warriors to take guards at the Three Gods Sect, the Gu family, and the Heaven Lake Divine Land. They would then ally with each other to fight against the Demon Dwellers depending on the Demon Dwellers' offensive strategy.

After the Three Gods Sect had given out their command, Yi En and his people then encountered a big problem.

At this point of time, the sea was boisterously rough. The windstorms and tsunamis were the most terrifying in the Hengluo Sea. Boats sailing under these conditions were in extreme danger.

They would be dashed to pieces, and people would die even if they were just a little careless.

Departing from the Snow Dragon Island towards the Three Gods Sect's headquarters, they would have to sail across the sea called the Chaotic Wind Sea where the typhoons and tsunamis were extremely horrendous at this time of the season.

The three big clans on the Snow Dragon Island had limited abilities. They could only use boats to move or travel. Thus, crossing the Chaotic Wind Sea was entirely unavoidable. However, the three big clans only had roughly about ten Nirvana Realm warriors. With that small number of high-class warriors, it wasn't sure that they could protect all the boats in crossing the Chaotic Wind Sea. Therefore, they did not dare to move yet.

From what Yi En had said, it meant that if there were the Sky Realm warriors' help, together with their Nirvana Realm warriors, it would be more certain that their boats would safely cross the Chaotic Wind Sea.

They had informed the Three God's Sect of the situation at hand and received the reply that they should wait for the Sky Realm warriors to come; but if those warriors couldn't come in on time, they then had to take risks in crossing the Chaotic Wind Sea.

The Three Gods Sect had many of the outer forces. There should be at least hundreds of islands similar to this Snow Dragon Island. Therefore, even if the Three Gods Sect willingly sent out their Sky Realm warriors to help, it was not sure that those warriors would lay their eyes on the Snow Dragon Island as their abilities were unfortunately limited.

If they waited for those high-class warriors to come, their departure time would be accordingly delayed, which could lead to the results that they would probably fall into the Demon Dwellers' hands and would obviously face the severe murderous onslaught that was to ensue afterward.

The Three Gods Sect had given a deadline in sending out their warriors. Even though that deadline was coming close, with only a few days left, none of the Sky Realm warriors appeared to give assistance. Therefore, Yi En and the others were impatiently anxious. They immediately started to discuss if they should then take risks in crossing the Chaotic Wind Sea.

On the Snow Dragon Island, besides the three big clans, there were also other small forces of warriors, around hundreds of warriors with different levels, as well as roughly about tens of thousands of ordinary citizens. Without the Sky Realm warriors' protection, no one could tell how many of them would survive after taking risks to cross the Chaotic Wind Sea.

This was the crux that Yi En and the other people on the Snow Dragon Island were facing right now.

After the warriors on this island including Yi En had been repressed by Yi Tian Mo's soul power, they were instantly sure that Yi Tian Mo was definitely a Sky Realm warrior; thus, they had a thought of hope that Yi Tian Mo could help protect them.

However, Shi Yan was from the Yang family. The Yang family and the three Gods Sect had a conflict since long ago. However, these people still had the intentions in asking for Shi Yan's help although they knew that there was not a lot of hope in doing so because the situation now was very urgent and dangerous. Time was of the essence. If they continued waiting, the situation would become more perilous. That was why they finally decided to ask Shi Yan directly.

Shi Yan sat quietly while deliberately drinking tea. His eyes swept over Yi En and his people with a calm face.

After Yi En had told him of the current situation, Shi Yan apparently understood what they wanted. They all displayed a sincere look while waiting for Shi Yan's decision.

Right at this moment, a small hand was suddenly placed on his

thigh, gently fondling his thigh and slowly moving towards his privates...

Shi Yan was shaken, feeling that his winkie was now erected and felt extremely pleasurable. He couldn't help but bow his head and slightly utter a sound. He then turned his head around to glance at LinDa who was sitting next to him.

LinDa bowed her head with her flushed face and didn't dare to look at Shi Yan. But her small hand didn't stop moving either. Instead, it continued stroking his winkie, bringing him a wonderfully mesmerizing sensation.

Yi En, Wu Ke and all the other people in front of him were intensely looking at him with begging faces.

He didn't expect that LinDa dared to stroke his winkie in front of the other people. However, this brought him a great feeling of pleasurable satisfaction.

Under the other's scrutinized eyes, Shi Yan's eyes were half closed as if he was knitting his eyebrows to think. But, in fact, he was quietly enjoying ...

This girl ... was really daring.

A smiling look beamed out from the corner of his mouth, but he still didn't say anything yet. He knew LinDa's intentions but wasn't in a hurry to expose his attitude; instead, he continued to enjoy himself.

"This..." Yi En didn't know of his daughter's deed. He was waiting in silence. However, after a while, as Shi Yan still said nothing, he couldn't be any more patient and was about to ask Shi Yan again.

LinDa's small hand suddenly tightly squeezed Shi Yan's erected winkie.

"Ah!" He felt a little pain and couldn't help but scream out a soft sound, secretly blaming the girl for treating it too hard.

As he knew that LinDa was impatiently anxious, Shi Yan pretended that he was contemplating a little bit, softly dry coughed and then said with a smile, "This is simple. I will find some people to help you solve this problem. Since you want to leave the Snow Dragon Island, I will help you manage it for a while.

Yi En's eyes brightened.

Wu Ke hadn't initially been very amicable with Shi Yan, but right now, he was also very excited, suddenly stood up and smilingly said, "Are you willing to help us?"

"Just a small thing." Shi Yan smiled wickedly, glancing at LinDa on his side, implicating that he had fulfilled her wish.

Gu LinDa's face glowed, let out a sigh but still didn't dare to raise her head. Her hand continued moving, stroking his winkie more devotedly as if she wanted to pay back what he had done for them.

"Ah, the Kyara Sea has been invaded. How about the Evil Wonderland and the Xia Family?" Shi Yan both enjoyed and asked.

"After the Yang family had disappeared, the Xia Family was still being crushed by the Evil Wonderland. When the Yang family had lost, the Xia family also got nothing; many of their islands were also invaded. The head of the Xia family's former generation became mentally ill and never showed up. Thus, the Evil Wonderland became more and more defiant. They even had the intentions to evict the Xia family out of the Kyara Sea."

This time, Wu Ke stood up and smilingly explained to Shi Yan what was happening there. He seemed to understand well of the situation at the Kyara Sea.

The Evil Wonderland had originally wanted to take advantage of the marriage between Xie Kui and Xia Xinyan to tie up the Xia family into their battle. Xia Xinyan still persistently closed the door to cultivate, which was an excuse for the Xia family to delay

the marriage. Eventually, the Evil Wonderland started to be impatient and constantly offended the Xia family.

Before the Demon Dwellers' intrusion, the Xia family's power at the Kyara Sea had already been decreased a lot. They were too far away to be the Evil Wonderland's match.

After the Demon Dwellers had invaded, the Xia family knew that they could hardly resist the Demon Dwellers. As the family's forces had been greatly lost, the Xia's decisively retreated as soon as the Demon Dwellers just arrived.

Before many more of the Demon Dwellers' warriors came, the Xia family had left everything at the Kyara Sea and wisely advanced towards the Hengluo Sea, temporarily stayed in some of the islands in the middle of the Gu family and the Evil Wonderland.

Thanks to the Xia family's discernment, their people could then be able to avoid the great oncoming disaster, limited their losses and conserved the number of warriors. Only the unconcerned outer forces had been left behind at the Kyara Sea.

The Evil Wonderland was different.

After the Yang family's disappearance and Xia family's depression, their forces ferociously expanded. They then became the First Dominator of the Kyara Sea with the number of resourceful islands that was much more than the number of islands that the Yang family had possessed before.

Even though the Demon Dwellers had come, they didn't want to leave behind their assets at the Kyara Sea, which they had been fighting hard to acquire.

So, the battle finally had to happen.

The Evil Wonderland then quickly realized the Demon Dwellers' terrifying strength. It only took about three months for those Demon Dwellers to destroy the Evil Wonderland entirely and slaughter more than half of the Evil Wonderland's warriors.

When the two Demon Masters under Bo Xun went to the Evil Wonderland together, it meant that the Evil Wonderland was done.

Facing the overwhelming forces of the Demon Dwellers, the head of the Evil Wonderland had a decision that made the entire forces of the Endless Sea feel disgraced.

The Evil Wonderland had surrendered.

After that, the Evil Wonderland became one of the Demon Dwellers' forces, turned into their hounds, disclosing all the information and arrangements of the Endless Sea's forces as well as their long-term understanding about all the warriors of the Endless Sea.

Holding the Evil Wonderland in their hands as well as having a thorough understanding of the Endless Sea, the Demon Dwellers at the Kyara Sea then harvested an abundance of resources, which couldn't be found anywhere else; thus, their strengths then increased remarkably fast. Many of the Demon Dwellers then had consequently broken through the realms with booming forces. Their abilities were enhanced with every single passing day.

"The Evil Wonderland is too shameful." Shi Yan's face was serious; cold light beamed out from his eyes. "These disloyal people, as they have betrayed us before, they can certainly betray the entire Endless Sea!"

After knowing the current situation of the Kyara Sea from Wu Ke, Shi Yan somehow felt satisfied.

"Your three clans should start preparing to leave. When you are ready, some of my people will come and help you." After contemplating for a while, Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows looking at Yi En and Wu Ke. "I will keep my words. Remember to bring all of the ordinary residents of the Snow Dragon Island."

"Understood." Yi En and Wu Ke nodded.

"You guys can leave to prepare now." Shi Yan waved his hand with his impatient face.

LinDa had already sat decently again without moving her hand anymore; just her face was still flushed, which looked very charming and mesmerizing.

As Yi En and Wu Ke had gotten Shi Yan's promise, their faces loosened a little. Their attitude towards Shi Yan was very respectful. They all stood up and left the main hall after Shi Yan's promise.

Before Yi En left, he had given a quick glance at LinDa as if he wanted to know more about the relationship between Shi Yan and his daughter.

From LinDa's blushed face, Yi En seemed to figure out something. He didn't scold at her, but instead, he felt secretly cheerful and fully satisfied.

Yi Tian Mo waited until everyone had left the hall then slowly stood up and spoke to Shi Yan with a gentle voice, "I am going out to take a walk. If something happens, you just need to call me."

Shi Yan knew Yi Tian Mo had seen LinDa's secretive deed; thus, he asked to have a walk as an excuse to give him more freedom. Therefore, Shi Yan nodded with a smile. "Ok. Bother you again."

"I should do it." Yi Tian Mo turned around and left, disappearing just in a blink.

Shi Yan had reminded Yi Tian Mo of not calling him Master in front of the other people. Yi Tian Mo also felt that this way of addressing Shi Yan sounded a little intimidating; thus, he followed Shi Yan's instruction.

"That person is a little strange. The aura from his body is a little different from ours." LinDa said after Yi Tian Mo had left the main hall. She asked with her reddened face, "Did he see what I've just previously done?"

"No." Shi Yan burst into laughter, immediately embraced LinDa, placing her on his thigh, and lightly groaned out, "You have provoked me for so long. Now, this is my turn."

"Hihi," "I am not afraid of you." LinDa's mood and body were both excited; her watery eyes were full of lust.

Shi Yan temporarily stayed with the Kele Clan. He waited for the big clans on this Snow Dragon Island to leave and also heard of the Kyara Sea's situation from LinDa. For two and a half years, the most major incident of the Endless Sea was the Demon Dwellers' invasion.

When the Demon Dwellers had intruded into the Kyara Sea for real, all the forces of the Endless Sea just then realized that targeting the Yang family had been such a stupid move.

The cruelty of the Demon Dwellers surpassed their imaginations. After the Kyara Sea had fallen into the Demon Dwellers' hands, each of Kyara Sea's forces felt extremely insecure. They were afraid that the Demon Dwellers would barge into their Sea on any given day.

Because of their fear of the common enemy, they had then quickly started to unite.

Leaders from everywhere had constantly met and discussed with each other to figure out a solution to deal with the Demon Dwellers.

However, conflicts always existed among these forces. Some of them, who were quite far away from the Kyara Sea, had the intentions of letting the other forces act as a buffer in consuming the Demon Dwellers' power. Thus, they didn't put all of their efforts together in defeating this common enemy.

The starting point was good, but once it was implemented, it exposed many conflicts between them.

Even though having been invaded by the Demon Dwellers, these

forces still couldn't change the selfishness of the humankind. They always had a thought that they shouldn't be the vanguards; instead, they should preserve their strengths and forces. They would never shed tears without seeing a coffin. It was said that the leaders of those forces had always argued and quarreled whenever they had met without finalizing any perfect solutions.

And so on, when they weren't ready yet for their attacks, on the contrary, the Demon Dwellers had already taken action.

At the Kele Clan's place.

Shi Yan was sitting straight on top of the highest floor of a delicate three-floor pavilion. He slowly relaxed his mind and spirit with a secured countenance.

He was studying the magic of the soul of the Demonic Sound Clan.

In the last three days, he had stayed with the Kele Clan. Yi Tian Mo was in charge of protecting him. People of the three big clans here had always been busy, collecting their accumulating properties, assigning high-class warriors to different missions, arranging for ordinary people, etc.

After several times of lustful pleasures and having his sexual desires satisfied, Shi Yan and LinDa started to regain their composes.

Having Yi Tian Mo on his side, Shi Yan had chances to ask him about some of the soul's secrets of the Demonic Sound Clan, which he hadn't thoroughly understood before.

Since the incident in the forest when Yi Tian Mo had seen Shi Yan's cruelty, his attitude towards Shi Yan had greatly changed. He seemed to treat Shi Yan more honestly and always devotedly helped him as much as he could regardless of any matters.

Therefore, Shi Yan's perception of the spiritual Upanishads in the Demonic Sound Clan's scriptures had been rapidly improved.

The Sea of Consciousness rippled out many waves of the sea which were like silk fibers and then quietly gathered at the host soul's place. The host soul was being wrapped by more and more of the soul consciousnesses. Shi Yan's feelings were then expanded everywhere.

In the Sea of Consciousness, the five Devils had been recently very quiet. After the host soul entered, and Shi Yan didn't use any of his negative forces, the five Devils seemed to sense the host soul's repressive force, and thus, they didn't dare to have any further reckless actions.

As of now, Shi Yan's soul consciousness constantly kept condensing and gathering at the host soul's place. He vaguely felt that he was able to control the five Devils. He suddenly had an idea.

His consciousness started to move towards the host soul and conducted the five Devils through the host soul.

Shortly thereafter, strong winds and massive waves surged up within the Sea of Consciousness. The five Devils inside of the Sea of Consciousness turned into five flows of black light flying out of the Sea of Consciousness.

A tremendous flow of wicked, crude, desperate aura flowed out from inside the pavilion.

Five ferocious ten-zhang-tall Devils floated around in the sky right above the pavilion. Their bodies shot out fluctuating souls which then brought the people into everlasting sorrows.

Shi Yan's body suddenly shriveled. Negative forces from the meridians streamed out and then violently poured into the five Devils.

Although the five Devils' bodies had been formerly ambiguous, they now gradually condensed into unknown substances and emitted more and more horrendous aura.

"Master, be careful!" Yi Tian Mo's face changed in fear. He looked at the five Devils floating in the air with a stupefied face and horribly screamed out, "What is this spirit skill? Its aura is very terrifying. This is ... this is the soul's power condensing into substances!"

Shi Yan opened his eyes, frigidly looked at the five ferocious Devils floating in the sky. He raised his arm and shouted, "Come back!"

The five Devils wriggled and seemingly didn't want to go back. However, Shi Yan coldly harrumphed and projected a stream of burning Heaven Flame from his hand.

The five Devils that had escaped from the Sea of Consciousness felt frightened just now, didn't dare to protest again Shi Yan anymore and swayed a little bit before diminishing.

Just in a short time, the five Devils again turned into different flows of black light and disappeared into Shi Yan's body.

Shi Yan took a deep breath. His bone-chilling eyes were gradually restored to its normal state. He released a sigh after a long while then said, "I know you are afraid of the Heaven Flame."

Yi Tian Mo also stayed away from him because he felt a little nervous whenever Shi Yan emitted the Heaven Flame. The Heaven Flame was Yi Tian Mo's fatal nemesis.

Shi Yan retrieved the Heaven Flame in his hand and then said with a smile, "It is just the burning fires of the Ten Thousand Earth Flame. Although this burning fire is tempered by icy objects, still, it is very intimidating. If it was the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, those five Devils will be truly terrified. Regretfully, that Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame still cannot be subdued yet."

"Master, are the five living souls that you projected condensed by using the soul power?" Yi Tian Mo asked in fear. "Master, you are only in the Earth Realm. Even with the profound knowledge of the

spiritual Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan, it is still difficult for us to perceive it that fast. How can it be so simple just to rely on the soul power to condense it into living souls?" Yi Tian Mo still couldn't believe that this fact was true no matter what.

Taking the soul as a conducting object to condense it into living souls was an incredibly scholarly spirit skill which had been written down in the secret scriptures of the Demonic Sound Clan. To cultivate this spirit skill, besides the highly adept soul capacity, it was necessary to have reached the God Realm; otherwise, it would be nearly impossible to do so.

Even Yi Tian Mo, who was ranked the First Sky of the Spirit Realm and possessed a profound soul capacity wasn't able to do so just yet.

Being ranked at the Earth Realm and relying only on some of the Demonic Sound Clan's secret scriptures, Shi Yan already could use the soul power to condense it into living souls. The word 'genius' wouldn't be enough to describe this.

"Did you say the five Devils?" Shi Yan was startled but then explained with a smile, "It isn't related to the spiritual Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan. Before I had your Demonic Sound Clan's soul secret scriptures, my Sea of Consciousness had condensed into these five Devils."

Yi Tian Mo was shocked with his eyes and mouth wide opened. He looked at Shi Yan as if he was looking at a monster.

After a long while, Yi Tian Mo let out a sigh and respectfully said, "Luckily, I've made a right decision. If we had killed you in the first place, I think our Demonic Sound Clan would have disappeared altogether from this world."

Yi Tian Mo was a little frightened.

Shi Yan stood up while waving his hand, implicating that he didn't mind it. After he felt that the five Devils weren't restless

anymore, he immediately walked to the window, looked down at Yi En's people of the Kele Clan gathering there and said hastily, "I am very sorry. An unexpected thing happened while I was cultivating. Now, everything is alright. You guys don't need to be worried any further."

All the Kele Clan's people looked pale. They were so frightened that even their hearts were trembling.

These people, who only had average cultivation base or didn't even know how to use any of the spirit skills, had suddenly realized some horrifying commotions that appeared on the floor where Shi Yan was staying. They had even thought that the Demon Dwellers had already come. If the five Devils hadn't disappeared in time, they wouldn't have even dared to move any closer to the pavilion like this.

Yi En was standing from a distance. After hearing Shi Yan's words, he wiped his sweat away, immediately clasped his hands towards Shi Yan and said, "Alright. So, I won't bother you anymore."

After finishing his words, Yi En signaled for his people to leave. They all left instantaneously.

"Master, I would like to request the advice from you about the secrets in condensing those living souls." Waiting until everyone had left, Yi Tian Mo contemplated for a while before asking with a little embarrassment. "I have recently studied this as well. Regretfully, there have been no improvements. I am very curious; your five Devils had been formed based on what?"

"From different negative feelings inside me." Shi Yan frowned and didn't hide or clarify it either.

"Negative feelings?" Yi Tian Mo was amazed. "These negative feelings can be reinforced through cultivations? I haven't heard about this before. Master, can you consistently increase negative forces so that the condensed five living souls can also keep being

intensified?"

"Theoretically, it should be so." Shi Yan nodded.

Yi Tian Mo's eyes lit up a strange light. His face then became very eccentric.

"What?" Shi Yan felt a little bit weird with Yi Tian Mo's expressions. "Is it bizarre to do so? I feel that it was just a normal occurrence."

Yi Tian Mo took a deep breath; he then said frighteningly after a while, "Master, really ... you are such a breathtaking genius. I admire you now. Even though I can't figure it out yet, but your ability is something that ordinary people like us are not able to understand indeed."

"What is it after all?"

"Only the God Realm warriors who can condense living souls can continuously enhance themselves and have their abilities to keep transforming nonstop." Yi Tian Mo stared at Shi Yan with his bizarre sparkling eyes, speaking precisely word by word.

Shi Yan looked as if he had been dramatically shaken. After that, he beamed out a smile from the corner of his mouth. He rubbed his head while speaking, "Hahaha, my ability is not too bad after all."

Until now, he just understood the frightening aspects of this spirit skill of the Five Devils in the Sea of Mind. It was indeed the spirit skill from the Blood Vein Ring which could shock the others.

Yi Tian Mo had seemingly wanted to explain something more, but he suddenly frowned and closed his eyes.

A feeble fluctuating soul spread out all over Yi Tian Mo's body. A flow of a new soul slowly came in from far away, wrapping around Yi Tian Mo's body, quietly communicating with him.

Closing his eyes, Yi Tian Mo sensed it for a while and then suddenly said, "Ka Ba and the other people are encountering some

troubles. Several warriors have appeared at their place. They've found out Ka Ba. It seems they even know of your human women. Ka Ba asks for your opinion if he should kill them."

"They know the women?!" Shi Yan was startled. His mind flickered right away. He was sure that those people should be the warriors from the Endless Sea. After contemplating a little bit, Shi Yan directly commanded, "Regardless of whom they are, just arrest them first. The appearances of the Wings Race and ours are various. If they spread out the rumors, there will be a lot of unwanted troubles."

"Understood." Yi Tian Mo nodded, closed his eyes and transmitted the message to the other end.

At this time, Yi En suddenly appeared again. He stood ten meters away from Shi Yan and said, "I've just been informed that some people have come to help us. They are people from the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land. As they are on their way to the headquarter of the Three Gods Sect to discuss some important matters, they have also been assigned to help us."

"The Gu family? The Heaven Lake Divine Land?" Shi Yan's face was strange. "When will they come?"

"I've heard that they will arrive today. Hahaha, so, thank you for your good will, my good boy. I don't think we need to bother you anymore." Yi En said all of a sudden.

"No need to bother me?" Shi Yan was joyful. "It cannot be better. You should wait for them to help you then. I also feel less worried."

Chapter 279: Rooting

In the vast, immense forest, countless trees covered the sky and the ground. Even the sunlight at noon could hardly pierce through the lush and dense foliage of those trees.

The people of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race all stayed under the trees' shades with leisurely manners, deliberately raised their heads and talked to each other joyfully.

The two leaders Di Shan and Yu Rou had pulled Duo Mou to the side under an ancient tree's shade and whispered something to each other.

Duo Mou was obviously a little bit frightened in front of Di Shan and Yu Rou. He always honestly nodded with any words or assignments that were ordered by Di Shan and Yu Rou without daring to disobey them.

Ka Ba and Ya Meng slightly closed their eyes while communicating with Yi Tian Mo at the other side of the Snow Dragon Island to ask for Shi Yan's opinion. Not long after that, Ka Ba and Ya Meng received his response. Then, they waved their hands signaling the Demonic Sound Clan's warriors behind them to take action.

Thirty high-class Sky Realm warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan quickly advanced towards the seven human warriors and surrounded them. A flow of attacking soul like silk fibers covered those seven human warriors just in a blink.

Under these rippling waves of souls, all seven of them then held their heads, plumping down on the ground and screaming out; the light in their eyes gradually became gloomier.

"Lady!" One bald warrior among them, who had some small arrow tattoos on his head, gazed at Gu Ling Lung standing not far away from there with his red eyes and shouted, "Who are these

guys?"

Gu Ling Lung slightly released a sigh, then helplessly talked to her family's Sky Realm warrior. "Uncle Hua Meng, you don't need to save us. Don't risk your life to fight. It's useless."

"Holy Maiden?" An elderly woman with many wrinkles on her face was holding her crutch, leaning on a trunk and shivering. She looked at Qu Yan Qing from a distance.

Being scrutinized by that elderly woman, Qu Yan Qing shook her head helplessly, signaling her not to resist.

The elderly woman's body trembled; she let out a dispirited sigh, became obedient, and stopped the useless protest.

Among the seven warriors, except for Hua Meng with the small arrow tattoos and the elder woman Huang Nan of the Heaven Lake Divine Land, the rest of the five warriors were at the Nirvana Realm. All of them came from the Heaven Lake Divine Land and the Gu family. This time, they were going to the headquarters of the Three Gods Sect to discuss the plan to unitedly deal with the Demon Dwellers.

They had received the information from the Three Gods Sect when they were on the way. As they had been informed that the Snow Dragon Island were encountering some problems, so they stopped by to help the people on this island.

However, as soon as they had arrived at the island, the elderly woman realized that this thick forest was not normal as she could feel the aura of some low-level warriors of the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan. Therefore, the seven of them couldn't help but come here to check.

After having crossed through the dense forest, they finally met the people of the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan, and almost right after that, they saw Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing. Gu Ling Lung was the hope of the Gu family's new generation. Qu

Yan Qing was the Holy Maiden of the Heaven Lake Divine Land. Both of them were the brilliant warriors of their forces.

Although Hua Meng and Huang Nan had the Sky Realm cultivation base, together with the five Nirvana Realm warriors, they could still not have any advantages when facing the powerful people of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race.

Di Shan and Yu Rou didn't even take any actions nor glanced at those seven warriors. They continued discussing matters that were related to the Gray Wings Clan's patriarch position with Duo Mou. They then cast the mission of dealing with those seven warriors to Ka Ba and Ya Meng.

As Ka Ba and Ya Meng didn't know of these people origins, they had immediately used their souls to send out the message to Yi Tian Mo to ask for Shi Yan's opinion.

After having received the response, they nodded their heads, and Hua Meng and Huang Nan became their prisoners, unsurprisingly in no time.

"Please do not eradicate them!" Gu Ling Lung secretly gritted her teeth staring at Ka Ba and said, "I have told them not to resist. Won't you stop using the soul oppression?"

Although the seven of them had given up in opposing, the Sky Realm warriors of the Demonic Sound Clan still didn't receive the order from Ka Ba and Ya Meng to stop doing so; thus they continued using their violent soul oppression on these human warriors.

In the range of ten meters surrounding these seven people, the mind-shaking soul oppression was still smothering the entire area. As they were stuck inside of this soul oppression, Hua Meng's and Huang Nan's bodies kept trembling, while the other five warriors tragically, had already gushed out mouthfuls of blood.

The Demonic Sound Clan's understanding of spiritual

Upanishads was way too advanced than that of the human warriors. As soon as the sea of consciousness had been formed, many of the Demonic Sound Clan's people started to cultivate different pagan spirit skills. Their attacks were mostly aimed at their enemy's sea of consciousness and soul. This kind of attack was extremely terrifying, and easily destroyed their enemy's spirit.

The five Nirvana Realm warriors' bearing clearly proved that their seas of consciousness had been seriously harmed. If it continued like this, these five people would shortly collapse. Once their cultivation base perished, and the host soul was destroyed, they would be completely dead, no one could save them.

"Be obedient a little bit!" Ka Ba coldly harrumphed, then nodded with his Sky Realm warriors. "Spare their lives for now. If anyone is rebellious, destroy their host soul right away."

As these words came up, Hua Meng's and Huang Nan's faces turned pale, horrible light then beamed out from their eyes.

Aiming at destroying their opponents' bodies was the essential attacking method of all the human high-class warriors in a battle at the Kyara Sea. They normally wouldn't attack their opponents' souls.

Attacking soul ... this was extremely terrifying.

A normal Sky Realm warrior wouldn't just freely use the soul to fight no matter how much hatred they got. It was because once the attacking soul was used, it was difficult to stop. Both sides would easily fall into danger where their souls would be destroyed forever.

If a body was seriously injured, or even slashed into pieces, it still could be hopefully revived. However, once the host soul was destroyed, the living mark would be completely deleted and the revival would be totally impossible.

Therefore, this kind of soul fight rarely happened at the Kyara

Sea.

However, Hua Meng and Huang Nan were always oppressed by the soul attack after having arrived this island.

Since the beginning, their seas of consciousness were occupied little by little. Actually, the Demonic Sound Clan had never attacked their opponents' bodies. This abnormal issue scared Hua Meng and Huang Nan out of their wits. They couldn't figure out what kind of people these pagans were after all.

"Don't even think about running away." Ya Meng burst into laughing, said, "With the soul capacity of the seven of you, if you have any thoughts of running away, you absolutely won't be able to escape from my soul sense. Let me warn you, even if you only just slightly move, I will immediately ruin your soul so that you know what 'soul and spirit both perished are."

Hua Meng and Huang Nan were so terrified that they didn't dare to act recklessly anymore. They only looked at Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing with astonishment, and seemingly wanted to know from their ladies who these pagans were.

"Haiza, we can't tell everything just by a few words." Gu Ling Lung's face looked miserable with full of depression and dreariness. "As we entered the Chasm Battlefield this time, we've never met any good events, we even nearly lost our lives there." Gu Ling Lung softly told Hua Meng and Huang Nan about what they had gone through.

Ka Ba and Ya Meng glanced at them with a look of utter despise, didn't prevent nor care about them. Instead, they continued to communicate with Yi Tian Mo on the other side.

The Kele Clan.

Shi Yan and Yi Tian Mo were sitting still on the spot, didn't say anything further to Yi En. After having known that the Sky Realm warriors of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land would

arrive to help them, Yi En was very happy and busy with the arrangement.

Three days had passed by.

All the forces on the Snow Dragon Island had eventually finished their preparations. Boats were ready. The ordinary residents of the island were all arranged to board the boats.

Everything was ready, except for the east wind. (Chinese idiom: east wind = right time or something triggering)

Yi En and Wu Ke were waiting for the warriors of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land to come. They had even sent their guys to find those warriors as they wanted to leave this island as soon as possible.

Time was tight for them.

After having received the message from Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and the other people hid deep inside of the forest, and also activated the soul formation technique at the same time. Thus, the warriors of the Snow Dragon Island, who had been sent to find the warriors of Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land, had to come back with nothing.

Yi En and Wu Ke started to be worried and didn't know what was going on. They transmitted their messages to the Three Gods Sect to ask, but the Three Gods Sect had no information either. They only asked for Yi En and Wu Ke to continue to wait.

But, they had no more time to wait.

Eventually, Yi En and Wu Ke had to come back to Shi Yan and begged him to send some escorts over to help them.

"No problem." Shi Yan excitedly replied. "It will take around ten days to sail from here to the Chaotic Wind Sea. As you are ready, I will send my guys to the harbor to help you cross the Chaotic Wind Sea safely."

"Shi Yan, thank you ge." LinDa chuckled, looking at Shi Yan with loving eyes.

"No problem." Shi Yan's expression was calm.

"You should leave now. When you arrive at the harbor, you will see my guys over there. Ah, are you sure there is no one left on this island?"

"No, no. Everyone is leaving." Yi En nodded constantly, thought to himself, "Who dares to stay here?! Is there anyone having the guts to fight against the Demon Dwellers?!"

"LinDa, you should leave as well. I will temporarily stay on this Snow Dragon Island. But don't worry, I will go to the Three Gods Sect, and I will meet with you there." Shi Yan comforted LinDa.

LinDa nodded submissively and then left with Yi En.

Wait until Yi En, Wu Ke and their people left to go to the harbor, Shi Yan looked at Yi Tian Mo, nodded and said, "Alright, you call our people to come here. From now on, the Snow Dragon Island is ours."

Half of a day later.

Di Shan, Yu Rou, and the pagans of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race spread out from the forest, appearing at the adjacent cities and villages of the Kele Clan's places. Houses, which had originally belonged to the three big clans, now became the shelters for the people of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race.

After having got out of that abandoned land, they finally had a rest stop for themselves.

"Bring them here." Shi Yan was standing on the top floor of the three-level pavilion, gently commanding Yi Tian Mo at his side.

Not long after that, Hua Meng, Huang Nan and the other five warriors of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land were

escorted over.

The group of Cao Zhi Lan, Qu Yan Qing, and Gu Ling Lung also walked in. They all looked at Shi Yan with full of hatred and didn't know what he really wanted this time.

"Send the message to your leaders. Tell them that the Yang family's members have returned." Shi Yan looked at Hua Meng and Huang Nan and said with a smirk. He pointed at Di Shan, Yi Tian Mo and continued, "These are the Yang family's allies from the Chasm Battlefield. Tell your leaders if they still need and care about you, that they should come to the Snow Dragon Island."

Chapter 280: Awaiting the Emperor

The Wind Cloud Island located in the middle of the two power ranges of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land. The Gu family was in the East of the Hengluo Sea while the Heaven Lake Divine Land was in the east of the Black Water Sea, and the Wing Cloud Island was in the middle of the two great Seas, which were often ravaged by pirates since a long time ago.

Because the Heaven and Earth's spirit aura on the other adjacent islands around the Wind Cloud Island was quite diluted, it was hard to find any high-class warriors among the ordinary residents that were living there. Any warriors who had quite a high cultivation base would not stay there; instead, they went to the other islands, which were under the control of either the Heaven Lake Divine Land or the Gu family to settle down.

On the contrary, pirates often traversed these great seas. After they were done with their pillage in one Sea, they didn't dare to appear there again. They would temporarily stop and hide on the other adjacent islands because, on one hand, they had to consume the spoils, on the other hand, they were waiting until everything calmed down before leaving.

After the Xia family had left the Kyara Sea and put all of their efforts to move every member of their families, their stop was the nearby Wind Cloud Island.

The small withered island, where only pirates bothered to step foot on, now became the rescuing shelter for the Xia family. It was easy to see that the Xia family's life was not comfortable at all.

Before, the Xia family had depended on the Yang family to be able to earn their living at the Kyara Sea. Because of Yang family's strong power, the Xia family was also guilty with many of the other forces.

As the Yang family had fallen into decay, the Xia family had been

affected as well. They were being oppressed by the Heaven Lake Divine Land; thus their powers had decreasingly declined.

When the Demon Dwellers had invaded, the Xia family had soon avoided them and left the Kyara Sea. However, regardless of either the Henglue Sea or the Black Water Sea, all the forces there had conflicts with the Xia family.

If the Xia family took the risk to enter any of these areas, they could have irritated their opponents. The Xia family didn't dare to take the risks given the current situation, thus they finally chose this Wind Cloud Island.

However, warriors of Gu family, the Dong Fang family, and the Heaven Lake Divine Land still often went to the Wind Cloud Sea to derange, taunt, and provoked the Xia family. If it weren't because of their biggest concerns which were now the Demon Dwellers, perhaps they actually would have attacked the Xia family.

Xia ShenChuan was very writhed. He looked frustrated with a gloomy face and knitted eyebrows during this time, whined and sighed all day long.

"Master, the people of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land come again. Should we negotiate with them this time? You see, hiding here is not a solution. Many of our people have started to be impatient. A place like this, even pirates don't want to stay here. It is not suitable for cultivations at all."

On a bare hill, Zhou Yu, the Sky Realm Consecrator of the Xia family bent his body, assuaging his Master with a forced smile.

On this two-hundred-meter tall bare hill, there were no medicinal herbs which could be useful towards their cultivations, nor spirit beasts; the Heaven and Earth's spirit aura was extremely diluted. It was not likely a suitable place for cultivation at all.

There were ten bare hills like this all around here where no useful resources could be exploited.

There were only a few of low-level small beasts dwelling inside of some further forests around them. No cultivating resources could have been found even if they had killed all of those beasts.

The Xia family's people were living in several of the mountain caves that were surrounded by these bare hills, together with some wild nomads.

Having been one of the greatest forces of the Kyara Sea, but now, things had changed. The Xia family was now really destitute and extremely ashamed when they were now facing this situation. Before, when they had been in their glorious time, many people of the Xia family were familiar with a life of ease. Their lives, however, had tragically suddenly changed. They couldn't adapt to the miserable life on this island right now, thus many of them wanted to leave.

The Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land had recently sent out their messages to the Xia family. They constantly came to seek a marriage alliance between Xia Xinyan of the Xia family and Gu Yu of the Gu family and Feng Hai of the Heaven Lake Divine Land. If the Xia family agreed, the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land would immediately cede some islands with dense Heaven and Earth's spirit aura for the Xia family's people to reside in.

The wish of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land had quickly circulated through the entire Wind Cloud Island. Many of the Xia family people, who couldn't stand the miserable life in the Wind Cloud Island anymore, went to beg Xia ShenChuan to agree with the other two forces in exchanging Xia Xinyan's whole life's happiness for their more comfortable living conditions.

"Those scumbags!" Xia ShenChuan harrumphed. He certainly had heard about this rumor, and also knew some abominated faces in his family.

"Don't let them bother you. Right now, the Kyara Sea's situation

is not clear yet. Either the Gu family or the Heaven Lake Divine Land will all aim at the forces in our hands. Seeking a marriage alliance is fake, taking the Xia family to be their human shields is real."

Zhou Yu nodded. "We can also see through it. But many of our people can't. When they were at the Kyara Sea, they had gotten used to an easy life. Suddenly, they had to move to this Wind Cloud Island, of course, they are in shock with a totally brand new life. I am afraid that after a while, that they would possibly covertly leave here. If it is like that ..."

Xia ShenChuan's countenance changed. "Is this true?"

Zhou Yu forced a smile and slowly nodded.

Xia ShenChuan's face suddenly became somber. In his eyes appeared a murderous look. "Put an eye on them. If they don't obey my orders, just kill one or two of them to threaten the rest, to remind them who is their master."

Zhou Yu's body was shaken. He said with a trembling voice, "Head Master, if we kill our own people, the situation might get even worse."

"I don't worry about it too much." Xia ShenChuan's face was very frigid while speaking. "The Kyara Sea's situation is so complicated right now. Neither the Henglua Sea nor the Black Water Sea is surely safe. Once the Demon Dwellers take action, these so-called formidable forces can even hardly protect themselves, let alone sparing some strength to take care of us. Therefore, if our family agrees to associate with them, we will become their sacrificed objects, the first ones who will fathom the Demon Dweller' fangs."

Zhou Yu contemplated for a while, then slowly nodded.

The Gu family, at the Thousand Swords Peak.

Numerous swords were plunged everywhere on the mountain peak. Under the sunlight, those swords were sparkling and

reflected brilliant colorful rainbows.

Countless of swords which looked like a sea of swords, among of which somehow vaguely had spirits, some of them had even produced shrieking sounds.

This Thousand Swords Peak was the Divine Land of the Gu family, which had been created by nature thus possessed a miraculous sword nurturing power. Many high-qualified swords were forged, then plunged into the Thousand Swords Peak, and aged as it endured the wind, the storm, or the dazzling sunlight.

After many cumulating months and years, these swords seemed to have spirits.

This was a miracle. No one knew how come the Thousand Swords Peak had this ability. After having had this Thousand Swords Peak, the Gu family immediately took advantage of these swords here in becoming one of the greatest forces of the Kyara Sea.

The Thousand Swords Peak could be considered the Gu family's root.

An elder man in a blue blouse was sitting straight on the tips of the sharp swords with an emaciated face. In the middle of the numerous dazzling sword lights, his countenance was calm as if he was attentively gathering the swords' auras to cultivate some kind of secret scripture. Sword spirits kept flashing on and off from his body mysteriously.

"Swoosh"

A chubby warrior was riding a three-tchi [1] long silver sword, flying across the wind with a fast speed. The ear-piercing sound of the wind suddenly covered the entire Thousand Swords Peak.

"Da ge [2]!" Gu Ji's tiptoes poked on the silver sword. He was floating behind the elder man in the blue blouse and respectfully said with a low voice, "Hua Meng was arrested when he was on the

way to the Three Gods Sect. Xiao Ling Lung has also been arrested ..."

The eyebrows of the man in the blue blouse jerked, but his eyes still hadn't opened yet. He said indifferently, "Ling Lung's gone to the Chasm Battlefield, how come is she there? Moreover, who dares to arrest Hua Meng? Have the Demon Dwellers taken action already?"

"No, Hua Meng sent a message saying that it is ... is a man of Yang family who has done so." Gu Ji said.

"A man of the Yang family?" The elderly man slightly shouted and eventually opened his eyes. His eyes were profound, completely placid like the water inside of a well.

"The Yang family still has someone in the Kyara Sea? Hua Meng is ranked at the Second Sky of the Sky Realm, so the person of Yang family who has arrested Hua Meng should have an outstanding reputation. Who is he?"

"You've never met him." Gu Ji shook his head and said. "Hua Meng transmitted his message, saying that he is from the Chasm Battlefield. That person said that if you want to have your men back, you have to personally go there."

"He said that I have to go there myself?" The elderly man harrumphed. "Is Yang Qing Emperor there?"

"Yang Qing Emperor isn't there, but Hua Meng ... there are certainly some God Realm warriors there."

"God Realm warriors?"

"Umm, he said maybe not only one."

"Not only one?" The eyes of the elder man suddenly shot out numerous sword auras. An endless consecutive explosive sound came out from the peak of the mountain which was opposite to the Thousand Swords Peak. Many lava rocks on that peak were crushed into ashes, the peak constantly shook as if it was about to

collapse in no time.

Gu Ji bowed his head without daring to say anything further.

"I really have to go there."

Gu Shao, the head Master of the Gu family, contemplated a little bit before leaping up. Many of the God swords in the sea of swords surrounding them, shrieked and then disappeared into his body.

At the same time.

Heaven Lake Divine Mother, the head Master of the Heaven Lake Divine Land had also received the same information. After being astounded for a while, she was also decisive in going straight to the Snow Dragon Island from the Heaven Lake Divine Land.

Before going to the Snow Dragon Island, Gu Shao and the Heaven Lake Divine Mother had transmitted that information to the Three Gods Sect.

Not long after that, the Three Gods Sect's forces everywhere were all been updated about the current situation on the Snow Dragon Island.

The information of the abnormal incident on the Snow Dragon Island had been transmitted throughout the entire Kyara Sea.

... ..

The Snow Dragon Island.

Under the instructions of Di Shan, Yu Rou, Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo, the people of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race quickly captured the terrains around the Kele Clan's location. They started to set up shelters and partitions layer by layers, turning this area into a restricted area.

In a short time, the flanks of the Snow Dragon Mountain had been dug out to make mountain caves.

As the Demonic Sound Clan's people had the icy yin trait, they turned these caves into their cultivation shelters, constantly went

in and out to cultivate devotedly.

The Wings Race's people had chopped down ancient trees to build wooden houses. With all those activities of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race, the Snow Dragon Island had some major changes.

"What do you want to do after all?" At a place beside an artificial lake of the Kele Clan, Gu Ling Lung stared at Shi Yan ferociously. "The Demon Dwellers at the Kyara Sea seemed to have taken action. The Great Seas are facing a great danger. You should let us go, and unite with us to deal with the Demon Dwellers. Why do you still want to confine us?"

"Unite with you?" Shi Yan smiled frigidly. "If it wasn't because of you, the Demon Dwellers wouldn't have pursued us to the Chasm Battlefield. You think just because of the Demon Dwellers' invasion, I would pretend as if nothing had ever happened? Uniting with you to deal with Demon Dwellers? It's ridiculous!"

"So, what ... what do you want?" Gu Ling Lung felt very chilled inside of her heart and quietly sensed the insecurities.

"You will know soon." Shi Yan calmly said.

[1] 1 tchi is equivalent to 33.33 cm.

[2] Da ge: Chinese way to call the oldest brother.

Chapter 281: Listening to the Earth's movements

The Snow Dragon Island. Snow blanketed the entire mountain layer by layer. A gloomy world of snow looked like it had been draped by a silver sheet of cloth.

Snowflakes were fluttering around everywhere. In the middle of the snow dune, Shi Yan was standing bare-footed like a stone. His eyes were closed tightly as if he was listening to the earth's sounds.

The bitter Earth Realm cultivation was tough indeed. Just refining the profound Qi alone wasn't enough.

After many arduous cultivating days, with the tattoo of the Black Head Lotus on his chest, he just needed to be focused, the speed of the refining profound Qi was already much faster than that of an ordinary person.

The purity level of the profound Qi inside of his body had reached the breakthrough point. He could vaguely feel that he was just one small step away from entering the Third Sky state.

After having asked for Yi Tian Mo's and Di Shan's opinions, he realized that in order to break through the Earth Realm, it was necessary for him to connect with the earth.

The earth under his feet existed for hundreds of thousands of years. Deep inside of the ground contained a lot of wonders and miraculous sounds of movements, which was impossible for ordinary people to feel or discovered.

However, if the Earth Realm warriors mediated and focused, when their mental states were immersed inside of the earth while they released their spirit powers, they congregated the god purified aura on the ground underneath their feet and relaxed their comprehension. They could definitely sense the earth's sounds of movements.

According to Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo, there were many kinds of marvelous vibrations inside of the earth. The vibrations of each phase of time and each season were totally different. If the warriors could sense those vibrations clearly as well as created a wonderful connection with them, their comprehension of the earth would enter a whole new world.

In order to quickly break through the Earth Realm, except for training and practicing the profound Qi, the soul, and the body, connecting with the earth was indispensable.

At the time when the leaders of the Heaven Lake Divine Land and the Gu family hadn't come yet, and Di Shan, Yi Tian Mo were still busy with reforming the Snow Dragon Island, Shi Yan was putting all of his efforts in breaking through the new realm. He wholeheartedly concentrated his mind, bitterly cultivated with the hope that he would soon break through the peak level of the Earth Realm and enter the Nirvana Realm.

Only when he entered the Nirvana Realm did he have hopes of controlling the Sky-breaking Shuttle. This peculiar treasure from the abandoned land with its arrogant aura had communicated with him with a spiteful attitude, which had made Shi Yan quietly irritated, but he wasn't able to do anything.

Under the freezing weather, Shi Yan had been standing there for three days and two nights already.

On the third night, the stars were ambiguous in the dark sky, as the moon was coldly bright and the wind which could chill oneself to the bone were howling like blustering demons. This scene brought along the icy yin aura which spread throughout the entire world.

Shi Yan's countenance didn't have any changes.

The snow was unceasingly falling, layer upon layer. With millions of snowflakes gently floating around him, before he knew it, he had become a snowman.

His sea of consciousness was quiet. The five devils also seemed peaceful. Flows of his soul consciousness were being absorbed into the ground, penetrated thousands of zhang [1] deep under the ground until they couldn't go any deeper.

After having penetrated thousands of zhang deep under the ground which then spread out everywhere, his soul consciousness could feel a few of very feeble fluctuating vital living forms. At this depth, there unexpectedly still existed small living entities. This discovery had astonished Shi Yan significantly.

With his bare feet on the ground, Shi Yan used both the comprehension of his soul consciousness and his mental powers to sense every single tiny bit of transformations under his feet.

Regretfully, after having attentively induced mental comprehension for three days and two nights, he still hadn't got much. He hardly felt the marvelous sounds of the earth's movements, which Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo had mentioned.

According to Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo, those sounds of movements were produced every passing second. He just needed to activate his mental comprehension and understand the essence of the Upanishads, he then could use his spirit to feel them.

However, Shi Yan was not able to comprehend them right away.

An endless chain of mountains surrounded him. A corner of the ice on the peak of the mountain sparked.

The matriarch of the White Wings Clan, Yu Rou, was standing shoulder to shoulder with Di Shan with a frigid face. From a distance, they both looked at Shi Yan who had been standing in the snowy weather for three days and two nights.

The moonlight was like skating blades that shone inclinedly to the earth, which made the surrounding area of the mountain icily brighter.

"It's already been three days and will be three nights after

tonight. Our Master's fortitude is really exceptional." Yu Rou spread her small white hands, two snowballs in her hands were sparkling under the moonlight. A flow of freezingly icy aura from the snowballs slowly condensed, the two snowballs compacted and gradually became two transparent snowballs .

"That's beautiful. The abandoned land never had snow ..." Yu Rou gently raised her delicate hands, the transparent snowball in her hands gyrated in the air, projecting faint snow-white lights.

"It has taken me three years to be able to enter the Third Sky from the Second Sky of the Earth Realm. It was because it has taken like forever to be able to use the spirit to comprehend the sounds of the earth's movements."

Di Shan clasped his hands behind his back, looking up to the sky as if he was also immersing in his old memories.

"It took me roughly about two and a half years. Although the sounds of the earth's movements are always produced, it needs a restful mind as well as a highly comprehensive cultivation in order to feel the earth's rotation. Sometimes, one also needs a bit of luck to be able to feel it.

Yu Rou smiled and nodded. "That's right. Luck is something that cannot be touched but it really exists. People with good luck will usually be one step ahead compared with the others. Fate is also one kind of God's will. If things follow the will of God, putting forth only half of one's effort could already receive much more achievements than the others. Talk about luck."

"We still didn't tell him that it would have been best to sense the sounds of the earth's movements at the place where there were constant seisms. The sound of the earth's movements is clearest when there is a seism. If he can capture the frequency of the sounds of the earth's movements, then adjust the frequency vibrations inside of his body to match with the sounds of the earth's movements, he can thoroughly understand them. Also, he

will be able to capture the essence of this Realm."

Di Shan looked at Shi Yan from a distance, and said coldly, "Sensing the sounds of the earth's movements when there is a seism is still the unofficial way. I don't think its results are as good as when he uses his mind to comprehend it. I still believe that the perceptions through hardships are the most precious."

"That's right. I believe that he can do it. Perhaps he will be able to enter the peak of the Earth Realm shortly afterward." Yu Rou said with a smile.

Do Shan gently shook his head, disagreed with her, then said, "It's not that easy. The reason his realm has been so quickly enhanced is thanks to our medicinal herbs as well as many of the peculiar treasures inside of his body. Of course, I know that his abilities are exceptional. However, he just entered the Second Sky of the Earth Realm a few months ago. To be able to comprehend the sounds of the earth's movements in such a short time is obviously impractical. Remember, that you and I have needed almost three years to be able to do so."

"I still think that his innate abilities are much more than ours." The corner of Yu Rou's mouth beamed out a smile. "Didn't you see that old Yi Tian Mo's behavior towards Master has marvelously changed after they had stayed together for a while? At first, even though Yi Tian Mo had vowed to make him his Master, the gesture was not really whole-hearted. He did it because of the three Heaven Flames on Master's body. He was afraid that his clan would have perished, that was why he had reluctantly agreed. However, right now, he's changed. I realized that Yi Tian Mo's eyes now have a glimpse of respect when looking at Master."

Di Shan contemplated for a long while, then nodded with a suspicious face. "That's why I also feel weird about it. I don't know why Yi Tian Mo has started to trust and respect him that much after only five days."

"Hahaha, this is called the enchanting power of the personality. There should be a lot of secrets about Master that we don't know about yet. Among the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, Yi Tian Mo is the most cunning and clever one, but he's already changed. So, Ka Ba and Ya Meng will also be truly devoted in no time." Yu Rou smiled deliberately and mumbled to herself. "There are some people who were born to have this innate leading ability."

Di Shan was astonished.

The Wind Cloud Island.

Inside of the feral bare mountain, a beautiful charming figure suddenly flared up and instantly disappeared. That figure was like the sprite of the forests, that were bewitchingly beautiful, and as subtle as a light breeze.

"Boom"

This figure stepped on the mountain rocks and then lightly flew towards the mountain cave not far from there. After she had flown one hundred meters away, an explosion resounded from the mountain rocks which she had just stepped on.

"The realm is not steady yet. This way of using forces is not precise ..." Xia Xinyan thought to herself, then she suddenly accelerated and appeared inside of that mountain cave like a faint light zooming over just in a blink.

The mountain cavern was not big and the chambers inside of it were sparse. These chambers had been indelicately and primitively built. The Heaven and Earth's aura was not dense inside of the cave, which was unsuitable for the warriors' cultivations.

Around dozens of the warriors of the Xia family were residing inside of the mountain cave. Also, there were roughly ten warriors from the Heaven Lake Divine Land and the Gu family. Besides, an arena had just been set up there, inside of the cave.

Among the warriors from the Heaven Lake Divine Land and the Gu family, two young men with handsome and intelligent appearances were the most outstanding ones.

Gu Yu of the Gu family had three pieces of the God Sword of the Gu family with him. He was at the Second Sky of the Earth Realm. His face was bright and delicate like jade as his manners were bounteous.

Feng Hai of the Heaven Lake Divine Land was also ranked at the Second Sky of the Earth Realm. He possessed the Black Water Martial Spirit. His physical body was flexible and delicate, as his elegance and appealing appearance even surpassed the girls'. While he was standing there, many young girls of the Xia family looked at him with brightened and seducing eyes. They both assessed him and whispered to each other at the same time.

Gu Yu and Feng Hai were the two leaders of the new generations of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land after Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing. These two young men had not only prominent appearances but also an outstanding cultivation base. They were the important figures whom the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land had sent over to seek marriage with Xia Xinyan. The real purpose of this marriage was to control the forces of the Xia family's hands through the marriage.

The war with the Demon Dwellers was coming closer. If they could have the Xia family's forces before the battle, it would be the luckiest thing for the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land.

Xia Xinyan, who was like the sprite of the woods, had agilely descended. She was so elegant and noble with her delicate and slender manners. She stood there without saying anything, but she was still like the bright moon in the sky, which drew all the men's eyes.

Gu Yu and Feng Hai were arrogantly receiving many flattering compliments from some young men of the Xia family with

ignorant gestures.

However, after Xia Xinyan had descended, these two young men's eyes brightened up. Their bodies slightly swayed, which was hard to recognize. A gentle smile also appeared on their originally arrogant and frigid faces while they were gazing at Xia Xinyan.

"Xia Xinyan, let me introduce you. This young man is Gu Yu from the Gu family. This is Feng Hai from the Heaven Lake Divine Land. They are both exceptional youths of the Kyara Sea, they ..." Xia RuiXing's face was full of gaiety, he laughed out loud while introducing Gu Yu and Feng Hai to Xia Xinyan. Everything he said about these two men was all compliments.

Xia RuiXing was the collateral branch of the Xia family. As his cultivation base was at the Nirvana Realm, he had a high position in Xia family, he even sometimes despised the lineal persons of the Xia family. He was nominally Xia Xinyan's uncle.

"No need to say more." Xia Xinyan's eyebrows knitted tightly while interrupting his floods of words and coldly said, "I know the purpose of their arrival. I am here. Anyone of them can win over me, I will satisfy their wishes. If they lose, they have to get the hell out of here, and never ever bother me anymore."

Everyone's expressions inside of the cave all slightly changed.

Chapter 282: Determination

"Xinyan, don't be rude." Xia RuiXing slightly shouted with an unpleased face. He said with a low voice while knitting his eyebrows. "Once you use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit, you will instantly enter the Sky Realm. Not to mention Gu Yu or Feng Hai, even I myself, will surely not even be considered as your opponent. How could it be?"

Gu Yu and Feng Hai were also a little embarrassed and awkwardly smiled without replying.

Both Gu Yu and Feng Hai knew about the miracle of the Xia family's Reincarnation Martial Spirit. Once the Reincarnation Martial Spirit was activated, Xia Xinyan's forces would not just simply increase several times its original size, but it could be enhanced one whole higher Realm.

Although Gu Yu and Feng Hai had a little bit confidence in their own strengths, they knew that they were not able to defeat this peculiar Reincarnation Martial Spirit. Thus, they didn't dare to be a hero in accepting that challenge.

Zhou Yu was standing at the side quite far away, frowning while looking at Gu Yu, Feng Hai, and the other warriors of the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land.

Xia ShenChuan hadn't shown up yet. He had just reminded Zhou Yu to pay more attention to the situation here. If there weren't any major issues happened, he would not show up in order to avoid the conflict between the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land.

"Hmm" Yue Feng from the Heaven Lake Divine Land, who had the Nirvana Realm cultivation base, also came this time. He couldn't help but speak up while coldly looking at Xia Xinyan, "If you don't use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit, your challenge can be thus considered. But if you win using the Reincarnation Martial Spirit, there is nothing more to say."

"The spirit aura on this Wind Cloud Island is very diluted. I don't want to stay here for too long." Gu ZhengYang's face was unpleasant. "Gu Yu and the Gu family's powers and conditions is number one or number two at the Hengluo Sea now. We've granted the privileges to you when we have degraded ourselves towards making a marriage alliance with you. Don't be too self-conceited."

Zhou Yu's countenance suddenly changed.

The faces of many of the people of the Xia family also slightly changed. They seemed to be bitterly looking at Gu Zheng Yang indignantly.

If the Yang family was still here, if we were still at the Kyara Sea, and if our ancestors hadn't fallen into this insane situation. Would the Gu family still have dared to bully us like this? We would have made all of you suffer while crawling on the ground.

Every one of the Xia family secretly clenched their teeth while remembering their glorious days at the Kyara Sea, those illustrious days with the Yang family when they had gone forth to conquer the other Seas.

Regretfully, things had now changed. Their former dignity had left them further and further away.

As of now, the Yang family had been in decline. The Yang Tian Emperor had been missing for so long without any news that the people of the Yang family had wandered into many unknown places. The Kyara Sea, which had been invaded by Demon Dwellers, was not their common ground anymore.

Meanwhile, the time when their great Master was conscious was much less than when he was in his dementia. Thus, it was impossible for him to shoulder the responsibilities of the family.

"Haiz!" Zhou Yu was among the people, shaking his head while releasing a long sigh. He looked at Xia Xinyan pitifully with a bitter

face. Suddenly, Zhou Yu was startled as if he had just realized something. His eyes brightened, staring at Xia Xinyan without even blinking.

After quietly releasing his soul consciousness, Zhou Yu slowly sensed everything around him for a while. His eyes got brighter, as his body slightly trembled.

"The Peak Earth Realm! You unexpectedly have reached the Peak Earth Realm!"

The Xia family had never seen the fact that the realm had such a big improvement in almost just two years.

Zhou Yu secretly nodded his head while looking at a mesmerizing figure that was calmly standing among his people. He thought that with that privileged trait, it was understandable why Gu Yu and Feng Hai were such an eyesore. Only those who were in the top of the combat list could catch the Lady's eyes.

But, the little rascal whom she was missing, was he worthy or not?!

"Who said that I have wanted to use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit?" Xia Xinyan's voice was cold, her eyebrows furrowed. "I don't need to use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit. I will have a fair fight with you. If you two unite with each other and win over me, I will carefully consider your request. How does this sound?"

"What?"

"Fighting with the two of them alone?"

"Could it not be true?"

The Xia family's people were clamorous, looking at her with astonishment, wondering how come she could have this kind of offer.

Xia RuiXing got dazed for a while. He then suddenly burst into laughter, clapping his hands and said, "That's good. I agree with

this offer. Feng ge, Gu ge, what do you think?"

Yue Feng and Gu ZhengYang laughed out loud with a despising look and slowly nodded.

"Yu er [1], don't disappoint our family." Gu Zheng Hai slightly shouted. "You fight with her first. Unity is just a joke for the other people. Hmm, the Gu family doesn't need to unite with any others. I believe in you!"

Gu Yu revealed a delicate smile. He walked to Xia Xinyan with a gentle move. He said with a low voice while his eyes were full of hope, "Miss Xia, where do you think is most suitable for the fight?"

"The bare mountain over there." Xia Xinyan's finger pointed at the low bare hill next to them. She swept her neglected eyes towards Gu Yu then to Feng Hai, and said, "You two better unite with each other. Otherwise, you will be defeated miserably. Then don't blame me for not reminding you."

After saying so, she slightly moved, leaped up and flew out more than one hundred meters away just in a blink.

"Feng ge, I'd like to go first." Gu Yu clasped his hands towards Feng Hai with a faint smile. Then, he immediately turned into a fading shadow flying towards Xia Xinyan's direction.

The eyes of Zhou Yu, Xia RuiXing, Feng Hai, and Gu ZhengYang all flared up, looking towards the bare mountain.

A vibration which was like an earthquake came out from the bare mountain all of a sudden. Lava rocks from that mountain constantly erupted into rubble, scattering everywhere in the sky.

Rubble was densely dispersing. Zhou Yu and the other people from more than a thousand meters away could only feel a collision power from that hill, but they couldn't see what was happening there.

An ear-splitting explosive sound constantly reverberated from the bare mountain.

After one minute, the sound had stopped.

"Swoosh"

Gu Yu was thrown out from that thick mist of rubble with torn clothes and a dirty face.

The armor on his body, which looked like silver fins, had been riddled with holes. From those holes, it could be vaguely seen of many open wounds, which were deep to the bones.

"Boom"

Gu Yu feebly fell down to a meadow of weeds at the foot of the bare mountain. His appearance was extremely miserable, as his face was ashen with confused eyes.

"Yu er!" Gu ZhengYang was livid with rage, shouting, "You said that you wouldn't use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit. That girl really wants to die. Since you are unreasonable like this, don't blame us for not going easy on you."

Gu ZhengYang shouted angrily as if he wanted to storm over inside of the bare mountain to kill Xia Xinyan.

Zhou Yu harrumphed coldly. His figure suddenly appeared in front of Gu ZhengYang. He knitted his eyebrows and said, "I've been staying with the Xia family for many years, so I know very well the sign when the Reincarnation Martial Spirit has been used as the back of my hand. Although I have carefully watched for a long while, our lady actually has not used the Reincarnation Martial Spirit."

"Didn't use the Reincarnation Martial Spirit?! Gu er cannot be that bad?!" Gu ZhengYang obviously didn't believe it. He revealed a frigid smile and said, "She's used some way to hide it from you and then secretly used the Reincarnation Martial Spirit. I don't believe you!"

"Don't ..." Right at this time, Gu Yu shouted weakly, cocked his head and dolefully said, "She... she hasn't used the Reincarnation

Martial Spirit indeed."

"What?" Gu ZhengYang was startled.

"Feng Hai ..."

The rubble in the sky gradually disappeared. Xia Xinyan's heart-stirring figure reappeared. She was standing on the bare mountain, looking towards Feng Hai from the distance, then coldly said, "Your turn."

Feng Hai's face had slightly changed. He suddenly laughed out loud and then leaped up and flew towards the bare mountain.

"Boom boom boom"

Another earth-shaking explosive sound echoed. From numerous rubble scattering all over the sky, Feng Hai's skinny body bounced right off even faster than Gu Yu's.

Feng Hai fell down next to Gu Yu, wiped the trickle of blood away from the corner of his mouth while shaking his head with miserable eyes. "Miss Xia, you are really dangerous. I think the top five of the combat list are not your match even if they were here. Based on what Miss Xia has performed today, you can easily be on the top three of the combat list. I, Feng Hai, know that I could not possibly defeat Miss Xia. I will no longer have this kind of thought. I will never come to disturb you again." After speaking, Feng Hai walked away lonely ignoring Yue Feng's question.

Gu ZhengYang constantly changed, angrily looking at the calm and delicate figure atop of the bare mountain. He then nodded firmly after a while, grabbed Gu Yu and shouted, "Let's go!"

"Her real realm has reached the peak Earth Realm. With what she has displayed, she is qualified enough to enter the top three of the combat list."

Feng Hai's body suddenly stopped, then talked to Yue Feng who was standing behind him, "I have condensed seven drops of the black water, each of which was destroyed by her. Luckily, I had

retreated in time, otherwise, I am afraid that I would have ended up with serious injuries like Gu Yu. She was unexpectedly so powerful without even using the Reincarnation Martial Spirit. We have underestimated the Xia family's potential."

Yue Feng's face was in total shock.

"She has reached the Peak Earth Realm?" Gu Yu's face was pale white as his eyes showed fear. "I am afraid that I am not her match."

"Xia family wants to take the constraints and punishments instead of favorable proposals. Yu er, don't think too much. No matter how exceptional the ability of that girl is, the Xia family doesn't have God Realm warriors. They had been tremendously declined at the Kyara Sea. Especially that the Xia family used to be united with the Yang family, and always oppressed our Gu family. Right now, as the Yang family is screwed, we obviously won't let go of the Xia family that easily." Gu ZhengYang's face was serious, frigid light flared up in his eyes. "The Xia family's suffering time is not far ahead."

... ..

The Snow Dragon Island, in the middle of the avalanche.

It was unknown since when Shi Yan had been wearing only blue shorts, more than half of his big bare body was exposed. He was intimidatingly standing under the dense falling snow.

Suddenly, Shi Yan, who now looked like a dominating statue, slightly shivered with a very tiny amplitude of movement.

Along with those slight shivers, sparkling lights slowly moved under his skin, which was like small streams of water that gradually gathered at the profound Qi's halo on his belly.

A peculiar sound of movements came out from the underground as if it quietly absorbed into his body through his feet.

The amplitude of his body's shivers got bigger and bigger.

Glorious dazzling lights spread out from his body in a short time, along with his shivers after a while.

"Seven days, faster than I could have ever imagined." From the snow mountain in the distance, Yu Rou was a little astonished. She revealed a smile while mumbling to herself.

A few paces away from her, Di Shan was in shock with an agitated face and brightened eyes.

Chapter 283: The Peak Earth Realm

Ice and snow were growling and the wind was chilled to the bones. Next to the very thick blocks of the iceberg, half of Shi Yan's naked body was slightly shivering.

After standing amid the snow and ice for seven days and nights bare-footed on the hard icy surface, as well as holding his breath and comprehending, Shi Yan had harvested a lot of achievements.

For fluctuations, which were numerous times less than the flaps of butterflies' wings, deep underground, ordinary people could possibly never ever realize or feel them for their whole life.

However, as Shi Yan had been bitterly cultivating for so many years, he had gained spirit aura which far surpassed that of ordinary people. Thus, after a long perseverant time of having used his spiritual sense to perceive, he had finally sensed the heart of the earth.

Even though it was minuscule and hard to distinguish, he had successfully sensed it after a long time of concentration in silence.

When that extremely tiny movement was transmitted to his sea of consciousness from his bare feet, Shi Yan suddenly processed a miraculous comprehension, which was like a relief from suffering. Even the host soul inside the sea of consciousness was also purified and sublimated. The host soul followed that sound and rippled very subtle moves from the inside of the sea of consciousness.

Flows of spirit instinctively immersed in the halo of the profound Qi on his belly. So did the soul consciousness.

After the fluctuation of the sea of consciousness had appeared, matching with the sound of movements under the earth, the halo, which was originally very dazzling, gradually became clearer and more delicate.

While the soul consciousness penetrated the halo, Shi Yan's mind

eye (the third eye) absorbed all the profound Qi's halo. He began to see every single of tiny transformations inside it.

A world of sparkling lights!

This world was floodlit with numerous peculiar shining crystal-like lights. Those countless lights were branched like a giant jade-like transparent tree covering the entire sky verdantly, which secretly contained pure and tremendous profound Qi.

By using his third eyes, Shi Yan could see everything as clear as in his hand. The world of the profound Qi's halo gradually appeared inside his heart and then was transmitted into his sea of consciousness.

Shi Yan had never thought that the interior of the profound Qi's halo was wonderful like this. He had used the profound Qi every time he fought, but he never knew the place where his profound Qi gathering was this radiant and marvelous.

Until his mind and heart had immersed in it completely, he now had a sensational feeling from the bottom of his heart due to this miraculous and stupendous spectacle.

Numerous fulgent branches bound together to form a giant transparent ancient tree trunk. Purified profound Qi, which was contained inside each of those branches, radiated brilliant marvelous lights.

However, the transparent ancient tree trunk didn't have any leaves nor fruits. Even the roots were extremely small.

This seemed to be just the beginning of the tree with the primitive shape, as it had not reached the best stage yet.

"Roar roar roar"

There appeared very small movements in his sea of consciousness. These movements were like the minuscule movements of the earth. In return to the movements of this radiant ancient tree trunk, its branches also waved rustlingly. Shi

Yan could vaguely hear some sound.

Following the movements of this ancient tree trunk, each branch luminesced glitteringly. Dense profound Qi turned into many beams of lights flying freely in this radiant world.

He urged the profound Qi subconsciously.

While his spirit was still immersing in the profound Qi, many flows of lights were flying freely inside the transparent ancient tree trunk suddenly started to shot out of to the edge of the tree.

Right after that, Shi Yan instantly realized that the purified profound Qi was massively spreading out from the halo of the profound Qi.

The ancient tree trunk luminesced brilliantly. Each transparent branch was slightly swung, releasing numerous lights out of that ancient tree trunk, which ruined the marvelous and miraculous halo of profound Qi. They then turned into the original profound Qi, which was the forces he had used in combats.

Everything had turned to be clear. After having comprehended for only a short while, Shi Yan already knew the scene deep inside the halo of the profound Qi, the place where profound Qi had been hidden, as well as the containing form, the orbit and the way to urge them ...

As being able to comprehend easily, when he wasn't well-prepared yet, he felt his body shaking violently and the sound frequency of the movements being transmitted from under the earth. Movements inside of his sea of consciousness had matched with the movements of the transparent ancient tree trunk.

The host soul was submerged in the essence ...

He had entered the Third Sky of the Earth Realm as easy as flipping his hand over. He now could easily feel the sound of the earth's movements with his bare feet on the ground.

Stretching his arms and opening his hands, Shi Yan urged the

profound Qi and then condensed them into the Life Seal.

Seven sparkling seal blocks were suddenly formed with the speed that was twice faster than normal. With a violent impetus that seemingly wanted to break mountains, the Life Seals shrieked and shot out, engraving on the snow mountain.

"Boom boom boom"

The ear-splitting explosion immediately came up from the mountaintop. Sharp icicles, which looked like sabers, were smashed into pieces. Chopping board size icebergs splattered everywhere under the cold moon and then rolled down massively to the foot of the mountain.

Shi Yan in the sole blue shorts was bowing his head in silence, thinking of something in the chilling moonlight atop a freezing and empty mountain,

Yu Rou and Di Shan were standing almost one thousand meters away, looking towards his general direction with serious faces. They didn't speak, as they were afraid it would disturb him.

Long after that when the moon had gradually moved and almost disappeared, Shi Yan put on his blue clothes, and then deliberately walked towards the snow mountain which had been struck down. One of his hands placed on the tip of the sharp icicle and quietly sensed it.

"What?" Yu Rou slightly shouted and casually threw the sparkling snowball, which she had just created, away. "Master seems to discover something. Should we go there and check?"

Di Shan nodded and slowly spread out his anomalous five or six-meter-long black-ink wings. They were slightly swinging. Di Shan looked like a demon from hell with frigid aura, his pupils looked cold-hearted and aggressive.

Yu Rou's mouth revealed a faint smile from a corner. Her snow-white wings hadn't opened yet. After slightly swaying her

mesmerizing body, she gradually vanished from the snow mountaintop. When she reappeared, she had been already at Shi Yan's side, bowing her head, walking close to Shi Yan and gently asked, "Master, what did you find out?"

Di Shan was a little further away from Shi Yan, strangely looking at Shi Yan's hand placing on the tip of the icicle. Shi Yan was contemplating with his closed eyes, seemed to think of something.

He didn't raise his head and still kept his current posture; Shi Yan, with his eyes closed tight, sent the spirit aura of the Ice Cold Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring into the tip of the icicle. This spirit aura then groped along the icicle and went into the deepest place inside the Snow Dragon Mountain.

The Ice Cold Flame was the Heaven Flame with the icy trait in Heaven and Earth. However, in this miraculous world, creatures with the icy trait were not only the Ice Cold Flame alone. Besides humankind and pagans, this mysterious unpredictable world also had strange powerful creatures which were similar to the Heaven Flames.

Beasts were one of those creatures, but they were also the most ordinary ones.

"It was not that I've found out something." After a while, Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows while raising his head, glanced at Yu Rou and Di Shan who were very curious, then explained, "It is the Heaven Flame with the icy trait inside my body. When I've sent my soul consciousness into the Snow Dragon Mountain, through its delicate icy spirit aura, my soul consciousness can feel another icy creature which is similar to it."

Di Shan's and Yu Rou's countenance was in shock.

"Patriarch Di Shan, call Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba to come here. The Demonic Sound Clan's knowledge of souls is much better than your Wings Race's. I will instruct them. Hopefully they can find out something." After contemplating for a while, Shi Yan said

seriously, "We can stay on the Snow Dragon Island for a while. During this time, we have to thoroughly understand the entire Snow Dragon Island like the back of our hands. There shouldn't arise any unpredictable things out of our expectation."

"You can address me by my name." Di Shan slightly bent down, respectfully moved backward.

"You don't need to be so formal with him." Yu Rou smiled, straightened herself up, taking a few steps back and then said, "I know Di Shan, once he's decided something, he would never regret it. Even if that decision is wrong, he will still carry it out till the end."

She paused then continued speaking. "Therefore, as he's already vowed to make you his master, he wouldn't change it. No matter how much disappointing your future might be, if you are not dead, he will never break his vow. He pledges to take it as a bad luck but will never break his words. You don't need to be worried about him."

Shi Yan's pupils sparked a strange light. He immediately knitted his eyebrows, "I still should keep the respect for them. Although you guys have made me your master and called me Master, Di Shan, and Yi Tian Mo are still my predecessors. This doesn't change now, and will not change in the future either. Even if I surpass them one day, this will still remain unchanged."

Yu Rou's beautiful eyes brightened. She was a little bit touched, slowly nodded and said with a low voice, "My choice is not wrong. Being able to follow you might be a lucky thing for all of us."

Shi Yan shook his head, then said with a smile, "I am your disturbance for now, completely not a lucky charm or something like that. However, I will try my best and hope the future would not make you regret the decision you've made today."

After saying, Shi Yan retracted the hand placing on the tip of the icicle, closed his eyes and sent the message to the Ice Cold Flame,

"How is it going?"

"Under the mountain, there is a kind of spirit aura which is very similar to me. But, it is hiding very deep inside. If that creature really exists, it is probably in a very deep sleep. The entire spirit aura on its body has been hidden, which is very hard to be found out. If I can't get out of this damn ring, I myself will not be able to identify exactly its location ..." The Ice Cold Flame's reply made Shi Yan knit his eyebrows tightly. He said with a shocking face. "If you said so, there are peculiar things inside of the Snow Dragon Mountain for real?"

"Maybe ..." The Ice Cold Flame hesitated for a while and then continued, "There is another possibility. Maybe that creature has left already, and the spirit aura I am feeling is just some remnants."

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh"

The chilly wind was torn apart as some figures quietly appeared one by one. Di Shan and other three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan all gathered in front of Shi Yan.

After shooting a quick glance, Yi Tian Mo bent his body, respectfully said with a shocked face, "Congratulations Master, you have taken one more step into the Peak Earth Realm. Based on your strength and innate ability, hopefully, you will reach the Nirvana in two or three years."

Ka Ba and Ya Meng were a little surprised, staring at Shi Yan for a while before congratulating him.

Shi Yan calmly waved his hand to prevent them from flattering. He pointed at the shining tip of the icicle and quickly went straight to the point, "This Snow Dragon Island has a peculiar thing. According to the Heaven Flame inside my body, there exists a creature with the icy trait on this island. The ability to sense the souls of the three of you is extremely powerful. So, use your ability to search carefully if there is this peculiar thing for real."

"Yes." Yi Tian Mo 's group of three and other two bent their bodies and then immediately sat down cross-legged, closed their eyes and started sensing.

Chapter 284: Visitors

Yi Tian Mo's group of three and the other two were sitting on the ground with serious faces. Although there weren't any flows of profound Qi moving on their bodies, the snow where they were sitting cross-legged started to melt. Their fluctuating souls penetrated into the earth, spreading widely deep inside the Snow Dragon Mountain.

The body of the Demonic Sound Clan's people was different from that of humankind, as it possessed the yin attribute. Their body structure was built to be able to bring out the most of their soul forces.

Three of them were the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan. Their knowledge of the host soul and the sea of consciousness was far surpassed that of Shi Yan, Di Shan, and Yu Rou. Even the high-class God Realm warriors of the Kyara Sea would be persuaded in terms of the knowledge of the host soul when facing these three leaders.

If having the soul fighting directly with them, the possibility of the Kyara Sea's warriors getting defeated was eighty or ninety percent.

The feeble fluctuating souls, which even Shi Yan, Di Shan and Yu Rou couldn't recognize, were moving slowly around the Snow Dragon Mountain then gradually went deep inside the mountain, penetrating the foot of the mountain to sense the icy living movements of special creatures existing there.

On the Snow Dragon Mountain, there obviously existed some creatures, some fourth-level, fifth-level beasts, or insects hiding deeply underground. As long as these creatures were still alive, they all emitted living fluctuations.

When Yi Tian Mo's group of three projected soul fluctuations, they realized numerous responses from lives immediately. At this

moment, their spiritual souls were moving all around the Snow Dragon Mountain, so they could sense all the creatures' lives.

Among those countless living fluctuations, finding one with the icy attribute, which was hiding deeply inside as well as extremely powerful, was not an easy job.

With his soul consciousness being wide opened and his mind being calmed, Shi Yan could feel a minuscule fluctuation. This fluctuation came from deep inside of the earth, which was like a special beating heart of the Grace Mainland. However, as this fluctuation was in a very far distance, when it was transmitted to his feet, it was already very weak and hard to feel.

But, he still could sense it.

Therefore, the miraculous fact that Shi Yan's host soul was on the same melody with the sound of the earth's movements had stirred up his sea of consciousness. Also, the halo of the profound Qi inside his body had magical transformations accordingly. Everything led to the breakthrough to the Third Sky of the Earth Realm, very close to the Nirvana Realm.

Although Shi Yan had been observing for a long time and hadn't got anything yet, still, he wasn't despondent. He refined and condensed the Heaven and Earth aura by himself and poured the aura into the Black Head Lotus tattoo on his chest with the speed that was several times faster than that of the other warriors at the same level. After the spiritual aura had been gathered and refined into profound Qi, it slowly ran into the halo of profound Qi on his belly.

Without wasting any of the vitality, he made use of a little amount of free time to cultivate. Every time the realm was upgraded to another level, the demand for the profound Qi became extremely avid. At this time, cultivating bitterly and patiently would be good for the quick increase of profound Qi.

While the dense Heaven and Earth aura poured into his chest, Shi

Yan quietly sensed the transformation of the Black Head Lotus tattoo; he then calmly and carefully circulated the Heaven and Earth aura inside the tattoo.

"Oh?!"

A miraculous fresh feeling suddenly appeared at the tattoo on his chest. Dense Heaven and Earth aura around the Snow Dragon Mountain gathered at the tattoo on his chest, then transformed slowly. Fresh aura, which was like the icy aura, started flowing out and getting into his body.

After having felt this aura carefully, he could see many beams of cold aura moving inside his vessels, slowly converging into the halo of the profound Qi on his belly.

That fresh aura was not as strong as that of the Ice Cold Flame but still very freezing. When it moved inside his vessels, Shi Yan vaguely felt the moving forces inside his nerves became sluggish.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh"

Strange vibration suddenly came out from Shi Yan's body. The fresh aura hiding inside his vessels began twisting to each other and then condensing.

"Twitter twitter twitter"

The fresh aura was absorbed into his body quickly, condensed at one place as if it just turned to be a small icy loach creeping through every corner of his body and searching for something.

That spirit creature rapidly glided, ran back and forth inside his vessels.

Shi Yan's soul consciousness followed it closely. It dashed non-stop, wandering around inside his body, and then slowly advanced towards the finger, which was wearing the Blood Vein Ring.

"What?"

Shi Yan got startled. As soon as he vaguely figured out

something, he instantly sent out the message to the Ice Cold Flame. "There is an aura, which is similar to yours, dashing toward that direction. Can you try to sense it?"

A chilled-to-bone aura spread out from the Blood Vein Ring, his finger quickly turned into a sparkling ice crystal just in a blink of an eye.

Many flows of small black ice flashed up on his finger one by one and then suddenly rolled towards the freezing little rascal that looked like a loach and covered that little rascal immediately even before he could have any reactions.

"Chomp"

The little rascal, which had been condensed by the fresh aura turned into a tiny white fiber and flew out of his finger all in a sudden. It then penetrated deeply into the earth just in a blink.

"The icy aura underground is moving to the inside of the earth. Follow it!" Shi Yan shouted while his body was slightly shaken.

Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba and Ya Meng, who were sitting cross-legged, suddenly opened their eyes wider, looking to the direction which Shi Yan's finger was pointing at, nodded their heads and put all of their powers to pursue that icy aura.

"It is running away from me." The Ice Cold Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring slightly swung, turning to a chilled-to-bone white flame. "I can feel its aura and it also can sense that I am probing it at the same time. It is very cunning, didn't try to find me right away. Instead, it separated its aura into many parts, then made use of the time when you were condensing Heaven and Earth aura to penetrate your body quietly and converged inside of your body afterward. Its ability to use the power is not less than mine at all."

"Icy aura, slithery like a loach..."

Shi Yan mumbled to himself. Suddenly, his eyes brightened up, he quietly thought, "Is it possibly an Icy Crystal Bone Dragon? In

legends, the Snow Dragon Island used to be a lair of an Icy Crystal Bone Dragon. Did you find out any beast's aura?"

"Icy Crystal Bone Dragon ..." The Ice Cold Flame mused for a while as though it didn't agree with Shi Yan's opinion. "It doesn't look like one. The Icy Crystal Bone Dragon is a low intellectual creature. Even if it reaches the eighth level, its ability to use its own forces is not as good as that little rascal's. Perhaps it isn't the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon."

Shi Yan would not be persistent to oppose the Ice Cold Flame's opinion because, obviously, his understanding of beasts isn't as thorough as that of the Ice Cold Flame. He got the knowledge related to the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon through the legend being told by LinDa. Thus, he couldn't know about it as well as the Ice Cold Flame.

"I still feel that that guy doesn't look like a beast. Because beasts are very big, if there is a beast inside this mountain for real, it is easy to be discovered." The Ice Cold Flame contemplated for a while and continued, "You should be careful. If that guy can use the ice cold aura that skillful, its forces should be definitely extremely powerful. If it rebels, it's not easy to deal with."

Shi Yan nodded quietly.

When Shi Yan and the Ice Cold Flame were communicating, Yi Tian Mo's group of three was still searching for the peculiar icy force, which had gone into the earth. Shi Yan quietly observed the three of them, realized that they always knitted their eyebrows tightly as if things were not going well.

Yi Tian Mo suddenly glowered, his eyes beamed out a light.

Shi Yan looked nervous while asking. "Did you find anything?"

Yi Tian Mo nodded but then shook his head. Under Shi Yan's suspicious look, he said, "I've found out something indeed, but it isn't related to the icy aura that's gone into the earth. Instead,

there are high-class God Realm warriors coming to the Snow Dragon Island."

"High-class God Realm warriors ..." Shi Yan mumbled to himself and faintly smiled. "We have some visitors then. Save this for later. Let's go and see who those visitors are."

Ya Meng and Ka Ba also retrieved their soul forces after having heard Shi Yan's words. Their faces looked confused and dispirited.

"It's really weird. The souls of three of us still couldn't identify its exact location. This kind of creature is very good at hiding, definitely isn't the low intellectual beast." Ka Ba contemplated a little bit and then said, "Luckily, we are still on this island. I can use one secret scripture next time, perhaps we can get something then."

After having heard this, Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo seemed to come up with something, their eyes suddenly brightened.

Shi Yan also noticed Ka Ba's confidence, but he didn't dig into this topic anymore. He said with a smile, "Let's go to see our visitors."

An elder man in a blue blouse and an indulgent elder woman were walking shoulder by shoulder in the void of the Snow Dragon Island. There seemed stairs under their feet leading down to the ground.

"This is the first time I've come to this Snow Dragon Island. Ah, there seems many shelters have been arranged. Most of these shelters are to limit the exploration of the soul. It's quite exceptional indeed."

The elder man in the blue blouse nodded slowly, then talked to the elder woman. "You tell me, the remnants of Yang family really come from the Chasm Battlefield this time?"

"Both of the two Demon Kings have confirmed that Yang Tian Emperor is confined in the Fourth Demon Area." The elderly

woman's face turned serious. "I've never heard that the Fourth Demon Area and the Chasm Battlefield are linked together. Moreover, even if they connect to each other, Yang Tian Emperor can't get out anyway. We don't know who the high-class God Realm warriors on this island are after all?

"In this unsettled situation, Yang family has come to make a mess. Hmm, it is really a headache."

The elderly man in the blue blouse forced a smile, shaking his head. A small beam of sword light flared up in his eyes. He talked to the elderly woman, "If this gives us more troubles, we should unite with each other to preclude this potential danger before the Demon Dwellers come. What do you think?"

The elderly woman said with a serious face. "Besides you and me, the guy from the Three Gods Sect might also come here shortly. I've heard there isn't only one God Realm warrior here. If it is true, we should be careful. I just don't believe that there are God Realm warriors for real. Perhaps it was only our people's illusion that made them mistake the fake God Realm warriors and the true ones."

"I think so." The elder man in the blue blouse smiled and said.

Chapter 285: Confrontation

The Snow Dragon Island wasn't too hot even during the afternoon.

Especially in the adjacent area of the Snow Dragon Mountain, cool breezes blowing from the mountain made the people living at the foot of the mountain feel very fresh and comfortable.

Inside of a four-story wooden house, the two Sky Realm warriors, Hua Meng and Huang Nan from the Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land, were sitting opposite to the other two young warriors Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing.

Cao Zhi Lan, He Qing Man, and Pan Zhe were sitting at another place, eating fruits with complicated faces.

After Hua Meng and Huang Nan had delivered the message as Shi Yan had requested, they were still very curious about what had happened to Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing. They kept asking and finally got some information about the ambiguous origins of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race. They felt frightened inside of their hearts.

The Kyara Sea was suffering the menace from the Demon Dwellers; now the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race suddenly came here from the Chasm Battlefield. Moreover, these two tribes also had high-class warriors which astonished Hua Meng and Huang Nan very much. They didn't know what the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race had wanted after all.

"Our headman will come here shortly. Until then, hopefully, nothing would happen ..." Hua Meng looked at Gu Ling Lung with a confused face and said, "Our headman has been always arrogant, meanwhile the competence of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race is still unclear. If he gets angry, perhaps he will fight with these two tribes. If it is to be so, the situation will be hard to settle."

Gu Ling Lung obviously understood Gu Shao's personality, she nodded and said, "I hope our headman can sense the abnormalities on the island."

Qu Yan Qing's picturesque eyebrows knitted while she quietly released a sigh as she also worried for the Divine Mother Yu Qin, who didn't know of the situation on the island yet.

Pan Zhe and Cao Zhi Lan were sitting near there. After having survived through many soul experiments which had been carried out by Shi Yan, Pan Zhe's spirit was extremely down, he had lost his former manners from before. As of now, every time that he saw Shi Yan, he instantly felt cold-hearted within his trembling soul.

When they were at the abandoned land, Shi Yan had considered him his most regular experimental test subject, who had suffered the most from all of his dangerous soul experiments.

Those days were Pan Zhe's most dismal nightmares in his life, of which he didn't dare to think of again. Every time he thought about Shi Yan, he couldn't help but clenched his teeth angrily. Nonetheless, he still really had a big fear of Shi Yan.

"When you return home, what is your plan?" Cao Zhi Lan was the calmest one. Her charming face didn't have any glimpses of anger. She was not hasty, concerned, nor displayed any redundant feelings. "Pan Zhe, I'd like to give you an advice ..."

'What?' Pan Zhe's haggard eyes slightly flared up a lively light. He forced a miserable smile, looking at the beautiful girl next to him, "What advice?"

"Don't think about taking revenge on Shi Yan. You are not able to deal with him." Cao Zhi Lan hesitated a little bit before speaking with a low voice.

Pan Zhe's lips slightly shivered, subconsciously looking out of the window. He shook his head and said, "Did that bastard do something to my body? You could realize it that is so, right?"

Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful eyes contained distraught commiseration. She gently nodded her head and said, "I think he has placed some typical formation technique inside of our souls. Even if that formation technique was precluded, it still leaves the obsession deep inside your spirit. If you confront him in the future, I don't think you have any chances of winning."

Pan Zhe could only reveal a forced smile as he knew that her words were all true. He bowed his head dolefully, released a sigh and mumbled to himself, "He is a monster. It is harder to deal with him than with the Yang people. I hope I won't see him again in the future, considering that I am scared of him ..."

Cao Zhi Lan was surprised, gazing at him for a while. She now realized that Shi Yan had used psychical means to destroy the leader-to-be of the Penglai Divine land. She couldn't help but have a wonderful feeling.

The elderly man in the blue blouse and Devine Mother Yu Qin of the Heaven Lake Divine Land were walking in the void, slowly stepping down from the sky and appeared in front of the wooden house where Hua Meng and Huang Nam were staying.

Gu Shao, with white hair on his two temples and a blue headscarf on his head, looked like an elegant scholar. As soon as they had descended onto the ground, he immediately shouted, "Where is the owner of this place?"

Yu Qin had a charming manner. As the laps of her clothes fluttered, her whole body exposed a holy graceful aura; her bottomless eyes also displayed an outstanding wisdom.

After the two of them had descended, they quietly released their soul consciousness that covered the entire Snow Dragon Island.

However, after their soul consciousness had at once spread out over the entire island, they didn't discover any auras of the God Realm warriors nor even the auras of the Sky Realm warriors.

This had surprised Gu Shao and Yu Qin very much. They became to be more cautious.

Before coming here, they had received information from Hua Meng and Huang Nan stating that there were God Realm warriors on this island and that they were not only ones. Because of this message, the two of them, who could have stirred up the entire ocean with only one stomp, humbled themselves to come here.

Although they didn't really believe that there were God Realm warriors on this island, they did believe that this place should have Sky Realm warriors who were only one step away from the God Realm.

However, since they had arrived on this island, not only didn't they get anything but also didn't sense any powerful living fluctuations. These facts startled them a lot.

As Hua Meng and Huang Nan, who were inside the four-story wooden house, heard the shouts of Gu Shao and Yu Qin. Yet they couldn't help but speak up to reply them. However, they realized that the sounds of their voices couldn't go through the marvelous silver halo of this wooden house.

Outside of the house existed some kind of soul defensive formation, which could prevent souls from investigating and discovering what was inside of the house. Thus, other people couldn't sense their auras even though they were near in a very short distance.

"Don't try any further." When Hua Meng and Huang Nan were trying to shout, Cao Zhi Lan suddenly stood up, quietly walked to the window, and looked out towards Gu Shao and Yu Qi. Her beautiful face displayed a shocked and frightened look, "Gu Shao, the headman of the Gu family and Yu Qin, Divine Mother of the Heaven Lake Divine Land, who both have a tremendous cultivation base of the First Sky of the Spirit Realm, still couldn't locate our existence. This is ..."

Cao Zhi Lan stopped speaking, but all of the other people's faces in the house had changed dramatically, as their hearts frantically beat, their eyes couldn't help but display fear.

"Impossible, absolutely impossible ..." Gu Ling Lung mumbled to herself and didn't believe that it was true. "Great-grandfather has the Spirit Realm cultivation base, how come he can't find out that we are in here, at such a short distance from him? He is definitely doing it on purpose. Right, definitely on purpose!"

"Nothing is impossible." Cao Zhi Lan took a deep breath. "I have always been watching the Demonic Sound Clan. I've realized that this peculiar race has a miraculous soul perception which far surpasses ours. You will not deny in doing this because all of us have already undergone this as well. Ya Meng's body and the profound Qi are not as strong as ours, but he could use his special soul technique to control us as easily as in turning his hand over. This point alone can show how dangerous their spiritual Upanishads are."

Pan Zhe slowly nodded and discouragingly said, "Lady Cao is right. This race is much better than us in terms of soul potentials."

"The three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan all have the God Realm cultivation base. At the same realm with Gu Shao and Divine Mother, their perception of souls and the sea of consciousness is much more profound than that of the other two. This is the truth, we have to believe it. If it is not true, how come Gu Shao and Divine Mother was not able to discover the defensive formation that the three leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan had arranged."

Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing started to be really worried.

A big and imposing figure quickly glided over from the distant snow mountain and appeared in front of Gu Shao and Yu Qin shortly.

"I am Shi Yan from the Yang family at the Kyara Sea. I would like

to greet you two predecessors." Shi Yan clasped his hands together with a respectful manner. He said with a smile, "The two of you come here from thousands of miles far away, which has made me very joyful."

"Shi Yan?" Gu Shao's eyes were like cold sharp swords looking at him and then said with an arrogant manner, "I've never met you before. Let the Elder of the Yang family come out to talk to me. You are not qualified enough to address me."

With a quick glance, Gu Shao could instantly realize that Shi Yan's cultivation base was only at the Third Sky of the Earth Realm. Obviously, he was not worthy enough for Gu Shao to lay his eyes on or even say anything further.

"Let my people go first." Yu Qin's voice was cold although her face still remained lenient. "I want to see the people of the Heaven Lake Divine Land first, then we can discuss with the Yang people. The Yang Tian Emperor has been confined, we don't know who else is worthy enough for us to meet."

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows, his smiling face gradually got frigid, "You two seem to look down on me."

Gu Shao shook his head and said, "It is not that we are looking down on you. It is just that you are not qualified enough to negotiate with us. Little rascal, call the elders of Yang family to come here. The Yang family has already sunk into the bottom of the Kyara Sea, so if you guys want to mess with us, it is actually not a wise move."

Yu Qin didn't say anything, instead, she kept pacing back and forth in one place with flows of gentle aura emitted from her body, sensing the situation here.

"If it wasn't for you, having united with the Demon Dwellers to deal with the Yang family, the Demon Dwellers couldn't have entered the Kyara Sea and you would not have encountered the current difficult situation." Shi Yan suddenly harrumphed, said

daringly, "The reason that the Demon Dwellers have invaded the Kyara Sea is because of your stupidity. I didn't think that you have even repented of what you have done."

"What?" Inside of Gu Shao's eyes flashed up a sword-shaped lightning, which quickly dashed towards Shi Yan.

That sword-shaped lightning, which was as long as a finger, suddenly shot out incomparable sword aura.

That small lightning also contained dozens of tremendous sword shadows, which covered the entire sky and earth as though they wanted to tear the sky down[H1].

As soon as those sword shadows went into Shi Yan's eyes, they immediately turned into thousands of giant swords plunging down from the sky.

The sword shadows appeared everywhere which brought him a feeling of helplessness. He couldn't do anything but to let them cut him up into pieces.

With just one lightning surge flaring up from Gu Shao's eyes, Shi Yan couldn't even have one defending reaction.

"Swoosh"

A black-ink feather suddenly appeared in front of Shi Yan. This black feather swung about, emitting thousands of rippling black waves. As soon as those waves had diffused, the [H2]entire heaven and earth were covered by a black hue, daytime instantly turned into night time in a blink of an eye.

"Boom boom boom"

A series of earth-shaking explosive sounds came out. While Shi Yan was still in a daze, he heard Gu Shao's scream.

In the next blink, the darkness no longer existed, then daylight reappeared.

Gu Shao's face looked very confused. He shouted in fear. "There

are God Realm warriors indeed!"

[H1]Or the sky apart. Either or.

[H2]You ate a slice of whole grain bread, not the entire loaf.

Chapter 286: Strong

Di Shan looked very calm, stood in front of Shi Yan in silence, spreading out his black wings. Cyclones of forces, which could be seen by ordinary eyes, were projected successively from his wings covering the entire space around Shi Yan.

The ink-black light circles appeared one by one next to Shi Yan and then slowly diffused outwards.

Dreary and anomalous aura, which was like ocean tides, densely gathered around Shi Yan. This aura didn't seem to be afraid of the sword's attack or the full-power strikes of the God Realm warriors.

Gu Shao's eyes shot out the lightning. His face turned to be serious and frigid, "Pagan tribe?"

Di Shan's black wings were eye-catching. As soon as he appeared, his origin was instantly disclosed.

The Kyara Sea's current situation was very complicated. Dealing with the Demon Dwellers' invasions was extremely urgent. At this critical moment, Di Shan's appearance was very sensational.

Especially when Di Shan had the cultivation base of the God Realm.

"So what?" Di Shan was ignorant; he faintly said. "We are from the Chasm Battlefield and have desired this fertile land for so very long. This land used to be our martial arena before. As we had left this land for quite a long time, you have occupied it. Since we have now come back, we are entitled to get a part of the resources which had originally belonged to us."

Gu Shao's countenance changed slightly. Yu Qin was also sputtered with fear.

"You guys also want to have a part of the soup bowl?" Gu Shap took a deep breath, his manner was not very normal. "At this critical time, your request is hard to be settled. However, you alone

don't have enough strength to get anything of the Kyara Sea."

Many violent flows of sword intents were then shot out from Gu Shao's body.

The dazzling and blinding five-color sword aura, which was like the lightning growling and howling in the sky, dashed straight towards Di Shan, bringing along its destructive power.

Streams of the sword auras were as tiny as small snakes slithering throughout the entire sky and earth.

The sword auras then tore the air into pieces. In the middle of those ear-piercing sounds, the space surrounding Di Shan cracked open, creating many beautiful five-colored rifts.

The attraction forces massively flowed out from those rifts as if it wanted to swallow up everything.

Numerous wooden houses were pulled up from the ground and then flew straight into those space rifts.

At the foot of the Snow Dragon mountain, even big rocks which were like small mountains couldn't have resisted that attraction force. They constantly flew up and were drawn into those five-colored space rifts. Then they all disappeared just in a flash.

Shi Yan's face had tragically changed with fear.

One strike of a God Realm warrior was earth-shaking indeed. It was unexpectedly tearing apart the air, cracking open many rifts of space which could have swallowed up everything.

The most terrifying thing were the heaven-shaking sword intents, which had been projected by Gu Shao.

Under the control of those heaven-shaking sword intents, those splits of space could be urged by Gu Shao, constantly changing their directions according to his wish.

This was the first time that Shi Yan saw the horrendous forces of a God Realm warrior with his own eyes. The mightiness which Gu

Shao was displaying severely frightened Shi Yan. He was a little bit worried for Di Shan.

According to Yu Rou, Di Shan was the highest-level warrior of the Wings Race with the anomalous and unpredictable cultivation base, which was as if it could have changed the entire sky and earth.

However, Shi Yan had never witnessed Di Shan's real ability. Although Shi Yan knew that the body of Wings Race's people was very sturdy and mighty, together with their forces which were much more powerful than that of the other warriors at the same level, he was still a little worried. He was afraid that Di Shan would be defeated under Gu Shao's violent assault.

Di Shan's eyes were slightly half-closed.

His black wings flapped gently. Circles of ink-black light slowly spread progressively.

Those circles of black lights had been linked together, each circle interlocked with another one. In the middle of the links, a black light was sparkling nonstop and then spread out everywhere.

A flow of devilish murderous auras had quietly diffused.

Those circles of black light gradually made contact with the space rifts, covering the sword halos.

Di Shan took action softly and gently like floating clouds and mild blowing breeze. His manner was very deliberate without any signs of being greatly intimidated.

But, Gu Shao's eyes suddenly became panicked.

Those circles of black light seemed to have eyes. They had locked all of Gu Shao's sword halos and sword intents just in a very short time.

"Crack"

A crispy sound resounded. The Sword halos were crushed into

numerous light spots, then vanished into those rifts of space.

Only a short while later, all of those rifts closed.

The circles of black light that were spinning inside those rifts suddenly swelled and then exploded, shooting out countless dazzling black rays.

Gu Shao's body trembled slightly. His eyes beamed out a frightening light. He silently stepped backwards a little bit and stood shoulder to shoulder with Yu Qin.

Di Shan was still imposingly motionless. Only his black wings had stopped flapping. He quietly looked at Gu Shao and then swept his despising look to Yu Qin who was about to take action.

"What? You two want to unite to fight with me?"

Gu Shao didn't answer, his face didn't look pleasant. Yu Qin shouted slightly, the wrinkles on her face stiffened. Peculiar white lights like ripples of water moved on her lenient wrinkled face.

Her body which was originally bending, now gradually straightened up. Her clothes fluttered.

Under Shi Yan's scrutinized look, the wrinkles on the face of the eighty-year-old woman quickly disappeared.

After only a few seconds, her face turned to be soft and white like the face of a young maiden. Even her neck and ears were also changing rapidly as her skin became smoother, more like velvet, elastic and resilient.

Her height had also increased five or six centimeters more.

Only in a short time, the head of the Heaven Lake Divine Land was as if she had just unexpectedly been restored to life, turning into a beautiful thirty-year-old woman even though she had almost stepped into a coffin.

Her skin was now creamy white, her beautiful eyes were full of tumbling waves, and her body was full of vitality.

"Devine Mother is about to take action." In the four-story wooden house, Qu Yan Qing's beautiful face changed dramatically. Her body trembled slightly and her eyes were full of confusion.

"The legend turns out to be true ..." Cao Zhi Lan mumbled to herself. "Once she takes action, she immediately restores her youth and maintains the peak level status. The magical Upanishads of the Heaven Lake Divine Land is really terrifying. It is the blessings from God as I am witnessing this now. Regretfully, she will not get anything good from the fight either."

Pan Zhe agreed in silence, nodded his head while smiling miserably, "I just hope that the situation will not be getting worse."

"I am afraid it will be." Cao Zhi Lan shook her head. She instantly realized something and couldn't help but slightly scream out with a strange face.

Three warriors were sitting next to Pan Zhe were from the Heaven Lake Divine Land and Gu family alternatively. These three warriors were similar to Pan Zhe, also lucky to survive after having been Shi Yan's soul experimental test subjects.

At this time, these three warriors seemed to be forcefully pulled out, their faces were instilled with full of fear.

Their bodies slowly flew up to the air, quickly floated out of the range of the defensive formation, then appeared in the void in front of Shi Yan.

Under the attentive eyes of Cao Zhi Lan, Gu Ling Lung, Pan Zhe, and Hua Meng, Shi Yan faintly smiled, pointed at those three warriors who were being confined by some unknown forces and then shouted, "Explode!"

"Boom Boom Boom"

Three skull-piercing sounds came up from the three warriors that had exploded.

Those three warriors, who were frightened and panicked, were

killed just in a flash. Their skulls had cracked apart and fresh blood splattered from the top of their heads. They instantaneously died on the spot.

Gu Shao's and Yu Qin's faces turned purple with murderous rage.

"This is just the start." Shi Yan turned his head back, looking at the group of Gu Ling Lung, and Hua Meng behind from a distance. He smirked wickedly and pointed towards those people.

Suddenly, Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing the two girls were tied up by some forces, then uncontrollably leaped up.

Cao Zhi Lan, Hua Meng, Huang Nan and He Qing Man were all horrified with frightened faces, and dazedly looked at these two girls slowly rising up.

After the death of the three warriors, Cao Zhi Lan understood that a slaughter would probably ensue. As she looked at Shi Yan's cruel smile, she felt powerless and frightened.

"Don't!" He Qing Man begged miserably, "Shi Yan, please don't! I know you can see us. Please let them go, don't kill them!"

Shi Yan wasn't moved, his eyes displayed an unconcerned look.

The delicate bodies of Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing trembled and they couldn't restrain their fears. They stared at Shi Yan who appeared to be coming closer and closer, thus they started to have thoughts of hopelessness.

"Little Ling Lung!"

"Qing'er"

Gu Shao, Yu Qin goggled, then became panicked, and couldn't help but scream out.

"The positions of the three previous warriors were probably not high enough. I think these two girls should be enough then." Shi Yan's face was calm, his voice was cold. He looked at Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing, then shook his head while saying, "Regretfully, I

haven't even really interacted with you yet ..."

"Little rascal, you win!" Gu Shao let out a sigh, all of the sharp swords on his body vanished in a blink.

The smooth and white face of Yu Qin slightly shivered, wrinkles reappeared on her face in just a short time, and she regained her eighty-year-old appearance.

Her lenient face could not be disguised any longer.

Yu Qin angrily looked at Shi Yan and shouted. "What do you want after all?"

"What do I want?" Shi Yan seriously thought for a while before shaking his head. "I haven't thought of anything yet. But, if you are really obedient, they can continue to live."

Gu Shao's and Yu Qin's eyes were full of anger, but they couldn't do anything.

It wasn't that they didn't want to save Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing. However, Shi Yan didn't have any moves and Di Shan didn't take any action nor released any forces.

This meant the person who had brought Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing out was not them, but someone else.

Gu Shao and Yu Qin were both God Realm warriors. They were quietly sensing around but couldn't locate the aura of that secret person.

This had scared the both of them a lot. Moreover, they didn't know whether that hidden person had placed any formation techniques on Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing or not. Therefore, they didn't dare to take any risks, and could only accept to lose unpleasingly.

"We will not take any actions anymore." Gu Shao confirmed with a strange face.

Yu Qin nodded reluctantly.

"That's ok." Shi Yan revealed a smile but actually, he was very cold-hearted inside. He waved his hands towards a place to signal for someone to bring these two beautiful girls back.

Under Gu Shao and Yu Qin's scrutinized look, Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing were like wooden statues that slowly floated backwards and then disappeared abnormally.

Gu Shao's and Yu Qin's face changed again. The precautions increased in their eyes.

"Now, can we discuss decently?" After the two girls had returned to the wooden house, Shi Yan deliberately clasped his hands again with the same respectful manner as earlier. "Predecessors, please take a seat."

Although Shi Yan had invited them to sit, there weren't any chairs there.

Gu Shao and Yu Qin harrumphed and then sat down cross-legged on the hard ground with resentful faces. They looked at Shi Yan, wondering what he had wanted after all.

"Let's talk about the compensation." Shi Yan said with a smile.

Chapter 287: The Declaration of Love

"Compensation?" Gu Shao and Yu Qin coldly harrumphed at the same time. Their eyes were even more frigid; the corner of their mouths beamed out disdainfully.

"What does the Gu family owe you?" Gu Shao didn't bother to look at Shi Yan, instead, he stared at Di Shan. "You are from the Chasm Battlefield. The Gu family has never met you before. I don't know how the Gu family is related to your tribe?"

"We and the Yang family are allies." Di Shan looked indifferent, didn't want to talk with Gu Shao any further. He pointed at Shi Yan and said, "Let him discuss it with you."

"That guy?" Gu Shao's face was astonished. "He can speak for you?"

"Yes, he can."

Gu Shao and Yu Qin exchanged their looks in shock. The way they looked at Shi Yan now had a little change.

Shi Yan only had the Earth Realm cultivation base. In their eyes, he was just a puppet who was controlled by Di Shan and another hidden person in the dark. He shouldn't have any rights to talk.

From the beginning, Gu Shao and Yu Qin hadn't really respected Shi Yan. Although Shi Yan had also shown his sturdiness, they had thought that Shi Yan just simply followed Di Shan's orders, as they hadn't assumed that he could be the one who would have discussed it with them.

However, from what Di Shan had said, Gu Shao and Yu Qin understood that their judgment was probably wrong. By this time, they started to look straight at Shi Yan and considered him a person who could talk to them equally.

"Alright," Gu Shao knitted his eyebrows unpleasingly and said, "You said something about compensation? What do we owe you?"

"Uniting with each other to deal with the Yang family, making a mess at the Kyara Sea, taking action arbitrarily in the Yang family's territory. Those are your mistakes." Shi Yan was confronting Gu Shao and Yu Qin, the two famous persons of the entire Kyara Sea, but he wasn't scared of them, instead, he was talking confidently. "Your stupidity has led to the invasion of the Demon Dwellers - the fall of Kyara Sea, and the current difficult situation in the entire area. Everything is because of your mistakes."

"Hmm!" Gu Shao and Yu Qin coldly harrumphed simultaneously. Their faces looked unpleasant and became more serious. They were not hasty to explain anything yet.

Shi Yan smirked, contemplated for a while before continuing, "It looks like if I don't tell you more practically, you will not cooperate."

"What?" Gu Shao's eyes flashed up a furious light. "More practical?"

"The Gu family and the Heaven Lake Divine Land, each of you will give us five of your islands that are in the adjacent area of the Wind Cloud Island. They used to belong to the Yang family. A total of ten islands, the names of those islands are Ice Moon Island, Wind Star Island ..."

Shi Yan took his time to name all the islands which he had already carefully checked.

While hearing what Shi Yan was saying, Gu Shao's and Yu Qin's faces were getting more unpleasant, but they still restrained their anger. Their eyes were chilled to the bone.

"Damn it! The Gu family have made our efforts to exploit those five islands. Every of them has either mineral springs or herbal mountains. This little rascal is dreaming. He even dares to intimidate the Gu family."

Inside the four-story wooden house, Gu Ling Lung suddenly stood up. She was so resentful that she couldn't storm out and have a life-and-death fight with Shi Yan.

Hua Meng grabbed one of her arms and pulled her back. The powerlessness was showed on his emaciated face. "Lady, please don't be agitated. It's useless if you go out now. Instead, you will distract our headman."

Gu Ling Lung's charming body wriggled for a while but couldn't get out of Hua Meng's grip. She shouted angrily, "Shi Yan, you are such a bastard. At this time when we are all facing the Demon Dwellers' invasion, you still don't care for the major matters. You will have to repay sooner or later."

Shi Yan coldly smiled, glancing at Gu Ling Lung from a distance. He raised his left arm and flapped in the air.

Gu Ling Lung's body slightly trembled, her eyes flashed up a panicky light as her small face instantly reddened.

In the abandoned land, every time she acted like a tigress showing her fangs and claws, Shi Yan immediately gave her a lesson. Shi Yan had done this movement so many times before, which was using his hand spanking her round jade-like butt. After this, the marks of Shi Yan's hand had always remained on her butt.

As seeing Shi Yan flapping his hands in the air, Gu Ling Lung remembered her disgraceful life from before, feeling both ashamed and angry. Her agitations completely disappeared.

Gu Ling Lung quietly released a sigh, shaking her head while saying to Huang Nan next to her. "Those five islands gather a lot of precious resources of our Heaven Lake Divine Land. His request is too much ..."

Huang Nan's eyes were full of anger. "That little rascal is having a daydream. Devine Mother absolutely will not give these five islands to the Yang family."

Qu Yan Qing nodded her head and said, "Definitely not."

"Nothing is impossible." Cao Zhi Lan's hands were placed on the window, her delicate body slightly bent down, her round butt perked up creating a fascinating curve. She looked at Shi Yan from a distance with a leisurely manner. Her voice seemed a little strange. "He is not just merely shooting an arrow. If he's given out this request, he definitely has some backup plans. As from what I've seen, he will probably get what he wants ..."

"It is impossible!" Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing shouted at the same time.

He Qing Man also stood up, looked at Cao Zhi Lan incomprehensively. "Lady Cao, why do you feel that Shi Yan will achieve his purpose?"

"You guys listen to it by yourselves." Cao Zhi Lan revealed a big smile like hundreds of flowers blossoming. Nothing could compare with her beauty right now.

"You base on what to have that request?" The sword auras torrentially emitted from Gu Shao's body. Although his face still remained calm, his ten fingers were sparkling with sword halos like snakes wriggling and showing their fangs, bringing people a terrifying feeling of the extremely sharp and tremendous sword posture.

"Based on what?" Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows as though he was contemplating, then said with a smirk, "If you can't fulfill my request, you go ahead start the fight. At this point of time, you can't even deal with the Demon Dwellers. If our forces jump in, I believe the name Heaven Lake Divine Land and Gu family will be wiped out of the Kyara Sea."

As soon as Shi Yan finished those words, there suddenly appeared a flow of horrendous auras which could destroy bones and souls.

"The third God Realm warriors!" Yu Qin was panicked. She couldn't control her emotion anymore, suddenly stood up. She looked towards the peak of the mountain which was not far away with strange lights flaring up from her eyes.

Behind the peak of that mountain, next to a pointed icicle, Ka Ba was laughing out loud, walking over to the side of Yu Rou and Ya Meng then said, "At first, Yi Tian Mo has asked me to disclose my aura just a little bit to give them more pressure. But unexpectedly, our Master has had a wicked intention already. He told all of us to hide, only threaten them little by little. This makes people even more miserable than displaying all the powers at once." Ya Meng's face looked brutal. "These two guys really overestimate themselves. If they back us to the corner, we just capture both of them then."

"Don't rush," Yu Rou smiled and said with a low voice, "At this Kyara Sea, we are considered pagan races. If we become the enemy of all human warriors in this entire area, we will encounter many difficulties later. Our master is still young but not stupid, he knows how we can get the most benefits."

Ka Ba nodded and said sincerely, "Master's uprightness is exceptional indeed. Although he is only an Earth Realm warrior, he isn't scared of the two God Realm warriors. Instead, he dares to intimidate his opponents. He really has qualifications of an outstanding hero."

While the three of them, Ka Ba, Ya Meng, and Yu Rou were discussing there, Gu Shao and Yu Qin were restlessly worried as if they were sitting on fire over there.

"You have other three God Realm warriors?!" Gu Shao took a deep breath, finally started to feel insecure. "Three God Realm warriors. Very few forces at the Kyara Sea can resist this force. However, if human warriors of the Kyara Sea unite with each other, defeating you is not that difficult." Gu Shao clenched his teeth with frigid eyes, then said, "Don't push us too much!"

"It is you alone who are pushing yourself." Shi Yan wasn't scared at all. He coldly glared at Gu Shao and said, "If you don't agree, so wait until I unite with the Demon Dwellers to wipe out your names."

"You dare to cooperate with the Demon Dwellers?" Gu Shao's and Yu Qin's faces changed again.

"What?" Shi Yan pretended to be astonished. "You seem to be very surprised? It isn't what you've never done before. Why do you think joining with Demon Dwellers is treason and heresy? When you and the Demon Dwellers had united with each other to deal with Yang family, didn't you also have the same thought?"

Gu Shao and Yu Qin got bewildered, couldn't say anything.

"I don't want to talk too much," Shi Yan harrumphed and said, "Each of you gives us five islands, we will remain calm, and Gu Ling Lung, Qu Yan Qing, Hua Meng, Huang Nan can be still alive. But, if you don't hand over the islands, not only the four of them have to die but also two of you will be buried with them."

After finishing these words, Shi Yan stood up, walked straight towards Cao Zhi Lan and others in the house without even glancing at Gu Shao and Yu Qin. When he turned around, he coldly said to two of them, "I'll give you one hour to consider."

Gu Shao's and Yu Qin's faces kept changing, as their eyes looked dazed. They stood still on the spot, being filled with anxiety.

When Shi Yan went through the soul defensive formation that Yi Tian Mo had set up, Yi Tian Mo suddenly showed up from nowhere, quietly nodded towards Shi Yan implicating that everything was still under control.

Shi Yan smiled without saying anything. He then walked slowly into the floor where the group of Cao Zhi Lan and others were waiting. His eyes swept over Gu Ling Lung, who was gritting her teeth with hatred, then moved his eyes to He Qing Man, who was

having a confused face, and said, "If there aren't any unexpected things, you can leave today."

"You bastard!" Gu Ling Lung shouted with anger, "I didn't expect that you fish in troubled water."

"You have to repay for your mistakes." Shi Yan's face got more serious, his eyes sharpened. "If it weren't because of your stupidity, Yang family would be still at the Kyara Sea and the Demon Dwellers wouldn't have intruded. As you have done wrong, you have to compensate for it."

"Shi Yan, I agree with what you've said." Cao Zhi Lan revealed a smile and flattered him all of a sudden. "Cao family has made mistake. Ah, if you have the same request with Cao family, I can stand up to make Cao family hand over five islands as a compensation."

Cao Zhi Lan leaned against the window. Her body exposed fascinating curves, her eyes flared up a wise light as she emanated mesmerizing glows.

Pan Zhe and Hua Meng quietly swallowed. They wondered why this beautiful girl suddenly became so illustrious like this.

"You can speak for Cao family?" Shi Yan was astonished.

"Of course." Cao Zhi Lan revealed a big smile. Her pink lips curled up, she looked very lustful. "I can also control my own future. Shi Yan, if you want to marry me, Cao family can take ten islands as my dowry. So, have you ever thought about this? Hahaha, if you do, I will be responsible for my words."

When Cao Zhi Lan uttered those words, she didn't felt ashamed at all as if she was actually discussing some major things in a serious manner.

Shi Yan's eyes and mouths were wide opened.

Chapter 288: The invitation of the Three Gods Sect

Outside of the defensive formation.

Di Shan was standing imposingly, coldly looking at the two people opposite him.

Yu Qin and Gu Shao were whispering in the discussion. Their faces constantly changed, their eyes flashed up complicating lights, and their eyebrows kept knitting tightly. They were obviously frustrated.

Inside of the defensive formation.

From a distance of fifty meters, with an astonished face, Yi Tian Mo looked at that incomparably appealing woman who was talking to Shi Yan with an unimaginable manner.

On the ground floor.

A bunch of people, including Hua Meng, Huang Nan, Gu Ling Lung, Pan Zhe, Qu Yan Qing, and He Qing Man, was all wearing strange faces. They bewilderedly looked at Cao Zhi Lan, who was ranked number three in the Power Rankings and was considered the popular outstanding leader of the new generation of the Cao family. They didn't expect that she was able to utter those superficial words that could unpleasantly pierce through the others' ears.

She... was she serious?

She was the leader of Cao family's new generation ranking the Peak Earth Realm, extremely beautiful, the goddess who allured and mesmerized numerous outstanding guys at the Endless Sea. Still, she proactively suggested getting married to Shi Yan?

Hua Meng and Huang Nan goggled, looking at each other, doubted whether they had heard it right or not.

Pan Zhe's face was extremely bizarre, shaking his head constantly as if he didn't want to believe what was happening in front of his eyes.

Shi Yan was also in a daze, knitted his eyebrows while contemplating without saying a word.

“Miss...Miss Cao?” He Qing Man was full of confusion. She asked with a strange voice, “Jie (Chinese way to call an older sister), you want ... what do you want to do?”

“Lan jie, I didn't hear it wrong?”

Gu Ling Lung raised her fist up, forming a posture which looked like she wanted to stamp the ground. “Has that little rascal planted some formation technique inside your soul? If not, how come did you rave like this?”

Other people's face brightened, they quietly nodded in agreement with this idea. They looked at Shi Yan again with full of disdain and precautions.

“He isn't that boring.” Cao Zhi Lan only smiled. Her small mouth curled up as her beautiful eyes rippled with many strange lights. “Shi Yan, what do you think about my suggestion?”

Shi Yan contemplated without speaking; his face was very bizarre.

“In the Endless Sea, the Martial Spirit Palace, the Yang family, the Cao family, and the Three Gods Sect are the most powerful forces. In recent years, although the Cao family has never taken any major actions, no one dares to deny the Cao family's real ability. The Cao family's status in the Tuta Sea is quite similar to the Yang family at the Kyara Sea before. If you marry me, the Cao family will be the strongest ally of the Yang family. Moreover, I assume that I deserve to be your wife more than Xia XinYan. Either my background or my ability is much better than hers. Besides, I do believe my appearance is not less than hers either.” Cao Zhi Lan

wore a big smile; her beautiful eyes stared at Shi Yan. “So? If you consider this proposal carefully, you will see that it will bring you a lot of benefits.”

“Miss Cao, will you love me?” After contemplating for a while, Shi Yan suddenly revealed a smirk with a strange light flashing up from his eyes. “I want to ask you, why? Why are you proposing to me? I believe that many men who have higher cultivation base than mine. The Yang family has currently collapsed, my status is not worth mentioning. Why did you come up with this proposal?”

“I believe in you.” Cao Zhi Lan beamed out a faint smile. Her radiantly beautiful eyes sparked lively lights. “I believe in your future which will be more glorious than all the other men that I’ve met in the Endless Sea. I think that my life will be very colorful being with you. In short, I have respect for you.”

Shi Yan was surprised.

The other people in the wooden house were also astonished with their wide-open eyes and mouths. They all had strange faces and felt that Cao Zhi Lan had gone crazy.

“Lam jie, you disappoint me.” Gu Ling Lung stamped her foot as she was so angry that she almost exploded. “This little rascal is a despicable bastard, extremely disgusting, self-seeking, and very arrogant. How could that kind of person deserve you?”

Qu Yan Qing also slightly shook her head as she obviously didn’t understand either.

Only He Qing Man cocked her head, considering for a while. After she recalled Xia Xinyan’s judgments for Shi Yan, she gradually figured out some clues, ambiguously felt that Cao Zhi Lan’s daring proposal should have a reason.

She knew Cao Zhi Lan in the Endless Sea was famous not only for her martial strength but also for her acceptably exceptional wisdom.

An elegant, pure, intelligent, and beautiful girl like her didn't even try to show her nobleness. Instead, she bravely threw Shi Yan an olive sprig. Has she gone insane?

Following this flow of thoughts, He Qing Man quietly evaluated Shi Yan. She suddenly remembered that Shi Yan had only been at the Disaster Realm before he entered the Chasm Battlefield. As of now, after just two years, he had already reached the Peak Earth Realm. This breakthrough speed was earth-shaking.

A series of thoughts flashed up in He Qing Man's head, which had surprised her even more. The more she thought, the more logical things had become. After this, the way she looked at Cao Zhi Lan was more admirable.

He Qing Man admired this girl's hardiness, her beautiful eyes, and her manners when dealing with major matters.

"Xinyan jie, where are you? Someone wants to steal your man. She is also a strong opponent. You have to be careful ..." He Qing Man thought to herself.

"Shi Yan, tell me if I am pretty?" Cao Zhi Lan slenderly swayed her delicate body around in front of Shi Yan. Her full breasts were prominent, and her waist was small. She looked like a fresh flower which could attract others to be immersed in it and never want to wake up again.

"You are really beautiful." Shi Yan revealed a faint smile. His flaming and lustful eyes scanned her wonderful body up and down. "Among the girls that I know, only Xia Xinyan's face can compare with your beautiful one."

Shi Yan mused for a while then said with a thoughtful face. "It is just that I don't have any intentions to get married nor have children for now, nor bind my marriage with the families' major matters. If I like a woman, I won't care about her background or forces nor if she can help me or not. It will be merely my love for her, and it wouldn't be related to anything else."

After saying that, under the puzzled eyes of the others, Shi Yan immediately left, walking outside of the house without caring about Cao Zhi Lan.

Gu Shao and Yu Qin had stopped discussing. Their faces were gloomy, a little discontented and angry.

Shi Yan appeared quietly and then said with a smile. "How are you considering it?"

"We agree with your request." Gu Shao took a deep breath, forcefully restrained his anger and shouted, "Let my people go!"

"Ok."

Shi Yan raised his hand in the air and said with a very pleasing manner, "Release them."

The defensive formation, which looked like a moon on the bottom of a well, was instantly broken after a flow of forces zoomed over it.

The group of Hua Meng, Gu Ling Lung, and the others immediately appeared from the defensive formation. Cao Zhi Lan was still in a daze.

"You guys can go now." Shi Yan pointed toward that group, and then he turned his head around to look at Gu Shao and Yu Qin and said, "You will send your people to hand over those ten islands to the Xia family. I know the Xia family is currently living in the Wing Cloud Island, which is in between your two forces. Do you understand what I mean?"

Gu Shao slightly harrumphed and nodded with rage.

"That's good," Shi Yan revealed a faint smile. "You guys can bring your people out of here. I'll assure that once you and the Demon Dwellers engage fighting, we will just stay on the mountain and watch the fight. We will not get involved in it."

Gu Shao and Yu Qin were full of hatred and certainly had some

other plans. They looked at Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing and nodded, implicating that they wanted to leave the Snow Dragon Island right away.

But, right at this time, an unusual phenomenon happened in the sky.

A strange beast with flames all over its body slowly descended from the sky. That beast was as big as a small mountain, its body was sturdy, and its gestures was magnificent.

“Flame Unicorn!” Gu Shao screamed out with his shocked face. “Tang YuanNan is here.”

The Snow Dragon Island’s weather was usually very cool but became hotter after the Flame Unicorn came. Thick frozen snow on the peak of the Snow Dragon Mountain started to melt. White fogs dispersed and gathered up in the sky.

The level-eight Flame Unicorn was the mount of the Hierarch in power of the Three Gods Sect, the Sun God Tang YuanNan.

Di Shan harrumphed, raised his head looking at the Flame Unicorn which was slowly descending with an unjoyful face.

Gu Shao’s and Yu Qin’s faces were shocked. They felt a little bit more powerful when the Flame Unicorn had appeared. However, they realized that there seemed to be no one riding on the Flame Unicorn.

“What?” Gu Shao and Yu Qin were amazed, released their soul consciousness to check and discovered that the Flame Unicorn came here alone. The Hierarch in power, Tang YuanNan of the Three Gods Sect, didn’t show up.

“Who is in charge here?” A powerful and rude voice echoed from the Flame Unicorn. This level-eight beast could open its mouth and speak the human language. Flames rose inside its big pupils. The scorching aura on its body was like the condensed sunlight.

“It’s me.” Shi Yan raised his head and smiled.

“Was the information that was delivered to the Three Gods Sect from you?” The Flame Unicorn asked.

“Yeah.” Shi Yan nodded his head.

“The Hierarch has satisfied your request and willingly hand over five islands. Moreover, the Hierarch hope that you can visit our headquarters. He said that he has something important to discuss with you. That is the invitation card.”

When the solemn voice of the Flame Unicorn still echoed through the entire island, a splendid yellow card from the sky slowly floated down on the ground in front of Shi Yan.

“OK. Please tell your Hierarch that we will pay the headquarters of the Three Gods Sect a visit.”

Shi Yan lifted the corner of his mouth, revealing a smile, looking towards Gu Shao and Yu Qin who were indescribably panicked and said, “Tang YuanNan is summoning all the high-class warriors from everywhere to gather in the Three Gods Sect. You guys should also be invited. We will meet again in a few days.”

Gu Shao and Yu Qin exchanged glances, seeing the incomprehensive look in each other’s eyes.

“Seven days later, the top-class warriors from everywhere will gather at the headquarters of the Sect. Don’t be late.” The Flame Unicorn transmitted the last message and then slowly leaped up and left.

Shi Yan nodded with a cold smile and said, “I won’t send you off then.”

“Did you also contact Tang YuanNan?” Gu Shao’s face was full of astonishment. “ Even Tang YuanNan had gotten intimidated by you?

“Intimidate?” Shi Yan shook his head. “Not that intimidated. It is just a cooperation. They are much more open-minded than you. After I’ve told them the pros and cons, although I don’t have any

of their weaknesses at hand, they are still willing to hand over the five islands to me. Compared to Tang YuanNan, the two of you are very stingy. No wonder why you guys are not as strong as the Three Gods Sect. That has a reason indeed.”

Gu Shao’s face looked very unpleasant.

“Alright. We will meet again in seven days.” Shi Yan mumbled. “By that time, if you have any suggestions, you can bring it up. But, if you don’t keep your words, hahaha, you know how people can do anything if they get irritated.”

Gu Shao and Yu Qin were extremely indignant. They glared at Shi Yan with an annoyed look, harrumphed coldly before leaping up, bringing Gu Ling Lung, Qu Yan Qing, and the other people along.

“Take your time; I won’t send you off.”

Chapter 289: Shi Yan's request

The Wind Cloud Island.

“If it continues like this, things will get worse for sure.” Xia RuiXing's face was somber. He was standing on a bare mountain, slightly bending down towards the Headman Xia ShenChuan then said, “These uncultivated islands don't have any mineral springs nor herbal mountains. The Sky and Earth aura are diluted which is not suitable for warriors to cultivate. Our cultivation cannot be improved at all if we live here.”

Ten subordinate high-class warriors of the Xia family were surrounding Xia ShenChuan. Most of them were at the Nirvana Realm. They all showed their consent in silence.

“The Xia family is one of the fifteen big forces of the Endless Sea anyway. As we have recently declined this much, it is tough to stand.” One high-class warrior said with a low voice. “Master, the Xia family is in the most critical and dangerous situation. Please come up with a solution soon.

“Taking Xia Xinyan's whole life's happiness to exchange for the Xia family's stability is very adequate.” Xia RuiXing nodded and said. “Master, being a daughter of the Xia family, she is supposed to sacrifice herself for the family. Thus, Xia Xinyan can't refuse this duty. If I had an eligible daughter like this, I wouldn't have hesitated to offer my daughter!”

Xia RuiXing's words were so sharp as if they could cut through nails and irons.

The Xia family's five Sky Realm elderly warriors with snow-white hair were standing behind Xia RuiXing. All of them contemplated and didn't utter a word.

“Nirvana Realm already.” Xia ShenChuan's countenance was not quite good. He coldly swept his eyes over everyone then finally

turned his head and slightly bent down to ask the five elders of the Xia family, “Five elders, Xia Xinyan is the hope of the Xia family. With her realm improvement, her cultivation will definitely surpass all of ours in the future. If she stays with the Xia family, we will have a chance to rebel again. But, if she is given in marriage to a force with bad intentions, her life will probably be wastefully destroyed.”

“The Endless Sea’s situation could be changed just in a blink of an eye. Now, the Demon Dwellers have massively intruded. I am afraid we can’t wait that long.” Xia RuiXing also bent down respectfully towards a short, fat elder with many wrinkles and said. “Great elder, if the Xia family doesn’t display any demeanors, I think we will soon decline. According to the current situation, we have to unite with other forces; otherwise, we will either be killed by the Demon Dwellers or become the sacrificed object of the other forces.”

“Xia RuiXing also got the point.” The great elder gently nodded.

Xia ShenChuan’s face slightly changed.

“Swoosh.”

A blue figure zoomed towards them from a distance then appeared in the middle of these people in a blink.

“If you insist on sacrificing me, I will leave the Xia family.” Xia Xinyan’s face was cold; her manner was as if she had willingly ruptured the relationship with those people.

“Rubbish!” Xia ShenChuan shouted frigidly and annoyedly, “You have no right to get involved in the main matters of the family. No matter what decision the family makes, you are not allowed to give any judgment.”

“Father!” Xia Xinyan was in extreme rage. “This is the major matter of my entire life. I’m not going to allow you to decide for me carelessly.”

“Is it because of the little rascal Shi Yan?” Xia RuiXing smiled coldly, “Xia Xinyan, you should understand the situation. I remember that you used to sacrifice everything for this family. Why have you changed since you’ve met that little rascal? The Yang family is done, the Kyara Sea has lost. Shi Yan in the Chasm Battlefield could hardly avoid death. So, why do you need to be persistent and miserable only because of one dead man?”

Xia Xinyan’s eyebrows slammed together; her eyes shot out murderous aura. “Who said he’s dead?”

She continued after harrumphing, “Even if you are dead, he will not be!”

“Sass!” Xia RuiXing’s face turned purple with rage. He immediately talked to the five elders, “Elders, as you can see, this girl has betrayed us. Our headman is even nothing in her eyes. If this thing continues to be like this, I am afraid no one can control her. If so, it’s better to give her away in marriage.”

After hearing those words, the five elders of Xia family contemplated and considered carefully.

“You go get married if you want.” Xia Xinyan even didn’t want to open her mouth. She glanced at Xia ShenChuan for a while and said, “Father, I’ll go now.”

“Don’t mess around anymore.” Xia ShenChuan knitted his eyebrows while saying unhappily, “Things haven’t been finalized yet.”

“Forgive me, may I have a word?” At this time, all of a sudden, Zhou Yu slightly bent down towards the five elders to conduct the decency before speaking, “Although the Yang Tian Emperor has been confined in the Fourth Demon Area, no one can prove that he has been killed there. Everyone knows how dangerous the Yang Tian Emperor’s bloodlines are. If he is not dead even for one day, the Yang family can easily have a way to make a comeback. You all know the Yang Tian Emperor’s personality, so should we consider

it carefully?”

“Consider?” Xia RuiXing revealed a cold smile, “It’s hard for Yang Tian Emperor to get out of the Fourth Demon Area alive. Even if he can escape, he can’t trouble the Xia family just because of that Shi Yan. That little rascal is just an abandoned child whom the Yang family had picked up in the middle of nowhere. How many effects can he have?”

“This is also true.” Some of the Xia family’s elders gently nodded after thinking for a while.

The situation was tense and unsolved. The group of Xia ShenChuan and Zhou Yu was persistent with their own opinions. The other group of Xia RuiXing kept fuzzing about, asking Xia Xinyan to sacrifice herself.

Those people of the Xia family on the island clattered nonstop, which was not easy to stop shortly.

Xia Xinyan wanted to leave many times but was stopped by Xia ShenChuan. Because of the love for her father as well as being afraid of her father who probably had encountered a subservient situation, she couldn’t help but stay observing in silence.

“Someone is coming.” After half an hour of discussing without any positive results, Xia ShenChuan suddenly sensed something. He raised his head looking up to the sky with a suspicious face.

“Swoosh swoosh swoosh.”

The sound and figure were piercing the air and dashing forward with a fast speed from a distance. While the Xia family’s people were still in an incomprehensive daze, Gu ZhengYang of the Gu family and Yue Feng of the Heaven Lake Divine Land appeared in front of those people together.

The people of the Xia family immediately shut up, staring at Gu ZhengYang and Yue Feng with a strange look.

Last time, these two people had brought Gu Yu and Feng Hai here

to seek a marriage alliance but then deterrently left in the end. And now, three days later, here they were. That made the Xia family's people more cautious. They didn't know of their intentions; thus, they were a little worried.

“What brings you two here this time?” Zhou Yu frowned while asking.

Gu Yu and Feng Hai had very bizarre countenances. They walked over to Xia ShenChuan, bent down to conduct their decency. Then, each of them took out a letter from their pockets and respectfully handed them over to Xia ShenChuan.

Xia ShenChuan received the letters with suspicion; his face turned somber.

“What are your intentions?” Xia ShenChuan harrumphed. “Is this the dowry? Haven't I accepted your request yet? Each of your families will give five resourceful islands. If this is the dowry, you are generous, but ...”

“Each family will hand over five islands?!” Xia RuiXing's eyes brightened, she couldn't help but slightly shout out with a happy face.

The five elders of the Xia family were quietly jubilant as well, looking towards Xia Xinyan with an implicating look.

Xia Xinyan vaguely felt that something was not right. She was resentful and was prepared to leave at any given time.

“Headman of Xia family, you've misunderstood us.” Gu ZhengYang shook his head and forced a miserable smile. “I have followed my father's order to give you these islands without any other intentions.”

Yue Feng also nodded, implicating that the Heaven Lake Divine Land was also of the same stance.

“When did your families suddenly become so conscientious?” Xia ShenChuan coldly smiled. “But I can't accept it easily like this. I

don't know that if I keep these letters, what is going to happen. You should take them back.”

Gu Zheng Yang and Yue Feng exchanged glances with each other; their faces displayed an abundance of shame. They felt humiliated although they wanted to explain.

“What happened after all?” The Headman Xia ShenChuan looked at these two guys and said, “According to what I understand about your two leaders, they won't just causelessly hand over these islands. If I remember well, these ten islands make up all the resources of your two families. If it were me, I would not easily give them to someone else.”

“Can we not tell you the reasons?” Yue Feng said with a forced, miserable smile.

“Without the reasons, I will not accept it.” Xia ShenChuan shook his head.

“Alright.” Yue Feng released a sigh and said reluctantly, “Our Divine Mother and the headman of the Gu family have compensated those islands for the Yang family. In fact, these islands are supposed to be given to Shi Yan, but he is persistent to ask us to hand them over to you. Therefore, we come here to hand over these islands.”

All the people of Xia family were dumbstruck.

“What... what did you say?” Xia RuiXing's expression was like he didn't dare to believe it. He said, “Haven't you been mistaken? If I understand it right, you said Shi Yan has threatened the two of you and forced each of you to hand over five islands? He ... what did he threaten you with? How could he do that?”

Xia ShenChuan kept chucking his tongue and shaking his head. He obviously didn't believe what he'd just heard.

“Our Divine Mother and the headman of the Gu family had gone to the Snow Dragon Island together to see Shi Yan of the Yang

family. After that, they had ordered us to give these islands to the Xia family.” Yue Feng bowed his head dolefully, paused a little bit before continuing, “Not only the Heaven Lake Divine Land and the Gu family, but I’ve heard that Tang YuanNan of the Three Gods Sect has also fulfilled Shi Yan’s request, handing over five islands of theirs.”

The Xia family’s goggled to the extreme.

“Xinyan.” Xia ShenChuan’s visage was very bizarre, looking at Xia Xinyan in panic. “That little rascal, he has such powerful capacities like this?”

Xia Xinyan was a little amazed; she shook her head and said, “It’s been a very long time since I had last met him. I don’t know either.”

“Xinyin, Uncle Zhou is impressed.” Zhou Yu released a sigh. “It seems that no one in the Xia family has keen eyes but you.”

The five elders of the Xia family also nodded quietly and complimented her altogether with delight faces.

“That’s it.” Gu Zheng Yang bent down with an amicable manner. “I hope that you will quickly inform Shi Yan that you’ve received the islands to avoid the mistakenness. My father has told me not to let him have any misunderstandings. You have to tell him that we haven’t threatened you with anything.”

Xia RuiXing nodded as if he had lost his soul. It seemed like he was dreaming right now.

“You have to inform Shi Yan to avoid any misunderstandings.” Yue Feng had also reminded again before leaving.

Xia Xinyan looked like she had gotten lost in a mist of clouds. What did Shi Yan do to have dominated Gu Shao and Yu Qin who were famous for being stingy?!

Chapter 290: Dragon Horn Clan - Ma Qi Jie

Snowflakes were scattering about, and the wind could chill an unsuspecting person to the bone. Snow blanketed the peaks of the mountains with a white coat. The icicles were pellucid and sparkling. Under the sunlight, they looked like splendid sharp swords.

At the foot of the mountain, houses were covered with a thick layer of ice. On the awnings of the houses, there remained many long icicles.

Inside the four-story house, He Qing Man was wearing a snow fox-feather coat, subconsciously rubbed her palms and then blew out a small flow of warm air. She then mumbled, "Why did the weather suddenly become so cold without any warnings?"

There were only three people left in the house right now, including Pan Zhe, He Qing Man, and Cao Zhi Lan. The other people had either left with Gu Shao and Yu Qin or been kicked out of the house according to Shi Yan's orders.

Pan Zhe in a thick feather coat looked up to the mountain peak that reached the sky. He spoke up while his eyebrows were knitted tightly. "Since last night, the temperature on the island has continually been decreasing for unknown reasons. It's peculiar."

Cao Zhi Lan's face, on the contrary, was very calm. She even revealed a faint smile. "It is surely related to Shi Yan. The temperature cannot just naturally decrease this fast. I don't know what they did to make this island to have become peculiar like this."

"Miss Cao, you assume that Shi Yan is more outstanding than other men that you have ever met before?" He Qing Man retracted her neck into the snow fox-feather coat. Her eyes were looking at Cao Zhi Lan suspiciously. "You should know that the Yang family and we are still enemies."

Pan Zhe looked at Cao Zhi Lan bewilderedly and incomprehensively. He also tried to listen in to the conversation.

“Of course.” Cao Zhi Lan nodded with a smile. She didn’t try to hide her applause for Shi Yan. Her eyes radiated a strange light, “When he was at the Disaster Realm, he could already resist one full-power seven-sword strike of Gu-xiao mei (Chinese way to call a little younger sister) and didn’t lose his ground. In the Chasm Battlefield, only after two years, he had entered the Earth Realm from the Disaster Realm; and now, he is at the Peak Earth Realm. This fast improvement is tremendous. Besides, his relations with the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race is out of our imagination. Regardless of how you speculate, you can’t imagine that the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race obey his commands.”

Those words of Cao Zhi Lan had been hidden deep inside her for a very long time without being disclosed once.

Cao Zhi Lan was better at observing than the others. In the abandoned land, she had soon realized that the attitudes of the pagan leaders Yi Tian Mo, Di Shan, and Yu Rou towards Shi Yan had substantially changed. Before leaving the abandoned land, she had even found out that Di Shan and Yu Rou seemed to follow Shi Yan’s orders.

That discovery had frightened her very much. Although she didn’t know what had happened among Shi Yan, Di Shan, and Yu Rou, she knew for sure that Shi Yan had these two big pagan tribes in his palm.

The Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race had five God Realm masters, together with a big number of Sky Realm and Nirvana warriors. This force was strong enough to be able to change the entire situation of the Endless Sea.

Given the situation in which the Demon Dwellers were intruding everywhere, this force actually could affect the final fighting

results of the entire Endless Sea.

As having seen through this point, Cao Zhi Lan proactively proposed to get married to Shi Yan without being ashamed. She wanted to use her own beauty and her background forces to bind Shi Yan with her tightly, creating a firm foundation for the Cao family's future.

Regretfully, her plan went to the bottom of the sea.

It seemed like Cao Zhi Lan had just remembered something as she quietly smiled and shook her head. Her beautiful eyes were full of excitements. "It is getting more and more interesting indeed. Just wait and see, I will make him kneel down underneath my dress." Cao Zhi Lan thought to herself and curled up her lips with confidence. "That guy is definitely fooling around. It is also weird that the temperature is decreasing this fast."

Ya Meng's face was frigid; he launched a horrendous strike on top of the icicle next to him. The huge and rough crest of the icicle, which looked like an enormous stone pillar supporting the sky, turned into ice rubble tumbling down.

"If it continues like this, all the plants on this island will be frozen to death. Even some of my Nirvana Realm people can't stand it anymore, and they have to wear more clothes. People who are below the Nirvana Realm have temporarily evacuated to another area. If the island keeps getting colder, we eventually have to move to the other place." Yi Tian Mo's countenance was somber, his eyebrows knitted tightly. His soul consciousness kept searching under the Snow Dragon Mountain but wasn't able to locate anything.

Di Shan's and Yu Rou's faces had also exposed their worries. Their soul cultivation was limited, and thus, they could find nothing.

Shi Yan was standing in among the five leaders. He said with a low voice, "We have to come up with a solution indeed. The

gathering at the Three Gods Sect's headquarters is coming closer. If the abnormal situation on this island can't be solved, I won't feel at ease to leave."

"That fellow is extremely cunning, hiding discretely. I can vaguely sense it a little bit but hardly able to lock on it." Yi Tian Mo shook his head and didn't know what else to do.

"It seems that we have to try our secret scriptures." Ka Ba contemplated for a while before speaking.

Ya Meng's and Yi Tian Mo's eyes brightened.

"What secret scripture?" Shi Yan was amazed and surprisingly asked, "Do you have a secret scripture that can be of use for real?"

Ka Ba nodded respectfully and said, "The three of us cultivate different spiritual Upanishads. Yi Tian Mo focuses on soul controlling, and Ya Meng focuses on soul attacking, while I specialize in soul diffusing. I used to cultivate a secret scripture named Leading Soul Guiding Gods. Using this scripture can connect my soul with the souls of other people, and thus my sense power will significantly increase. If Ya Meng, Yi Tian Mo and I unite with each other, our soul power can cover the entire Hengluo Sea. If we concentrate carefully, we can discover even the smallest soul fluctuations surrounding us."

"Does this secret scripture have any side effects?" Shi Yan instinctively asked. Ka Ba had the secret scripture but hadn't used it before. It meant that this kind of scripture was not as simple as what he had just said.

"The conjoint soul is very dangerous. If the performer is careless, his soul will be scattered." Ka Ba nodded with a forced smile. "The soul force of each of us isn't much different from each other, but our auras have big differences. Once we conduct this scripture, we absolutely can't be affected by any other forces. Otherwise, the souls of the three of us will possibly become chaotic or be interchanged with each other."

“Exchange souls?” Shi Yan shouted.

“Yes, there might be a situation where my host soul enters Ya Meng’s body, and then Ya Meng’s host soul will penetrate my body. Once our souls are exchanged, if we can’t change them back to the original host body in seven days, we have to accept the tragic reality.” Ka Ba seriously said.

“Master, you let our people guard around. If no force penetrates this place, or no soul recklessly comes close, there won’t be too many possible dangers.” Yi Tian Mo wasn’t too worried. “The three of us will carry out the soul connection very quickly. Once our host souls can connect to each other, it’s not that hard to find the life underneath. You only need to be more careful while we are performing. There shouldn’t be any problems.”

“That’s how it is?” Shi Yan nodded then looked at Di Shan and Yu Rou and said with a smile, “There won’t be any big problems?”

“No, there will not.” Di Shan and Yu Rou nodded at the same time.

Ka Ba’s face was excited, he said decisively, “Let’s begin!”

After saying that, Ka Ba sat down neatly first, Ya Meng and Yi Tian Mo also found a place next to him to sit. The three of them formed a triangle; their palms were placed against the others’. They started to use the secret scripture Leading Soul Guiding Gods of the Demonic Sound Clan.

Each flow of the mysterious soul fluctuations was suddenly emitted from their bodies. These fluctuations were very violent and created visible waves in the middle of the air. These waves rippled like the water surface and slowly spread outwards.

Shi Yan’s face was dazed.

His Sea of Consciousness was like it had entered the ocean, becoming a lonely leaf floating on the water. His host soul and the five Devils in the Sea of Consciousness also swung nonstop. Being

affected by the soul fluctuations of Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng, he felt that his soul was no longer under his control.

On the contrary, Di Shan and Yu Rou were still unharmed.

Yu Rou noticed Shi Yan's abnormal change. As she seemed to have felt something, she quietly swung her arm and drew a dazzling white halo covering his entire body.

After that halo had covered his body, his Sea of Consciousness and host soul instantly stopped swaying. Everything returned to its normal status.

“With just the remnant of the soul fluctuations, they can still affect my Sea of Consciousness this much. The soul competencies of these three guys are really good.” After taking a deep breath, Shi Yan smiled and said. “If things keep following this way, when the soul fluctuations are successively transmitted into the earth, the life that is hiding there will be disclosed.”

Di Shan and Yu Rou nodded simultaneously. Their faces were getting more cautious, looking out at every direction. They were afraid that there would be someone coming close at this critical moment.

... ..

At the northernmost point of the Kyara Sea, on a denuded and deserted island, the dazzling sunlight was hindered by the devilish auras which were as dense as the black clouds.

Inside a mountain cave on this island, a bunch of mighty Demon Dwellers, who had three-meter-tall bodies, dark blue skin, single horns on their heads, together with peculiar weapons made out of white bones in their hands, were kneeling down on the ground.

On a platform, which was created by piling up bloody bones, a hefty three-and-a-half-meter-tall guy with a curved buffalo-like horn on his head was sitting up straight.

He was bare from the waist up. Finger-size green veins massively

emerged like worms slowly creeping on his body. He looked very ferocious.

Earth-shaking murderous auras like undispersed smoke hovered around him.

This guy's face was filled with numerous interlaced scars which looked like the lines of a human palm.

With a quick glance, this guy looked like a devil crawling from the Nine Serenities Hell with full of heinous crimes. His dark blue eyes shot out a horrendous brutal aura.

“Patriarch, all the Dragon Horn Clan's people have already assembled. They are waiting for your commands.” Below the bone platform, one guy of the Dragon Horn Clan was loudly reporting; his bloodthirsty face was very excited.

On the bone platform, the patriarch of the Dragon Horn Clan, one of the Demon Masters of the Fourth Demon Area – Ma Qi Jie, was about to say something but suddenly sensed something else.

His dark blue eyes were as if they were advancing through thousands of rivers and mountains, piercing straightforward towards an icy snow island.

“Conjoint Soul!” Ma Qi Jie shouted; his eyes displayed an extreme fear. “The Demonic Sound Clan disappeared a long time ago. They were one of the four big branches of the Dark Dwellers. How come they have appeared at the Kyara Sea all of a sudden?”

Chapter 291: Looking at each other from a space distance.

“Master Ma Qi Jie!” An ear-splitting shriek came out from a thick layer of black cloud in the sky. A Demon Dweller with only one eye appeared from inside those devilish clouds. His face was full of green patterns; his body was as skinny as a thin bamboo which continuously flashed on and off inside the cloud layers.

“Patriarch, when can we depart?” That one-eyed Demon Dweller showed the respect on his face, clasping his hands in front of his chest while appearing inside the thick devilish clouds.

“Tell Xie Yan to wait there.”

Ma Qi Jie raised his head howling loudly. A flow of evil auras dashed straight through the cloud layers tremendously, making that pagan Xie Yan spinning nonstop within the devilish clouds. He could only stabilize his body after a long while and then glided away with a miserable face. He had instantly disappeared without leaving a single trace.

Ma Qi Jie harrumphed coldly, sat down stately on the bone platform and suddenly swung his arm launching forth a strike into the air.

A black surge of lightning was then shot out from the void.

Time and space seemed to be torn apart. Skulls that were freckled with blood gradually emerged. These skulls all had different sorts of shapes which had been collected from many different races. The pupils of many of these skulls were still very lively; some of the skulls still had their scalps attached to it, which seemed to be broken off from many of the people’s necks not that long ago.

A bunch of skulls that were dripping with blood were moving behind Ma Qi Jie like a halo of the Buddha.

Many streams of vicious black smoke rose up from the empty sockets of hundreds of bloody skulls and then seeped into Ma Qi Jie's ears like devilish souls without leaving any visible traces.

Ma Qi Jie's crazy black eyes gradually became transparent and seemingly contained an endless amount of accumulated soul powers.

“Devil Transparent Eyes!”

Ma Qi Jie's hands clasped in front of his chest while his eyes closed tightly. Hundreds of skulls had suddenly stopped moving.

A bundle of black lights flew out from Ma Qi Jie's nape slicing through the air, passing billions of miles and soon disappeared without leaving any known traces.

The Snow Dragon Island.

Di Shan, Yu Rou, and Shi Yan were standing in three separated directions behind Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng. They all looked serious and cautious.

The dazzling lights had formed a visible halo that covered the top of the six people's heads and the entire surrounding area.

Many beams of the condensed pure powers were constantly shooting out from the ten fingers of Di Shan and Yu Rou, aiming towards the curtain of lights in the sky to increase and stabilize the defensive forces so that these forces were able to prevent all kinds of movements.

Three minutes had passed.

The three souls of Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng were connecting to each other to perform the Leading Soul Guiding Gods of the Demonic Sound Clan. This technique would use their souls as a conducting path to search for the anomalies underneath the earth of the Snow Dragon Island. They obviously wanted to

locate the elusive peculiar life which was hiding there.

Those rippling waves of forces were marvelous. Wherever they had suffused, the beating melody of the earth also got affected as well.

Under those waves, even the movements of a tiny worm creeping under thousands of miles deep inside the Earth would be countlessly amplified.

Ka Ba's eyebrows tightly knitted as he seemed to have found something out and thus, revealed a cold smile.

Shi Yan's face was then excited. He patiently waited for the news.

After having a quick glance, Di Shan and Yu Rou were focusing intensively, releasing more of their powers towards the curtain of lights above their heads to prevent any unexpected events.

A cold wind appeared in the bright and clear sky all of a sudden that made the sun at noon seem to be weakened a lot.

Thick black clouds from nowhere dispersed throughout the sky, completely covering all of the sunlight.

The Snow Dragon Island was originally freezing. However, right now, even the sun couldn't be seen, and thus, it became gloomier and more glacial.

Many people of the Demonic Sound Clan felt that the freeze was being absorbed into their bodies; they thus couldn't help but violently clatter.

As the black clouds reached the mountain peak, a flow of powerful devilish aura dispersed out from everywhere.

Di Shan's face changed in panic. He subconsciously looked up to the sky with a frightened light in his eyes.

Yu Rou's delicate body had also trembled a little bit. She had also sensed something and thus said, "This power is impetuous. This person's cultivation is extremely profound."

“Demon Dwellers!” Di Shan slowly nodded with a confused face. “We finally meet.”

After being in a daze, Yu Rou seemed to remember something but then shook her head, released a sigh and said, “We can’t avoid confrontation with him although we don’t want it. Hmm, I don’t know if that guy still recognizes us or not?”

Di Shan’s face was somber, and he didn’t reply.

Shi Yan was standing behind Yi Tian Mo, quietly listening to the conversation between Di Shan and Yu Rou. His countenance became strange with many thoughts coming across his mind.

At this moment, a big eye appeared amid the thick black clouds in the sky, inside of which emerged a clear scene: an isolated island with dense devilish clouds, a platform made of blood and bones, a sturdy mighty person with a curved horn on his head and hundreds of motionless bloody skulls behind that person.

The bone platform was packed to the brim with the Dragon Horn Clan’s people. Their eyes were all bloodthirsty and excited. They couldn’t help but lick the corner of their mouths like wild beasts eagerly being about to get out of the cage.

In the huge eye, the scene was very legible, even countless scars on the face of the man who was sitting on the bone platform could be seen.

“The Wings Race!” The mighty person inside the eye suddenly howled a thunderbolt sound and stood up at the same time, displaying his increasing agitation. He couldn’t help but raise his head while crazily laughing.

From inside of the eye, he pointed to Di Shan and Yu Rou and then screamed, “I am the patriarch, Ma Qi Jie of the Dragon Horn Clan, one of the eight clans of the Demon Dwellers. Your Wings Race was originally one of the eight clans of the Demon Dwellers. Regardless of where you were from, you should unite with us in

spirits and efforts for the Demon Dwellers' great matter of reunification, for the Demon Dwellers' eternal suzerainty which is to wipe out all of the Endless Sea's obstacles, establishing the foundations for the Demon Master to arrive."

Shi Yan's imposing body couldn't help but shake violently; his eyes suddenly shot out an unimaginable light.

"From thousands of years ago, our Wings Race had soon separated from the Demon Area. When we were confined in the abandoned land and had almost perished, we didn't get any help from the Demon Area. Since then, the Wings Race had no longer belonged to the Demon Area nor followed any commands of the Demon Masters." Di Shan raised his head looking up to the sky and said with a somber face.

"Sass!" Ma Qi Jie inside the eye was very angry, howling loudly and jumping up. His sturdy, powerful muscular body seemingly wanted to explode. Green veins of his half naked top vibrated constantly, horrendous auras from inside the eye wanted to fly out striking the others' faces.

"Being one of the eight clans of the Demon Dwellers, your Wings Race must follow the commands of the Demon Masters as long as you are still alive. Although you are not in the Demon Area, you still have to conduct yourselves decently and submit as soon as you receive the Demon Masters' orders." Ma Qi Jie was standing on the bone platform, growling, and roaring. Hundreds of motionless skulls started moving.

Each shining black light was shot out from the sockets of hundreds of those skulls, passing the distance, advancing towards the Snow Dragon Island through that big floating eye.

"You have just brought disgrace upon yourselves."

Di Shan's eyes were frigid, his black wings suddenly stretched out, projecting a huge black wave.

Numerous shining lights showered downwards but were all swept up and was completely swallowed up by Di Shan's black wave.

Ma Qi Jie was growling and howling crazily on the bone platform; the devilish aura was sky-scraping. However, he couldn't directly take action, the different kinds of his attacks from the eye were useless and were not even enough to scratch Di Shan's itches.

"The Demon Masters will soon know of the appearance of the Wings Race. You wait and see." After howling angrily for a long while, Ma Qi Jie knew that he couldn't harm Di Shan; thus, he just stood on the bone platform and coldly intimidated Di Shan. "The Demonic Sound Clan, one of the four big branches of the Dark Dwellers, Avi Dark King will be soon informed about this as well. By that time, let's see you how you can deal with it." Ma Qi Jie shrieked out loud, slowly retreating his forces.

The floating eye became smaller little by little. The black clouds that were covering the sky of the Snow Dragon Island started dispersing and dissolving gradually.

The last investigating flow of the soul forces spread out from the eye, covering the entire surrounding area of Di Shan and Yu Rou and then seemingly tried to remember the aura on each of their bodies.

This investigating flow of soul forces did not have any violent, attacking powers. Instead, it was merely a sensing power.

This flow of power coated the entire area, including Shi Yan. He immediately felt that his soul was being explored.

His Sea of Consciousness surged up uncontrollably. His host soul inside the Sea of Consciousness lightly swayed while the soul stream from the host soul quietly emitted several beams of forces which then rolled into the Sea of Consciousness.

The eye in the sky gradually faded away and eventually turned

into a bundle of black lights, flying tens of thousands of miles away.

On the bone platform.

Ma Qi Jie stretched out his arms; soul lights which were like streams of black water pouring down into his palms from the sky. He started to sense these lights.

“What?” Ma Qi Jie’s eyebrows were tightly slammed together. He carefully sensed the exploring soul forces which had been retreated and then vaguely realized a flow of a familiar aura. “This soul aura, I’ve met it before ...”

Ma Qi Jie had a suspicious feeling, mused in silence for a while but still couldn’t figure out whom that soul aura belonged to.

After a long moment, Ma Qi Jie shook his head and stopped investigating any further. Instead, he gradually leaped up from the bone platform and howled, “Find Xia Yan for me!”

A multitude of the Dragon Horn Clan’s people excitedly growled in response. They eagerly followed Ma Qi Jie, holding different kinds of sabers on which blood was still dripping down as if those sabers had been used to cut the chicken’s heads off recently.

On the Snow Dragon Island.

Shi Yan stabilized his surging Sea of Consciousness; his face looked a little strange. He wondered if Ma Qi Jie had discovered his existence or not.

Previously, he had almost captured Ma Qi Jie’s soul by using the Soul Gathering Pearl. At that time, Ma Qi Jie had said that he would let him suffer all the Demon Area’s tortures sooner or later and had sworn not to let go of this promise.

Even the Demon Master Bo Xun seemed to have paid attention to him as well as remembering his soul.

When Ma Qi Jie’s true body had entered the Endless Sea this

time, he was now an earth-shaking murderous evil and no longer a descended soul like before.

Ma Qi Jie was now harder to handle hundreds of times than before. Although the Soul Gathering Pearl had returned to its normal status, Shi Yan couldn't use it to deal with Ma Qi Jie. That Ma Qi Jie entered this world, together with his forces, wasn't something that ordinary people could have resisted.

Ma Qi Jie's exploring soul flow had swept over Shi Yan's body. If Ma Qi Jie could discover his origin through that flow of soul aura, Shi Yan was afraid that Ma Qi Jie would get crazy and go straight to the Snow Dragon Island to immediately kill him.

"Hard times are coming." Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows, his face then became grave.

Chapter 292: Holy Spirit God

While Shi Yan said nothing, Di Shan, and Yu Rou, on the contrary, had displayed feelings of insecurity.

They hadn't explicitly told Shi Yan about the age-long problem that was related to the Wings Race, the Demonic Sound Clan, the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers. Just after Ma Qi Jie had appeared from out of nowhere, he had already pointed out their relationships. That had made Di Shan, and Yu Rou feel a little bit embarrassed, they didn't know how to explain this to Shi Yan.

"Master, this is ..." Yu Rou hesitated for a while. She finally spoke up after receiving Di Shan's signal. "We were a branch of the Demon Area from the ancient times. However, it has been a very long time since we have all seen the Demon Dwellers even once. We even thought that they already probably had forgotten about us."

Shi Yan suddenly woke up from his meditation.

He was startled as he saw the two of them being worried. He immediately understood why they were having such feelings of awkwardness, so he shook his head with a smile and said, "No need to explain. Your past is from thousands of years ago. Some things should be forgotten after such a long time. No worries, the past relationships between you and the Demon Dwellers will not bother me even a bit."

Yu Rou and Di Shan had exchanged with one another an astonished and unbelievable look.

"In fact, since we were still in the abandoned land, I had figured out that you were somehow related to the Demon Dwellers." Shi Yan said with a faint smile. "When Yi Tian Mo and I had a discussion about the Endless Sea, we had somehow mentioned of the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers. By that time, as I had noticed that Yi Tian Mo's face became strange, I have already had

some doubts. However, after having thought about it over and over, I felt that it was not a problem at all. If you unite with the Demon Dwellers and the Dark Dwellers, I have no way to prevent it except for leaving. In my opinion, it is the best if the Endless Sea's situation can progress as for how I expect it to be. However, the reality is not so. At the most, I can only run away, which is not a big deal."

Shi Yan didn't originally belong to the Endless Sea nor this world. He had never felt too attached to any places.

He had come to the Endless Sea from the Merchant Union to borrow the Yan family's forces to increase his strength to the max, which had allowed him to enter the new realm with the fastest speed.

For the Yang's, although he was favorably disposed towards them, it was not too much so that he would risk his life.

Anyway, he was not the son of Yang Hai. He didn't even bother whether the Yang Tian Emperor had favored him or not.

"I didn't expect that you were that open-minded." Yu Rou was surprised. She felt that Shi Yan was much more mysterious because an ordinary person would not be able to be that much tolerant.

"Later on, I don't want to bother you with commands in how to treat the Demon Dwellers. I will respect your intents." Shi Yan contemplated for a while before speaking. "But, when you make your decision, I hope you would let me know so that I can be well-prepared. That is not too much to ask of you all?"

"You have overthought," Di Shan slightly bent down while saying with a sincere voice, "As I have vowed to make you my Master, I will not betray nor be ungrateful to you. No matter how the future is, I will be on your side. Unless you die, I will never change."

Yu Rou also seriously displayed her determination in being loyal to him.

Shi Yan was in shock. He nodded quietly but didn't show any emotions.

"I understand." He forced a smile and spoke up after a while. "Perhaps Ma Qi Jie will soon come here with rage and consider me as his main target."

"What?" Di Shan and Yu Rou looked at him with doubts and didn't understand why he had said so.

"You will understand by that time." Shi Yan didn't explain more.

Suddenly, Ka Ba arched his eyebrows. His tightly closed eyes were now opened, shooting out splendid heavenly lights. Explicit vibrating souls were quietly retrieved. Yi Tian Mo's and Ya Meng's faces slightly changed. They quickly withdrew their soul consciousness as well. All the soul forces which had been released were temporarily retrieved to their Sea of Consciousness.

"Boom boom boom boom boom boom."

Suddenly, a chain of explosive sounds came out from underneath the Snow Dragon Mountain. The snow layer which was covering the mountain started to shake violently. The Sky and Earth aura rolled out massively.

The immense flushing white frost continued scattering outwards, spreading out the entire Snow Dragon Mountain just in a blink.

The Snow Dragon Mountain originally didn't have too much of the Sky and Earth aura. However, the aura was excessively overwhelming right now. The entire island instantly became vital. Although it was freezing, everyone felt joyful and comfortable as though they were in the center of a sacred area, enjoying the benefits of a miraculously precious cultivating location of the Endless Sea.

“Hey, I think the density of the aura here has surpassed the one that we had in our Evil Wonderland.” He Qing Man suddenly stood up by the window, inhaled the fresh air before speaking up with an agitated face.

Pan Zhe’s countenance had also changed in panic. He unbelievably watched the heavy Sky and Earth aura surrounding them. He instinctively compared it with the one in the Penglai Divine Land and realized that the aura here was not less than that of the Penglai Divine Island of the Penglai Divine Land.

This discovery had made him dazed without being able to think of anything. He raised his head looking towards the Snow Dragon Mountain where the aura was diffused.

“The dense aura like the white frost erupted just in a blink. This is a marvelous miracle.” Cao Zhi Lan’s mesmerizing face was also excited. “My anticipation is not wrong, indeed. This Shi Yan always has some unexpected deeds. I want to know what he has done after all to make this Snow Dragon Island have such earth-shaking transformations.”

After speaking, Cao Zhi Lan walked out of the house and then glided towards the Snow Dragon Mountain under the scattering snowflakes.

While she was still on her way, Cao Zhi Lan’s charming body suddenly shivered as her Spirit God Martial Spirit seemed to have discovered something.

She stopped in the middle of the air, closing her eyes; her wuthering eyelashes slightly trembled.

After a long moment, she opened her eyes which now glinted with splendid lights. She instantly dashed towards the mountain peak faster and faster.

“There, thousands of zhang underneath, that fellow is dwelling inside a huge Dragon Crystal chunk. That Dragon Crystal belongs

to the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon if I am not wrong. However, that fellow inside the Dragon Crystal chunk is not the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon. I have never experienced that fellow's aura before. It is exceptional." Ka Ba's breath gradually returned to normal. He had also retrieved all of his soul forces which had been launched earlier.

"As soon as it realized that we were approaching, it immediately took actions. It continually shot out countless icy soul arrows. Its shelter is extremely freezing. The souls of the three of us were greatly weakened when having arrived there. On the contrary, that fellow could not only absorb the Sky and Earth spiritual aura but could also condense and refine the soul arrows inside the Sky and Earth spiritual aura. That is very frightening. We can't do anything but retrieve our souls." Yi Tian Mo helplessly explained.

Shi Yan was astonished, abruptly sent out a message to the Ice Cold Flame. "Did you sense anything? Do you know who or what that fellow is after all?"

"I don't know what it is. But it is definitely not human," The Ice Cold Flame responded after a while, "According to the amount of the Sky and Earth spiritual aura which was erupting, it is obvious that this fellow not only can control the ice but he can also gather the Sky and Earth spiritual aura. That is not something that the Heaven Flames can do."

"What is it then?"

"I don't know."

"Pop pop."

The sound of the stomps on the snow came up from the underneath of the snow mountain.

Yi Tian Mo knitted his eyebrows then spoke to Shi Yan, "That is Cao Zhi Lan. When a big amount of the Sky and Earth aura had erupted from the inside of the earth, she was running here from

the foot of the mountain.”

Shi Yan frowned.

As Yi Tian Mo and the others didn't see Shi Yan taking any reactions, they didn't prompt anything and just waited in silence.

Not long after that, under the blowing wind and snow, Cao Zhi Lan, in a very thick velvet coat, gently arrived in front of Shi Yan.

“What do you come here for?” Shi Yan's face was calm while coldly looking at her. “I have warned you that you are not allowed to come up to this mountain peak freely. Don't you remember?”

“Yes, I do.” Cao Zhi Lan revealed a smile and gently replied without fear. “I have just discovered something, so I had to come to this mountain to inform you.”

“Discovered something?” Shi Yan's face was in shock.

Cao Zhi Lan slowly walked over and stood between Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan with a daring manner. “Do you feel strange as to why this mountain could have an eruption of such a big amount of the Sky and Earth aura? As I know that the Demonic Sound Clan has an incredibly profound soul competency, you have certainly found out something underneath the Snow Dragon Mountain. But, I bet that you don't know what it is.”

“Do you know?” Shi Yan was a little excited.

Cao Zhi Lan nodded and said with a smile, “I do know. In the Endless Sea, not that many people know of it. I am one of those people.”

“What is it?”

“If you agree to marry me, I will tell you.”

Di Shan's, Yu Rou's, and Ya Meng's eyes all flared up strange lights and surprisingly looked at Cao Zhi Lan.

Only Yi Tian Mo, who had seen Cao Zhi Lan's boldness, didn't show any changes after hearing of her request.

Shi Yan frowned. “It seems that you want to liquidate yourself that impatiently. You are that unsaleable?”

“Of course not.” Cao Zhi Lan revealed a big smile. “You can check to see how many men in the Endless Sea want to marry me. Hahaha, saying this may be a little arrogant, but I think that even your Xia Xinyan is not as popular as I am in the Endless Sea. Do you believe it?”

“Can you not waste more time?” Shi Yan’s face became somber; he annoyedly said, “If you don’t want to say it, you’d better go back down there. I am not free to talk to you.”

“I am just joking with you. You are too violent. You will bully me later for sure.” Cao Zhi Lan’s mesmerizing eyes glanced at Shi Yan.

“If I am not wrong, surely the fellow underneath the Snow Dragon Mountain is the former Holy Spirit God of the Holy Spirit Sect.

“Holy Spirit God?” Shi Yan didn’t understand anything. He tightly knitted his eyebrows. “Why do you say so? What is the Holy Spirit God? Why does it appear on the Snow Dragon Mountain? And one more thing, how do you know about this?”

“Holy Spirit God is the God who is worshiped by the Holy Spirit Sect. In fact, this God is not naturally genuine. Instead, the Holy Spirit Sect has used some anomalous methods to create it. The Holy Spirit God has a miraculous power to be able to control the Sky and Earth spiritual aura. Wherever it is, it will constantly attract the Sky and Earth spiritual aura from the adjacent areas then condense and refine it.” Cao Zhi Lan started to explain little by little.

Chapter 293: Spiritual Qi Bullets

On the snow mountain peak.

The group of Di Shan and Shi Yan was seriously and attentively listening to Cao Zhi Lan's explanation.

“Every Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect will choose a twins during his time of reign; one of them is appointed to be the next Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect, and the other one is nourished with a secret method. His spirit is then extracted out. By taking that spirit as a conductive object, together with the Holy Spirit Sect's anomalous method, they will create the 'Holy Spirit'. When the new Hierarch takes up the appointment, he will make the 'Holy Spirit' which has been created from his twin sibling the new Holy Spirit God of the Holy Spirit Sect, which receives the religious worships of all the disciples of the Holy Spirit Sect. Time after time, that Holy Spirit will have gradually gained the consciousness and spirit power, growing together with the Hierarch.

“The worshiping powers of the Holy Spirit Sect's principles will be poured into the Holy Spirit God, helping it possess a special ability to control and continuously gather the Sky and Earth spiritual aura. Thus, the Holy Spirit Sect's headquarters is the place that has the heaviest Sky and Earth aura in the Endless Sea.

“The Holy Spirit God and the Hierarch are twins, so their spirits are correlated. Whenever the Hierarch fights with anyone, he is always able to connect with the Holy Spirit God. Sometimes, at the critical moment, even at a distance of billions of miles, the Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect can still summon the Holy Spirit God to support him in the battle.

“With the Holy Spirit God at his side, the Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect can release the power which is three times stronger than usual and freely control the Sky and Earth aura of the

adjacent areas to disturb the enemy's Sea of Consciousness. It is very dangerous. That is also the time when the Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect is the most powerful. It can be said that the Holy Spirit God is the sharpest weapon of the Holy Spirit Sect's Hierarch.

“Besides, the Holy Spirit God has one special effect. In the legend, if the Hierarch reaches the Peak Third Sky of the Spirit Realm, he can swallow up the Holy Spirit God, which allows him to enter the True God Realm quickly. However, if he does so, the Holy Spirit God will disappear, its soul and spirit will both perish. Frankly saying, all of the former Holy Spirit Gods had been swallowed up like this. Its biggest value of existence is to help the Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect break through the wall of the True God Realm.

“Every Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect has one related Holy Spirit God. The Holy Spirit God of the current regime is still in the Holy Spirit Sect's headquarters. So, the Holy Spirit God underneath this Snow Dragon Mountain should be of the former regime.”

Cao Zhi Lan's voice was very pleasant to one's ears. She legibly told Shi Yan and the others her knowledge of the Holy Spirit God. After having heard that information, Shi Yan was shaken with his mouth and eyes wide opened. That was the first time he heard about this peculiar creature of the Holy Spirit Sect. Previously, he had only known that the Holy Spirit Sect was very mystical and that the Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect had cultivated some special secret methods. However, he didn't expect that there were so many secrets inside the Holy Spirit Sect.

“The former Holy Spirit God? Why had the Hierarch of the previous regime not swallowed it yet?” Yi Tian Mo asked with surprise.

“The previous Hierarch of the Holy Spirit Sect had encountered the cultivation insanity and died before he could reach the Peak Spirit Realm. As soon as the Hierarch was dead, the Holy Spirit

God went missing and never again showed up in the Endless Sea. It has been unexpectedly hiding underneath this place.” Cao Zhi Lan exclaimed nonstop. She said while looking at the Sky and Earth aura which was erupting from inside the earth. “The Endless Sea is immense, why it has come to this Snow Dragon Mountain. I don’t understand the fact that it seems to have a compelling icy trait which is not the ability that a Holy Spirit God can possess.”

“It has devoured the spirit of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon. The Dragon Crystal of the Icy Dragon Crystal is now its shelter.” Yi Tian Mo said with a low voice.

Cao Zhi Lan’s beautiful face changed.

Yi Tian Mo continued, “The Icy Crystal Bone Dragon is the eighth level beast. In the legend, this Icy Crystal Bone Dragon stayed nearby the Snow Dragon Island and was extremely aggressive. Even some of the Endless Sea’s God Realm warriors couldn’t conquer it when they had arrived here. It is unexpected that the Holy Spirit God not only devoured the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon’s spirit but had also occupied the Dragon Crystal. It seems that that Holy Spirit God has gone through an incredible transformation. It is not sure if this Holy Spirit God should be considered as a Holy Spirit God anymore.”

Swoosh swoosh swoosh

The Sky and Earth aura violently erupted from inside the Snow Dragon Mountain.

Just after a short while, the Snow Dragon Mountain had already been immersed in a great amount of the Sky and Earth aura. The Sky and Earth aura quickly diffused and turned the Snow Dragon Island to a place that had an abundance of spiritual auras.

If it was not because of the tremendous freezing aura on the mountain, the Snow Dragon Island should already become a very suitable place for warriors to cultivate.

Being covered by the immense white frost, the Snow Dragon Mountain looked like it was drowning in the clouds, and thus the vision was also limited.

Shi Yan was contemplating for a while, didn't know how to handle the Holy Spirit God underneath the Snow Dragon Mountain. He then subconsciously looked at Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng and asked, "Did that fellow get out of there?"

"No, it didn't," Ka Ba shook his head. "As soon as it had realized our exploring soul, it immediately released its attacking power. However, when we had retreated out of that place, it didn't chase after us. It seems that it doesn't want to leave the earth. It is unknown why it has emitted so much of the Sky and Heaven aura."

"It is probably going to attack ..." Cao Zhi Lan's eyebrows slightly knitted as if she had figured out something. "The Holy Spirit God can control the Sky and Earth aura, condense the Sky and Earth aura into the Spiritual Qi Bullets. The Spiritual Qi Bullets' power is tremendous. The Holy Spirit God should need time to condense them. Thus, it is probably refining the Spiritual Qi Bullets."

"Could be." Di Shan raised his head up to the sky; his countenance became somber.

Shi Yan also felt chilled inside his heart. He now realized that the aura in the sky was moving abnormally. He raised his head uncontrollably, looking up towards the sky with a changing countenance.

The white frost in the sky was assembling into many clouds of frost, each of which then turned into a circle of white frost.

The bitterly cold weather turned into the freezing icy powers absorbing into the white frost. Not long after that, chopping board-sized white circles appeared, which were like big snowballs being condensed in the air.

Inside those snowballs, there was not only full of the extremely chaotic Sky and Earth aura but also the freezing icy powers. The vibrating powers were severely turbulent as if they could explode at any time.

A big amount of the Sky and Earth aura erupting from inside the Snow Dragon Mountain converged at those big snowballs.

If looking further, it was easy to see many white full moons in the sky which were splendidly shining. However, they were also full of violent vibrating powers that scared people out of their wits.

“Tell everyone at the foot of the mountain to evacuate.” Shi Yan suddenly commanded.

Yi Tian Mo’s figure flashed up then gently left leaving no traces just in a blink.

Cao Zhi Lan’s beautiful eyes flared up, attentively watching Yi Tian Mo’s figure that had just left. She was now more certain that Shi Yan could command the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race. She couldn’t help but be shocked.

“Here it comes!” Di Shan shouted while the wings on his back instantly spread out. Streaks of black lightning were weaving with each other to create a net and then shot out up to the sky.

The Spiritual Qi Bullets in mid-air plunged down, bringing along the incomparable impetus.

Boom Boom Boom! Boom Boom Boom!

The entire Snow Dragon Island started to explode. The Spiritual Qi Bullets, which were as big as a chopping board and sparkingly luminous like a bright moon, were shot down from the sky. That made the Snow Dragon Mountain start to roar, growl, and violently shake nonstop as if it could collapse at any time.

The number of the Spiritual Qi Bullets could be up to dozens. Each of the bullets contained an impetuous vibrating power.

When one Spiritual Qi Bullet was shot down, a manor at the foot of the mountain fell instantly. Many pagans of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Wings Race screamed out and scattered everywhere.

Because the temperature of the Snow Dragon Island kept decreasing, many pagans with low cultivation base of the two tribes had soon withdrawn in advance. Therefore, the rest of them who were at the foot of the mountain right now had a high cultivation base and were not afraid of the icy aura of the Snow Dragon Mountain. When the Spiritual Qi Bullets shot down massively, their run-away speed was extremely fast. Most of them didn't get injured and quickly flee from the attacking range of the Spiritual Qi Bullets.

He Qing Man and Pan Zhe were also among those who were running away. The two of them, the young high-class warriors of the Evil Wonderland and the Penglai Divine land also realized the situation. As soon as they saw the situation went wrong, they immediately escaped with the fastest speed and tried to avoid the Spiritual Qi Bullets' attacks.

The target of the Spiritual Qi Bullets was still Shi Yan and Di Shan's area.

As Di Shan and Yu Rou saw dozens of the Spiritual Qi Bullets plunging down, they finally put all their efforts to withstand the Spiritual Qi Bullets' attacks.

Shi Yan and Cao Zhi Lan were standing next to them, so they both were protected and didn't get shot by the Spiritual Qi Bullets. However, from the lightning striking down from the sky and the explosive sounds constantly reverberating from the mountain, Shi Yan knew that those Spiritual Qi Bullets that had been created by the Holy Spirit God had tremendously mighty powers.

“Although this Holy Spirit God was refined from the human spirits, it doesn't have a body and thus cannot be considered as the humankind. Especially that it seemingly has devoured the spirit of

the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon. It is unknown what kind of specific living creature this Holy Spirit God has become, or whether it has the intelligence or not. It is tough to have a solution for this.” Cao Zhi Lan stood shoulder on shoulder with Shi Yan. Even though she was facing the splendid lightning striking down from the sky and the Spiritual Qi Bullets which would possibly demolish the entire mountain, she didn’t show any fear. Instead, she still beamed out a smile from the corner of her mouth as usual. She told Shi Yan about the things related to the Holy Spirit God with a gentle voice.

The Ice Cold Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring suddenly emitted a bone-chilling icy power. This icy power flushed around Shi Yan, making his body instantly discharge the icy aura.

Shi Yan’s body felt cool right away. As soon as he wanted to send a message to the Ice Cold Flame, he immediately realized that there was another icy aura which was quietly ejected from inside the earth, intruding his body through his feet. This aura started to fight with the Ice Cold Flame inside his body.

At the same time, a marvelous flow of a vibrating spirit also spread out from his body.

Thousands of soul senses seemed to appear and scatter everywhere inside his body. However, they couldn’t converge right now and were still finding a way to do so.

“That fellow wants your body!” The Ice Cold Flame quickly sent out a message. “It needs a body. It intends to rely on a body to be revived. As your body used to be tempered by my forces, it can receive its icy aura. It has the same thought with mine from that previous year.”

Shi Yan’s face suddenly changed.

“Crack crack.”

The snow surface under Shi Yan’s feet exploded and split open all of a sudden. It was easy to see a corridor opened up, running

straight down inside the earth. It was like a bloody mouth that wanted to swallow up Shi Yan.

Cao Zhi Lan, who was standing next to him, wanted to leap up to save him. However, she then realized that after that corridor had swallowed Shi Yan, it closed right away. Until she could land in that place, the corridor had been gone.

“Why does it want you?” Cao Zhi Lan’s beautiful eyes were full of astonishment. Her Spirit God Martial Spirit could vaguely sense the Holy Spirit God’s consciousness underneath. “Does your body have something that attracts it? How many more of secrets that you are still hiding? Shi Yan, wait and see. I will dig each of them out.”

Chapter 294: Soul Confrontation

In the middle of the firm, rough and long icy bones, which were like sharp swords, splendid lights were radiating. The Sky and Earth aura were as dense as gurgling streams. The icy bones were emitting peculiar halos which could blind people's eyes and daze people's minds.

This was the dragon's body of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon.

The Icy Crystal Bone Dragon's body was one hundred meters tall and ten meters wide. The insides of the body were empty had no skin nor flesh left except for this enormous skeleton.

At this moment, Shi Yan was standing inside this huge skeleton of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon.

Surrounding him were shiny solid bones like sparkling crystals. It was as if he was in a room which was made of coarse long bones. Lava rocks enshrouded the outsides of this bone room.

The gurgling Sky and Earth aura flowed out from the icy bones. Staying inside this skeleton, Shi Yan didn't need to waste his strength to condense the Profound Qi. Instead, he could feel the aura which was like cool and fresh morning dew absorbing into his belly through his breath. The aura was then taken completely in before slowly pouring into the Profound Qi halo on his belly.

That was the first time Shi Yan saw such dense Sky and Earth aura. Even inside the caves on the God Mountain in the Immortal Island of the Yang family, the aura was much less than the one here.

It seemed like he was being immersed in the ocean of spiritual aura. His pores kept absorbing the Sky and Earth aura of this place, which made his body very comfortable. He felt that he could forever immerse himself in this place and didn't want to leave anymore.

“Be careful. That fellow is in the head of this dragon skeleton.” The Ice Cold Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring sent out a message.

Shi Yan nodded quietly. He didn't hurry to release his soul consciousness; instead, he calmly observed everywhere for a while before raising his head looking up. From inside of the glittering white skeleton, he could only see thick icy lava layers, on which there were full of cold white frost and tremendous icy aura. An ordinary person could have been frozen if he had touched these frost layers.

Although he wasn't afraid of the icy lava, he knew that it was not easy to get out of here.

“No need to be too worried,” the Ice Cold Flame continued to send out another message after a while, “The burning fires of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame could melt down the entire icy lava around here. Even though that fellow knows how to use the icy aura, it won't be able to do anything under the heat of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame. Together with my help, your body can adapt to the penetrating icy aura. You just need to pay attention to its soul attacks.”

“Yeah.” Shi Yan nodded, dragged a cold half-smile out of his lips and replied, “The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame inside the Blood Vein Ring was originally a soul without an entity. If this fellow can sense the aura of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, it could be more frightened than I was.”

“The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame is its nemesis indeed.” the Ice Cold Flame agreed with what Shi Yan said. “But, are you able to control the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame?”

“No, I am not.” Shi Yan nodded. “It was strictly confined by the Blood Vein Ring. I can't communicate with it nor check its current status. However, the aura of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame is very special. Perhaps if that fellow penetrates, it will possibly sense it more or less.”

The Ice Cold Flame mused for a while before speaking, “Still have to be careful.”

Shi Yan smiled but didn't reply. He immediately walked towards the dragon head.

An oval-shaped crystal, as big as a table, was floating around inside the skull. That crystal emitted cold icy white aura like a jade block. A peculiar liquid was moving and gently swaying inside the crystal like a human brain. That liquid projected a tremendous living vibration.

Shi Yan started to condense his forces seriously. He was quietly taking precautions, moving step by step to the dragon head in which that crystal was floating around.

From ten meters far away, looking at the motionless floating dragon crystal and the lurching liquid like a human brain, he coldly spoke up after contemplating for a while, “What do you want to do?”

That liquid which looked like a human brain boiled up all of a sudden; many snow-white bubbles came up. Those bubbles then exploded inside the Dragon Crystal, discharging faint white smokes which flew out of the Dragon Crystal and quickly dispersed everywhere.

At the same time, a weird sound came out from the Dragon Crystal, “I want your body. If you give me your body, together with another body to exchange, I can help you enhance your soul, make your host soul's forces stronger. I will also find another consigning body for you, and you can stay at my place to cultivate in condensing auras which will help quickly increase your cultivation speed.”

Shi Yan was amazed.

He didn't expect that this Holy Spirit God of the Holy Spirit Sect would proactively propose such strange suggestions like this

instead of hastily using its powerful soul forces to occupy his body right away without saying a word.

That was out of Shi Yan's expectations.

"Sorry, I don't agree with this deal." Shi Yan shook his head. He said when he was facing the Dragon Crystal, "I am satisfied with this body and don't want to change to another one. Moreover, if I want to promote my soul, I will devotedly cultivate step by step. I don't need your help."

It was ridiculous. His body possessed not only the Immortal Martial Spirit but also the Petrification Martial Spirit. His heart could absorb star spirits. The meridians of his entire body could ingest negative forces and condense them as well. There were many other marvelous secrets in his body.

This entire body was a treasure. It was some sort of his protective charm that he relied on to survive. Sacrificing this body to promote the soul was not something a person with an undamaged brain would agree.

Shi Yan refused determinedly.

"You don't agree?" The speed of the advancing bubbles was getting faster and faster inside the Dragon Crystal. "I have given you a chance. If you decline, I will then forcefully seize what I want, which can make your soul and spirit perish. You should not force me to act that heartlessly."

"You can also go easy on me graciously?" Shi Yan burst into laughter, shook his head and said, "If you have the guts, come and take it. I want to see if you have this ability."

Just right after finishing speaking, Shi Yan's face became frigid without waiting for the Holy Spirit God in the Dragon Crystal to have any actions.

Boom!

Shi Yan's palms launch a bunch of fiery Heaven flames which

then turned into a flock of burning fires with their scorching heat power, instantly dashing towards the Dragon Crystal.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

A cluster of Heaven flames engulfed the Dragon Crystal which then transmitted a strange sound all of a sudden while a lot of white frost spread out from the inside of it. Two flows of extreme cold and extreme hot forces were fighting with each other, and the temperature inside the dragon skeleton kept changing constantly.

“Heaven flames!” The Holy Spirit God inside the Dragon Crystal suddenly screamed out. As it obviously didn’t expect that Shi Yan would have that move, it couldn’t help but launch a part of its spirit power to prevent the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame from penetrating the Dragon Crystal.

The Icy Crystal Bone Dragon was the beast with the powerful icy trait and a bone-chilling icy skeleton. Inside the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon, the freezingly coldest one was the Dragon Crystal. The Dragon Crystal of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon was frigidly icy and very solid, could be considered one of a few of the most unusual icy creatures in the world.

Burning fires of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame covering the Dragon Crystal couldn’t immediately burn it into ashes. Meanwhile, the Holy Spirit God continually gathered the icy auras to prevent the invasion of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame from destroying its extreme heating power, and thus the Thousand Year Earth Flame couldn’t severely harm the Dragon Crystal.

“As you have taken actions first, I won’t continue putting up with you.” The Holy Spirit God transmitted a cold-hearted sound from inside the Dragon Crystal. A violent and horrendous soul flow like a massive surging wave suddenly stormed straight towards Shi Yan. That was the bone-chilling, nebulous soul attack.

Shi Yan was standing there, watching the massive volume of snow and ice all converge, interlace and collide with each other,

and shoot out icy power which could tightly tie up all the souls. These two forces intertwined with each other covering the entire Sky and Earth, dashing straight to his Sea of Consciousness as if they wanted to crush his Sea of Consciousness at once.

That was the fatal attack whose target was his Sea of Consciousness and host soul.

The soul attack massively darted, wrapping everything up without allowing him to avoid. He instantly felt that his Sea of Consciousness seemed to have been locked up.

“Five Devils attack!”

The five Devils in the Sea of Consciousness had soon stirred up, instantly flew out of the Sea of Consciousness, altogether plunging into the violent soul flow that was advancing.

Although the five negative Devils had different forms, they were all eccentric with full of brutal and terrifying auras. As soon as they entered the strong soul flow that had been launched by the Holy Spirit God, they immediately showed their claws and fangs, impetuously tore that soul flow into broken pieces of the soul floating and drifting around.

“Devils!” The Holy Spirit God cried. He was inside the Dragon Crystal showing the extreme fear; he then quickly condensed a new soul attack flow.

Shi Yan’s soul consciousness could realize those broken pieces of soul that had been torn down by the five Devils instantly condensed and turned into many beams of frigid, icy light. Those icy lights rapidly extended and were on their way dashing towards Shi Yan; they gradually turned into small transparent Icy Crystal Bone Dragons.

Each of the small Icy Crystal Bone Dragons was only one meter long and splendidly translucent. Its body was full of icy aura, lively and flexible. A bunch of them all opened their dragon mouths,

from which icy aura kept circulating in and out.

Dozens of the small Icy Crystal Bone Dragons, which had been formed by broken pieces of the soul assembling, had passed the five Devils' blockage and attacked Shi Yan directly.

"Hmm" Shi Yan's face remained unchanged while his Sea of Consciousness slightly transformed.

Countless soul consciousness suddenly emerged in his formerly restful Sea of Consciousness. Strong winds and high waves surged up there. Meanwhile, his host soul kept growing, turning into huge Devil Gods who were as big as high mountains.

The host soul was firmly pulling out the negative feelings which the five Devils had left in the Sea of Consciousness and then transformed them into black shining luminous ropes wrapping around those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons.

The host soul inside the Sea of Consciousness also changed according to the transformations of the Sea of Consciousness. The host soul was moving everywhere uncertainly. After several movements, it left many illusionary figures that attracted the Icy Crystal Bone Dragons which had been created by the Holy Spirit God.

After having waited until those Icy Crystal Bone Dragon came close, the host souls' hands then swung up. The black shining ropes, which had been condensed by negative feelings inside the Sea of Consciousness, suddenly shot out and accurately tied up those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons. The Icy Crystal Bone Dragons were strangled so tightly that they couldn't even wriggle and impossibly entered Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, let alone catch his host soul.

"It's impossible! Your understanding of the Upanishads cannot be that profound." The Holy Spirit God inside the Dragon Crystal screamed out. It didn't know how come that marvelous attack, which it had thoroughly thought and planned, was easily dissolved

by Shi Yan.

“There are still many of impossible things.” Shi Yan revealed a faint smile. His Sea of Consciousness transformed again. The black shining ropes that were wrapping around the Icy Crystal Bone Dragons, pulling each of them and binding them altogether.

At the same time, the five Devils that had gotten out of the Sea of Consciousness were now returning eagerly, showing their claws and fangs as though they wanted to swallow up all of those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons that had the spiritual aura of the Holy Spirit God.

“Don’t!” The Holy Spirit God shouted loudly again.

Chapter 295: It's not because of you.

From inside the Dragon skeleton, the Holy Spirit God screamed out, continuously releasing soul forces with the hopes of changing the situation.

Suddenly, the Icy Crystal Bone Dragons, which had been tied up by Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, violently wriggled while their soul forces were gradually increasing.

However, they still underestimated Shi Yan's soul competency.

In the abandoned land, Shi Yan had continuously studied different magical spiritual Upanishads of the Demonic Sound Clan. Moreover, he had also taken Pan Zhe and the other warriors to be his experimental human test subjects. Although his understanding of the souls was still not as well as that of Yi Tian Mo and the other leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, his perception of the spiritual Upanishads had been much more profound if compared with ordinary people or even some normal pagans of the Demonic Sound Clan.

Anyway, not all of the Demonic Sound Clan's pagans had a chance to study the most marvelous miraculous secret scriptures of this Clan.

On the one hand, Shi Yan had a thorough perception of the spiritual Upanishads, learned by heart all kinds of soul techniques of the Demonic Sound Clan. On the other hands, his five Devils in the Sea of Mind from the Blood Vein Ring were extremely mystical, possessed devilish powers that could even surprise and puzzle Yi Tian Mo, the Demonic Sound Clan's leader as well as the expertise in the spiritual Upanishads.

With all of the above reasons, if the Holy Spirit God still considered Shi Yan as an ordinary warrior, it would suffer a great loss.

“It’s not because of you!” Shi Yan shouted coldly. His eyes shot out frigid rays like the freezing aura in an ice cellar. Thin milk-white frost massively spread out from the pores of his body.

It was the Icy Cold power that the Ice Cold Flame poured into his body. Thin smoke hovered around covering him, created a natural icy shield which quietly protected him from the imminent attacks of the Holy Spirit God.

At the same time.

The five Devils, who had just returned with cruel and fierce appearances, suddenly dashed towards those small Icy Crystal Bone Dragons which were being tied up.

As the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon saw the five Devils penetrating into the Sea of Consciousness, they started to struggle constantly, trying to escape from the shackles inside the Sea of Consciousness.

However, Shi Yan’s host soul inside the Sea of Consciousness kept launching tenacious binding forces, filling the beams of lights which were fastening the Icy Crystal Bone Dragons. No matter how much those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons tried, they couldn’t get out of this shackle.

“Don’t!” The Holy Spirit God ear-piercingly cried out. It wanted to fly out of the Dragon Crystal but was entangled by the burning fires of the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame.

More horrendous soul attacks were discharged from the Dragon Crystal. Those soul forces alternatively turned to the ethereal figures of mighty beasts which were roaring and growling. They stormed towards Shi Yan’s Sea of Consciousness one by one.

Right at this moment, the soul auras of Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba suddenly appeared inside the freezing dragon skeleton.

When Shi Yan’s Sea of Consciousness opened up, and the Heaven Eye brightened, he saw Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba, who had used their soul state to appear here, immediately prevent the

ethereal beasts that had been released by the Holy Spirit God.

Taking this chance, the host soul inside his Sea of Consciousness then put forth all of its strength to bind dozens of those transparent Icy Crystal Bone Dragons.

Shi Yan understood that tens of these Icy Crystal Bone Dragons were the pure soul forces of the Holy Spirit God. These forces were tremendous enough to destroy his sea of consciousness completely. Moreover, these soul forces also contained some terrifying powers.

The five Devils would possibly swallow those mighty soul forces.

When the five Devils were showing their strong greed, Shi Yan immediately knew that these Icy Crystal Bone Dragons were certainly the miracle medicines for the five Devils to make the transformation breakthrough. Swallowing up these Icy Crystal Bone Dragons obviously allowed the five Devils to get stronger and their soul forces to soar.

That was such a chance that was hard to have in a thousand year.

The five Devils growled and flew up catching their preys, rushing to tear down dozens of those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons. The five Devils devoured them as if they were their real preys, joyfully enjoyed them so much that ice rubbles from those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons were showered about everywhere.

Inside the Sea of Consciousness, while the five Devils were devouring those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons, their bodies gradually transformed.

The formerly ambiguous ethereal bodies of the five Devils now became clearer. Even the strange devilish patterns on their bodies could now be seen little by little. There was also a faint black light moving inside their eerie bodies; even their forms seemed to be a little bit mightier.

The five Devils Dozens had completely devoured dozens of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragons within ten breaths.

After having eaten all those Icy Crystal Bone Dragons, the five Devils seemed not to be satisfied yet. They flew out of the Sea of Consciousness again, turned into furious ten-meter-tall Devils flying around the Holy Spirit God to find a chance to take actions.

Closing his eyes and using the soul consciousness to sense everywhere, Shi Yan saw the three people of Yi Tian Mo's group uniting with each other to deal with the Holy Spirit God's soul attacks.

Being the leaders of the Demonic Sound Clan, their soul competencies were exceptional indeed. Even though the Holy Spirit God, who was called God, had to show its helplessness when facing their soul defense.

The Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame was still constantly burning the Dragon Crystal making the Holy Spirit God unable to release all of its forces. Dozens of flows of pure soul forces that had turned to Icy Crystal Bone Dragons had been devoured and cleared out.

The Holy Spirit God had lost a lot of its forces and was nearly unable to resist anymore.

The Holy Spirit God was screeching noisily, using its forces to cope with the soul defense of Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba. At the same time, it also had to deal with the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame.

The Holy Spirit God was powerful indeed. Regretfully, it was not a true God after all.

Eventually, after constantly attacking it without receiving significant results, the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame condensed its forces again, using the forces of the Sun Refined Spirit inside the Earth Flame to increase the burning fires to one level higher.

The Earth Flame which was wrapping the Dragon Crystal released the scorching heat like the heat of the sun at noon instantly. The fusion of this blazing heat with the burning forces of

the Earth Flame tripled the Earth Flame's burning fires.

“Crack crack crack.”

The Dragon Crystal produced strange echoes all of a sudden.

The peculiar liquid inside it moved slower; bubbles boiled more and more.

“In fact, we can still negotiate more carefully. You will not want anything to happen to me. If I am not here, the Sky and Earth aura in this area will dissolve. I know the Sky and Earth aura is extremely crucial for your cultivations. Don't you want to see this island become a desert island?” The Holy Spirit God moved inside the Dragon Crystal, transformed slowly, and gradually condensed into an ambiguous face.

“Five Devils retreat!” Shi Yan used his spirit to withdraw the five Devils. The host soul continually released soul fibers like soul tentacles to comfort the vibrations inside the Sea of Consciousness and calm the seething Sea of Consciousness.

After the greedy five Devils, which were flying around the dragon crystal, had received Shi Yan's call, they reluctantly came back from the dragon crystal, turning into beams of black lights and vanishing on top of Shi Yan's head. They then reappeared inside his Sea of Consciousness and gradually became restful again.

Although the five Devils had already returned, Shi Yan was still very cautious. His eyes coldly looked at the ambiguous face that the Holy Spirit God had created inside the dragon crystal and coldly said, “Now what? Are you scared? Didn't you want to seize my body forcefully?”

“Now I know that I can't be successful.” The Holy Spirit God released a long sigh. The ambiguous face slightly shook as though it touched the pellucid walls of the dragon crystal. It hastily said, “Retrieve this damn Heaven flame; otherwise if the Dragon Crystal's icy power is totally consumed, I will be openly exposed. I

will be screwed by that time, and the thick Sky and Earth aura here will also disappear. You certainly don't want that."

"No, I don't care." Shi Yan shook his head and casually said, "At most, I will relocate to another island. There are many islands with dense Sky and Earth aura. I don't mind moving to another place, but I do care more about destroying you."

The Holy Spirit God trembled while contemplated without saying anything.

"Recently, dozens of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragons condensed from your pure soul forces are indeed the miracle nutritious medicines for souls. I will burn your Dragon Crystal's shell, wait until your soul is completely exposed, perhaps I can both use the heaven flame to refine and absorb your soul. I feel that this is even worth than having a cultivating place with full of Sky and Earth aura."

Shi Yan laughed coldly. He didn't care about the Holy Spirit God's life and death except for his benefits.

The Holy Spirit God trembled even more.

"Keep burning! Burn that Dragon Crystal into ashes." Shi Yan's face was cruel while ordering the Ten Thousand Year Earth Flame that was currently wrapping that Dragon Crystal.

Receiving Shi Yan's order, the Earth Flame put forth more efforts, pouring more burning flame like molten steel onto the dragon crystal, gradually dissolving the icy partition wall outside of the dragon crystal.

If the situation continued like this, the dragon crystal would meltdown shortly.

The three people of Yi Tian Mo's group also understood Shi Yan's intention. They coldly smiled while increasing their soul protecting forces, establishing colorful layers after layers of protecting walls to prevent the Holy Spirit God from acting crazily

and taking risks to release one strike that could break even jade or stones.

“Why are all of you pushing me? I only want to survive, become a living creature with blood and flesh, not some illusory god. I don’t want to be taken advantage of nor just being a supplementing medicine for the others to consume and gain the abilities to break through, and then ending up heartlessly being swallowed eventually. I only want ... to live.”

The Holy Spirit God screamed out like crazy. Flows of soul forces, which were as sharp as sabers, were shot out. He seemed to be uncontrollable soon.

Shi Yan’s face remained unchanged while he quietly released his soul consciousness to sense around, bringing his spirit close to the dragon crystal, quietly speculating the Holy Spirit God’s actions from the dragon crystal’s soul vibrations.

Your soul wants to act recklessly.

Shi Yan felt that his heart was freezing. He seemed to have figured out something, contemplated for a while before shouting, “Alright, we can talk. Don’t continue like I will live and you must die.” While talking, Shi Yan also released a beam of soul consciousness to send a message to Yi Tian Mo and the other two and gently instructed the Earth Flame at the same time, “No need to increase the forces anymore.”

The extreme hot aura of the Earth Flame which had been covering the dragon crystal was instantly decreasing.

The soul figures of Yi Tian Mo and the other two leaders also slowly moved backward behind Shi Yan. The soul fastening power that had been approaching the Dragon Crystal was also weakened little by little and turned into the defending forces.

The feeling of anxiety and insecurity of the Holy Spirit God gradually calmed down and returned to normal after Shi Yan had

made some concessions.

“What do you want? Don’t you want to kill me?” The Holy Spirit God stayed inside the Dragon Crystal observing Shi Yan, “Are you going to comfort my feelings and wait until I am neglectful, you will then take this chance to attack me stealthily and ultimately absorb my soul.”

Shi Yan’s countenance didn’t change, but he was astonished deep inside.

The Holy Spirit God had accurately said what was in his mind.

When the Holy Spirit God was not taking precautions, he would ask Yi Tian Mo and the Earth Flame to unite with each other to launch a full-power strike, tightly binding the Holy Spirit God. Before its soul exploded, he would take everything of it, control its soul so that the five Devils could gradually absorb it.

The soul explosion was so extremely violent that it could kill anything. It could create a soul black hole attracting all of the surrounding creatures’ souls.

When a soul exploded, its aura would vanish; nothing of the soul forces would remain; no one could take any benefits from that exploded soul.

Once the Holy Spirit God’s soul had exploded, Shi Yan wouldn’t get any benefits; his soul could also be attracted by the soul black hole that the soul explosion had created, which possibly led to the unexpected fatal danger.

That was not what he wanted.

“In fact, we can talk in peace. Your being alive is more useful for me.” Shi Yan suddenly revealed a smile, pointed the Blood Vein Ring towards the Earth Flame to call it back.

The Earth Flame and he had a close spiritual interaction; thus, it naturally understood his intention. Right after he had moved his hand, the Earth Flame immediately turned to a beam of flames

getting back into the Blood Vein Ring.

As soon as the Earth Flame had disappeared, the uncomfortable heating temperature inside the dragon crystal had completely gone.

The freezing aura like an ice cellar flooded the entire dragon skeleton once again. The Dragon Crystal, which wasn't entangled by the Earth Flame anymore, became splendidly translucent. The freezing aura inside the dragon skeleton turned into glittering ice dots like snowflakes falling to the dragon crystal and being absorbed entirely by the dragon crystal, which made the dragon crystal more brightened, and the icy aura had become more tremendous.

The Holy Spirit God didn't say anything more. It kept silent and observed every single move of Shi Yan's without daring to be neglectful.

It seemed to have gone through many treacheries and experienced people's malicious hearts. Especially Shi Yan's cold-heartiness had left a deep impression on it. It didn't expect that a cruel person like Shi Yan could even have a conscience.

It even assumed that Shi Yan would sneakily attack it, so it was waiting and defending with all of its powers.

"You guys go up first." Shi Yan contemplated for a while before turning towards the ethereal body souls of Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng and ordering them with a faint smile.

"Master ..." Yi Tian Mo transmitted his soul consciousness showing his disagreement.

"It's alright." Shi Yan's face was very calm. He waved his hand implicating that they should not be worried. "I will be careful. There will be no problems. Leave us alone."

The three people of Yi Tian Mo's group hesitated a little bit. As they saw that Shi Yan was very confident, they then slowly left.

The three ethereal body souls faded out and finally turned into many light dots disappearing without leaving a trace.

On top of the Snow Dragon Mountain.

The bodies of Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng shook violently. They opened their eyes simultaneously and took a deep breath.

“How was it?” Yu Rou hastily asked.

Di Shan also knitted his eyebrows.

Cao Zhi Lan bit her lips, took one step closer to Yi Tian Mo’s group with her beautiful, curious eyes; her elegant ears swayed mischievously. She was obviously very interested in Yi Tian Mo’s response.

Yi Tian Mo knitted his eyebrows while glancing at Cao Zhi Lan.

Cao Zhi Lan revealed a smile, took a few steps backward but didn’t show any fear. Instead, she burst into laughter and said, “I have figured out your relations earlier. I know, there is some covenant between you and him. Unless this covenant is abolished, you respect him very much, even follow his orders.”

Di Shan suddenly squinted, a cold light from deep inside his pupils flared up and disappeared right away.

Cao Zhi Lan’s beautiful face changed slightly. She felt freezing inside, her charming body trembled. She hurriedly raised her hand and explained, “I don’t have any wicked intentions. I just want to be friendly with him. I am sure he knows about it.” Cao Zhi Lan pointed towards Yi Tian Mo.

Yi Tian Mo couldn’t forget her bold proposal for Shi Yan. Under the scrutinizing looks of Di Shan and Yu Rou, he nodded with a strange face and said, “This girl has proactively proposed to give herself in a marriage with Shi Yan. Her eyes are very sharp indeed, able to see his limitless potentials.”

Yu Rou’s beautiful eyes suddenly lightened up. She started to

evaluate Cao Zhi Lan seriously for the first time. She looked at Cao Zhi Lan and nodded at the same time then revealed a meaningful smile, “That little girl’s appearance is not just ordinary, looks like an interesting girl. Her daring is not small either, not bad. Hmm, but if you want him to be moved and agree, you should put more efforts.”

“Please, instruct me.” Cao Zhi Lan’s face was serious with a sincere manner.

Yu Rou shook her head and said with a faint smile, “I have to see your performance later.”

“Just tell us what has happened down there. When he comes up later, if he doesn’t want this girl to know, you can always delete her memories.” Di Shan seemed to be impatient, coldly said, “For you guys, it is easy to do.”

Yi Tian Mo nodded and said without holding anything back anymore, “We united with each other and almost destroyed the Holy Spirit God. However, that fellow realized that the situation had gone bad and wanted to have its soul exploded to die together with us. At that time, Mas... Shi Yan immediately stopped putting pressure on it. He told us to come up here first and leave him alone to settle things down there.”

“He alone can deal with that fellow?” Yu Rou was astonished and a little worried.

Yi Tian Mo shook his head and said, “I don’t know. But, there are many strange things on his body. Maybe ... there will not be any big problems. Anyway, that Holy Spirit God had been beaten so much that he was scared out of its wits.”

After listening, Di Shan and Yu Rou didn’t say anything more although they still felt a little worried.

“Boom boom boom.”

Not long after that, an earth-shaking explosive sound came up

from underneath the Snow Dragon Mountain once again.

The place where Shi Yan had fallen cracked open one more time, exposing a new connecting path, from which the dense lava ice and the heavy Sky and Earth aura spread out.

Di Shan and the other people all had astonished faces. They attentively looked towards that connecting path which had just cracked open, watching the commotions deep down there while taking precautions in silence.

A big figure slowly leaped up from deep down the connecting path as if it was pushed up by the lava ice under the feet, hence, didn't waste any of its strength to fly straight up.

“He is out.” Yi Tian Mo shouted slightly with his suspicious eyes.

With the support of the lava ice, Shi Yan quickly got out of the Icy Crystal Bone Dragon without using any strength. A smile beamed out from the corner of his mouth; his mood seemed quite good.

“How was it?” Ka Ba couldn't help but immediately move closer and ask after waiting for Shi Yan to have gotten out.

“It's done. It has agreed to work for us, help us gather the Sky and Earth aura, rebuild the Snow Dragon Island to become an abundant supplying resource for us.”

“Ah, how come it has become that obedient?”

“I have promised to make a suitable body for it. That's it.”

Chapter 296: Captives

The dense adhesive Sky and Earth aura like faint morning dew hazily covered the foot of the Snow Dragon Mountain.

Streams of spiritual aura, which naked eyes could see, were still erupting from the crack on the Snow Dragon Mountain, hovering around, expanding gradually, and overwhelming the one-hundred-mile area surrounding the Snow Dragon Mountain.

The misty spiritual aura resembled a jade-like white silk ribbon under the sun and radiated faint rays sometimes. Many of the Wings race's and the Demonic Sound Clan's pagans were astonished looking around with joy, but they didn't understand why everything had become this miraculous and marvelous.

The previous chilled to the bone icy aura had quietly disappeared. Although the Snow Dragon Mountain's peak and flank were still freezing like before, there was no longer icy aura flying out from the crack or spreading down to the foot of the mountain.

Therefore, those pagans who had temporarily evacuated from the foot of the mountain due to the freezing ice aura were returning here from other areas on the Snow Dragon Island.

As soon as they arrived, they immediately recognized that this area had gone through an earth-shaking transformation. Not only was the Sky and Earth aura denser but the entire mountain chain also seemed to be full of vitality.

Due to the tremendously dense aura, plants started to grow lushly and verdantly, among which there were even some precious herbal brairds that even rare and unique to Cao Zhi Lan.

Di Shan, Yu Rou, Yi Tian Mo and others hurriedly tried their best to create many kinds of special-effect protective barriers and formation techniques. Many of the complicated barriers and

formations required the Sky and Earth aura to be possibly created. With the help of the Holy Spirit God, this had become much easier.

Not long after that, the entire Snow Dragon Mountain seemed to be entirely covered with varieties of defensive barriers and formations. Big and small formation techniques were as dense as stars in the sky. Shi Yan didn't know how their intimidation was, but he was already startled with the quantity of those formation techniques.

The appointment in the headquarters of the Three Gods Sect was coming closer. Today, Shi Yan went to find Yi Tian Mo to ask him to be his company, bringing him to the headquarters of the Three Gods Sect.

Among the leaders of the Wings Race and the Demonic Sound Clan, Yi Tian Mo had the fastest speed.

The Snow Dragon Island was in the range of the Three Gods Sect's powers, so it was not too far from the Three Gods Sect. If Yi Tian Mo could bring him, he would then possibly arrive at the Three Gods Sect ahead of the others.

However, when Shi Yan was about to depart, the Snow Dragon Island welcomed a visitor.

Sun Ming, the messenger of the Penglai Divine land.

He had heard from Gu Shao and Yu Qin and known that Pan Zhe was being confined on the Snow Dragon Island. He came to the island with a good intention and wanted to exchange ten islands in the Sky Sea for Pan Zhe's life.

As soon as he had arrived at the Snow Dragon Island, he was then frightened by the dense Sky and Earth aura there.

When he had gone to the foot of the Snow Dragon Mountain, looking at the heavy spiritual aura which was like slow gurgling water and the mist of aura that resembled a white ribbon hovering around, Sun Ming was indescribably terrified.

Sun Ming had never been on the Snow Dragon Island before, but he had often been cultivating devotedly on the Penglai Island of the Penglai Divine Land. From what he saw, even the Penglai Island was not as suitable as this Snow Dragon Island for cultivation since the aura on the Penglai Island was not as dense as the one here.

This discovery brought Sun Ming a big surprise. He transmitted the information about the scene that he had witnessed and the aura that he had felt to the Penglai Island.

The Penglai Island didn't believe him when they had first received the information. However, after Sun Ming had told in detail about the fact here, they became very frightened.

Thus, the Penglai Island sent back the response instructing Sun Ming to have more respectful manners, absolutely not to irritate the head Master of the Snow Dragon Island. Also, they told him to bring Pan Zhe back alive, not to create any conflicts with the head Master of the Snow Dragon Island no matter what.

Moreover, the two ordinary islands on the papers in Sun Ming's hands were also changed to be another two resourceful islands with plenty of special minerals.

When Shi Yan met Sun Ming, Sun Ming bowed his head, bent down very low as if he was Shi Yan's grandchild, greeted Shi Yan with a gesture which was so friendly that it could be called flattery.

With a broad smile that remained on his face, Sun Ming respectfully offered the papers for handing over the islands firstly before proposing to take Pan Zhe away.

Shi Yan was astonished, watching Sun Ming with the attentive look. After he had made sure that Sun Ming didn't have any other intentions, Shi Yan nodded and shouted to call for Pan Zhe who was staying in the first story from afar. "Someone has come to bail you out."

Pan Zhe's face was dazed; the corner of his mouth slightly shivered for a while. He stood up submissively.

"See you later if we have a chance." Cao Zhi Lan dragged a half-smile out of the corner of her mouth. She was wearing a long snow-white velvet dress and a colorful plummy hat, leaning against the window and waving towards Pan Zhe. "Remember to ask that guy to remove the formation technique inside you. Otherwise, if your great Master sees it, he will blame you for being incapable."

Pan Zhe's face became toneless; he felt resentful and helpless. He looked at Shi Yan who was standing motionlessly and heartlessly in the distance but couldn't have any intentions of revenge.

He knew that if he had any intentions of vengeance, Shi Yan would realize it right away. Perhaps, he would even do something harmful that he had to suffer helplessly.

Having being tortured in the abandoned land was a scar that he would never forget for the rest of his life. Being the future leader of the Penglai Divine Land, since having been confronting Shi Yan, he had always suffered the disadvantages, been always intimidated, and never able to raise his head up.

The wound that Shi Yan caused had already been deeply engraved on his soul, which was not able to heal in a short time.

Pan Zhe's face was depressed. He bowed his head dolefully with full of helplessness while slowly walking downstairs.

"Sigh, a good guy like that has been destroyed in Shi Yan's hands." Cao Zhi Lan was pitiful for him, shook her head, released a sigh and said, "Shi Yan has knocked down the arrogance deep inside his spirit, leaving a scar in his sea of mind. Perhaps, he would never be able to overcome this for the rest of his life. On the way of martial arts cultivation, the spirit which lacks confidence is the taboo. I am afraid that Pan Zhe is done."

He Qing Man's face was in shock; her eyes squinted, forming a

moon-shape. She was bewilderedly looking at Pan Zhe leaving then suddenly said, “How about Gu Ling Lung and Qu Yan Qing?”

“Not the same.” Cao Zhi Lan smiled beautifully, exposing her white teeth with shiny red lips. She said, “That little rascal has despised those two girls. He has already touched all the places on their bodies which shouldn’t have been violated. He has also messed with their minds and made them resent males for their entire lives. That bastard deserves thousands of slashes.”

He Qing Man was amazed, hesitated for a while before speaking with a strange face, “It seems that he has never disgraced you. I feel like you are jealous and discontented. Are you blaming him for not having done anything to you? How come I have that feeling ...”

Cao Zhi Lan’s cheeks reddened; her beautiful eyes displayed embarrassment. She glanced at He Qing Man angrily and said, “I have heard that you and Xia Xinyan are good sisters. Have you ever thought that you two would scramble for a man, would it be shameless for one time doing so? What do you think?”

He Qing Man’s charming body trembled slightly with her embarrassed eyes. As she realized that Cao Zhi Lan’s words were very sharp, she instantly shut up.

“Are you letting me go that easily?” Downstairs, although Pan Zhe was full of hatred, he still pretended to be calm, looked at Shi Yan and coldly asked.

Shi Yan patted his forehead as if he just remembered something then said, “I’m very sorry, I almost forgot.”

“Burp.”

A small sound like a broken bubble suddenly came out from Pan Zhe’s brain.

Right after that, Pan Zhe immediately felt that his spirit was very comfortable as if the strong bind that had tied up his host soul had just been lifted. He felt refreshed, and his eyes also brightened up a

little bit.

“Your Penglai Divine Land indeed has good intentions. That’s good, very good.” Shi Yan’s face was very joyful. He then contemplated for a while before asking Sun Ming, “How is the entrance which links to the Chasm Battlefield? You have sent people to enter the Chasm Battlefield, so how is the current situation there? Does the Sky Demon Mountain Range nearby have anything unusual? Have you ever met Yang Mu’s fellows in your Sea?”

Sun Ming respectfully replied with a serious face, “The Chasm Battlefield is still the same. There haven’t been any transformations nor anyone coming out. We have never met the Yang family’s members in the Sky Sea either. Many beasts have been troubling the Sky Demon Mountain Range nearby; there are also some mighty and dangerous beasts among them. That is the beasts’ territory, and we haven’t dared to enter it, and thus we are not certain of the situation there.

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows then nodded after a long while, swung his hand and said, “You guys can go.”

Sun Ming looked at Pan Zhe.

Pan Zhe took a deep breath, stared at Shi Yan for a while before speaking, “See you later!”

After talking, Pan Zhe nodded with Sun Ming. The two of them went towards the harbor of the Snow Dragon Island together and then disappeared shortly.

“He Qing Man, how about you? Will you stay here or return to the Evil Wonderland?” Shi Yan held his head looking towards the house not far away after being silent for a while. He raised his voice shouting.

He Qing Man’s face was gloomy. Her charming face was full of bitterness.

“The Evil Wonderland has become the Demon Dwellers’ territory. What is it good for if I come back there? I just don’t know how the Fire Cloud Island is. Sigh, I hope that my relatives had escaped from the Kyara Sea.”

“Are you going to stay on the Snow Dragon Island temporarily?”

“Umm.”

Shi Yan nodded, contemplated for a while and then said, “Alright. I have to go to the Three Gods Sect. You can comfortably stay here.”

“Wait!” Cao Zhi Lan slightly shouted. Her appealing body, as slinky as a water-snake by the window, suddenly leaped up and landed in front of Shi Yan. She revealed a charming smile and said, “Bring me along with you.”

“You?” Shi Yan was astonished then shook his head while speaking, “The Cao family hasn’t offered a reasonable price, you cannot go. All forces that want to deal with me have to learn from the Penglai Divine Land if they want to ransom their people. I like the attitudes of the people from the Penglai Divine Land. Wait until the Cao family sends out their people here to offer the price that satisfies me, I will then consider to let you go or not.”

“The reason that the Cao family’s people haven’t come here yet was that I have prevented them.” Cao Zhi Lan beamed out a smile. “I want to continue staying here to interact with you more, carefully discuss the ability to cooperate with you. That’s why I have sent them a message saying that they don’t need to worry for me. Besides, I am entitled to decide for myself. My family will not have any ideas about my decision. Therefore, it isn’t necessary to send people here.”

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows.

He knew that Cao Zhi Lan had a special transmitting treasure. He didn’t have any intentions of confining Cao Zhi Lan. The fact that

Cao Zhi Lan had contacted the Cao family was not beyond his expectations.

The only thing that was strange was the Cao family's attitude.

The Cao family really believed her that much?

"Are you authorized to represent the Cao family?" Shi Yan thought for a while before speaking.

Cao Zhi Lan nodded to confirm.

"Ok, that's good. You can go with me to the Three Gods Sect's headquarters."

Chapter 297: The Sun Island

The Three Gods Sect was one of the most ancient sects in the Endless Sea.

Over the years, the Three Gods Sect had been divided into the Three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star. They alternately possessed the Sun Martial Spirits, the Moon Martial Spirits, and the Star Martial Spirits. These three kinds of martial spirits were all sacred level martial spirits which had the miraculous abilities to absorb the power of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star.

However, thousands of years ago, when the Three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star of the Three Gods Sect fought with the Dark Dwellers in the Sevenfold Underworld, they had been beaten up by Avi Dark King and got seriously injured. Since then, the Three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star had never met each other again.

After that battle, the God of the Moon and the God of the Star had disappeared and had never shown up in the Endless Sea ever since. Only the God of the Sun had returned to the Three Gods Sect to rule over the Three Gods Sect, but three hundred years later, he had passed away quietly.

After that, gradually, the ability of the Three Gods Sect had declined from the position of the first or the second strongest forces in the Endless Sea.

Nevertheless, the Three Gods Sect in the Henglue Sea had been still firmly intimidating the Dong Fang family and the Gu family.

Until now, under the governance of the Sun God Tang YuanNan, the Three Gods Sect's ability had started to recover, returning to the ranks of the most powerful forces in the Endless Sea again. They had become one of the strongest powers that others didn't dare to underrate.

The headquarters of the Three Gods Sect had been separated into three islands, including the Sun Island, the Moon Island, and the Star Island alternately. These three islands formed a triangle and were only dozens of miles away from each other.

The Sun Island, the Moon Island, and the Star Island were the three cultivation places of the Three Gods of the Sun, the Moon, and the Star. They had always been the Divine Land of the Three Gods Sect, only the core disciples of the sect were qualified enough to cultivate devotedly there.

However, as the Moon God and the Star God hadn't ever appeared for so long, the position of the Moon Island and the Star Island had gradually been declassified compared with the Sun Island's. Therefore, the heart of power recently located in the Sun Island. The Moon Island and the Star Island had become the restricted area, and unauthorized people were not allowed to enter.

Until last year, the Moon Island became gradually vital again as the moonlight shone upon the entire island. A few of the followers of the Three Gods Sect who possessed the Moon Martial Spirits were then permitted to go to the Moon Island.

It always had a rumor saying that the predecessor of the Moon branch in the Three Gods Sect had returned to the Moon Island. This predecessor could have wrestled away the glorious title of the Moon God.

Rumors were just rumors anyway. Even the followers of the Three Gods Sect had never seen the return of that legendary predecessor. So, the people of the other forces had no other chances of knowing about it.

Presently, the Flame Unicorn with full of torrential flames arrived and landed on the Moon Island all of a sudden.

The moon was faint, and the wind was strong tonight; thus, the flames of the Flame Unicorn were prominently seen. A man in a

glowing-sun-pattern blue blouse was riding the unicorn with a deliberate manner. He, together with the unicorn, slowly landed.

The Bright Moon Lake on the Moon Island.

The ivory-water lake had a dense aura which was like immense mist hovering around. There was a small jade village hall floating in the middle of the lake. The Flame Unicorn descended, the man in the blue blouse bent down with a respectful face and slightly called out, "Moon Ancestor!"

The misty aura seemed to have its life gathering at the jade village hall. The mist was ambiguous, and the moonlight was shining splendidly, brightening the gloomy scene around, making this entire area seem to be immersed in the fresh moonlight.

There appeared a beautiful, elegant, slender figure which was fully covered in the ambiguous moonlight, wearing a long white dress which was not made of silk nor brocade but similar to the white clouds in the sky. Obscure sack mists accentuated that vague figure, making her look like a peri or a goddess, which brought people a feeling of being amazed and standing in awe of the genuine beauty.

The jade-like moonlight was radiating from her cloud-like dress, resembling small light dots and crystal raindrops falling on the village hall, creating clangorous sounds.

"What do you come here for?" Her pleasant yet frigid voice slowly rose up, it seemed to be a little annoyed as well. "Didn't I tell you that if there is nothing special, don't come to see me."

"There is ...," The Sun God Tang YuanNan of the Three Gods Sect hesitated a little bit before saying, "Masters of different forces in the Endless Sea have been gathering on the Sun Island to discuss a big plan to deal with the Demon Dwellers. The leaders of some forces have also heard about the return of the Moon Ancestor. They would also like to meet you. What do you think about this?"

“I won’t meet them,” That woman replied unfamiliarly, “I am at the critical point of the Peak Sky Realm, only one step away from the Spirit God Realm. Before the Demon Dwellers invade, I need to make use of the time to breakthrough this gap. I don’t have time to waste with those people.”

“Moon Ancestor, when the Flame Unicorn has come back there, it said it had realized that the Star Martial Spirits’ aura is on a little rascal of the Yang family. That little rascal will arrive at the Sun Island soon. Do you want ...?” Tang YuanNan hesitated for a while before continuing, “The Star Martial Spirits of Ouyang Zhi.

The woman showed a little surprise; her face was bewildered for a while before slowly nodding, “When he arrives, and if you recognize the Star Martial Spirits of the Three Gods Sect inside his body, you will bring him to the Moon Island to see me. Besides that, I don’t want to see anyone else.”

“Yes.”

Tang YuanNan nodded. He then consulted her about the essence of some ancient secret techniques of the Three Gods Sect before leaving.

Many swaying figures appeared on the Sun Island of the Three Gods Sect. Different kinds of glorious sun-patterns, which were made of stone, were engraved on the high dark-red castles. Many warriors with different costumes could be seen there; they obviously came from different forces.

The Sunlight on the Sun Island was always scorching for unknown reasons. It seemed that this island was closest to the sun compared to the other islands in the Endless Sea; hence, it was always oppressively hot on this island. This island was like a tropical forest, varieties of verdant plants or trees were everywhere.

Many warriors from different Seas felt very uncomfortable when arriving here. Everyone took off their clothes, untied their belts,

took off all of their thick clothes and hats to deal with the burning heat on the island.

Many beautiful girls of the Yin Yang Wonderland even wore thin silk or left their arms, waists, and legs bare, exposing charming curves. Most of these girls cultivated the Yin Yang Complementary Technique. Their mesmerizing watery eyes were extremely appealing, making other male warriors on the island even hotter, burning flames also inflamed inside them.

Although it was blazingly hot on the island, there were still some people wearing thick costumes. Under the scorching sunlight, they remained their somber faces which could freeze other people's hearts.

The disciples of the Corpses God Sect were this kind of person.

The disciples of the Corpses God Sect who controlled the corpses, temporarily resided in the south of the Sun Island, making that area gloomy. Not even coming close to this area yet, other warriors could already feel a flow of icy aura striking straight to their faces, and their bodies thus couldn't help but tremble.

Inside a vivid red chamber, Yin Hai, the great elder of the Corpses God Sect, with his deep blue eyes, was gently soothing the surface of a miasmatic cold wooden coffin with his skinny arm; his face was very attentive.

Two similar wooden coffins were placed inside the chamber. These two wooden coffins were fully sealed, but still, the faint aura of the dead was flowing out from the insides. Yin Hai's skinny arms quickly attracted this dead aura into his sleeves without leaving out any of it.

“Shriek shriek.”

Two separated sounds simultaneously came up from the two wooden coffins. Yin Hai suddenly shook while his face slightly changed.

These two Sky corpses belonged to him, which he had captured at the burial plot number 93. After having been worshiped and refined, these two Sky corpses seemed to have no abnormalities nor emotions and already returned to normal corpses which were able to follow the orders of his Corpse Controlling Technique.

However, he would never forget the resistance of these two Sky corpses against the capture nor the difficulties that he had gone through after having attempted to arrest these two Sky corpses five years earlier.

Five years ago, these two Sky corpses of his strangely ran away from out of their burial site all of a sudden. They followed the other's orders to slaughter all the Corpse God Sect's disciples at the burial plot number 93. When he arrived that place, these two corpses didn't even excuse him, consistently struggled to escape from his control, releasing their soul powers to resist.

If he hadn't had the anomalous secret technique of the Corpse God Sect nor placed the special Corpse Controlling Seal into these two Sky corpses' bodies, he wouldn't have been able to control them.

However, after having been controlled and refined, these two Sky corpses returned to be normal without any abnormal emotions.

Five years ago, the incident happened to these two Sky corpses was still a puzzle which hadn't been solved by anyone just yet.

Only Yin Hai himself vaguely felt that perhaps under an unknown circumstance, these two Sky corpses had quietly gained a little of intelligence and gradually evolved into King corpses.

Regretfully, this evolution had suffered an early death as soon as it had just started.

Everything happened five years ago. However, in the night before, after he had used the usual method to tamper these two

Sky corpses, he had sensed the vibrating feelings from them again.

Until now, the vibrating feelings of these two Sky corpses were clearer, and their resistant consciousness kept getting stronger and stronger.

“Shriek shriek.”

Another two peculiar sounds came out from the wooden coffins once again.

Yin Hai's face changed dramatically. He held his chest taking a deep breath. He strongly constrained the Sky corpses' resistance and gently mumbled with a somber face, “What is happening after all? It has been only 2355 years, which were not even enough time to transform into the King corpse. Why, why is it like this ...”

“Great Elder!”

Right at this moment, a slight call came in from outside before a small, skinny young man shyly stepped in with his body bending low.

Yin Hai knitted his eyebrows. His bony arms forcefully pounded the two yin wooden coffins. Hundreds of flows of dead aura flowing out from inside of the coffins were attracted into his sleeves and then instantly poured back into these two coffins.

The two yin wooden coffins, which had resounded the shrieking sounds, now became quiet.

“Did you figure it out?” Yin Hai retracted his arms and then silently looked at that young man with a dark face.

The young man shook his head, displaying his fear and then said, “My great master has gone to ask the two protectors Li Zhuang and Sui YueRu of the Yin Yang Wonderland. They also said that they didn't know where the little rascal of the burial plot number 93 came from in that year. However, they said that the girl who was with him seems to be the daughter of the Xia family, whose name is Xia Xinyan.”

“The Xia family...” Yin Hai mumbled to himself; his face changed constantly. He then spoke up after a long while, “You can leave now. Don’t tell anyone about this.”

“Yes, I understand.” That young man moved backward in fear.

Chapter 298: Great Sun Holy Light Tian Mu

Shi Yan was standing on an all-purple crystal rickshaw, clasping his hands behind his back. The three leaders Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba of the Demonic Sound Clan were sitting on the side, closing their eyes meditating.

Cao Zhi Lan wore a purple silk dress with crystal adornments beaded at the corner of the dress. Her beautiful crystal clear eyes, together with Shi Yan's, looked out afar. Her silk dress fluttered, the crystal adornments at the dress's flap collided with each other creating ear-pleasant pure sounds.

This transporting treasure was called the 'Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage' which was like a large carriage without a roof. It radiated wonderfully splendid purple rays under the sun.

The Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage was made of three hundred refined amethyst crystal blocks which were full of rare auras and added seven kinds of pure quartz by the Cao family.

There were total three Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriages which were all in the hands of the most influential persons of the Cao family. Cao Zhi Lan kept one of them.

Before departing from the Snow Dragon Island, Shi Yan had wanted Yi Tian Mo to bring Cao Zhi Lan along. However, she had just beamed out a faint smile while her storage ring had unexpectedly flared up a purple light. She had then taken out the Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage and gently sat on it. After having been started, the Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage was flying with an incredible speed that had even gone beyond Shi Yan's imagination.

Looking at the Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage, even Yi Tian Mo had admitted that his speed was slower than that a little bit.

Therefore, Shi Yan had immediately changed his plan. After

having received Cao Zhi Lan's invitation, he had instantly gotten in the Flying Carriage. He had also brought Ka Ba and Ya Meng with him to the Sun Island of the Three Gods Sect after having considered it for a while.

"Almost there."

In the middle of the splendid purple rays radiating from Cao Zhi Lan's purple dress and the purple Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage, she was like an illusory peri that brought out the glorious yet unreal beauty.

Shi Yan quietly complimented her while glancing at her. He had to admit that this girl was the most outstanding beauty indeed; her manners and appearance were of the first rank and weren't inferior to Xia Xinyan's.

"Am I pretty?" Cao Zhi Lan revealed a big smile. Her beautiful deep eyes seemed to expose the most beautiful scene of the Endless Sea, which made others want to be immersed in the sea and never wake up.

"Beautiful," Shi Yan curled up his lips exposing a broad smile and said, "Among all of those beautiful girls that I have known, your appearance should be the best or the second. It leaves a deep impression just after a quick look, hardly ever able to be forgotten."

"So, marry me." Her bright eyes formed a moon-shape; her smiling face easily mesmerized the other people. "If you marry me, you will have not only a strong ally which is the Cao family but also a beautiful wife that everyone ever desires. You won't suffer any losses no matter what."

"Marriage and children are a big responsibility." Shi Yan's face looked like he severely hated this topic. He shook his head then suddenly smiled, "But, I don't mind if you want to play around with me. On the contrary, I genuinely welcome it. You know that I like to be embraced and missed by beautiful women. If you want,

in terms of some aspects, I will satisfy you."

Shi Yan's burning and lustful eyes scanned all over her body. Every woman certainly understood the meaning in his eyes.

Cao Zhi Lan was discouraged, stared at Shi Yan embarrassedly and then said with resentment, "If you want to have my body, you have to marry me officially. Otherwise, don't think about it!"

Shi Yan just smiled and shook his head without saying anything further. He put all of his concentration on the three islands which just appeared in his sight.

In the middle of the immense ocean, the three islands were round-shape, moon-shape, and rhombus-shape alternately, all of which formed a triangle. From above, the three islands were like emerald gemstones being engraved on the sea's surface. It was so beautiful that it caught all of the people's eyes.

"The round shape one is the Sun Island, the moon-shape one is the Moon Island, and the rhombus-shape one is the Star Island." Cao Zhi Lan introduced those three islands to Shi Yan as she saw him looking ahead attentively. "The Moon Island and the Star Island are in the restricted state. Even the disciples of the Three Gods Sect cannot freely enter them, not to mention the outsiders. The Moon God and the Star God haven't appeared for many of the Three Gods Sect's generations; therefore, there has been no one ruling the Moon Island and the Star Island. However, it has been said that five years ago, the moonlight changed on the Moon Island. Someone seemed to appear there with the Moon Martial Spirits. Rumor is just a rumor. As the Three Gods Sect hides this information very well, nobody knew if that information was true or not until now."

"That is true." Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows and said, "That person, I have met ..."

Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful eyes suddenly brightened with astonishment. "How could you have met that person?"

Shi Yan just smiled but didn't explain.

"It's not fair!" Cao Zhi Lan glanced at him angrily and said grudgingly, "I have always answered your questions. But whatever I have asked you, you always hid them from me. What is this about?"

"Don't forget, you are still my slave until now. I have used the Demons Crystal Pearls to exchange for you. I have sometimes answered you, which is already very good. What else is it that you want?" Shi Yan said with an invisible smile.

"Bastard!" Cao Zhi Lan clenched her teeth quietly. She was so angry that she wanted to vomit a mouthful blood.

Many figures were moving on the Sun Island. Dark-red clouds floated in the sky above the island. The sun power inside those clouds was extremely violent, consistently releasing the scorching auras.

Sunlight was piercing down from the ether. Countless beams of light were like water pouring into the clouds. They seemed to be absorbed and transformed into strange energies inside those dark-red clouds.

Those scattering clouds formed into a miraculous formation which was hardly able to be discovered.

Before the Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage came close to that area yet, three thousand flows of burning sun power were emitted and then transformed into a sunlight net which slowly appeared inside a group of the cloud.

Cao Zhi Lan's face remained unchanged. As soon as her long skinny jade-like fingers gently patted the Flying Carriage's handle, the Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage slowly descended on the Sun Island which now appeared clearer and clearer.

"Swoosh swoosh swoosh."

Hundred thousands of the sunlight inside the cloud flashed on

and off, weaving into a compact light net which covered the entire Sun Island.

That sunlight net had just flared up and vanished before retracting inside the cloud.

However, the tremendous vibrating power from that group of cloud had shortly agitated the three people of Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng. They now just recovered from the meditating state with astonished faces.

"Such a violent power." Yi Tian Mo's face slightly changed; he said seriously, "The vibrating power covering this island is even ten times stronger than that of the current Sky and Earth aura on the Snow Dragon Mountain. With this powerful defensive force, I am afraid that even the God Realm masters can hardly break it."

"Five hundred years ago, three Third Sky of the Spirit Realm warriors put forth all of their powers to strike this Great Sun Holy Light Tian Mu for the whole seven consecutive days and nights but still couldn't break it. During thousands of years, the Great Sun Holy Light Tian Mu above the Sun Island has been broken only three times." Cao Zhi Lan said seriously.

"Has been broken three times even it is that strong? What kind of forces that could be powerful like that?" Ka Ba asked with surprise.

"To be exact, it has been broken by three people." Cao Zhi Lan's eyebrows slammed slightly, and she suddenly beamed out a smile. She then shut up without disclosing anything further while her beautiful eyes glanced at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan, who was listening attentively, frowned slightly as she suddenly mused. He then burst into laughter, shaking his head and didn't ask for more.

Ka Ba harrumphed coldly. His eyes sparked a fierce light. He glanced at her resentfully and kept silent as well.

The Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage descended slowly, coming

closer to the Sun Island while avoiding the red cloud that was floating around in the sky as if it knew the defensive range of that cloud.

A big figure flew over from the Sun Island below then shortly appeared ten meters away in front of the Flying Carriage.

It was a middle-aged warrior with the Sky Realm cultivation base, who was wearing the Three Gods Sect's tunic.

This man was big and rough with a warm smile on his face. Splendid flames were hovering chaotically on his hands, opening an invisible defensive formation in front of him. From a distance, he pointed to Cao Zhi Lan laughing out loud, "Is it Miss Cao?"

Cao Zhi Lan nodded with a smile from a distance.

"Come in, please." This warrior slightly bent down conducting an inviting gesture with a serious face.

Cao Zhi Lan revealed a smile but said nothing. Following that Sky Realm warrior's instruction, she quietly urged the Amethyst Crystal Flying Carriage to fly towards the Sun Island's airspace to the dark-red castles in the southwest of the island.

"In the morning of the day after tomorrow, the meeting will officially start in the Great Sun Holy Light Hall. You are the first one of the Cao family to come. Does the Cao family send out someone else to come as well?" This warrior guided Cao Zhi Lan to an elegant and quiet manor and decently pried.

"I haven't told my family that I would come here. Perhaps the Cao family will have someone else represent them." Cao Zhi Lan beamed out a faint smile while following that warrior to go straight to that quiet manor.

Shi Yan nodded with Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, and Ka Ba then casually entered the manor.

This Sky Realm warrior of the Three Gods Sect hadn't noticed Shi Yan until Shi Yan turned around and entered the manor. His

eyes suddenly brightened, his face instantly show some signs of strange.

Waiting until Shi Yan and Cao Zhi Lan had entered the manor, this person held his chest, couldn't help but become extremely excited with a red face as if his heart was about to jump out. "Impossible, how can this ..."

After a very long while, he could stabilize his surging emotions, yet he still showed an unbelievable look. "How can his body have the same Martial Spirits with mine but at a higher level? His Martial Spirits has led to my body's resonance which prevented me from being able to have any resistant intentions.

He stood there while his face kept changing constantly. He finally left after a while.

Half an hour later, he was allowed to enter a chamber which was guarded by the Flame Unicorn. After conducting the ceremony, he said respectfully, "Hierarch, the person that you have told us to notice and receive has just arrived at the Sun Island ..."

The spinning sunlight was swirling around Tang YuanNan's body. The sunlight circles consistently spread out behind his head, radiating ten-thousand-zhang halos, which made him look like a Sun God indeed.

When being reported, Tang YuanNan's face didn't change except for the brightness on his face that was slowly fading.

"What did you feel?"

"When facing him, my Martial Spirits has produced the resonance and also brought a strange and uncontrollable feeling of kneeling down and conducting the ceremony, which only appears when facing you. But, I am certain that I did have that feeling."

Tang YuanNan suddenly opened his eyes; his pupils resembled the two suns with dazzling light, which were like needles piercing into the others' eyes.

Chapter 299: Long time no see

In the southwest corner of the Sun Island, there was a quiet manor which was specially made of pink bricks. This manor originally belonged to a great elder who had encountered the cultivation insanity, and carelessly let his soul and spirit perish. Therefore, this place had become ownerless.

The manor was thirty mu (1 mu is equivalent to 3.600 square meters). There was a small lake with a bonsai (the art of making miniature landscapes, imitating the scenery of the islands, mountains and surrounding environment as found in nature) in the yard as well as ten different kinds of storied houses. The maid who was living there year-round had been cleaning it up so carefully that this place was immune from dust.

In the Three Gods Sect, places that were used to host visitors would be arranged in accordance with their status and classified into different levels.

This manor was one of the Three Gods Sect's best accommodations for their guests. Only the leaders of powerful forces were welcomed and stayed here. Ordinary elderly protectors weren't qualified enough to be able to stay here.

As Shi Yan and the other three leaders of Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng arrived at this place, they were engrossed in looking at the wooden pillars with full of decorative carvings on the side, the delicate furnishings, and implements, as well as the abundant and diversified set-up. They kept quietly giving compliments and were astonished by the luxuriousness of the Three Gods Sect.

The servants were all good-looking. The beautiful maids here were around fourteen or fifteen years old, wearing light clothes exposing their arms and bellies with healthily tanned skins. They were approaching Shi Yan and his fellows, holding the silver plates loaded with shining fresh fruits and then respectfully lifted up and

offered to them.

As soon as Shi Yan sat down in a spacious living room, seven girls, who were still very young in age and very pretty, were all busy running back and forth, bringing them refreshments.

"This place is one of the noblest places to host guests of the Three Gods Sect. Last time, when my uncle and I came to this island, we weren't qualified enough to stay here. That is the time when the Three Gods Sect is receiving many distinguished guests, so I have thought that the treat this time would even have been worse than last time. Unexpectedly, that guy Li Fu has brought us straight to this place. It is unbelievable indeed." Cao Zhi Lan was sitting opposite of Shi Yan, her jade-like hand picked up a succulent grape, cocked her head, peeling the fruit. She didn't look at him but mumbled with a low voice.

"Li Fu should definitely have regards for your Cao family." Shi Yan neglectfully bit a sparkling grape in his hand and said, "Haven't you said that the Cao family's power is ranked in the top three of the Endless Sea?"

"I haven't just been self-conceited." Cao Zhi Lan nodded. Her full red lips chewed the grape and swallowed it. She then smiled and raised her head up. Her beautiful eyes contained some meaningful implications. "The head Master of the Cao family comes, it is obvious that he should be received here. However, your status and my status are deficient, so it is impossible to be qualified enough to stay here. Li Fu has seemed to pay attention to me on the way here, but he has fixed his eyes on someone else." The bright and clear eyes of the beautiful woman looked at Shi Yan attentively while revealing a big charming smile. "I am just curious. He has never asked your identity but has treated you even more carefully and attentively than when treating a Sky Realm master. He hasn't even dared to look straight into your eyes; instead, he has just stayed behind and sneakily looked at you. Why does he have to be so respectful?"

Shi Yan shrugged, pointed toward Yi Tian Mo, Ya Meng, Ka Ba and said, "Perhaps he has recognized their real realm levels."

The beautiful woman smiled and shook her head. "When the God Realm warriors intentionally want to hide their auras, as long as they don't use their God Realm power, no one can realize it, including the warriors at the same realm. So, how could he have recognized it? Especially, our three men have profound understandings of the Spiritual Upanishads; when they hide their identities on purpose, even the warriors at the higher levels couldn't realize their real cultivation base."

Shi Yan was surprised, shook his head with a forced smile but didn't explain more.

Cao Zhi Lan angrily glared at him as he didn't answer her. She suddenly stood up and said, "I am going to the Sacred Light Mountain. Do you want to go with me?"

Shi Yan shook his head.

"The Sun Island is round; hence, the guest houses are all on the edge of the island. However, the foot of the Sacred Light Mountain is the most interesting place of the island. There are the most famous Sacred Light hot spring and storied-houses for exchanging cultivating materials, secret treasures, as well as the adjacent area's specialties..." As Shi Yan didn't seem to be stirred up, Cao Zhi Lan felt discouraged and then told him in detail some interesting things of that place.

Shi Yan still shook his head with a faint smile, swung his arm and urged, "You go first. I might feel interested later and will find you there. You should remember that we have placed the formation technique inside your body. Before the Cao family pays us the ransom, you shouldn't do anything stupid."

"Don't have to warn me always. OK?" Cao Zhi Lan was resentful.

"I am afraid that when you are accustomed to the familiar

environment there, you will forget that binding. Hahaha, I don't have any other intentions. You can go now."

Cao Zhi Lan glanced at him. Her prominent body like a beautiful purple blossomed flower deliberately glided away, dragging the colliding sounds of the crystal adornments on the flap of her dress.

As soon as Cao Zhi Lan had left, Shi Yan's face became somber. He suddenly stood up from the chair.

Without caring about the surprise of the other three people of Yi Tian Mo's group. He sat down straight on the floor, instantly released his soul consciousness to observe something in silence.

The other three people were bewildered a little bit before condensing a proper defensive formation in the room to prevent strangers from penetrating.

Many flows of miraculous soul vibrations spread out from Shi Yan's body. These flows were very peculiar, bringing different kinds of feelings which contained tiny consciousnesses.

The three people of Yi Tian Mo's group were all great masters of souls. After having observed for a while, they realized that Shi Yan's flows of soul consciousness seemed to be receiving and also responding to some information. It was peculiar.

Five minutes later.

Shi Yan slowly opened his eyes. He quietly stood up with a confused face. He contemplated for a while before speaking, "Follow me to a place."

"Yes." The three people of Yi Tian Mo's group nodded simultaneously without saying anything further.

"I don't know why it is that when I came here, I have sensed that there are two fellows who kept calling me..." Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows tightly and thought very carefully before saying. "Those two fellows seem just to gain the spirit intelligence recently; their spirits are still very innocent. Their souls seem to lack different

kinds of feelings of the high-class lives. Although they are simple lives, they keep producing close affections with me. It is hard to understand."

The three people of Yi Tian Mo's group glanced at him with a dazed look and seemed not to understand his feelings either.

"It seems that I have known them and met them from somewhere, but I can't remember even though I have tried to think a lot." Shi Yan shook his head with knitted eyebrows and a doleful face. "The feeling is peculiar and abnormal. Maybe we should go there to see; otherwise, we wouldn't get anything if we just relied on our senses."

The three people of Yi Tian Mo's group nodded again.

Following Shi Yan's orders, the three of them retrieved their defensive formation, instructed the butler to look after the manor. Then, the four of them left the manor, going towards the west of the island.

... ..

"Shriek shriek! Shriek shriek."

The yin aura was very dense inside the stone chamber. The two wooden coffins were making creepy sounds.

The Sky corpses seemed to use their long sharp nails to scratch on the coffin lids as if they wanted to lift up the lids and get out of the coffins.

Yin Hai was presently not here. He had been summoned by the Hierarch of the Corpses God Sect together with other great elders to receive the Hierarch's assignments.

The yin aura and dead aura were hovering around inside the chamber. It was the dark, cold cellar, which was ten meters underneath the ground; the light was dim and gloomy.

Currently, there was only one disciple of Yin Hai in this place,

who was dozing, leaning against the wooden bed in the distance and was dreamingly wandering in the cloudy sky.

The echoes from the coffins were getting louder and louder. The sounds then got too loud that he was unable to sleep deeply. He finally woke up.

This young man's face changed in fear. He stared at the two coffins for five seconds before his face turned pale and hurriedly ran away to find Yi Hai supposedly.

"Crack crack!"

A long sharp white nail suddenly jutted out of the coffin, and then the coffin lid was broken and thrown away. The male Sky corpse who had been dominated in the burial plot number 93 slowly sat up.

Inside of the two empty sockets flared up many peculiar light dots. With a closer look, those light dots resembled the Life Seals of Shi Yan's Life and Death Seal indeed.

Those tiny sparkling Life Seals were getting clearer. A kind of indescribable forces seemed to be born; a miracle was happening ...

"Crack crack!"

A female Sky corpse in the other coffin also sat up. Deep inside of the empty eyes flared up strange lights as well. Its white, pale skin glowed shiningly. Its body seemed to have gained its vitality again.

Luxuriant brushes and plants were dispersive everywhere in the Sun Island. There were uncluttered big bluestone paved roads on the island.

Many warriors from different Seas gathered into groups of three or five, wandering around. Most of them were heading towards the Sacred Light Mountain, whisperingly talking and laughing.

Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows. Under the burning sunlight, his body was still frigid.

He had unintentionally absorbed a part of the icy power of the Ice Cold Flame, which was now running all over his body. On the scorching island, his entire body was as chilled as ice, quite similar to several dangerous disciples of the Corpses God Sect, which gave other people the feeling that he was too unfriendly and gloomy to get acquainted easily.

As for the three people of Yi Tian Mo's group, they had cultivated the yin techniques, together with their different body structures compared to the humankind's as well as their pale faces; their bodies naturally emitted the cold and gloomy aura already.

Therefore, the burning heat was automatically pushed away from their bodies while they were on their way. Even the blazing sunlight seemed impossible to shine on their bodies.

Many warriors traveling on the same way suddenly trembled, feeling freezing inside when they approached more than ten meters close to them. Those warriors instinctively stayed far away from them quickly with fear and hatred appearing on their faces.

They assumed that the four of them were the high-class principles of the Corpses God Sect.

In the Endless Sea, only the disciples of the Corpses God Sect cultivated that secret Yin Icy Technique. Even in the summer, their bodies were all frigid, and they wore thick tunics with the appearance that seemed to tell the others not to get any closer.

The Corpses God Sect was not the strongest force in the Endless Sea but the most mystical force that frightened many warriors.

If it was not necessary, ordinary warriors never wanted to contact with the disciples of the Corpses God Sect. It was the instinctual resistance. Everyone was subconsciously scared of the Corpses God Sect, afraid that they would have been condensed and refined into a corpse.

Two ambiguous flows of soul approached towards Shi Yan,

quietly went into his Sea of Consciousness then floated around inside but weren't welcomed by his host soul.

These two flows of soul targeted only at Shi Yan himself without any wicked intentions nor attacking forces, only the joy, and excitement.

As these hidden two souls were initially ambiguous and targeted at Shi Yan only, the three people of Yi Tian Mo's group could vaguely sense them a little bit just because they were standing next to him. The others would be unable to realize them.

Shi Yan used his host soul to control and sense the two flows which were moving inside his Sea of Consciousness. He wanted to know the opponents' identity through these two souls.

However, these two souls were too ambiguous, which meant that the ones who had sent them out didn't know how to use their soul forces nor enhance the soul consciousness. Although Shi Yan had concentrated a lot to sense, he couldn't get any information just yet.

The five Devils in the Sea of Consciousness seemed to be very excited with these two souls. They were like evil monsters that wanted to pull and swallow the two souls but got intimidated and was prevented by his Sea of Consciousness, and thus, they didn't succeed.

"Who are they after all?" Shi Yan felt suspicious with his knitted eyebrows. However, no matter how hard he thought, he still couldn't figure out.

He suddenly ceased his steps.

Shi Yan retrieved the suspicious thoughts in his mind, raised his head up looking ahead. His eyes slightly squinted, the corner of his mouth lightly formed an indifferent curve.

Ahead of him was a group of males and females talking and laughing, walking towards him. They seemed to be in a very good

mood.

A flirty woman among them wore a thin red silk dress, the snow-white area beneath the thin silk was dazzling.

That woman wore a charming, smiling face; her face was as pretty as cherry blossoms, her cheeks reddened, and her sparkling eyes were lustful as if she was very satisfied after passionate lovemaking.

A guy with an eager fat face, bean-sized eyes was next to her. The fat of his body shook while he was talking. There were varieties of precious colorful stone rings on his big fat fingers. Each of them was the storage ring used to store stuff, which was containing the unknown number of marvelous treasures.

A middle-aged scholar in a blue blouse, who had a cold face and a cruel, wicked appearance, clasped his hands behind his back while walking and thinking of something.

Seven females and males with different levels of cultivations base, who wore different kinds of clothes, were walking behind those three people with respectful faces. They were discussing something with each other and quietly observing the three people ahead as if they were afraid that their noises could be too loud and thus they would be scolded by the three people ahead.

The three people leading the group were chatting and laughing, gradually coming close to Shi Yan's group from the opposite direction.

The flirty woman unintentionally glanced at Shi Yan and then immediately turned around and continued talking with the fat guy next to her. However, after a few steps, she seemed to have remembered something, turned around again looking at Shi Yan then lifted her finger with the painted nail, pointing towards Shi Yan from a distance and said with surprise, "You, you are that little rascal?"

Recently, Yin Hai kept sending his people to her place to ask for information. Shi Yan's image also came across her mind sometimes. As suddenly seeing Shi Yan on this Sun Island of the Three Gods Sect, she instantly remembered.

"Protector Sui, long time no see." Shi Yan slightly laughed.

The flirty woman was Sui YueRu of the Yin Yang Wonderland.

When Shi Yan and Xia XinYan had gotten stranded on a desert island, they had got on an iron boat of the Yin Yang Wonderland and had made contact with Sui YueRu for a period. As he had refused to be the subordinate of this woman, he had been harmed by the unity of this bitch and Li Zhuang, almost becoming a corpse of the Corpses God Sect.

The fat guy next to her was the great elder Chen Duo of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland. The ferocious scholar in the blue blouse was Dong FangHe.

On the Menluo Island, because of the Ice Cold Flame, Shi Yan had suffered a great loss in Chen Duo's and Don FangHe's hands. If he hadn't been lucky, he could have had been killed.

Shi Yan's eyes were half-closed. His face was strange and unpredictable. He revealed a smile.

Chapter 300: You can't go.

Sui YueRu, Chen Duo, and Dong FangHe all knew Shi Yan. Among them, only Sui YueRu didn't know of his relations with the Yang family.

After the incident on the Menluo Island, Chen Duo and Dong FangHe had suffered a great pressure, been blamed and punished by their masters. From that, they had also known Shi Yan's origin and identity.

After being astonished by the encounter with Shi Yan, Sui YueRui suddenly remembered the important matter that Yin Hai had instructed her.

After staring at Shi Yan for a while, she burst into laughter, then spoke to Chen Duo and Dong FangHe besides her, "This little rascal and I used to be interrelated with each other that year. I didn't expect that five years later, he could now step on the Sun Island. It is very interesting."

While smilingly talking, Sui YueRui quietly winked at Chen Duo and Don FangHe, signaling these guys to take actions to help her give Shi Yan a lesson.

"Little rascal, we meet again." The fat on Chen Duo's face shook as he put on a broad smile. "Because of you, I have suffered many difficulties. I have paid not a small price for what happened on the Menluo Island. You have hidden really well though."

"Because of you, almost one hundred of the Dong Fang family's members have all died. Seven islands have also been completely mopped up. I have been badly blamed for this as well." Dong FangHe's face became somber while speaking.

Sui YueRui was surprised, covered her mouth subconsciously, exposing fear.

She looked at Shi Yan, then swept her eyes to Chen Duo and

Dong FangHe who were angrily gritting their teeth. She finally couldn't help but scream out, "Oh, you guys all know him?"

Dong FangHe harrumphed coldly and said, "Not only knowing but also being deeply impressed."

Chen Duo didn't reply. Although the smile on his face was still friendly, he nodded toward the fellows behind him.

The followers of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland understood what their leader meant. They dispersed out with a cold smile on their faces and then besieged Shi Yan in only three breaths.

"Are you Shi Yan?" The layers of fat on Chen Duo's body shook violently, his bean-sized eyes shot out a cold light. "If it were three years ago, I wouldn't have dared to do anything to you. Regretfully, now it is different from before. After Yang Tian Emperor has been confined, the Yang family remains just a name. Presently, if I want to do something to you, I am afraid that no one can help you."

Shi Yan's look was frigid and emotionless. A faint smile beamed out from the corners of his mouth, his eyes coldly raked over the five people surrounding him, then said, "These five people only don't seem enough to catch me."

"Not enough?" As Chen Duo burst into laughter, the fat on his body shook violently. He said, "All of them and you are ranked at the same Earth Realm. You alone can deal with five of them? Don't be so overconfident!"

Dong FangHe knitted his eyebrows, quietly took a few steps back. His eyes scanned over the three people of Yi Tian Mo's group but couldn't see through their real cultivation base, thus, he felt a little bit suspicious and didn't dare to act recklessly.

Chen Duo and Sui YueRui also moved back silently and didn't take any actions by themselves. In fact, as they couldn't figure out the cultivation base of the three people of Yi Tian Mo's group, they

wanted to use those five Earth Realm warriors to probe, hopefully to force Yi Tian Mo and the other two guys to take actions in order to know their exact cultivation base.

Chen Duo and his group knew that a skinny camel was still bigger than a horse; the Yang family's potential was still very tremendous. Although they had confidently said that Yang Tian Emperor had been confined and that the Yang family was currently merely a name, they still felt frightened deeply inside. They assumed that Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and Ya Meng were the high-class warriors of the Yang family, hence, they didn't dare to take any actions yet.

"Do we have to kill them all?" Yi Tian Mo slightly squinted, directly used his soul to ask for Shi Yan's opinion.

Shi Yan shook his head, signaling the three people of Yi Tian Mo's group to step away. Until three of them were already around ten meters away, he suddenly stormed into one Earth Realm warrior of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland.

A horrendous flow of aura was discharging from his body all of a sudden.

The Electric Shift had been used. Shi Yan's figure was like electricity, or jiaolong (an aquatic dragon in Chinese mythology) jumping out of the sea. The bluestones underneath his feet were broken into small blocks.

Fist-sized stone rubbles were flung out everywhere, floating around in the air together with his sturdy body, then dashed altogether towards those people ahead.

The bluestones were crumbled as if they were tossed up by a big hand. Countless broken bluestones were dancing in the air. Together with the ear-splitting sound, all of the bluestone rubbles plunged towards those five warriors.

"Crack crack"

His sturdy body was like a big heavy club, striking the chest of one Earth Realm warrior of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland. The sound of broken bones resounded, this warrior's body was like a sharp sword flying towards the opposite way.

When this warrior was still in the air, seven holes on his face had already bled. He had been dead even before falling down on the ground.

Without any resistance, the Earth Realm warrior of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland had been killed in such a short time.

He hadn't even had time to take out his spiritual treasure.

Chen Duo grimaced and was startled, his bean-sized eyes beamed out a terrified light.

Dong FangHe's face changed, he became gloomier.

Su YueRui was frightened at heart, unbelievably looking at Shi Yan. She backed off a few steps unconsciously, extending the distance with Shi Yan while her red lips were shivering.

"Swoosh swoosh"

The rubbles in the sky like hundreds of powerful and tremendous iron fists, from Shi Yan in the center, shot out circularly.

Hundreds of flows of violent purified power had been added to the bluestones, inside of which also had some streams of soul senses that were hardly detected.

Countless rubbles, which were like fists with eyes, flew around bringing the extremely outrageous aura that covering the rest of the four warriors of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland.

Against everyone's expectation, those flying bluestone blocks didn't fall down but revolved in the air.

After every short amount of time being revolved, the bluestone blocks' aura became more tremendous. As their forces were mightier, the murderous power also increased naturally.

Not far from here, some warriors, who saw the fight happening, were surprised as well as excited. They noisily came closer but kept a safe distance, observing from afar.

Chen Duo's eyes flared up a murderous look. He revealed a snicker while his fat arm, which was like a pig's feet, had already jutted out of his sleeve. He seemed to be about to take actions.

It was unknown when some beams of powerful red light suddenly shot out from the bush nearby. The beams of red light fell down exactly on Chen Duo's arms, which had just jutted out of his sleeve.

The burning flame produced more fires on Chen Duo's arm. More than five thousands of True Sun Fires went through that arm of his, condensed in his palm but didn't launch any attacks. They seemed to warn him not to take actions.

Chen Duo's fat face changed in fear. He felt freezing inside while looking at the nearby bush.

Li Fu of the Three Gods Sect was also as fat as Chen Duo with a broad smile on his face as well. He walked out of the bush embarrassedly, clasped his hands to respectfully greet Chen Duo while smilingly said, "Sorry, I am so sorry. I didn't mean to target Chen ge. However, according to our sect's rule, warriors with the same level can battle on the island, but the predecessors with the higher realm are not allowed to get involved. This is the strictest rule. Chen ge, please forgive and let it go."

Chen Duo looked at Li Fu with a strange face. His eyes were full of suspicions.

Chen Duo did know that the Three Gods Sect had this rule, but it wasn't always rigid. There had been some people violating this rule sometimes, but the Three Gods Sect wouldn't have strongly interfered. On the previous day, he still had had some drinks with Li Fu, talking and laughing. They had even discussed some rare cultivating materials with each other. As being fat, people with the

same Sky realm, Li Fu and he shared many things in common.

As he actually had a good fellowship with Li Fu, although he had known that Li Fu had been nearby, he hadn't really bothered and had almost taken actions to humiliate Shi Yan. Unexpectedly, as soon as he was about to move, Li Fu appeared out of nowhere. This annoyed him very much as he didn't know why Li Fu covered up Shi Yan.

Under Chen Duo's scrutinized look, Li Fu only forced a smile, shook his head, clasped his hands to greet, but didn't loosen his force which was oppressing Chen Duo.

"Boom boom boom boom"

At this time, low gloomy sounds reverberated constantly. The four warriors of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland had been hit by countless bluestones, blood gushed out from their bodies. One after the other fell down on the ground and never stood up again.

Among these four warriors, three of them had had their heads blossomed, the other one had been hit through his eyes piercing into his brain. They were all miserably dead.

After the rubbles had fallen down on the ground, Shi Yan was still standing coldly. He had actually never taken any actions. After the only hit that had killed the first warrior, the bluestones' power had been constantly increasing. The recent tremendous attack seemed not to be caused by him.

However, everyone who looked at his frigid and emotionless eyes would have the feeling that those four warriors of the Spirit Treasure Wonderland had been dead in his hands.

The flows of pure aura quietly flew out from those five warriors and then slowly went into the pores on his body, being completely absorbed by all the meridians. The whole occurrence was not easy to be detected by ordinary people.

The corpses of the five dead warriors shriveled gradually as if

they had completely lost all of the water and blood.

Li Fu revealed a forced smile, then shouted, "Clean it up quickly!"

Some warriors in the Three Gods Sect's costumes appeared from several dark corners all of a sudden. They calmly carried the five dead bodies away after taking out the storage bags from the dead warriors and throwing them to Chen Duo.

Not long after that, the five dead bodies disappeared. Even the broken bluestones were quickly paved with new bluestones.

Shi Yan indifferently looked at Li Fu with a frigid face.

Li Fu felt awkward under Shi Yan's scrutinized look. Sweat already beaded on his back.

"Let's go." Dong FangHe seemed to figure out something, signaling Chen Duo, who was extremely in rage. He said, "It seems that the Three Gods Sect wants to protect this little rascal. Don't mess around here anymore. We will see him later."

Chen Duo harrumphed coldly, flipped his sleeves, and left.

Sui YueRui looked at Shi Yan bewilderedly. With full of surprise and suspicion, she then also left, following the other two people.

"You can't go." Shi Yan spoke up frigidly all of a sudden.

The complexions of the three people Chen Duo, Dong FangHe, and Sui YueRui changed slightly.

The three of them stopped, turning around with a sober countenance under the attentive looks of some warriors from a far.

"Little rascal, do you really want to die?" Chen Duo coldly smiled, the usual smiling look on his face had completely vanished.

"Make them more obedient." Shi Yan knitted his eyebrows, nodded his head to signal Yi Tian Mo.

A violent tornado of souls like the angry surging sea, which was released by Yi Tian Mo, suddenly stormed outward and covered

the sea of consciousness of Chen Duo, Dong FangHe, and Sui YueRui. Their faces changed dramatically, they couldn't help but scream out in pain. Their eyes were full of fear, unbelievably looking at Yi Tian Mo.

"God Realm!" The three of them shouted simultaneously.

Now they finally knew Yi Tian Mo's real cultivation Realm.

Table of Contents

[God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 201: I'm Your Elder Brother!](#)

[Chapter 202: Destroy the Mountain](#)

[Chapter 203: Arrival](#)

[Chapter 204: The Yang Family](#)

[Chapter 205: The Yang Family's Challenge](#)

[Chapter 206: I Bet!](#)

[Chapter 207: Ancient Divine Blood](#)

[Chapter 208: Magical Effects of the Divine Blood](#)

[Chapter 209: Forming the Sea of Consciousness](#)

[Chapter 210: You're Really Something](#)

[Chapter 211: Beast Ghost](#)

[Chapter 212: Accident](#)

[Chapter 213: The Ancient Gate of Heaven](#)

[Chapter 214: We Belong Together!](#)

[Chapter 215: The Three Choices](#)

[Chapter 216: Sky-breaking Shuttle](#)

[Chapter 217: The Power Rankings](#)

[Chapter 218: The Demon Ghost Shows Its Viciousness](#)

[Chapter 219: Lame!](#)

[Chapter 220: There Is No Need to be So Direct, Right?](#)

[Chapter 221: Peak of the Disaster Realm](#)

[Chapter 222: Becoming Famous](#)

[Chapter 223: The Chasm Battlefield](#)

[Chapter 224: Meteor Formation](#)

[Chapter 225: Ambush](#)

[Chapter 226: You Guys Go First!](#)

[Chapter 227: You Really Surprised Me!](#)

[Chapter 228: Turning the Tide](#)

[Chapter 229: Counter-attack](#)

[Chapter 230: Lost](#)

[Chapter 231: Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 232: The Earth Realm](#)

[Chapter 233: I Can Kill Them!](#)

[Chapter 234: Burst you off!](#)
[Chapter 235: Times have changed!](#)
[Chapter 236: Sun Essence](#)
[Chapter 237: An extraordinary treasure](#)
[Chapter 238: Absorp](#)
[Chapter 239: Giant Ancient Stone City](#)
[Chapter 240: Demonic Sound Clan](#)
[Chapter 241: The Sound Beast Mountain](#)
[Chapter 242: Everything has its conqueror](#)
[Chapter 243: Birdman](#)
[Chapter 244: Wiped out](#)
[Chapter 245: Give me a reason.](#)
[Chapter 246: Five Devils Condensation Refining](#)
[Chapter 247: He is very special](#)
[Chapter 248: History repeated](#)
[Chapter 249: Bad things turned out to be good](#)
[Chapter 250: Casually Response.](#)
[Chapter 251: Transformation of the sea of consciousness.](#)
[Chapter 252: What is there to be scared of?](#)
[Chapter 253: Arrogant Bluster](#)
[Chapter 254: God's Will](#)
[Chapter 255: Desire wealth in danger.](#)
[Chapter 256: Unexpected cake from Heaven](#)
[Chapter 257: Soul perception.](#)
[Chapter 258: Raving waves.](#)
[Chapter 259: The younger generation who surpassed the older](#)
[Chapter 260: Hunting](#)
[Chapter 261: Mercy](#)
[Chapter 262: Didn't consider them humans](#)
[Chapter 263: Ruthless](#)
[Chapter 264: Intimidating Heavenly Prestigious Power](#)
[Chapter 265: Watch me!](#)
[Chapter 266: Breaking the Formation Technique](#)
[Chapter 267: The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame](#)
[Chapter 268: Peculiar Treasure appeared](#)
[Chapter 269: I can help you](#)
[Chapter 270: The Great Destruction](#)
[Chapter 271: Confine it!](#)
[Chapter 272: Make you my Master.](#)

[Chapter 273: The path to return \(the way home\)](#)
[Chapter 274: Snow Dragon Island](#)
[Chapter 275: Spirit Gear inside the Flying Shuttle](#)
[Chapter 276: The Kele Clan](#)
[Chapter 277: Who are you after all?](#)
[Chapter 278: The big picture](#)
[Chapter 279: Rooting](#)
[Chapter 280: Awaiting the Emperor](#)
[Chapter 281: Listening to the Earth's movements](#)
[Chapter 282: Determination](#)
[Chapter 283: The Peak Earth Realm](#)
[Chapter 284: Visitors](#)
[Chapter 285: Confrontation](#)
[Chapter 286: Strong](#)
[Chapter 287: The Declaration of Love](#)
[Chapter 288: The invitation of the Three Gods Sect](#)
[Chapter 289: Shi Yan's request](#)
[Chapter 290: Dragon Horn Clan - Ma Qi Jie](#)
[Chapter 291: Looking at each other from a space distance.](#)
[Chapter 292: Holy Spirit God](#)
[Chapter 293: Spiritual Qi Bullets](#)
[Chapter 294: Soul Confrontation](#)
[Chapter 295: It's not because of you.](#)
[Chapter 296: Captives](#)
[Chapter 297: The Sun Island](#)
[Chapter 298: Great Sun Holy Light Tian Mu](#)
[Chapter 299: Long time no see](#)
[Chapter 300: You can't go.](#)